

PILATE
AND
HEROD
A
TALE
STANLEY



813
S787







813

8787

Rev. Ethan Allen,
For the Archives of
Maryland.

By the Author.

June. 26. 1857.

MARYLAND DIOCESAN LIBRARY,

1108 Madison Avenue.

LENDING DEPARTMENT.

Gift of

No.

5092
~~752~~

William Miller
June 1847

PILATE AND HEROD

A TALE

IN TWO VOLUMES

THE FIRST OF THE SERIES OF TALES

IN THE HISTORY OF MARTYRDOM

BY WILLIAM MILLER, OF NEW-YORK, AUTHOR OF "THE HISTORY OF MARTYRDOM," &c.

THE FIRST OF THE SERIES OF TALES
IN THE HISTORY OF MARTYRDOM
THE FIRST OF THE SERIES OF TALES
IN THE HISTORY OF MARTYRDOM

BY WILLIAM MILLER, OF NEW-YORK, AUTHOR OF "THE HISTORY OF MARTYRDOM," &c.

THE FIRST OF THE SERIES OF TALES

IN TWO VOLUMES

THE FIRST OF THE SERIES OF TALES
IN THE HISTORY OF MARTYRDOM
THE FIRST OF THE SERIES OF TALES
IN THE HISTORY OF MARTYRDOM
1847

Ethan Allen

June 1857

PILATE AND HEROD:

A TALE

ILLUSTRATIVE OF THE

EARLY HISTORY OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND,

IN THE PROVINCE OF MARYLAND.

"And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together: for before they were at enmity between themselves." ST. LUKE xxiii. 12.

"Full many an eve, and many a morn,
The holy lamps have blazed and died;
The floor by knees of sinners worn,
The mystic altar's golden horn,
Age after age have witness borne
To faith that on a lingering Saviour cried."

LYRA APOSTOLICA.

BY REV. HARVEY STANLEY,

RECTOR OF THE HOLY TRINITY, MD.

VOL. I.

PHILADELPHIA:
PUBLISHED BY H. HOOKER,
S. W. COR. EIGHTH AND CHESNUT STS.
1853.

813
3787

PEABODY INSTITUTE LIBRARY
BALTIMORE 2 — MARYLAND

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1853, by
HARVEY STANLEY,
In the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the United States, for
the Southern District of New York.

~~~~~  
PHILADELPHIA:  
STEREOTYPED BY GEORGE CHARLES,  
No. 9 Sansom Street.  
~~~~~

PRINTED BY SMITH & PETERS,
Franklin Buildings, Sixth Street below Arch, Philadelphia.

JAMES G. STANLEY, ESQ.,
OF NEWBERN, NORTH CAROLINA.
AS A TRIBUTE OF RESPECT FOR HIS HIGH
ATTAINMENTS,
AN EXPRESSION OF THE DEEPEST REGARD
FOR THE RARE QUALITIES,
WHICH ADORN HIS CHARACTER AS
A CHRISTIAN GENTLEMAN,
AND
A MEMORIAL OF DUTIFUL AFFECTION,
THIS WORK IS RESPECTFULLY
DEDICATED
BY HIS SON,
THE AUTHOR.

CONTENTS OF VOL. I.

CHAPTER I.

	PAGE
A Ride at Night—Letters from Parson Gordon to Dean Aldrich—Struggle of the Church of England with Romanists and Quakers—A Skeptic—His Sudden Illness, Remorse, and Repentance,	15

CHAPTER II.

A Colloquy on Books and Divines of the English Church—Parson Gordon's History—The Clerical Office and Character,	41
--	----

CHAPPEER III.

The Glebe of William and Mary Parish, in St. Mary's County—Parson Slater—John Cager—An Indian Story,	60
--	----

CHAPTER IV.

Letter from Father Canon on Provincial History—St. Agnes' Day—Service of the Mass in St. Mary's—Father Hunter's Sermon—The Mass, is it Catholic?	84
--	----

CHAPTER V.

PAGE

- Village-hubbub—Mrs. Clapper and Miss Doolittle—Parson
Gordon shows the Church of England to owe no obedience
to the See of Rome, 109

CHAPTER VI.

- The Parson proves the Church of England to be the True
and Apostolic Church in that realm—Mrs. Annie a Ro-
man pervert—Painfulness of the Roman system, . . . 124

CHAPTER VII.

- Emma Gordon and Julia Delafield—Dryden's Hind and
Panther—Poetry—Woman when most lovely, 147

CHAPTER VIII.

- Trading for a Horse—The Fete—The Castle Attacked—An
Escape—The Stag-hunt—Father Canon, 162

CHAPTER IX.

- The Robbery—Snarler and Father Hunter—James Holt,
Esq., a Gentleman of the Old School, 185

CHAPTER X.

- A Walk in the Meadow—An Adventure—A Conjecture—
Service in Poplar Hill Church, 200

CHAPTER XI.

- The Party at Pleasant Lodge—The Belles of the Evening
—Shepard—A Ballad—The Dance—A Puritan worthy, 212

CHAPTER XII.

	PAGE
Two Puritan worthies—A Day at the Castle—"Our Life is as a River"—A Card Party—Father Hunter,	237

CHAPTER XIII.

An Assault on Father Hunter—Mr. Allgrace in St. Inigoes' Chapel,	257
---	-----

CHAPTER XIV.

St. Patrick not a Roman Saint—A Bout on the Roman Schism in Ireland and America,	269
---	-----

PILATE AND HEROD:

A Tale of the Church of England,

IN THE PROVINCE OF MARYLAND.

PREFACE.

THE last nine years the writer has resided in the Diocese of Maryland; and five of which he had a parochial cure, which embraced within its bounds "the ancient city of St. Mary's." His attention therefore has very naturally been directed to the history of this portion of the Church, and especially of the cure under his charge.

Walking almost daily over the crumbling bricks of the old metropolis, and holding divine Service every other Lord's Day, within ten feet of the hallowed spot where stood the first Church of England in the province, it was often on his mind to gather together such records of the too fleeting past, as would shed light on memorials and places so interesting.*

* The present edifice, Poplar Hill Church, stands almost on the site where stood the first Church of England in the province of Maryland. It is in Poplar Hill and St. Georges Hundred, little more than a mile direct from the head of St. George's river, and about a mile and a half from the Potomac river. In the chancel of the former church was a horizontal slab, still in good preservation, to the memory of the Rev. Mr. Leigh Massey, which reads as follows:

The bricks he found lying amidst the ruins of the state house in St. Mary's, preached to him sermons, as did the stones in Avon's brook, to its immortal bard. For this state house was for more than a century consecrated to the worship of God; and if these ruins could speak but a tithe of the good things which have sounded forth within its walls—each fragment that there lies crumbling, like an ocean shell, would tell of the place whence it came.*

"Near this place Lyes Inter'd the Rev.^d Mr. Leigh Massey. He was Educated at Oxford, Rector of this Parish, the darling of his Flock, and Beloved by all who knew him. He dyed January 10, 173 $\frac{2}{3}$: aged 29."

In the aisle, as the pavement from the front door to the altar is improperly termed, of said ancient church, is still to be seen another horizontal slab, which is to the memory of a child, Joseph Holt, who died 1701. This is perhaps the oldest tombstone in Maryland. There is, however, in St. Mary's churchyard, in which stood the old state house, a cedar head-post over a child, dated 1717. The cedar is in good preservation, though some persons, from the rage of antiquity, have cut off pieces from it as memorials.

* The state house was cruciform. It faced the west bank of St. Mary's river, and from the pit we should judge that it was sixty feet north and south, and forty-five east and west. The building, I have been told, was well adapted to the purposes of divine worship, and much more so than the tobacco house looking building which was erected in its place. The cracks in the walls, which was pleaded as the excuse for its demolition, *might* have been remedied. I would not, however, hastily or unjustly condemn. By reference to the journal of the Upper House of Assembly, St. Mary's, 10th May, 1682, page 418; (quoted in Annals of Annapolis, p. 54, note *,) in 1682 the state house will be seen to have been in a "ruinous condition,"

The quiet and rural grave-yard of Poplar Hill in the same cure, also spoke to the writer of many a faithful man of God, who there had fallen with his harness on : while the struggle which the Church of England had to maintain in St. Mary's county with the Church of Rome, and which it had throughout the province of Maryland with dissent in every form, during the early part of the last century, (and of which history speaks clearly, and particularly, a project which was attempted in the Maryland Assembly, to make the clergy of the establishment amenable to a court of lay inquisitors) all

and to have been so unskilfully built, that in a short time thereafter, "if not speedily repaired, it must inevitably fall to the ground:"—and that measures were then taken for its "new covering, and making such necessary repairs thereof." How far the new covering and repairs went and sufficed, I know not. By a bare majority of the vestry of William and Mary parish, A. D. 1829, the proposition to pull it down was carried : and it is a singular fact that the Rev. H. N. Hotchkiss, who is said to have displaced the first bricks, died a few days thereafter, and sleeps at the north-west angle of the pit without a stone to mark the spot. From this fact, however, I see nothing to be inferred either for or against Mr. Hotchkiss. Coincidences prove nothing, and no further authorize inferences than as they may be sustained by other circumstances, compelling us to give them a particular interpretation. The present church of St. Mary's, or, as it was afterwards consecrated, Trinity church, to gratify an anti-Roman mania, was erected during the rectorship of the Rev. R. H. B. Mitchell; but by whom designed I am not informed. The designer could not have expected that the building would render him as immortal as St. Paul's, London, did Sir Christopher Wren.

seemed to complete in a great measure what was wanting, to make these memorials and places tell a tale not devoid of interest or instruction.

But, in carrying out this plan, and especially in touching on the prominent points of difference between the Church of England and the See of Rome, as they were presented in the place and time he is considering, the writer has aimed higher than to narrate hair-breadth escapes, extravagant adventures, the billing of lovers, or the servile copying of meagre historical documents. He hopes he has accomplished his object without losing sight of a very important rule in all writing that is meant for circulation, "*tout genre est permis, hors le genre ennuyeux.*" The name or title of the book the reader will find justified by the story. The inference from the title however, that a harsh imputation is meant to be cast on the Romanist and Dissenting bodies, by comparing them to Pilate and Herod, the writer disclaims. He has no love for Rome, and was not trained in dissent from the doctrines of the Protestant Episcopal Church. What more is designed the work now submitted will sufficiently declare.

CHAPTER I.

A NIGHT RIDE—LETTERS FROM PARSON GORDON.

"Weird dweller in the past, thy wand hath power,
Enchantress memory! to wake the tones
Of other years, to clothe the mouldering bones
With beauty, and renew the faded flower:
To crown with auburn locks the hoary head,
To fill the silent chamber with the faces
Of buried love, and call affection's dead
From earth's deep cells, and ocean's secret places."
BLACKWOOD.

A FEW mouldering bricks and broken tiles, and a square pit, which is grown over with briars and bushes, mark the baronial seat of the lords proprietary of Baltimore.* But with "the Castle" has not also passed away the memory of the Calverts. It will long live in a noble city, and in the different counties which have been named after several members of the family, and after the barony with which George Calvert was honoured. This memory will live in the productions of more than one chronicler, and writer of pleasing fiction, who have blazoned forth the deeds of this noble house. And the members of the Church of Rome show no disposition to let it die by their frequent allusions to the first founders of Maryland.

* It is much to be regretted that no drawing is extant either of the State House or Castle.

The latter stood on the plain of St. Mary's, at the head of St. John's creek, and, as the creek ran up further than it does now, a view from the Castle may have presented the beautiful sheet of water, that washed two sides of the ancient city. "The Castle" fronted almost due west, and from the pit it appears to have been forty feet north and south, by forty feet east and west; which may have been a large building for that day in a wilderness; but, except by comparison with the Lilliputian story and half, and gable fronting buildings in the little metropolis, it hardly deserved the high sounding name of "The Castle." Still it is a crying shame that no effort has been made to preserve the little which remained of it,—that the bricks of the old wall have been nearly all carted away and spread upon the field about it, to make wheat and corn grow; and that even the tiles and their fragments, which were laid on the floor in the cellar, have shared the same fate. The spirit of agriculture, rightly directed, would advise all rubbish and trash to be hauled out and spread on the farm; but is it not rather a Gothic fervor, than an enlightened agricultural enterprise, that would pull down walls consecrated by historic associations, for the little manure contained in the bricks and mortar?

We turn however to a less known, but not less honourable theme.

Near the cemetery of the Calverts,* on the bank overlooking the beautiful river or bay of St. Mary's, lie the ruins of the old "Stadt House" in this ancient borough, and they may be said to be also the ruins of the old Church. For the same building was for more than a century hallowed, and but for injudicious zeal might perhaps still be hallowed by the worship of Almighty God. And in the same parish of William and Mary, (in the grave-yard of Poplar Hill church) without even a stone or wooden head piece to mark their "couch of lowly sleep," lie many of the early rectors of this, the first parish in Maryland. The Rev. Mr. Leigh Massey, who died soon after he entered in charge, alone comes down to us with a grave-yard testimony. The veracious marble reports of him rather than of the others, as "the darling of his flock, and beloved by all who knew him."

It was a dark night in January. A small house with two chambers on the ground floor, and a passage between, and an attic high enough to admit of a poet's room, perhaps, stood on the banks of a creek, now known as Smith's creek, in the lower part of St. Mary's county. A light streamed forth from it through the small windows on the exterior, and with the light came out the voice of one within, as if engaged in the act of praying. A man on horseback closely muffled up was riding slowly by on the public road, that ran within twenty feet of the front door. The light and noise within seemed to have arrested his attention, and riding near, so as to hear distinctly what was passing within, he paused some minutes.

* The Calvert-vault is still distinguishable, and, if the Romanists had in truth but a very small part of the veneration they proclaim so often for the Baltimore or Calvert family, it is very surprising that they have not placed on the summit of this vault an appropriate marble, or a monument of some kind, both to designate the spot, and testify their regard for the Calverts. The vault is about fifteen feet of the north-west angle of the church of St. Mary's. About thirty or more years ago, (for I write from memory of a vestry-record which I saw but once, and from a verbal explanation or statement made to me by a then vestryman of the parish, the late Richard Thomas, Esq., of St. Mary's, a worthy man, unhappily deceased) some young men, while under the influence of liquor, broke into this vault, forced open a leaden coffin, and discovered the corpse of a lady, who was supposed to be Lady Anne Calvert, adorned with trinkets, gold, and such a dress as denoted her rank. In a very short time, on exposure to the air, natural as seemed the corpse, it fell together, and became a mass of dust and bones.

"Wo to me!" said the voice within, "if I preach not the Gospel. But iniquity aboundeth, and prelacy hath made a covenant with the sons of Belial. Wo to me! if I preach not,—yea, cry aloud and spare not; for while the ox knoweth his owner, and the ass his master's crib, Israel doth not know, my people doth not consider. But my voice is feeble, my hands are tied—Truth is gagged—and the godly can but pray that the Lord of Sabaoth would come to the rescue." And this part of the prayer was followed by a groan, which seemed to come from the caverns of despair. "Yet why should I hold my peace? Why should I not gather the lambs that here are scattered as sheep having no shepherd? What to me is the law's power, and man's interference, and the letting and hindering of the children of the wicked one? Satan may be on his seat, and the idol dresses of the whore of Babylon, and the soul-slaying devices of this world may be in him who here ministereth; but what care I? Lord, thou canst lift up the fallen hands, and stay the feeble knees. Thou canst bless him who would hunt out on the dark mountains the poor souls who are here perishing; crying for bread, and finding only the mess of Esau; or the husks of hoggish feeding which a law church can give. Bless the anxious souls of this little household, with the sincere milk of the word; for they love thee with the perfectest love, and not with the deceivableness of those who can only worship in the dull and lifeless words of a book, that popery christened, and prelacy has adopted as its child."

"I can and will hear no more," said the man on horseback, and he rode quickly away, and the voice of the man in prayer soon ceased to be heard by him.

"Oh fanaticism!" said the horseman, as he rode along fast as the darkness would allow him, "what a perverter of the truth art thou! This poor man is doubtless a stray puritan, or non-conformist, that has found his way in my parish; and, being among a puritan family, for all of the Doolittle's are, though members of the church—puritans—he must needs exercise his supposed gifts among them; and can not draw nigh to God, even in leading the prayers of a family, without showing his malignancy to the Apostolic church of England. Little thought he," added the horseman, speaking mentally, "that the unworthy pastor he spoke of, (and unworthy, Lord, thou knowest I acknowledge

myself to be);” and here the speaker halted his horse, and bowing his head upon his breast, seemed to feel what he said, “overheard him.”

The horseman then hurried on, his horse’s hoofs clanging on the hard and, occasionally, flinty and gravelly road. He passed up and down hills, and then ascended one which enabled him to see the lights of the little city of St. Mary’s, toward which he was fast journeying. He was now on the plain of St. Mary’s, and house after house of the different citizens, that stood on the main street through which he hurried, passed in review. On reaching the plain he observed a number of persons coming out of a house to the right, that stood on an elevation a little back from the street. The horseman slackened his pace, to notice, it would appear, the persons who were in the street, as well as the starlight allowed him; and while so doing he buttoned his coat closely about his face.

“Mr. Hunter has had a secret conference to-night,” muttered the horseman to himself, as he resumed his travel, “with a few of his Roman congregation, and abettors. A fanatic preacher is circulating at one end of my charge, and both corrupting my flock, and invoking against me all the hard things that fanaticism can think of; and a Jesuit priest holds a conclave in the midst of my parish; and warily, and perhaps fatally, plots to the detriment alike of pastor and people; if He, who hath promised to be with the ministers of the Apostolic succession to the end of the world, doth not bless my ministry and service.”

The horseman now halted an instant before the outer gate of the castle, formerly the residence of my lord of Baltimore, and appeared to be undecided whether to ride in, or keep on. “My daughter is alone,” said he, soliloquizing, “unless Julia be with her; for Robin is out doubtless on a hunt, and I may be wanted by poor Adaratha; who, I fear, is fast passing towards that world where divisions, heresies, factions, strife, and every evil work, are not known. I will push on therefore.” And so saying, after throwing another glance at the castle, whose many lighted windows indicated that numerous guests were sharing the hospitalities of its occupant, the horseman resumed his route. He now reached the creek that separates St. Mary’s from the country to the north, and guiding his horse cautiously he forded it with some difficulty. Except a house to the right near the

creek, the horseman for nearly eight miles saw no vestige of a habitation, being the whole time in a dense deep forest. He next came to the head of St. Mary's river, known now as the Great Mills. Here were a few wigwams, and, as he drew near, a number of cur dogs, barking, most furiously assaulted him. Some Indians then came forward, and recognizing the horseman, they muttered their "how do," and "good bye," as he hastily accosted them; passing on without stopping. He again plunged into a deep forest, ascended a steep hill, and by a circuitous and well trodden path, pursued his way in an almost due Southern direction. After riding about six miles he came to an enclosure, in which he passed, and in a few minutes his horse halted before a house of a story and a half; from a lower room of which, to the left, could just be discerned a light. The horseman quickly dismounted, and knocked at the door.

"Who are you?" asked firmly a female voice within.

"My daughter unbar the door. I am very cold," said the horseman. An exclamation of joyful surprise was now heard. The door was instantly opened, and parson Gordon, the horseman mentioned, was locked in his daughter's embrace.

A few days after this night-ride, parson Gordon wrote the following letters to Dr. Aldrich, Dean of Christ's Church, Oxford.*

* Dr. Aldrich distinguished himself by his controversial writings in the reign of King James II. Bishop Burnet says, he "examined all the points of popery with a solidity of judgment, a clearness of arguing, a depth of learning, and a vivacity of writing, far beyond anything that had before that time appeared in our language." His architectural reputation was deservedly high. The Church of All Saints, Oxford, and the Chapel of Trinity College, were designed by him; and also the improvement of Christ Church College. "As Dean of Christ Church, he behaved in the most exemplary manner," (says Dr. Hook, in his Ecclesiastical Biography,) "zealously promoting learning, religion, and virtue, in the college over which he presided." Like his predecessor, Bishop Fell, he published every year "a piece of some ancient Greek author." He wrote also a work on logic, "*Artis Logicæ Compendium*," which is said to show a thorough mastery over all the forms of Aristotelian logic, and still to be used in the University of Oxford. Much of the cathedral music is his composition; is the author of twenty anthems, and of the popular catch:

"Hark! the bonny Christ's Church bells!"

To Dr. Aldrich the following humorous epigram is attributed—
"*Causæ Bibendi*."

"Si bene quid memini, causæ sunt quinque bibendi,
Hospitis adventus, praesens sitis, atque futura,
Aut vini bonitas, aut quaelibet altera causa."

He died at the Deanery of Christ Church, December 14, 1710.

"After many delays, your letter, my worthy dean, and respected friend, reached me in the course of this month. And I will redeem my promise to sketch to you our colonial history; so far as it is connected with the church, and the extension of the Gospel. I do this with the more pleasure, as my former letters, I fear, may have been rather too much in one strain: attempts to make music by an unskilful performer on one cord. I could not help it. The cares which were the burden of my song, gave a peculiar tone to my meditations; and our thoughts will travel down, and find their expression in the performances of our pen.

"You told me, I think, when I was with you enjoying your hospitality in Oxford, that you were acquainted with some members of the Calvert family, of Kipling, in Yorkshire, and had seen Cecil Calvert, the son of George, the first baron of Baltimore; while your letters evince an interest in the colony he founded. I believe, I mentioned to you that two Jesuit priests, Andrew White and John Altham, came to St. Mary's with two hundred gentlemen and their retainers, with Leonard Calvert; and that unfortunately no clergyman of the church of England accompanied them, so as to give it a fair start with the intruding see of Rome. True to their church and order, these Jesuit priests, aided by others who soon followed from the College of Douay, established four missions: one at St. Mary's, where the colonists landed; the second at Mattapany, which is near the mouth of a noble river, the Patuxent; the third on Kent Island, which is well up Chesapeake Bay, and where there had been a previous settlement of puritans; and the fourth among the Piscataway Indians. Thus, during the first ten years, you behold a few hundred colonists, who were dropt, as it were, in the midst of a wilderness, that was separated thousands of miles from the civilized world, most of whom were Romanists, and worshipped at the stations mentioned under priests of the Jesuit order; while the few members of the church of England having no pastor, either attended Divine service at the Roman stations or did not attend any place of public worship. Thus favored, Rome availed herself of a majority in the province to have passed at the second Legislature, which met in the third year *ab urbe condita*, an act for settling the glebe; which the proprietary could safely do, as the charter authorized all modes of faith. But this act gave the Roman station at St. Mary's

a landed endowment before the like had been given to the church of England. And Lord Baltimore further signalized the early legislation of the province by effecting the passage of a bill, that: "Holy church, within this province, shall have and enjoy her rights, liberties, and franchises, wholly and without blemish." Rome, as you well know, with an effrontery *sui generis*, assumes to be holy church exclusively, and Roman law-makers by the term referred to Rome only; though the Church of England, in all her formularies, and even in the Magna Charta, is known as holy church. This act, therefore, speaking of the rights, liberties, and franchises of the Church of Rome only, like the act which endowed a Roman glebe, seems to prove, if the proprietary was tolerant, his toleration particularly, and I may say solely, benefitted those of his own creed. As to what was meant by franchises, except for the sake of euphony, it is hard to resolve. Sanctuaries or asylums, such as are enjoyed by the churches and monasteries in Spain and Italy, you know no religious body can have within the jurisdiction of England.

"The next ten years did not pass so quietly. Some puritans under Richard Bennett settled at a place, which has since become the capital. You know the puritan party. What clergyman of the Church has not reason to know them? You have not forgotten how these declaimers on the much abused word conscience forget, at times, that any one has a conscience but themselves. No sooner are they permitted to rest the soles of their feet here, than they distinguish themselves in the Clayborne rebellion. They force Governor Calvert to fly to Virginia, and Clayborne and themselves take the reins of government, and which they hold till Governor Calvert, with the assistance of the churchmen of Virginia, takes them from them. This will not do; Governor Calvert, it would appear, said to his party on his return, after an absence of two years. We must pass a bill of universal toleration, in order that Catholics, who are in the minority, and are likely to be even more so, from the rapidly increasing Protestant population, may be free to worship under their 'own vine and fig tree.' Accordingly they passed the memorable act of 1649; but you will see that the complexion of the population was not Roman, from the bill enumerating, among the various religionists who need protection, 'Heretic, Schismatic, Idolator, Puritan, Independent, Presbyterian, Priest, Jesuit, Jesuited Papist,

Lutheran, Calvinist, Anabaptist, Brownist, Antinomian, Barrowists, Roundheads, and Separatist.' But the puritans were not content to be beaten. They declared Lord Baltimore's government to be that of anti-Christ, and, as Cromwell was their protector, and the puritans had the upper hand in the lower Provincial Assembly, they passed a bill, disallowing liberty of worship to 'papists, prelatists, and the licentious." Showing us, by the term prelatists, no more quarter than they did to papists and the licentious.

"During all this time we hear nothing of the Church of England; and we ask, shall we ever see her to be more than as a small and distant cloud that hangs upon the horizon? Less reasonable still does it appear that this cloud will ever gain force, and extending over the possessions of the British crown in the colonies, descend upon them in refreshing and life-giving showers of grace. But, while the Church of England is yet not in sight, our motley population, according to the act, received the addition of a new sect. There is safety in many counsellors. It seemed to be the opinion of some, there was safety in many creeds. For in 1670, George Fox who, as you are aware, founded the Quaker sect, came over to America. He visited St. Mary's, and preached in the State-house Square; being opposed to preaching in a house, on the ground that God did not dwell in temples made with hands. A large and select company, I have been told, was present. From this time quakerism became a new phase of religious opinion, besides the various others specified. The human mind, when it leaves the guidance of the Church, which 'is the pillar and the ground of the truth,' and ventures to travel alone, or to build on the hay and stubble of this world, (a very rotten foundation surely,) will imbibe opinions whose name is legion—whose color is that of the chameleon, and which have no fixedness: being inscribed on the heart, as writing is on the sea-shore, and will be washed away by the next tide.

"We come now to 1676,—and I wish to mark the date. New settlements are not distinguished for their morality. The population of the province appears to have been fearfully depraved. Manners and morals, (and the latter controls the former) were alike perverted. You see a tract of country divided into ten counties, and most thinly covered by a population of twenty thousand; and over this wide tract, to work out the old leaven, you behold but three

clergymen of the church of England. The Jesuit priests maintained their ground. The Quakers were organized into congregations at different sections of the province. The Independents and Baptists from Boston and Providence had also found the way here, and were making proselytes. As in Israel anciently, so here at the time spoken of, all was chaos, and 'every man did that which was right in the sight of his own eyes.' It is very possible, as self-delusion has hardly any bounds, that every man thought he was adding to the stock of religious knowledge. But where did this abandonment of the landmarks of ancient Christianity lead them? The Lord's Day was shamefully profaned. The reins of wild desire were let to fly loose about the neck. The passions armed with a lash seated themselves in the chariot, and on they drove furiously. The Reverend Mr. Yeo, who lived on the Patuxent, was roused by this sad condition of ungodliness predominant to address a letter to the Archbishop of Canterbury, in which he set forth the matters I stated, and uses this very strong language: 'The Lord's Day is profaned, religion is despised, and all notorious vices are committed; so that it is become a Sodom of uncleanness, and a pest-house of iniquity.'*

"The board of plantations summoned Lord Baltimore before them, and, in place of showing, as he should have done, that he had endowed, or favoured the endowment of churches for the worship of God, according to the forms of

* The Hon. Jno. P. Kennedy, in his "Rob of the Bowl, a Legend of St. Inigoe's," has taken, it pains me to say, an unwarrantable liberty with the good name of the Rev. Mr. Yeo; in representing him as an associate of Captain John Coode, Kenelm Chiseldine, and Ex-governor Josiah Fendall, in the plots and intrigues of the three last against the Proprietary government. Nil de mortuis nisi bonum, is a principle which I would no sooner charge one of Mr. Kennedy's position in the world of letters with violating wilfully than I would my more humble self; and it seems to be a principle of more than ordinary sacredness and force in its application to the character of a clergyman deceased as well as living. Yet what authority had Mr. Kennedy for holding up Parson Yeo to ridicule and execration? What is said about him to justify even in semblance such an exhibition to his disparagement?—all that I have been able to find is that the Rev. Mr. Yeo in 1676 was in St. Mary's County, and resided at a place called "Patuxent" which is supposed to have been not far from the mouth of the river of that name, by some, and by others the present residence of Dr. Briscoe, "Sotterly." From "Patuxent" Parson Yeo addressed a letter, as stated in the text, to the archbishop of Canterbury, making the complaint therein stated. Surely a clergyman may complain to his superior in office that the Governor or Proprietary does, and has done nothing, in obedience to the charter for the church, without being in rebellion against his government, or secretly in league with men who were laboring to overturn it.

*Patuxent is undoubtedly the same
as in Calicut near the mouth of
Mittel creek.*

our Apostolic Church of England, to which he was bound by the Charter, and which it was charged, he had not done, he appealed to the Toleration Act of 1649. For his late majesty, Charles I. could not, and did not intend the exclusive extension of the Roman faith in this province. It is expressly stated, in the charter to Cecilius Calvert, Baron of Baltimore, that Lord Baltimore's object 'was to propagate the Christian Faith,' and at the close of the charter it is added that no interpretation 'shall be admitted by which God's holy and truly Christian religion may in any wise suffer any prejudice or diminution.' But his majesty was sworn to defend the Christian Faith, and God's Holy and truly Christian religion as it was set forth in the English Prayer-Book, and through, and by a church of England ministry. It is not fair then to conclude he meant that Cecilius Calvert and his successors should aim to propagate the Roman faith, and the Roman religion; to the neglect of that faith and religion which the King's vows to the State, and his profession as a member of the Church of England bound him to maintain. His Lordship pleaded the Toleration Act of 1649. But to clear himself by this plea, he should have shown that the Act operated like the Roman charm of *opus operatum*; by itself endowed Churches and settled Glebes. His Lordship added that there were four clergymen, who were provided for by Glebes.* The board were not satisfied. You remember better than myself the fears then held by the members of our Church of the secret working of the papists. About that very time, such was the influence of this fear, you know, that his majesty Charles II. gave way to it, much doubtless against his own wishes, and published a Proclamation forbidding mass in the Queen's Chapel, or in the houses of the ambassadors, and the board of plantations sharing this distrust in papists, suspected Lord Baltimore of not acting with good faith. They told him it would be necessary to establish the

* One of these four Glebes consisted of between 390 and 430 acres, according to the various surveys I have seen of it, and was the gift of John Cager to the Corporation of St. Mary's County, "for the support of a protestant ministry in Poplar Hill and St. Georges' Hundred," to which particular reference is made in chapter 3 in the text. Another consisted of 550 acres, lying in Baltimore County, which was devised by a private individual also to the first protestant minister, who should take up his residence in that County, and his successors forever: and if, I mistake not, this Glebe was in the possession of the vestry of St. Jno's. Parish.

Church in the province as it was established in England. But this his lordship did not mean should be if he could prevent it: for on his return he made no attempt to have an establishment bill passed by the legislature. This unwillingness to provide for the clergy of the Church was remembered to Baltimore's injury when the Titus Oates conspiracy the following year, rendered the Roman Catholics objects of popular dislike—and with you the effect was the passage of a test oath, excluding Roman Catholic peers from a seat in Parliament, driving the Duke of York from the Privy Councils and the shedding of innocent blood. In Maryland the Titus Oates' excitement brought about 'the Protestant Revolution;' and the colonists from what I have been told, were as much alarmed as they were in England. They had reason to be much more so. In England the papists were a very small part of the population, and their machinations could not have been very hurtful. But here, as compared to the protestants, though fewer, they outnumbered them in St. Mary's town and county—and there were here no castles or walls to retreat to, no soldiers under pay to look to; and from the scattered state of the settlers, no trained bands of militia to call out for protection. Rude huts, cabins of logs and mud, and frame buildings, slightly put together, promised no security against a surprise. I was told that in 1688, or the memorable night, 'the Irish night,' all London trembled in fear of the Irish troops that Feversham had under command; and I should judge that a panic like that kept in this province for some days lights burning all night, and armed the settlers with every weapon they could lay their hands upon. Though the disturbance was quelled, yet Lord Baltimore received orders to put all the offices in the hands of protestants. King Charles II. had in this matter, as in other concessions to popular clamour against the Romanists, no choice. The Exclusion bill against the Duke of York was passed about the same time by the Commons,—and if he could not protect his own brother, he could not Lord Baltimore.

When James II. came to the throne, it was to be feared that the Church of England would suffer in the province a part at least of that injustice which she did from this narrow minded, bigoted, and self-willed monarch in the mother country. But this worst of sovereigns, while he could give the deanery you now have to the Romanist Massey, bestow

the bishopric of Chester, which Pearson adorned, on the unworthy Cartwright, and wished to put his chaplain, the Jesuit Petre, in the archbishopric of York, he only interfered in Maryland than to the injury of the proprietary; who, being of his faith had a claim on his protection. James II. was noted, as you know, for his parsimony, and probably thought the proprietary did not do him justice in the revenue. Wherefore at the instance of this father Petre, James II. (the year before his abdication, and the same time he put forth a Declaration of Indulgence in Scotland and England to seduce the nonconformists and Presbyterians to make common cause with the papists against the Church of England,) caused to be issued the writ of Quo Warranto against Lord Baltimore. But for his precipitate abdication the next year, the proprietary would have lost by a popish king, at the instance of a Jesuit priest, all the fond hopes of Catholic extension in this new world. Our protestant sovereign Charles I gave him the charter, a popish king wished to take it from him.

“The news that William, Prince of Orange had with the Princess Mary been declared King and Queen of England, produced a blaze in the province. The provincials thought they were bound to do as much against papists here as was done in the mother country. Hence there was ‘An association in arms for the defence of the protestant religion,’ at the head of which was a violent and able factionist, John Cooke, and so completely did the association carry their objects, that the offices were not only in England relieved of the corrupt Jeffries and the like; but here they were given to officers whom the new sovereigns had appointed. The assembly that met three years later returned thanks for the royal protection, and said they were happy to be relieved ‘from the arbitrary will and pleasure of a tyrannical popish government.’ How far the proprietary’s government deserved so to be stigmatized, I pretend not to determine. The language stands on the record of history, as the opinion then unanimously holden by the assembly of Maryland. However there was a charge of some gravity at the same time preferred against Lord Baltimore. It was alleged that ‘the churches, which by the charter should be consecrated according to the ecclesiastical laws of England, were converted to the uses of popish idolatry.’ This

charge was not even contradicted : though it was made and endorsed by the leading persons in the province."

Another letter from Parson Gordon, written a few days later continues the history.

"My dear Dean. I broke off in 1692. Sir Lionel Copley was the first royal governor; and the assembly had no sooner met than they passed an act for the establishment of the Protestant religion, by laying off the counties into parishes, and imposing a tax of forty pounds of tobacco per poll on each taxable person. This tax was not meant solely for the support of the clergy. For the act directs that it shall be applied, first to the erection of churches where there were none, *next to the support of clergymen where churches had been erected*, and lastly to the repairs of churches where there were no inducted clergymen in charge of them. By this act the province was laid off into thirty-one parishes. You will ask, where were thirty-one clergymen to be found? they were not found. Fortunately however for the destitute parishes, Sir Lionel Copley was succeeded by Sir Francis Nicholson, and he brought over a few clergymen. These he settled in cures, and soon thereafter caused a church establishment bill to be passed. About this time a great mortality nearly decimated the population of Charles County; and the Jesuit priests were not backward in turning this visitation of God to proselyting ends. They were charged with undue zeal on this fearful occasion, and the Governor at the instance of the assembly, by a proclamation prohibited "such extravagances and presumptions,"*—and Englishmen and their descendants have no cause to put any confidence in Romish priests, or their agents. We cannot forget the cruelty of Mary's reign. Old Bishop Latimer with his cap on, his spectacles hanging at his breast, his New Testament under his arm, and his staff in hand rises before us, shaking his palsied head; and then standing fastened by an iron chain to the stake at Smithfield. We see the great and profound Bishop Ridley standing at another

* McSherry, in his "History of Maryland," insinuates that such was the bigotry of the time, that the efforts of a few priests to alleviate the dying hours of the sufferers created more alarm than the disorder itself: while Dr. Hawks, in his "Ecclesiastical Contributions," to the History of Maryland, states: The priests of that Communion (Roman) too, introducing themselves into such protestant families as were without a parish-mininister, sought by attention and kindness to the sick within them, the *more readily to persuade them to abandon the protestant faith*. The underscoring is mine.

take, or chained and burning for abjuring Romish error; and we see the good Bishop Hooper burnt to death by a slow fire for his protestantism. No one can put faith in Romanists who remembers their conspiracies to put to death our late protestant sovereign Elizabeth, their gunpowder plot under Guy Fawkes: and which, I trust, our church may ever commemorate by prayers and processions. It would be folly and madness to trust bigots who believed they rendered God service in the shameful massacres of St. Bartholomew's day. One of the truest things the late Archbishop Tillotson said, was that pagans even, who had only the light of nature, were worthier members of society than men who had been schooled by popish casuists; and I must think with Locke, that, as Romanists are taught to keep no faith with heretics, and we know they do not, they have no just claims to toleration.

The church-establishment act gave great offence to all who differed from the Church, especially Quakers and Romanists. Yet there was much cry, and no wolf. The supply yielded by the tobacco tax is so inconsiderable, that, if the tax-payers have any ill will to the clergy, (and, I fear, in some quarters as I said there is much) this ill will must be gratified on finding the amount raised by the bill is just enough to keep the clergy, not off the poor list, but from being suspected of living like St. Paul without being a charge to any. It is evident that the lawmakers never contemplated a wealthy hierarchy in the province. The marriage fee until lately was five shillings. Now, by the act of the legislature, it is paid in tobacco, and any one, who can command a hundred pounds of tobacco, can pay 'the parson's charge for marrying.' Why then the cry against the poll tax? For political and factious purposes, and no other. It cannot be because like Hampden and Sydney, on a different occasion, they contest the right of the legislature to impose the tax? This cannot be because Romanists, where Rome is in the ascendant, contend for the perfect right of taxing the people to sustain the ministrations of religion. In Roman Catholic countries it is the uniform custom. The Quakers may insist on the abstract right of not being forced to support any form of religion, for they object to tithes and everything like it. But Quakers are no where the majority; and, never having had the power to coerce a tax for their benefit, they cannot be

charged with tyrannising over the consciences of others, using the language of the day. But in Boston the puritans do not hesitate to make all persons, churchmen and others, support the congregational or independent preachers. The abstract right of levying a tax to support the civil government no man in his senses denies. It would be hard to prove that the same law-making power may not levy a tax to support the ecclesiastical government; a government that is more effectually a terror to evil doers, and the praise of those who do well than all civil forfeitures and penalties, and the moral obligations to give to ministers of the Gospel is even stronger than that, which binds us to submit to, and uphold the civil powers, that are ordained of God.

“But meagre as is the tax, which is laid for the support of the clergy, and ungenerous and, considering the festal purpose, unsuitable the marriage fees, yet, out of this small support one thousand pounds of tobacco are deducted to pay the parish clerks. You will see then that we are in as little danger, as the poor curates in England, of sinning in the way of Dives.

“Above all, however, an outcry was raised about a clause in the bill of 1696, which said, ‘the Church of England within this province shall enjoy all and singular, her rights, privileges, and freedoms, as it is now, or shall be hereafter at any time established by law in the kingdom of England.’ A clause right and proper enough, if the province was a part of the kingdom of England: and only objectionable if the province was an independent government. Still in this age, ripe with disorganizers, the clause was bitterly assailed: and the Quakers and Romanists and Dissenters generally so objected to it, speciously, if not ably, that the board of plantations rejected the bill: and to complete our discomfiture a quaker brought to Maryland the news.

“But with the quaker-herald of bad tidings, came in the same ship Dr. Bray; who was sent as you know, in answer to our memorial by Tenison, his grace of Canterbury, to be the commissary in Maryland. It is hardly necessary that I should tell you a thrill of joy pervaded all friends of the Church on Dr. Bray’s arrival; nor how warmly he was greeted at Annapolis, nor enlarge on the characteristic zeal with which he exerted himself to fill the vacant parishes, and provide a maintenance for the clergy. It is also needless to do more than advert to the readiness of Governor

Blakistone to cooperate with him, and that, I should add, the far and widely detached clergy turned out gladly and thankfully to welcome him. The good commissary was not insensible to these tokens of regard: but resolved to turn them to account by holding a convocation at Annapolis. The legislature was in session the same month of May with the Convocation. Dr. Bray's sermons and manners won all hearts. A vote of thanks was passed by the assembly for his "admirable sermons;" and the attorney General was ordered to advise with him about an establishment bill. This was accordingly done, and a bill being drawn by their joint labour, the legislature immediately enacted it.

"But this new bill met with even less favour than the other from the Romanists and Quakers. It required every minister, and even reader, to use the Book of Common Prayer in every church, or other place of public worship within this province. Romanists and Quakers however, could not worship God, after the forms of the English Prayer Book, without as they said, doing what their consciences objected to, and they cried out that by the act they were denied the privileges of Divine worship. In the meanwhile the clergy met Dr. Bray in convocation, and besides the commissary, eighteen clergymen were assembled. Great and unfeigned, you may well suppose, were the rejoicings on the occasion. Surely, we said, the blessing of the Lord of Hosts hath descended upon the vine which his own right hand hath planted here in the wilderness, and the doings of Convocation gave the promise that this vine would here stretch out her branches unto the sea, and her boughs unto the river." Surely 'the wild boar' from the Tiber will not 'root it up, nor the wild beast of the field devour it.'* But in order that this last establishment-bill might receive the sovereign's assent, against the opposition of Papists and Dissenters, nothing less than Dr. Bray's personal efforts in England, we thought would do. All therefore urged the Commissary to return home without loss of time. This, you know, he did, and succeeded in effecting in due time the ratifying of a bill by the crown, and which William of Orange signed, with the laconic remark, 'Have the Quakers the benefit of a toleration? Let the established church have an established maintenance.' William of

* See "Proceedings" of this in the appendix to Dr. Hawks' history above mentioned.

Orange has gone and must render an account to Him by 'whom kings reign, and princes decree justice.' I liked him not, and it is the fashion now with many to disparage him.

"Though I think the Earl of Nottingham behaved badly in the House of Lords, by his harsh remarks on the memory of the late King William; yet we owe him no love or reverence for his nursing care of the Church of England. His commission to the bishops and church dignitaries to meet him in the Jerusalem Chamber, and make such changes in our liturgy and canons, as would bring the cavillers out of into the church, was a dangerous stretch of authority. You, and Dr. Jane, and Bishops Sprat and Meu, did well to denounce it. No surer way could have been taken to bring the Church into contempt, and divide the clergy. His murder of the confiding inhabitants of Glencoe, in my own unhappy country,—done by his order to Lord Stair,—proved him to be as cold in heart as he was in manner. I passed through there some time after, and saw and heard enough of burnt buildings, ruined households, butchered heads of families, and of women and bairns naked, destitute, unfed and unclothed, perishing in the snow, and begirt with the horrors of a dark night to make his name detestable. Neither Englishmen nor Church of Englandmen have reason to venerate very affectionately the memory of William of Orange. He was charged by Sir John Knight, as you remember, with wishing to flood England with Dutchmen; and with a secret purpose, at a fitting time, to remodel the religion of the country. Posterity will add of him, that he did much to injure that church whose prelates, clergy, and people, placed him on the throne. He nearly filled the Bench of Bishops with men who sympathized more with the followers of Calvin, than with our liturgy and articles. With disesteem of the liturgy came in Arianism and Socinianism, which, you know, are the results of Calvinism; so now we have two terms, heretofore unknown, high and low church. I often hear the former term, high churchman, used here as a term of reproach; and when I hear it, I quote Archdeacon Atterbury's remarks in reference to it. After stating, with the Archdeacon, that the name is used invidiously and calumniously, I give his explanation of it: that a high churchman is one who is for the present ecclesiastical establishment, who desires to live peaceably with all, who looks on rubrics and canons as morally binding, and who, therefore, odious as may

sound the title, 'is certainly a good Christian, and a good Englishman.'

"William of Orange gave us, I said, the Establishment Act; and since then we have had a perfect storm. It has been fruitful in no good. If it had made the clergy rich, and the people poor, it could not have made the clergy more unpopular. We get from it, in the best parishes, only £80, and this is generally in nomine, and always in tobacco; and the tobacco not always marketable.

"This statement, you will say, shows, that the Church here in the province, no more than in England, is an Eldorado. The wealthy dignitaries with you, lay and clerical, were startled when, in order to see how far our generous Queen Anne's Bounty Fund would go, it was ascertained that there were in England one thousand livings which did not yield over ten pounds a year, and that there were nearly six thousand livings which yielded each but fifty pounds annually. Hence, as the fund amounted to but thirteen thousand a year, it added to the livings only two pounds each a year.

"Colonel Seymour is now our governor, and we have reason to mourn that governors Nicholson and Blakistone should have such a successor.* Unable to return to the province, Dr. Bray, as you perhaps know, prevailed on Bishop Compton to give the commissary's place to Dr. Huetson, Archdeacon of Armagh. But our consequential and pragmatic governor refuses to allow Dr. Huetson, as commissary, to be the judge in testamentary causes, and in this way derive a part of his support. I say a part; for his receipts from this quarter would not overrun £300. And besides, provoked at the proposal, as if it aimed at the lowering of his dignity, by wishing to take a part of his perquisites, Seymour has declared he would have no commissary here, so long as he should be governor. Wherefore we cannot have a commissary: and a bishop is a blessing we dare not hope. The legislation of the province exhibits but little more, except a bill 'to prevent the growth of popery;' but it is really so harsh that, like certain medicines, it will rather increase than lessen the evil."

*Governor Seymour is more particularly alluded to in chapter xxviii. in the text. Hildreth, in his "History of the United States," does not paint him in attractive colors, when he speaks of him as Colonel Seymour, and as the Attorney-General in the Province of Virginia, where he resided previously, and where his selfishness and unyielding tyranny left not after him the most fragrant remembrance.

A third letter from Parson Gordon to Dean Aldrich, which followed soon after the others, touches on the state of morals that prevailed in the province, at the time of his coming out here. "You remember that the last two years of the last century, were marked in England by fearful immorality and irreverence. With the depravity of the reign of Charles II., there was something in the eyes of the populace to commend it. Men gave loose to dissoluteness of manners, not from a studied desire to do wrong, but from a desire of liberty, which the stern and unnatural restraints of the Cromwellian dynasty denied them. But the cavalier revelry in the next reign was followed by a spirit of scepticism, cavilling, and bold and presumptuous questioning on specious grounds of truths the most sacred. Men not only did wickedly, but as wickedly did they venture to reason. Impious books, adopting the most fatal opinions, were circulated; and men, who had not read five chapters in the Bible, would argue stiffly against the Trinity of persons in the Godhead. Your House of Commons called the attention of King William to this fact. But in the province the floodgate was left to empty its stream.

"Thus in my parish, there was one Shepard, who began by doubting the Trinity, and ended almost in questioning the Deity Himself. Lord Herbert's stupid work, '*De Veritate*,' was his text book; and, poor man! he contended strongly for natural religion, and the vanity and superfluity of the Scriptures.*

"Unfortunately Shepard had imbibed the sentiments of Herbert, and the impiety and profligacy of Rochester; being, like Rochester, a disciple of Herbert, and, like him, also inclined to drink deeply. He was able, besides, to set off the greatest extravagances with a wit and humor that seemed to justify and commend them. I was satisfied he had made Lord Rochester his model—that he relied implicitly on Lord Herbert's honesty; (for he often cited Herbert's ridiculous statement that, by a sign from heaven, God had assured him of the sufficiency of natural religion,) and I knew that Blount's deistical work, '*Anima Mundi*,' was considered by him as giving the seal of moral certainty to the cavils of deists.

* That Parson Gordon did not write without authority, the reader will see by consulting almost any history of Maryland, speaking of the times referred to; especially the work of Dr. Hawks.

"I alluded to Rochester's early death from debauchery, to warn Shepard of the danger of ending his days in the same way; and told him that Blount, by committing suicide, betrayed such cowardice and weakness as proved him to be a very unsafe Apostle of Truth. Great hopes, I added ironically, does your creed promise you in the future! Like the ghosts, in Homer's *Necromanteia*, you are permitted to look forward to a melancholy and doleful condition—borne down by wretchedness and gloom, and where your philosophy and boasted wisdom can effect no change or improvement.

"But my reasonings availed as little as would human breath to stay a tempest. Ribaldry, and low jests, and vapid argument, which had been disinterred from the mummy manuscripts of Celsus and Porphyry; and declamation which spent itself in noise, and made but froth, encountered me in the few circles where the show of fashion reigned. In all, Shepard's influence appeared, and perceptibly gained. He deified reason, and boasted that by it man could work out his destiny. Religion, he contended, was the weakness of ignorance, the superstition of old age tottering on the verge of eternity, and despairing of lingering longer here; hoping on another world, where its youth would be restored, and a career now about closing continued on forever. 'It is the dream of too credulous childhood,' he added, 'the roses fade, and the leaves wither and fall, and another spring brings them forth blooming and flourishing; and youth conjectures that so it must be with the human plant. The grave is but its bed to take a winter's nap, the resurrection is its spring or awaking. But all this,' he contended, 'is folly. There is no heaven beyond this earth, no deity to be adored more worthy of worship than the intellect defecated from the impurities of superstition.' While arguing thus, he was carried away by the feelings of the moment, and saw not the absurdities into which he was rushing. But I knew he had no faith in his own creed. I could discover from the want of soul in his face, and from his too manifest unhappiness, that his philosophy, like poison, killed but gave no life. He felt its baleful influence, and struggled hard to believe all was true that he said. Hence also his efforts to strengthen himself by making proselytes, and hence a studied endeavor to run away from himself.

On one occasion as I entered the house of one of my flock,
I heard Herrick's noted lines sung :—

"Gather the rose-buds while ye may,
Old time is still a flying;
And this same flower that smiles to-day,
To-morrow will be dying.

"The glorious lamp of heaven, the sun,
The higher he's a getting,
The sooner will his race be run,
And nearer he's to setting.

"The age is best which is the first,
When youth and blood are warmer;
But being spent, the worse and worst
Times still succeed the former."

The dangerous position here asserted that we should care only for the present,—but eat and drink, for to-morrow we die, at once struck me as that on which Shephard relied, and which was a rock on which himself and others would make shipwreck of their eternal welfare. Shepard was present, and I could distinguish his voice, as I did his person among the singers. True, said I, solemnly interrupting them :—

The glorious lamp of heav'n, the sun,
The higher he's a getting,
The sooner will his race be run,
And nearer he's to setting.

but what must be said of him, who, as he passes from his sunrise to his sunset of life, gets lower, not higher; and whose setting will soon close in a night of despair! True also in a certain sense

The age is best which is the first,
When youth and blood are warmer,
But being spent, the worse and worst
Times still succeed the former.

But miserably spent is that age, which, when youth and blood are warm, and faculties are fresh, vigorous, and unimpaired, like an unthrifty prodigal, spends it all, and can expect but worse and worst hereafter: having sown to the flesh must of the flesh reap corruption, and sinks into premature decay and age, without the rest that follows on labour; or the wisdom that age should bring with it! Gather then, I added—yes,

Gather the rose-buds while ye may,
Old Time is still a flying;
And this same flower that smiles to-day,
To-morrow will be dying.

But remember that rose buds are not long to be found in the path of the unrighteous and ungodly, but thorns and thistles that will prick to bleeding the hand that plucks them. Every thing bright and beautiful will soon vanish from his sight,—and the prospect before the contemner of his God, and rejecter of the Gospel, will be a desert of Sahara—a blasted heath.

The merriment flagged, the singers were not able to rally. Shepard's audacity for once abandoned him, and strange to say, yet, in the mysterious providence of God, this bold bad man soon thereafter was struck down by an illness that threatened to be fatal. I was sent for to go to him at the dead of night, and had to ride in pitchy darkness for about four hours before I reached his house. One line of the song kept ringing in my ears, as I went along,

“To-morrow will be dying.”

A dim light came from his bed-chamber,—a boon companion stood near him too paralysed by fear to administer either aid or comfort: an old domestic looked mournfully in answer to my question about his master,—and Shepard himself unable to speak, sought to press my hand,—and by a look most significant told me that, when death's hand is laid upon them, even in appearance only, there is no peace to the wicked. He recovered his speech in a few days, and his life was prolonged; but what a life? It was existence, for he breathed, and even talked at intervals, but existence with prolonged misery; with misery that takes the light and lustrousness of hope from the eye, and of peace from the heart, more surely than any bodily pain however great. He was “without hope and without God in the world.” His boon companions of other days were no longer company to him; but their presence rather called up images that were painful and hateful; and when they approached his bed-side, or spoke to him, his manner would express a disgust and aversion more significant than words. I observed this change in him, and asked him to explain it to me.

“I shall have their company in hell soon enough, and there will be no end to it; let me be rid of it the few days

I shall be here," was his reply. Again he said, "See that door. Could you by opening it, let me hear the groans of lost wretches in the midnight caves and dens,—I could hear no more distinctly than I hear now. Look out that window. It opens on the river I know: I once thought a lovely view. Well, plain as that view is to you, I see the river of hell; I see its surging billows; I hear, I *know* on it I am bound whence there is no return." And he groaned piteously, and his voice was full of the bitterness of sorrow. I prayed God to speak peace to him; and to rescue him from the awful fate he so much apprehended. He seemed a little calmer. I then, in as few words as I could, set before him the hopes of the Gospel. While I endeavoured rather to deepen than to abate his sense of the "indignation and wrath, tribulation and anguish that awaiteth every soul that doeth evil; still I assured him he must not conclude that he was "a vessel of wrath," against whom the door of mercy was closed forever; for God is merciful and gracious, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and that "He willeth not that any should perish, but that all men should come to repentance."

"True," said he, with forced calmness, "I have not always been a vessel of wrath. The day was, when at Coverdale Manor, under the noble shade of its oaks, I felt I was made for something better; not as I feel now, a vessel that infinite power has moulded out of dust, lit up with a ray of intelligence, and then dashed to pieces in his wrath; and each fragment of which, instead of being let alone to rot in the dung-hill, and pass to insensibility, is to be gathered and kept for the everlasting burnings. Then at Coverdale, a simple hearted boy, lisping by my mother's side her teachings from the Bible, her hand holding mine, I could hear a voice calling me to the skies. No harp sounded to me sweeter than the wind in those old trees. The clouds seemed to be painted in hues brighter than human coloring can imitate, and in forms surpassing our device, appeared to me as the gilded and gorgeous turrets of heaven, on which bright angels seemed to be standing with their robes of white. But no such window from that world opens on me now. Worse than the poor African, who is brought here and sold in our market by the Dutch and Boston traders, I go chained in a slave ship, that is not to drop anchor till she lays alongside the vast and gloomy territory of the damned." "But you

forget, my dear sir,' I replied, 'that our heavenly Father hath said, Wash you, make you clean; put away the evil of your doings from before mine eyes; cease to do evil; learn to do well: Come now, let us reason together, saith the Lord: Though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow: though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool.' 'As scarlet,' said he, catching at the word; 'as scarlet—my blood is scarlet, but it is warm; ah! my sins are deeper, deeper than scarlet, and the warmth they have is the heat of iniquity, that, like scalding water, has withered in me all that was fresh and lively. Crimson!—wool! Snow white! Yes, crimson they are: wool dyed with a crimson stain, dipped till they can become no deeper in the caldron of blood-dying guilt. And what now can whiten them?' 'The blood of Christ,' said I, 'the beloved Apostle tells us, cleanseth us from all sin. You forget also that the great multitude, which no man could number, whom the Apostle saw standing before the throne and the Lamb, clothed with white robes, had had their robes made white in the blood of the Lamb.'

"A change may yet take place for the better, I said to myself, as I rode home that day; but it must be the work of time, with the grace of God. The fairest piece of divine workmanship, when it is blotted over with sin, cannot become pure and clean in a moment. The stains of sin go deep, and leave a mark so indelible that no chemical power can wash it out. And, alas! what cleansing and purifying is needed to make the dark, bespotted, and foul soul of a confirmed worldling, like that of a little child! And yet this it must be to enter the kingdom of God. I was sensible that his case was a hard one, and that he had cause, poor man, to write bitter things against himself. At my next visit the following day, I brought before him more particularly the subject of repentance. 'I allow its necessity,' he replied, 'and if groaning be repentance; yea more, if remorse!' and he spoke this in a tone that made me start, 'that black curtain that shuts out all light from the soul, and then is wrapt around it as crape, to intimate the soul's death—if remorse, that ever going death watch that ticks to me the knell of the past, and the oncoming of the judgment—if remorse,' he raised himself in his bed, and looked around mournfully, 'that worm that never dies, here! here!' striking his breast, 'burning in me like fire, and then

shaking me like agues—if remorse, that fiend who allows a lost spirit to take one look of heaven, and then feel himself driven away; and on a gale of sulphurous heat hurled down where foot finds no bottom—if remorse! the sorrow of the world, and death of the heart: the ocean of wormwood that rolls over the soul, and on whose black billows it is driven; if this be repentance, I have repented.’

“Still I labored with him by prayer, doctrine, and precept; saw him often, but prevailed not, till after some time, to make him see in the future a plank to rest his feet on: having faith to advance his steps boldly, and go right on; assured that the everlasting arms would uphold him. With faith came true heartfelt repentance. With trust in God came showers that gladden the sick heart. The proud man was humbled, and made to trust; and his scalding tears fell as drops of dew on a bed of violets, causing to be sent up a freshened loveliness, and a charming fragrance. At another time he received the sacrament of the Lord’s Supper, and to the day of his death was a changed man—changed in temper, character, and current and way of reflection.

“He became fond of the Bible; and I cannot forget the remark he made: ‘When I felt myself too wise to believe in the Scriptures, and stood on the rotten raft which Blount and Rochester constructed, I thought I stood as sure as if the best white oak timber stood between me and a watery grave. But now I know how ignorant I was. This blessed book, that was to me a riddle of riddles, is full of meaning. The things of earth appear to be moving behind me: as to a traveller along a river side seem the objects he passes; and new things, hopes that bloomed slightly in my childhood but died, it seemed forever, spring up now continually around me. Promises in this book, that I counted the wildest folly to rely on, have become to me more precious, because richer in value, and more reliable as the draft of God on the treasury of heaven, than the notes of the bank of England for any amount.’

“With this foundation of faith and repentance, a lowly self-abasement, and a child-like reception of the means of grace, Shepard, I verily believe, ‘grew in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.’

“His sickness continued for months, and his physician assured me, from the first, he would never leave his room but to be carried to his long last home. In that time, having

the use of his faculties, and losing no time about it, he went from 'grace to grace, and from strength to strength.' The growth from a babe, unto the measure of the stature of the perfect man in Christ Jesus, is not accomplished in a moment, or instant of time. For, dear Dean, we know experimentally how true it is that, it is 'First the blade, then the ear, and last the full corn in the ear.' The noble plant of Christian meetness, ripe for harvest, groweth not up as Jonah's gourd in a night. The sturdy oak, that is able to bear the winds and tempests of life, every storm sending its roots deeper, and from the sunlight of heaven deriving additional strength, is the growth of years : and that Christianity, which like it will stand, must come on in time ; or like the mushroom, while it suddenly springs to life on the muck bed of corruption, like the mushroom, it will die in a day : wanting a good soil, and a nature capable of endurance.

"Shepard knew that his days were numbered, and that he had come to the end of the count. His vigor of intellect helped to prolong his life. His physical powers were nearly gone. His frame was attenuated to a shadow. Still his mind was calm, clear, and vigorous. His last words and act were characteristic of the strong faith he entertained in the Book of God : 'Let my epitaph be, Here lieth Augustus Shepard, who spent the best portion of his life in unbelief and ungodliness, but God graciously opened his eyes to see the wondrous things of His law, and he died a firmer believer in His Revelation than he had been a doubter and scorner. By his request a Bible was placed under his head, as a pillow in his coffin ; and a Bible sculptured on this marble that lies upon his resting place. May his head ever be pillowed on its promises ! and may its blessings ever find an abiding in his breast !' His request was literally carried out.

"My dear Dean, excuse this long letter ; and deem not out of place this sketch of one who filled no small space in the estimation of the people of this province."

CHAPTER II.

PARSON GORDON.

"His preaching much, but more his practice wrought
(A living sermon of the truths he taught,)
For this by rules severe his life he squar'd;
That all might see the doctrine which they heard,
For priests, he said, are patterns for the rest,
The gold of Heaven, who bear the God impressed."

DRYDEN.

A FIRE had been burning for sometime in the study of the parsonage of William and Mary in old St. Mary's County, until the logs being consumed nothing but a few bright coals and many ashes lay in the fire-place. So absorbed in the interim had been the worthy Rector, whose letters we copied in the foregoing chapters, in looking over some books which were in piles on the floor, that he had not found time, nor indeed thought it necessary to put on more wood. These books had just been taken out of the boxes, in which they had been sent, and were the library which the Rev. Dr. Bray the Commissary intended for William and Mary parish. While Parson Gordon was thus engaged, a rap was heard at the door, and he had hardly said, "Come in," and was in the act of rising to open it, than a gentleman past the middle age, who was rather low in stature, stout, with most benevolent face, and clear blue eye, and whose head was beautifully regular, large, and well formed, entered the room.

"I have come just in feast time," said the visitor, whom we shall introduce as James Holt, Esquire, a member of Mr. Gordon's congregation. "I have been anxiously waiting to hear of the arrival of your library."

"Ah, true!" said Parson Gordon, smiling, "our legislature seems to be very much afraid the clergy will tear, destroy, or in other ways make way with the books entrusted to their keeping. No pedagogue or parent could more carefully have cautioned the boys not to make dog leaves, or injure their books."

"Yes," said Mr. Holt, laughing; "under a heavy penalty

I, as a vestryman, am required to visit and inspect your library twice a year;—and your reverence, while allowed as a special favour to have the custody of the books, is made accountable for their good condition, and that none may be lost; whenever the Governor, his council and assistants may think proper to call upon you."

"You can report then that so many are in excellent order; never having been used; that others bear the marks of use, but are valuable nevertheless, as they are penciled by the annotations of Dr. Sherlock, Dr. Aldrich and other donors; and that a third class are so odorous with the fragrance of antiquity, that but with great care, the moth and worm may be tempted to make their meals upon them."

"I was anxious to see your library," replied Mr. Holt, seriously "for a better reason."

"You did not doubt the worthy Commissary's judgment to make a proper selection?" interrupted Parson Gordon.

"By no means," continued Mr. Holt, "but, as the books needed for a parish-library are costly, I feared he might not be able to procure them."

"Come in and be seated," said Mr. Gordon; "I am very glad to see you," greeting him cordially. "How do you like the Commissary's selection?"

"Well, as respects the number, I suppose there may be no objection;" replied Mr. Holt, smiling. "For you know some think there is more virtue in few good books than in many. So much so that it has become a maxim, 'Cave ab homine unius libri,' beware of the man of one book."

Mr. Gordon smiled, Mr. Holt continued:

"And Pliny and, I think, Seneca also advise much reading, but recommend that it be confined to few books."

"I cannot say," said Mr. Gordon, rising from his position, and seating himself alongside of his guest, "that I concur altogether in that opinion. I believe that many books may be an evil, as the mind may be overloaded, for cramming is not feeding. Still it seems safer to be, as Cicero says, *helluo librorum*, a devourer of books, than to be confined to a very few works for a considerable time, where the mind becomes tired of one dish, and wants variety. There is force I allow," seeing Mr. Holt about to interrupt him, "in the maxim about the man of one book: for if the

book be worth his exclusive study, by confining himself to it, he is sure in time to master it."

"No doubt of that, reverend sir," replied Mr. Holt, evidently pleased to be able to talk on this subject. "It is recorded, I think, greatly to the credit of Brutus that he gave his days and nights to the study of Polybius, and it is said the last evening of his life, before the battle of Philippi, he was busy epitomizing that historian. We know besides that Lord Clarendon in his admirable history was indebted to the study of Livy and Tacitus, and hence we have in his account of the rebellion Livy's copious and flowing style, and in the characters he portrays we behold that life like accuracy for which Tacitus was noted."

"A most excellent practice," said Mr. Gordon; "but, worthy sir, the mind must have liberty and range. Like a vast river it will not be pent within narrow bounds."

"Be this as it may," rejoined Mr. Holt, "you have forgotten that our ancestors were not great advocates for many books. If I am not mistaken, Richard de Bury, bishop of Durham, in the 14th century, had the first private library in England, and this consisted of only thirty or forty volumes; which he purchased of the abbot of St. Albans for fifty pounds weight of silver. A big price, I admit, though the books may have been worth that and more from their scarcity, and especially their intrinsic value. And you have perhaps heard, which it is hard to realize, that the library at Oxford, in the same century, was kept, not in stalls, book-cases, or on shelves, but in chests; and that this library consisted of a few tracts."

"Even so," said Parson Gordon, "but have you not overstated the matter? Necessity has no law. Our ancestors read comparatively but few books, because they had not many to read. As books multiply, I admit, men think less. When the ideas are already furnished to us, the mind is not forced to look inward for them. Great learning or much reading, neither supposes, nor will it give generally great wisdom. Bacon may be called the wisest of mankind, not however on account of the learning which abounds in his *Novum Organum*, or his other writings, but for the profound deductions which give to them so great a value. I am not therefore an advocate for reading any one book, that we cannot or ought not to digest, and out of it find materials which we can shape, as a skilful artificer, into creations no

less new and valuable than those which the book itself exhibits. Besides books must have been priced very high, or the bishop of Durham would not have rated them as much more than their weight in silver, And it appears that the rage for many books is not wholly a fever of one day. Old Tyrrannion, the grammarian, had a touch of it; for his library numbered over a thousand volumes. It burnt in the veins of Constantine along with the thirst of empire, and the rage of conquest: for he established a large library at Constantinople. Even the sturdy old Roman was not free from it; for the Ulpian and Palatine libraries at Rome are celebrated. Nor is this fever, if it be one, peculiar either to any age or people, or religion: since St. Jerome says that in his day the passion for large libraries prevailed among the ancient bishops, who endeavored to gather a library about every cathedral, or large church."

"Not a bad idea," said Mr. Holt. "Learning secular, no less than sacred, should be within the reach, and among the treasures of the clergy, and it will require every help, certainly not to enable your reverence to instruct your charge here, but to support you under the trials of a cure so remote from the walks of learning."

"But" continued Mr. Holt, "in all his directions about the qualifications of a bishop, or deacon, St. Paul no where insists on human learning; and your reverence has not forgotten that George Herbert said, 'The parson's library is a holy life.' As he said this, Mr. Holt smiled.

"St. Paul did this, however," replied Parson Gordon. "He advised Timothy, whom he had just made bishop in Ephesus, 'to give attendance to reading;' and he tells him to bring from Troas his manuscript he had left there. St. Paul's quotations from a Cretan poet, from Menander, and from Aratus, and the reference to the cabalistic symbols in his Epistle to the Hebrews prove both his resort to human learning, and his opinion of its value. The good bishop of St. David's, in exposing the Quakers, who count on inspiration for Divine light, says 'the Divine assistance and human industry always went together hand in hand, and an anathema is due to that doctrine that separates and divides them.' Alas! he well adds, 'See the age we live in, enthusiasm and atheism divide the spoil, and the former makes way for the latter, till at length it be devoured by it. In the meanwhile, enthusiasm fills the conventicle, and emp-

ties the church : silly people dance after its pipe, and are lured by it from their lawful, orthodox teachers, to run they know not whither, to hear they know not whom, and to learn they know not what." Besides, when Romanism abounded few of the clergy knew all the Decalogue, and could say correctly the offices of Baptism, and the mass. We live in an age of interest if not of improvement, of change if not of progress. Dr. Barrow in the prime of life, after leaving us the legacy of writings that for style and matter ever will be valuable, died soon after the Restoration. John Pearson, than whom our Church has never had one more accurately taught, more happy in elucidating her doctrine, and vindicating the ancient documents by which the teachings of the Fathers are ascertained, his light has ceased to burn at Chester. Tillotson, whose style I could not admire, but whose ability I must allow, and whose truckling to power and love of office I admire less, is no longer primate of Canterbury. Stillingfleet, the learned bishop of Worcester, who has handled Romanists better than any of his day, followed ; leaving this world, as the last year of the last century was leaving us."

"We have fallen upon an evil age," said Mr. Holt, "you would maintain? Why is not Tenison in Tillotson's place? If not a very learned theologian, he is not wanting in political craft, and if a whig," smiling as he spoke, "you must admit he is kind, generous, and even magnificent. Ecclesiastical affairs cannot be in a bad way when Sharpe, his grace of York, is her majesty's ghostly counsellor, nor those of state be worse, since Mr. St. John and Harley have the management."

"I think the present age promises far less for learning than that which has just passed," resumed Parson Gordon thoughtfully. "Bull of St. David's is still alive, and exhibits a remarkable instance of great erudition for a parish priest, who lived remote from libraries and college halls. The indefatigable Collier still writes, and long may he live to be the Church's historian. Ken, the good bishop of Bath and Wells, is in disgrace and poverty, Dr. South by sickness has lost much of his wonted fire and zeal, while my countryman, Burnet, of Sarum, flatters the whigs, and amuses and vexes the house of peers by his endless harangues, and Benjamin Hoadley boldly and unblushingly defends

rebellion in his late sermon before the Lord Mayor of London."

"That Irishman, Jonathan Swift," observed Mr. Holt, "whose Tale of a Tub has so much pleased the free thinkers in France, is not likely to help the age."

"No, interrupted the rector, "well do the wits at Burton's Coffee House, as I have been told, call him the eccentric Parson. He has ability, and so has the author of evil. But I am afraid heart and sensibility he has neither; or he would not say of the unholy murder of his majesty Charles I.

"That theatre produced an action truly great,
On which eternal acclamations wait."

"Well," resumed Mr. Holt, "I suppose I had best hold to my first opinion against the advantageousness in all cases of much reading; since to some minds much reading is as unsuitable, according to Lucian, as the armour of Achilles to the hump-back Thersites."

"Come, come," said Parson Gordon, "you have not answered my question about the Commissary's selection."

Mr. Holt stooped down, and taking up a book, exclaimed, "Ah! *Ecclesiasticæ Historiæ Gentis Anglorum*. The Ecclesiastical History of England by the venerable Bede. Strange! time lessens not the interest with which we read this book. The cloistered monk, and perhaps the veiled nun read it nearly a thousand years ago, and we read it now. If the clergy of our day were as exact as Bede says they were in his, the established Church would not move on so slowly."

"What do you refer to?"

"I intend no disparagement, reverend Sir. The quotation I alluded to is taken from the old canons which Bede has preserved. 'The priests were to preach every Sunday to the people, and give good examples. They were neither to hunt, or hawk, or dice; but to play with their book as becomes their condition.'"

"Most true," said Parson Gordon, "example is better than precept. The physician must heal himself. The best homily is a holy life. The best game is that playing with the Bible and Prayer Book, which enables us so to deal the cards as will show the people that our hearts ever turn upwards, that our diamonds, or treasures are 'where thieves

cannot break through nor steal,' and that we shall be most sadly trumped, if in the game of life we come out losers." Mr. Holt then laid his hand on a volume of Hooker, and laughed as he recalled the very particular charge which bishop Jewell gave him about the horse he lent him. "Ah! well, it little mattered," said Parson Gordon, "the good old bishop gave his young friend money, his walking staff, and a bishop's blessing twice,—and that blessing appears in his ecclesiastical polity. Even Clement VIII. of Rome had to say of it, 'There are in it such seeds of eternity as will continue till the last fire shall devour all learning.'"

"But it seems," continued Mr. Holt, "as Milton, the puritan poet, upbraided the maltreated Charles I., for giving his private hours to William Shakspeare the player, so Dr. Bray, aware of your taint in the same quarter,—a Jacobite or Stuart taint I suppose," smiling, "he has compassionated your solitude out here, and wishes to solace you either by Jaques' moral strain, or the good knight's humour, or to turn it to account by that richest of all his plays, Hamlet."

Parson Gordon took up one of the volumes, and first scanning the mean wood-cut that caricatured the great poet, and then glancing over the imperfect notices of his life, he replied, "Charles I. will not be the only good man who has given his private hours to William Shakspeare, the player."

After a while, Mr. Gordon continued, "Hamlet reminds me of an oak tree growing from an acorn, that was planted in a china vase. In sentiment how honorable and excellent! Even the skull of the jester Yorick, under his handling, becomes instinct with life. The eyeless sockets again beam forth intelligence. The crumbling jaw-bones are clothed with flesh, and the lips move in the playful joke, and the merry laugh; and then how admirably did he contrive to catch the conscience of the king! But still there was a screw or piece of the moral machinery out of place. The moral nerve struggled with purposes too vast for its power, and the delicate china vase cracked and shivered. Hamlet's resolution failed him when the time for action came."

"And what's this next?" interrupted Mr. Holt, "Milton—the poet, I suppose, some might say, though I do not exactly, whose varied learning and rythmic numbers lost him while wandering in wildering mazes over Paradise

lost. And verily a devout hater he of Episcopacy. He seemed to be a very proper person to describe a Pandemonium, who thought all governments were made to be overturned."

"Come, come," said Parson Gordon, "here's something better." And he put into his hand a folio edition of Jeremy Taylor. "See here's one whose learning was hardly inferior to Milton's, whose genius was only second to Shakspeare's, and who had, to crown all, grace and orthodoxy. For, as religion has pointed the shaft and inspired the workman, his efforts rise before us, not as a rude mass, gigantic and meaningless, but as a pillar of perfect proportions, which is rich in Corinthian adornments, and would bury its summit in the clouds."

"Ah! yes, yes," replied Mr. Holt, "the devoted bishop of Down and Connor. When came there from a barber's shop one so rich and gifted? This man's career has more shaken my faith in patrician blood than any other freak of fortune. On my word, what was there in the shop of a Cambridge barber to inspire the boy! The ancient barber-shops had a lute or viol; and perhaps old Taylor, Jeremy's father, may have had music in his shop, to call out the youth's imagination, but it was astonishing. But I forget," continued Mr. Holt, rising, "the business which brought me here. If your reverence will put on your overcoat, and walk with me to the creek-side, we will talk the matter over."

The two then walked out together.

"We have trouble in the province," said Mr. Holt, first breaking silence. Parson Gordon stopt, and, with some anxiety depicted on his face, asked him to explain.

"Why your reverence needs not to be informed that his Excellency Governor Seymour is a puritan; that puritans are never content to let others alone, especially in matters of faith, and that he is likely to miss no occasion of rendering the clergy a left hand kindness."

"True, true," said Parson Gordon with some impatience. "What then?"

"Reports are rife," continued Mr. Holt, "that he, or rather his friends, propose to bring a bill before our next Assembly to establish an ecclesiastical court, to take cognizance of the offences and misdemeanors of the clergy; and in order to prevail on the Assembly to create a court with

such singular powers, he knows it will be necessary to produce the impression that the clergy violate order, decency, and morals."

"Which he cannot do," interrupted Parson Gordon, "and therefore his ill will to the church will explode into air."

"Which he may very easily do, allow me to tell you," said Mr. Holt. "What is easier than to hunt up charges against a clergyman? What easier than to find some credulous enough to believe them, though extravagant and remote from the truth? And men can be found, I blush to say so for poor human nature, who, under the garb of piety, and with professions of zeal for the truth, may be prevailed upon to act the part of moral scavengers in every parish:—gather together all the scandal they can glean, or, with a wonderfully inventive imagination, dream that they heard it. There will be no difficulty in making the clergy as bad as his Excellency would wish them to be; whenever, by the creation of the court I mentioned, he will have it in his power to summon them before him, and on conviction, take their livings from them."

"The latter will be no great robbery," interrupted Parson Gordon, with a smile; and then looking more grave, "I see how it might be as you represent; and now that I think of it, I may mention an incident that occurred the other night," and Parson Gordon detailed the discovery he made, as we stated in the preceding chapter, while riding by the house of Mrs. Doolittle, near the lower end of the parish. "Perhaps," he added, "this poor man comes here charged with a like errand? But I fear him less than I do the schemings in another quarter."

"At the lower end of your parish?" replied Mr. Holt. "Yes, and you have reason to look with distrust on whatever proceeds from that point. We lawyers dread most those antagonists who deal in the quirks and turns of the profession, who show no more of their defences than they are obliged to, and who, wrapping themselves up in obscurity, or in specious pretences, design to assail when we least expect it. Father Hunter is a deep man, sir. Plots and counterplots are his very food. He has kept this parish always in a ferment; and now, I understood lately, that insinuations were out impeaching your orders—your soundness as a churchman, and your reliability as a trust-worthy subject of her majesty."

"Ah! how is this made out?"

"You have heard of the Tulchan or calf episcopate of Scotland—though that never had Apostolic life, and has been visibly dead years before your birth—thence it is said came your orders; as a churchman, it is said, you lean to the non-jurors; and, being a Jacobite, you favor the Pretender," laughing.

"What has this to do, though I am a sufferer, with the bill proposed?"

"Your unworthiness being shown, as I stated," and Mr. Holt wished to smile, "Governor Seymour will feel authorized to arraign you before his court and deprive you of the living of this parish. Then, singular as it may seem, by a Jesuit priest's contrivance, a puritan preacher will succeed you. The man, you heard, then comes for that purpose. John Dryden described, I am tempted to believe, the class to which this intruder belongs only as it deserves, when he called them,

'A wolfish race,
With belly gaunt and famished face;'

and he would say of this puritan, he "pricks up his predestinating ears" to catch the whisper of factious clamour. That night meeting at Mr. Durford's, in St. Mary's, was designed, I fear therefore, for no good end for the Church of England."

And the two debated for some time how the trap, which, it seemed, was about to be laid for the clergy of the establishment, might be made harmless. After an hour's conversation on this subject, Mr. Holt took his leave.

The Reverend George Gordon was a native of Perthshire, Scotland, and passed the early days of his life in sight of the beautiful Loch Dochart, and from whose romantic scenery, no doubt, derived much of that exalted temperament and passionate fondness for the beautiful in nature, which afterwards distinguished him. His education from books was at first very indifferent. Still to him Scotland, as to Wordsworth's Wanderer, was a place, though he

'Sprang from a stock of lowly parentage,
Where many a sheltered and well tended plant
Bears, on the humblest ground of social life,
Blossoms of piety and innocence.'

And we may add, of learning and of genius also. For,

while Ireland was buried in darkness, her chieftains alike barbarous and ignorant, and her people so unlettered as to believe any fable which Jesuit priests might inculcate, and to credit legends for Gospel narratives, the Scotch were remarkable for intellectual ability and cultivation. They were poor, and far behind the English in the comforts of life, and the manners of society; but they were quite equal to them in scientific researches. As the countryman of Buchanan and Napier, and of that poetical people whose ballads even to our day are distinguished, Mr. Gordon appears to have inherited a portion of his countrymen's shrewdness, quickness, vigor, and perseverance. And he was not the man to let slip unimproved the means offered him in an unexpected quarter. Near his residence, and situated on Lake Dochart, was an island, which was remarkable for a lofty promontory that became a noted landmark a great distance off. This promontory was crowned with the ruins of an ancient castle, whose history was involved in much obscurity, and whose former owners were either dead or unknown. The wild beauty of the scenery, and the deep shadow of the promontory on the waters, which flowed placidly below, was in itself enough to tempt him out in his light boat on a spring or summer day.

But the ruins of that ancient castle had an attraction yet more potent than the most captivating scenery. Here lived, with a widowed father, a lovely girl, whom the young Gordon no sooner saw than he determined to be acquainted with.

Rumor said that her father, Mr. Eustace, was an English clergyman, and had been deprived of his living by the puritans of the Long Parliament; and, from conversing frequently with him, Mr. Gordon found that he was attached to the principles of the Church of England, and was familiar with, and loved to quote the writings of Jewell, Bramhall, Hooker, Hall, and other divines, whose imperishable works are calculated to beget and foster this attachment. Eustace he found to be very retiring, confining himself as closely to his library, which was in the left wing of the castle, as if he were still taking his first quaff at the fount of knowledge. Retiring, however, as Eustace was, young Gordon found him always communicative.

Anne, the lovely daughter, Gordon saw only occasionally, and generally in the presence of her father; the rich thoughts of whose mind, at times welling forth, imparted a

value that Gordon could not but appreciate, even in the company of Anne. Hence the intercourse of the young people was so overruled that they had had but few opportunities of alluding to those topics, which the idle minds of youths are too frequently betrayed into; and this check, while it did not prevent that regard, and perhaps love, so natural as the result of intercourse between the sexes, prevented a rash committal by a hasty and ill advised engagement. However, when the time drew near for the youth Gordon to go to the Academy of Perth, his affections were so far committed to Anne, he was glad, on calling at the castle to say good bye, that her father had walked out, and Anne was alone in the library.

"I cannot go, dearest Anne," said he, taking her hand, "without the assurance, at least hope, that on my return you will recognise me as nearer to you than an acquaintance or friend."

"Young man," interrupted the voice of Eustace, who had entered unperceived, and whose tone and manner were alike stern. "My daughter's ear is not versed in the pratings of youthful indiscretion. She understands no language which her father either has not taught her, or of which he may not be the interpreter." The youth was not only abashed, but for the moment confounded; and, before he could recover himself to reply, which he did in a few minutes, Eustace had ordered his daughter to leave the room, and the father and suitor were alone together.

"Enough, I say," continued Eustace impatiently, seeing that Gordon demanded to know why he had acted thus. "I have heard enough. No more. Go—the way to honorable distinction, I was about to say, is open to you. But no. It matters not." And, as he spoke, his lips trembled, and his face blanched; as if checked by painful recollections. "Go, I say: the way to learning and true wisdom is open to you. It lies not in the way of honours or dignities, offices or affluence; but it is open to you; and to all who will patiently walk it; and you may by due effort raise yourself above these lairds and nobles, besides being above the boors and peasants of this land, and then I may hear you." He stopt, overcome by his feelings, and moved slowly to the door.

"I may speak to Anne then?" said the youth.

"No more, I tell you," replied Eustace, having now

reached the door. "Anne, Anne," calling his daughter, "George is about to go." The maiden entered. Not a word was said. A silent adieu was signified by a kind pressure of the hand on all sides; and the youth with feelings not to be envied left the castle. Time brought round the wished for vacation, and the youth and maiden again met; but on a certain subject his lips were sealed. He then went to the University of St. Andrews, where he completed his education. While at the University his feelings were enlisted in behalf of the church, (which as our readers know had been established in Scotland by Charles I.) by the persecution to which the clergy were subjected by the Covenanters. He heard the latter designate the clergy as "mere curates of the King, and dumb dogs who could not bark." He saw those infamous covenanting publications, "Naphthali," and "The Hind let loose;" which advocated and urged the assassination of the archbishop of St. Andrew's, and he was at the University when Sharpe, the aged archbishop mentioned, was murdered in the bishop's wood not far from St. Andrew's.* These atrocities of the Presbyterians, acting on a mind like young Gordon's, served to confirm him in his regard for the persecuted and down-trodden episcopal church of Scotland. And where they failed other things no less objectionable on the part of the covenanters finished with producing this regard. What but dislike could he feel for the covenanters, when he saw that they not only forbade any one to worship publicly as it is set forth in the Prayer Book, but even to use this book in private? All must pray extempore, or after the set form of the Covenanters, or in the words of a living and then improvising, covenanting gospeller. To take the Prayer-Book, and with its noble collects draw nigh to God was accounted a sin demanding fine, imprisonment, torture, perhaps death. With the puritans of England, they kept Christmas as a fast, and instead of thanking God that on that day centuries ago was born unto them a "Saviour, who is Christ the Lord," they made many lamentations, (sincere they could not have been,) because for many years their ancestors had passed a part

* The circumstances mentioned in the text, viz. the murder of the venerable archbishop of St. Andrews, the atrocities perpetrated by the Presbyterians, and their ridiculous superstitions and blasphemous remarks, and their infamous publications, "Naphthali, and the Hind Let Loose," the reader will find mentioned or alluded to in nearly every history of Scotland: especially that very valuable work, "Lawson's History of the Scottish Episcopal Church." 2 vols. 8vo.

of Christmas day in sports under the mistletoe, eating boar's head, and in drinking ale, which was made palatable by roasted apples. Of such hypocrisy and superstitious nonsense, and vain babblings, Mr. Gordon was sick, and he returned to Perthshire in heart and mind a churchman. On his arrival his father was dead, and Eustace was fast sinking; the latter lived just long enough to give his consent to the union of his daughter with Gordon. Soon thereafter he was admitted to the diaconate, and then to the priesthood by Dr. Robert Douglas, the bishop of Dunblane; and in about a year after the death of Eustace Mr. Gordon was married to the lovely Anne of the Castle. The Revolution which drove James II. from England, now broke out, and the Cameronian presbyterians, or "Hillmen" as they were termed, signalized the Christmas of that year by insulting the clergy, plundering their houses, and taking the church-keys from them, they tore their gowns over their heads, as their "testimony against Episcopacy." An assault of like nature would have been made upon Mr. Gordon; but aware of his great strength and resolution they were afraid to attempt it. The Cameronians however assaulted his house. Mr. Gordon did not think it his duty to submit patiently to violences from a quarter which he believed was as hateful to God as to the government. Hence aided by a few of his parishioners, and particularly by one McGregor, a devoted dependant, he succeeded in keeping the enemy at bay till night. After dark he planned their escape. The McGregor mentioned in a boat dropt below the promontory, and about midnight, in order to deceive the assailants, Mr. Gordon left lights burning in the Castle; and then by a private stairway found an outlet to the lake from the castle-cellar: and succeeded in reaching the boat with his wife, an infant, and a few friends without being, as he supposed, discovered. About the castle all seemed to be still as death. The boat was about to move off, when a man wrapt in a large cloak appeared to have detected the fugitives, and was hurrying to the guard-room to give the alarm.

"We are lost!" said Parson Gordon, pressing to him his frightened wife and his helpless child; "the Cameronians will easily intercept us." But at this moment the McGregor follower sprang hastily ashore, and threw himself between the would-be-informant and the road to the guard-room of the Cameronian besiegers. Swords were drawn by the two.

The parties fought hard and with spirit; but McGregor, pushing his antagonist closer and closer, obliged him to retreat, till he had forced him to the brink of the promontory; and while the latter stood there resolved to retreat no further, with the resolution of desperation expressed in every look and action, McGregor, letting go his sword, caught his antagonist around the body, and endeavored to throw him over the giddy promontory into the lake below. The combatants, with every muscle strained to the utmost, stood each on one foot, while the other foot was poised almost over the abyss, and the only hope remained that one of them would be able to throw the other over, and at the same time be able to free himself from his antagonist. McGregor succeeded in lifting his enemy up, and had swung his body at least half over the chasm. The other meanwhile, pulling McGregor towards him, thereby gave unconsciously increased danger to his own position. The equipoise by this movement was destroyed. The Cameronian began to fall, and holding on to McGregor drew him over with him into the lake. Splash sounded the descent into the water, and both went under to rise perhaps no more; or perhaps to grapple in a death-struggle, and then both to sink victims to the conqueror. But in a little while one of them was seen to rise, and, brushing aside his wet hair, look anxiously around to see where he was. He soon made for the boat; and most thankful were Mr. Gordon and his party that McGregor was the survivor. They then pulled manfully for Mr. Gordon's former residence; for, as one minute's delay might have been fatal, leading to their discovery, they did not stop to know the fate of the Cameronian. Soon thereafter they were in Dunbarton. Next Mr. Gordon was called by some business to Oxford; where he became acquainted with Dr. Aldrich, Dean of Christ's Church; and at whose representation he was persuaded to turn his face to America. He came to the Province of Maryland, and succeeded the Rev. Benjamin Nobbes in the cure of William and Mary parish. But he was not long in Maryland before his devoted and excellent lady fell a victim to the fall-sickness. Beneath a large poplar, fronting the door of Poplar Hill Church, her grave was dug; and as he turned away from the lowly couch of her he loved best of all, Parson Gordon thought of the exequy of Henry King, bishop of Chichester, over his wife:

“Sleep on, my love, in thy cold bed
Never to be disquieted :
My last ‘good night !’ thou wilt not wake,
Till I thy fate shall overtake ;
Till age, or grief, or sickness, must
Marry my body to that dust
It so much loves ; and fill the room
My heart keeps empty in thy tomb.”

“A sad good night this !” continued he, choking with uncontrollable emotion ; “and oh ? when shall I see one good morrow, that is to have no setting ?” From the foregoing narrative Parson Gordon’s character cannot be wholly unknown to our readers. In courage, ardour, and strength it is believed he surpassed most men : and that, though a minister of the Gospel of peace, and a meek man besides, he would have figured in a joust or tournament, where great bodily activity and strength were necessary. For his limbs were large, his chest was of great breadth, and his head seemed to rest on his shoulders. He carried no superfluous flesh ; being an admirable specimen of the bilious temperament, with a sallow complexion, and hair between the golden and flaxen in colour. But Parson Gordon’s great merit appears to have been his moral and intellectual qualities, which were *sui generis*. His firmness, as was expressed by rather too marked and uniform compression of the lips together with the piercing gaze of pale grey eyes, seemed to be the predominant feature of his character, and this firmness amounted at times to a love of power, as was said by some who certainly did not understand him.

His was not the mind to be anchored right or wrong to an opinion, and there holding on, likely to subject every thing to tide and storm : for his mind, with all its firmness, like a vessel sure of her anchorage, could swing to and fro, and thus calmly survey its position. For his firmness seems to have been the result of moral conviction ; in which his excellent understanding acted rather as an ally than dictator to his heart and conscience.

His ardent temperament and fearlessness, together with the secluded life which he led, may have imparted to his manner a roughness and quickness that seemed to evince perhaps too much independence of the rules, which in society regulate our intercourse : and of which however he was at the time unconscious. For amidst this apparent roughness, there was a chasteness of imagination rarely to be found, and a gentleness of nature nearly feminine. And no

one more than himself manifested a desire to be at all times the Christian gentleman. He had long sought to express himself in that style which would best convey his meaning. According to him style being more than the dress of thought, rather a part of the thought itself, its shape and mould; a vase in and through which thought burned and sought to give out its light. For he doubted if a bright idea could be seen in a vulgar style, as light cannot shine through an earthen vessel: contending that thought would glow in a pure style, as a candle in a vase of alabaster, while, like a lamp burning brightly through a crystal vase, thoughts of flame blaze out in burning words.

Two feelings in Parson Gordon appeared to be continually in conflict; unselfish benevolence, and a rigid pursuance of what he deemed just and equitable.

In him the sternness, which Adam gave as a legacy to his sons, it is said, was married to "all the tenderness which Eve has transmitted to her daughters." He would condemn wrong doers in plain, unmeasured, and even withering language; and yet would shed tears at the sight of distress he could not relieve; and would give at times even to prodigality to an object, whom he afterwards discovered was unworthy. He had another peculiarity not common in our day. Unlike many men he did not seem inclined to hoard either his thoughts or money; as if afraid to spend or exhibit either. He could "unmask his mind, and unbutton his brains fearlessly." Without reserve or fear, speaking his sentiments, and deeming it no evidence of manliness to be above the feelings and tenderness of humanity: as it was often and indeed his favorite remark; "In the use of the comparatively slender means with which Providence has blessed me, I hold myself only a trustee, or almoner for the benefit of others." Besides, Parson Gordon is reported to have been ever active and employed. Work incessant, mental as well as bodily, appeared to him to be both a duty and pleasure, if not more, the tenure on which he held his health.

"Let me die," one day said he, "before I cease to be useful:" and hence he believed with George Herbert, that "God bestowed upon man every gift but one, and that was rest; and this He reserved to Himself:" because, added Parson Gordon, God ordains us to labour till tired nature seeks the couch of the tomb; and then the wearied and

overworked heart and brain may attain to the last and best blessing of rest, by returning to God.

Than Parson Gordon, few pastors ever perhaps have been more assiduous, or more exposed themselves to wind and weather day and night. In his study he loved to drink in the solemn wisdom, and the cloud-lifting aspirations of the good and great. In his closet and with his family his altar seemed to lean on the eternal throne. Among his people he moved as one who was impressed with the awful thought, "Woe is me if I preach not the Gospel!"

"At church with meek and unaffected grace,
His looks adorned the venerable place."

He evinced no attempt to play the orator, and no stooping from the lofty position of Christ's ambassador. His manner there was ever solemn. His voice was a strong, full, and sonorous base. When he spoke of the terrors of the law, he spoke as if he had stood with Moses on the burning mount; but instead of a harsh or denunciatory tone or manner, in a way the most moving, like the great Apostle, he sought to "persuade men."

But especially did his noble heart, it was said, let out its emotions, when he spoke of "the love of Christ which passeth knowledge." Then his voice would assume a tone the most melting, his manner bespeak love and tenderness to overflowing; and it was impossible to hear him without feeling that the preacher had caught a portion of the unspeakable love and the charity which is unfailing, of which his heart seemed to be so full; and it was as impossible not to catch from him a portion of the same. Consequently, Parson Gordon's manner ever was sincere and natural. His words came from him never school-boy like,—nor as a mere salaried orator who has a discourse of half an hour to deliver in a certain style; but they came from his heart, and were or seemed to be

"Veræ voces ab imo pectore."

Being never frivolous, or forgetful of his high position and responsibilities as Christ's ambassador, his manner in the house of God was ever grave and animated; bespoke unction, a zeal for his Master's cause, and the fervor of one who felt that on him rested in a measure the souls of his flock. His discourses also were, it is stated, eminently practical, and commended to attention by a manner that was

never contemptible or unseemly, but persuasive and winning. He thought no ability, gifts, or lights were too much for the ministry; but still carefully avoided a metaphysical and scholastic manner,—a fault so common in the divines that flourished before the restoration of Charles II. His reading must have been extensive, while his sources of information were chiefly the Book of God and the heart of man: believing that a good textuary cannot be a poor divine, and that, as it was said of Christ, “He knew what was in man,” even so the ministers and stewards of His flock, should, in order like him to be able to win souls, “to draw all men,”—read the hearts of their people, as He did that of the woman of Samaria, forcing her to exclaim, “Come, see a man which told me all things that ever I did.”

And above all, his life was in keeping with his profession. He felt the incalculable value of immortal souls, and by prayer and meditation, and by observing the duty of fasting, he endeavored to acquire that divine meetness without which learning and genius are both unavailing.

We learn this much and more from the resources to which we are indebted for our narrative. That justice, though tardy, might be done to the worthy Rector, we have dwelt thus long on his many noble qualities. May like qualities be shared by others in the holy ministry, as we doubt not they are; where the loftiest and best gifts will find employment, and meet their full reward.

CHAPTER III.

THE GLEBE—PARSON SLATER—AN INDIAN STORY.

"And look, how soft in yonder radiant wave,
The dying sun prepares his golden grave!
Oh great Potomac! oh you banks of shade!
You mighty scenes in nature's morning made,
While still in rich magnificence of prime,
She poured her wonders, lavishly sublime."

MOORE.

THE population of St. Mary's county, was chiefly Roman Catholic; while the comparatively few members of the church of England in the county resided mostly in Poplar Hill and St. George's Hundred, and in detached settlements in the county viz. : at Choptico on the Wicomico, at or near what is now Benedict on the Patuxent river, and lower down near the mouth of this river; which settlements were nuclei around which gathered the present parishes of William and Mary, King and Queen, All Faith, and St. Andrew's, and, using the term nuclei in an astronomical sense, we trust that these parishes may ever be nuclei, or bodies, from which through the labours of their Rectors, stream forth light on the dwellers around. The church of England settlement in St. George's and Poplar Hill Hundred, though as a settlement, only second in priority to that at the ancient city of St. Mary's appears to have been always feeble; and the Rector, if not able to support himself out of the resources of his private fortune, drew for some time a precarious and miserable maintenance from the irregular and capricious benefactions of the few gentlemen in that vicinity; who, from family pride, regard to the Church, or partiality to the minister himself, opened to him their houses and purses. Imagine to yourself, gentle reader, a low flat plain elevated about two feet above the water's edge, and covered with a heavy growth of oaks, hickories, and other forest trees, with a small clearing on the right bank of St. George's river, and about a mile from its head. On this clearing is a hut or cabin with one small room twelve feet by fourteen, and seven feet high; and a

garret or loft to be reached by a ladder high enough for a man to walk under by stooping his head. There is one chimney which is made, like the house of logs; and the air from which is after a fashion excluded by mud, used as plastering. The walls are logged, but neither plastered, whitewashed, painted, papered, nor covered in any way. A sorry bed-stead is in one corner, which is covered by a shuck mattress, with bed clothing that appears once to have been genteel; the coverlet being an ingeniously contrived piece of embroidery, designed to bring out some story of classic mythology; but now so worn as to be nearly useless. There are about half a dozen stools rudely constructed without backs to them. The floor is as naked as the walls and ceiling. The only thing comfortable about the room is a large fire, over which a delicate woman is stooping; being busied in preparing the homely meal for herself and her husband; a small spare and wan person, who is sitting near with a just published work of George Bull, then Rector of the little parish of Suddington, St. Mary.

"I feel ashamed, my dear," said the lady, rising from her position, and seating herself by him, "that I have nothing better for your dinner; but I am thankful to have even this coarse mean flour of this singular grain, maize as they call it, to make bread out of; and mean it is." And she laid back in her chair, and heaved a sigh. Her husband still kept his eye rivetted on the book in hand as if he heard nothing. "They might send us, Charles," she continued, "something from the manor house there," pointing to a substantial English mansion, for the time and place, that was in sight on a slight eminence, on the same river side to the south-east. "The Squire, I know, carries himself rather loftily, and seems to think, because he lives in that big house, and owns these thousands of acres in Westmoreland manor: and has his retinue of servants, horses and dogs, that he is a much greater man than the poor parson in his log cabin. But Lady Russel seems always very kind; at least her words are, very, very."

"Words cost nothing," said her husband, for the first time looking up from his book, and disclosing a care-worn and thoughtful face; on which a highly nervous temperament was manifested by the quick and piercing eye, sharp features, and prominent forehead.

"They might and ought to do better," resumed the lady.

You are not used to this low living, and with your hard rides, exposure, continued uneasiness of mind, broken rest, and hard study, (too much, too hard, Charles, for your frame,) it will break you down!"

"My kingdom is not of this world," said her husband, speaking as if he was quoting Scripture; "'The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests, but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.' Perhaps it is all right, Mary."

"There's no right about it," she replied earnestly. "They know you can't work the soil, nor play the merchant or clerk, nor turn attorney, counsellor, doctor, or even tavern-keeper. You have to live, and they have your time and labour. And you yourself, Charles, have often quoted to me the words: 'Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the grain.'"

"Well, well, Mary, I know it is hard for you to be buried in a low hut like this, and let yourself down to the menial offices of cook, house-maid, washerwoman and all."

"Charles, Charles, you shan't say so," said she interrupting him, and laying her hand upon his mouth. "This is cruel of you. I haven't complained, nor do I."

"I have done wrong," he continued gently removing her hand, "I should have taken my gun, and killed you some hares, and ducks; but I was anxious to finish Mr. Bull's *Harmonia Apostolica*. Ah, Mary, I told the big man in that mansion yonder that my church did not maintain the Roman doctrine of works; because she defended St. James' doctrine, that we are justified by works; for here, in this his second disputation, he proves clearly that St. Paul's doctrine, we are justified by faith; and St. James, that works justify us, are not in conflict, but perfectly reconcileable; and I assure you, this is a masterpiece of reasoning. Let me read some of it to you:" anglicising, as he spoke, certain passages in the work referred to.

"I do believe, Charles, that you would hitch on to some hard study of that kind, if you were starving, and had hardly a rag to your back;" said his wife, listening with little patience to an extract from Bull. "Come, here's your bread," and producing from an old chest under the bed a piece of cold veal, "here's the last meat I have in the house. Eat this, and live on something more substantial than Bull;" touching him playfully, and seating a stool to

a pine table near the fire-side for him. The good man was hardly seated, and the two were just about doing justice to their simple meal, when the cry of dogs was heard, and the sound of horses' hoofs coming to the house. The good lady arose hastily, and went to the door.

"Bless me!" said she, returning with some consternation in her manner, "here is Lady Russel, and that sprig of nobility, Lord Wendover, her cousin; and John and Tom the servants to open the gate, and hold the horses. What brings them here? I have no place," she added, much disturbed, "to receive company in. 'Tis past endurance to submit to my lady's patronizing airs, and my lord's well masqued, but very intelligible insults." And here we would remark that Mrs. Slater was of a good family in England, and before her marriage, was much noticed by Lord Wendover; who, it was believed, would have offered her his hand, if she had not evinced a decided preference for Mr. Slater, then a youth of rather humble parentage, and who, a graduate in the same class in the college with my lord, had by the dint of parts and study obtained the first distinction, even when the young nobleman had his family-influence to aid him with the faculty. She preferred him poor and untitled, and was now sharing the fruits of her disinterestedness; fruits that many a woman before her and since have been content to gather; and amid want, neglect, and suffering, been happier with love in a cottage, than others in a big house and carriage without it.

The guests soon dismounted and came in. The uncourtly clergyman arose with the best air he could assume to welcome the comers; but so awkwardly as to overturn the stool, and nearly overturn the table: being careful however to hold fast to the book in hand; it even then probably being uppermost in his mind. Lord Wendover bowed, extended two fingers of his right hand to shake, and, advancing a step into the room, made a curve with his body equal to the quadrant of a circle in the attempt to salute in the manner most gracious the lady of the house; and then with two or three "ahs" and exclaiming "very, very odd," examining the stools most critically, as if such an article of furniture was a curiosity for a cabinet shop, he managed to seat himself. Lady Russel, all smiles, and in a voice, sweet, musical and low, and with many kind inquiries rapidly addressed

to Mr. Slater and lady, without waiting for an answer to any, seemed to see nothing out of the way.

"How comfortable is this fire?" said Lady Russel, "and this modest, unpretending cottage is so snug,—a big house freezes one. It is full of pretension, all pomp, and show. You admire, pass on, feel grand perhaps a little, and then, sit down and feel lonely." These words seemed to be addressed to no one in particular; but, as from "the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh," they proceeded possibly from the overflowings of the good lady's preference of an humble life to one of style and fashion.

"'Tis charming," said Lord Wendover, turning round, and surveying most particularly every part of the room, not sparing even the humble bed in his tour of observation. "'Tis refreshing, madam," turning to Mrs. Slater, "to you to find in this new home so fitting a place to realize your romantic visions of happy girlhood; a calm and placid water just in view; a neat little clearing before you; the solemn woods beyond; the mansion house in the distance, to give variety to the prospect, and to please by the contrast; and the neat cottage, whose peace and contentment will know no swellings of ambition, no display of folly, no glitter of wealth to mar them. I am truly pleased to find you so happily situated." Mrs. Slater had borne this taunt more patiently than she had supposed possible; but her vexation was diverted by anxiety for her husband, who, pale with a justly awakened indignation, had risen from his chair, and as she feared, would be provoked to do something which all parties would regret. Lady Russel, with a woman's penetration, saw the mistake which Lord Wendover had committed, and with a woman's tact strove to prevent any ill consequences. Pretending therefore some matter of spiritual concernment, with Mr. Slater, "my worthy ghostly confessor," as she adroitly termed him, she led the way out of the room. Lord Wendover discovering his mistake from the storm he saw brewing, affected to be anxious to know what favour he could render Mrs. Slater on his return to England; which, he said, would be very soon; and Mrs. Slater not caring to disguise her displeasure, bluntly told him he could render her none.

After Lady Russel had talked some time evidently about nothing, and for nothing further than as a blind, she kindly asked if she could render Mr. Slater any service.

"Be assured my dear sir," she said, "I feel a deep inte-

rest in the welfare of the Gospel in this almost heathen country. My heart bleeds for those whose office it is to carry the bread of life among them ; for I know the clergy are so wretchedly maintained :” and the good lady at the word wretchedly, spoke with an emphasis that appeared to say a great deal. “ I often tell Mr. Russel, and he I know feels hardly less willing to do all in his power for him who comes here to minister among us. But then he is so forgetful, he has so many cares that I fear he does not do always what he might by you.”

“ He does next to nothing,” said the poor clergyman mentally. “ I came here at his urgent instance, and promises of a good house, garden and field attached, servants, and every necessary and proper supply towards the maintenance of my family were made me. The first year he did well enough. But now I am here, and can’t get away, and he knows it ; and his zeal has died, and his lady’s evaporates into professions.” Lady Russel and Lord Wendover in about an hour rode off.

“ It is inconceivable, Thomas,” said Lady Russel, addressing her noble cousin, “ how these people can be content so to live. In no time my husband would knock up for them, if they would but say the word, a house a thousand times more comfortable than the kennel they live in. But no ; that proud piece, Mrs. Slater, can’t condescend to ask it, lest it may be acknowledging herself under obligations to us. You noticed, Thomas, that they must have just risen from dinner. I’ll venture, they fared worse than the park-keeper, or Mr. Russel’s head-groom ; and yet never a day passes that venison, or fresh meat of some kind, is not taken from our table, and given in mere waste to the servants ; and all because Mr. Slater either is thinking more of some nasty old book than of a dinner, or Mrs. Slater will not stoop to send to the mansion house for a supply.” And thus discoursed the woman, totally unconscious, that any fault was imputable to her and her husband. If it was so easy to have made her minister comfortable, and it needed but a word to do it, and she was so sensible of his needs, might she not have shown her zeal in having erected for him the house needed, and in furnishing him with substantials ; especially as to him and his wife they were so necessary, and her husband could so easily have spared them ? But it was easier to talk than do. The zeal of one’s house had eaten us all up ;

but that zeal is burning and frothing and puffing in words, when the clergy often are starving, and the Gospel is starved with it; because the zeal of the people does not extend to their pockets.

Mr. Slater, poor man! and his devoted wife continued at their posts, for some years. What eventually became of them is not known. But he felt that he was harnessed for the battle, and it did not become him to fly; and we cannot blame him that his soul was big enough to find comfort in doing his duty by looking after the stray sheep who were scattered in the province, to the neglect of his temporal interests; and that it was big enough to read and relish Bull's *Harmonia Apostolica*; and by it and in it to grow larger and larger in his moral and intellectual man; though his physical man was suffering for the good things, which the rich man at the mansion house *threw away* to his servants.* From the hasty sketch just given, it must be allowed that to a clergyman of any sensibility or education, the dependance, or the like, just mentioned, must have been painfully galling: and that unless it was removed by a better provision for the support of the Gospel, was calculated to starve the word of God out here. Under such circumstances St. George's and Poplar Hill Hundred was, as it has often been since under the same, not blossoming as a garden of the Lord, but a barren field with here and there just enough ground about it as to show that it was not wholly abandoned. After Parson Slater's removal or death, John Cager, a wealthy citizen of the Hundred willed a valuable farm on which he resided, for "the support of a protestant ministry in Poplar Hill and St. George's Hundred," and in order that the Rector might be placed above dependance, he gave, besides the farm, a number of farm hands, farming utensils, and horses and cattle. The farm, (except from its fine location, which God made, and which man cannot easily mar) now but poorly represents its pristine value and desira-

* Macaulay in his *History of England*, a work of marked ability, but partisan and prejudiced; but we do not think, as some say, too imaginative and fanciful for the sober simplicity and rigid truthfulness of the historian, states that about this time in England, "not one parish in two hundred afforded what a man of family considered as a decent maintenance. The coarse and ignorant squire, who thought that it belonged to his dignity to have grace said every day at his table by an ecclesiastic in full canonicals, found means to reconcile dignity with economy."

bleness; and the personal property has "melted into air, into thin air."* Though it would seem, as in the days when puritanism in England had the ascendancy, instead of searching "the universities for a most fit pastor," they posted "up and down the country for a most gainful chapman," so in our day the Glebe was thought by the then vestry so desirable that the parish being vacant, they advertised for a pastor; stating there is a good house on the Glebe, and that fish and oysters are abundant; and they might have added terrapins likewise; and as this consideration is an inducement, if nothing else were forth-coming, it might be well to insert this quartet or the like in a letter of invitation.

Lo! here's a parish with attractions great,
To make the creature man both sleek and fat,
Oysters and fish various may be had,
Terrapins too for pot—a dish not bad.†

* The writer resided at the Glebe about four years and was Rector of William and Mary parish a little over that time. His description of the localities being taken from a personal survey, he believes to be accurate. He has reason to know that this ancient parish, now circumscribed to Poplar Hill and St. George's Hundred, has suffered greatly, either from the peculation or mismanagement of vestries, perhaps from both. He has seen evidence that the late John Cager at the time mentioned, devised and bequeathed all that he has stated in the text, and it is a fact incontrovertible that of this rich legacy the present worn out and much abused farm is all that remains. He has reason to believe also that besides this Glebe, farm and other property above stated, William and Mary's parish owned a once valuable farm, which was devised to it by a Mr. Darnell; but whether negroes and stock were also bequeathed, and when and under what circumstances the vestry parted with it, he knows not. The records prior to the close of the last century were burnt, together with papers of more recent date that might shed light on the history of the parish; and the records extant he never saw but once; and then he found as meagre as those who professed to keep and to have kept them were in parochial information, or seeming concern about such things. He has reason further to conclude that the parish owned one hundred acres near St. Mary's parish, and which would be now the property of St. Mary's parish: but how lost he has not been able to ascertain.

† See the Southern Churchman of 1844 for the advertisement referred to. The author of it probably thought, with the boorish squires referred to by Macaulay, that the substantials of the table were irresistible inducements to a clergyman. If so, then to how few are they presented? The English Squire, according to Macaulay, allowed the ecclesiastic at his table to "fill himself with the corned beef and the carrots," and the advertiser or advertisers, may have deemed it necessary to mention that the Rector might fill himself with fish and oysters: and as the English squire expected the ecclesiastics to retire "as soon as the tarts and cheese-cake made their appearance" so he, or they the persons advertising, make no allusion to the tarts and cheese-cake: i. e. the delicate and gentlemanly, nay more, the Christian considerations which recommended the parish.

But John Cager, (peace to his ashes, and an honoured name on the record of parish benefactors,) thought more highly of Christ's ambassador, and aimed to do better for him; though he knew probably the attraction of oysters, fish, and terrapins too. He will not lose his reward from Him, who has promised to recompense whosoever shall receive a prophet, or give a cup of cold water to one of His disciples.

This legacy was made in 1676. In 1689, when William of Orange came to the throne of England, the Rev. Benjamin Nobbes was inducted into the cure of this parish. In 1708, the period of our narrative, as we mentioned before, the Rev. George Gordon was rector. The latter received a trifle more than his predecessor by the tobacco tax which was then imposed. But this tax was indeed only a trifle, when the number of taxable persons in the parish precincts were small; the amount assessed was only forty pounds of tobacco per poll; and when at the time the tobacco raised from as many as ten taxable persons did no more than pay the value of a milch cow. Probably the poor curates in England, to whom the good Queen Anne remitted the arrears, fared worse than the clergy generally in Maryland. But fortunately for Parson Gordon, possessing the Glebe so stocked and valuable as mentioned, and some private resources, he could live without much inconvenience.

The above being premised, as necessary to the history of the parish, if our readers will accompany us, they will now find Parson Gordon, a few days after the conversation reported in the foregoing chapter, standing in the front door of the Glebe mansion. He was dressed in the clerical costume of that day, genteel, without the foppery and without the primness and particularity, which are beneath and unworthy a mind, that is intent on, and raised to the duties of its high vocation. His coat was black, large even for his large person, came down to his knees, and, cassock-like, was buttoned over in front. He wore black silk stockings and shoes, which, being large, heavy, and thick-soled, were made rather for service than appearance. Buckles united his shorts to his stockings just below the knee, and the latter were so ample that an exquisite of our day would have supposed that his genteel legs were lost in them. He had on a cap, and, pastor like, held in his hand a large staff that was

crooked at the upper part; not unlike a genuine crozier; whether from principle or whim we are not informed. Parson Gordon was looking out upon the west, down which the sun was descending. The afternoon was well in; and before and around him, washing a semicircular bank or shore, flowed the peaceful waters of Herring Creek. The creek ran up into coves, and described a course so truly curving and beautiful, as to illustrate the correctness of Hogarth's opinion, "the wavy line is the line of beauty," and by these spiral turnings made coves each side of the Glebe mansion beautiful enough to have gained for the creek a more romantic name than Herring Creek, unless this name, from its fishy association with the attraction of the parish, may be a reason for continuing it, in order that there may not be wanting some evidence, both of the piscatory charms of this rural cure, and of its odorous or highly scented recommendations. Looking to the west from the position occupied by Parson Gordon, we shall descry, half-way from the Glebe to the Potomac river on the left, a point of land which was elevated about ten or twelve feet above the water; and upon this point a plain and modest mansion. Looking still further to the west, the creek we see to be separated by a ribbon of sand, which is only a few yards in width: and which narrow strip just breaks the continuous water view to the Virginia shore. Beyond this ribbon of sand we behold the "great Potomac" dashing its waves angrily on the white beach; rolling in white caps to the bay; and presenting an expanse of water fifteen miles wide at this place; and from north-east to south-west, about thirty miles in extent. Beyond, still further to the west, are the blue woods of Virginia; where, in less than half a century after our narrative, hunted the youthful Washington; the place of whose nativity was less than a day's ride above.

It was the middle of January, A. D. 1708. The winter had been so cold, (a thing not then uncommon,) as to convert the salt water of the creek into a glassy pavement, firm and strong enough to enable the fishermen and Indians, living near by, to walk upon it without danger. But, during the week, the weather had greatly moderated. Winter's icy fetters were melted away. Nature cast off her chilly and snow-clad garments. Heavy fogs for some days, rolling up from the river and creek, indicated that the

atmosphere was of a higher temperature than the water. Brightly shone the sun. Gayly sang the merry choristers of Nature's great temple, as they skipt from limb to bough, or sat perched on branch or twig. The lark bounded from his grassy covert away; too happy to be still; rising aloft perpendicularly by a series of leaps, as if each time he gathered fresh strength, and then sprang upwards, singing as he soared, and the louder as he left the earth beneath him. The partridge called out lustily for Bob White; while the crow, not taking the hint, (lest Bob, coming at the call, might, with well-aimed fowling-piece, send him hence unannealed of the many grave larcenies he had committed,) croaked as saucily as if he meant, like an honest thief, to notify all concerned he wanted corn, and would take it when he could. Vociferous chanticler, that bird who notes the watches of the night as faithfully as if he knew all about compline, nocturn, and prime; and who, Turk-like, gauges his importance by the feminines under his sway; flapping his wings ungracefully, soared to the top of the fence; and shaking himself first, as did the ancient dames their dresses, before they began their minuet-dance, crowed from the very fullness of gallinacious delight. And the poultry generally were all out and busy, impatient to make the most of the propitious day; and woe to the worm or insect that a time so inviting had tempted out from the melted and crumbled clod!

Such was the scene about the house as Parson Gordon turned away from the West and threw his glance more nearly home. The creek, to the south of the Glebe mansion, including what is called so unpoetically Cager's bite, seemed to be alive with ducks, geese, and herons disporting in its waters, or who were diving for fish or feeding on the long grass which grew up from the bottom; while, shooting out from the bank noiselessly, appeared to be swimming in the creek, a number of musk-rats, black and long; whose whiskered heads were just raised above the water, and whose motion made an evident track after them. Following the course of the creek up the cove to the east of the Glebe mansion, it curves around into a crescent form, and makes a pretty bay. Here you come to a point on the south side, and beyond it the cove curved to the East, and sweeping here terminated. In these sheltered and quiet nooks, the small bay craft, then in use, might have floated. At

this terminus of the cove, were a heavy growth of rushes and water plants, and a small meadow on which the cattle of the worthy Rector were grazing on the very scanty grass then to be found. Further on was a dense wood of poplars and forest-trees; and beyond that wood the country ascended about forty or fifty feet: from which an observer, taking there his station, saw the Glebe farm unroll before him as a large plain, which was bisected by the cove to the south of the mansion; the northern limits of which plain extended to another cove, and the southern limits of which reached to Westmoreland manor, and within almost a stone's cast of St. George's river.

Parson Gordon stood in the door, gazing with an expression of interest on the western view we have attempted to describe, and then strolled to the creek's side, where lay his canoe.

"What a sweet day this is!" said he, soliloquizing. "The sight of it, and the blandness of this atmosphere make my old blood feel young again. This fine view is not unlike some I have seen in my own dear land of lochs and hills."

"'Tis not sae braw and gude," said the McGregor dependant we mentioned, who had come to the province with him, and till now was hidden from view by a large oak-chesnut against which he was leaning.

"Ah! Robin," said Mr. Gordon, "is that you? Surely you won't deny this to be a sweet spot, with all your Highland prejudices."

"Belike I do," said McGregor. "'Tis nae bonnie and loosome, like my ain Scotland."

"That's even so, Robin. For here are no mountain clouds rising one above the other—no Ben Nevis nor Ben Lomond, shooting their heads high above. These," continued Parson Gordon, as if talking to himself, "places in Scotland were points on whose tops winter sits enthroned, and beneath whose feet in the valleys spring holds his court. But then Robin," addressing him,—“see that noble river yonder:" pointing to the Potomac, "Perthshire has no water grand as that."

"I'm not sae glaekit," said McGregor, "as to put the Tay aboon the Potomac: but what's this creek to the lochs of Perthshire? What's these binks to those on the lochs," pointing to the banks of the creek, which were about eight

or ten feet in some places above the water, and generally not so high.

"That's true, Robin. And we have no rocky islets here as in sweet Dochart. Ah! those lovely spots did seem meet abodes for the unearthly beings, which our superstitious forefathers said, inhabited them." And not appearing further to notice McGregor, getting at the time in a boat, which Robin unfastened and pushed off, Parson Gordon continued: "I see here also no rugged rocks, lying mass upon mass, rude and mis-shapen as if the Titans had been at work, erecting rude fortresses. Still I must say, this view is fine: though I have seen it so frequently before." The boat soon reached the middle of the creek, and Parson Gordon's imagination kindled as he saw the clouds in the west, looking like snow-drifts, that had been tinted with the light of a conflagration. Titian, in his "Martyrdom of St. Peter," endeavours to paint a like brilliancy in the heavenly light which pierces the twilight shadows that gather about the dying saint;—and the moral association of the divine help thus given to the martyr imparts to his picture its peculiar excellence. And the rector was wont ever to look upon nature with other eyes than those of the materialist or the mere idealist. The "meanest flower that blows" gave to him.

"Thoughts that do often lie too deep for tears."

And, as has been said of Wordsworth, "the most magnificent objects in nature were but the mirrors to God's face; the scaffolding to His future purposes; and, like mirrors, were to wax dim; and, like scaffolding, to be removed." Hence gazing with deep interest on the scene,—and seeing in it reflected a light that came from behind the veil, he raised himself on the boat, and said:—"How like the Christian's sunset of life! though night's shadows come on, and the chilly dew is felt, a ray breaks in upon him, lightening up the dark valley, and warming the benumbed faculties to breathe the martyr's prayer—'Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.'"

The boat now reached the shore, and Mr. Gordon and McGregor made their way to an Indian hut, where an aged woman, Adaratha, lay apparently sick unto death. A pressure of the hand, and a look of recognition were all that Mr. Gordon at first extracted from her. Here he found, as he expected, his daughter Emma, and her friend and intimate, Julia Delafield: (of whom more shall be given hereafter),

and a daughter of the sick woman, named after her Adaratha. The sick person was a communicant of the church, and had signified a desire to receive the Holy Eucharist.

The circumstances, connected with this sick Indian woman, though not immediately inwoven with the thread of our narrative, being occasionally referred to, we will mention.

Adaratha was the grand-daughter of the Weromance, or chief of the Yaocomoco Indians, from whom Leonard Calvert purchased first the site of the city of St. Mary's, and afterwards the territory of thirty miles, which he named Augusta Caroline County. On St. John's creek, which ran north by east of the town, was the wigwam of her parents, and it is probable that "the simple annals" of the poor aborigines, if they had been preserved, would tell a tale worth the treasuring. The deep woods of a native forest threw their shadows around the lowly cabin. Indian children played on the green bank that overhung the creek. A simple hearted and industrious Indian woman worked a little patch of maize near the cabin. The father was often seen in his canoe upon the river; while the deer skins, which clothed the family, told that his archery had taken fatal effects on the game which then abounded. Their creed embraced little more than a belief in the Great Spirit, who spoke to them in the rolling thunder and the howling storm; and in a supposed demon, Okee, whom they thought it safe to propitiate by prayers and sacrifices on certain days in the year: acknowledging even in their heathendom what some called Christians appear not to own, that religion must have sacrifices and recurring festivals. The even tenor of their life however was occasionally broken in upon by incursions of the dreadful Susquehannoks; which never failed to spread alarm through the tribe; for then the forests were lighted up with the fires of burning cabins, then many a family mourned its stay and staff just struck down by the spoiler, as a towering oak is levelled by the blast; and such members of the Yaocomoco tribe, as were scattered over the country, on a last occasion of this kind, like sheep dismayed by the onslaught of the wolf, fled with their effects to their main settlement of Yaocomoco; afterwards, the plain of St. Mary's City. But the tribe had not been concentrated here long before an aged Indian squaw, under the inspiration, it was believed, of a Divine Spirit, went from cabin to cabin, crying out: "The eagle of Yaocomoco will become the prey

of the buzzards of the Susquehannoks, if he remains here in his nest. He must build again where the lofty pines wave near the mouth of the Potomac." The Powah, or conjurer-woman, then stated that the other morning, she stood looking up Yaocomoco big water,—all was calm. The river lay smooth as ice. She heard a noise, and saw a smoke go up, as if the Great Spirit was kindling his council-fire in the deep water. She then looked again, and though a moment before it was clear, a big black cloud stood so near the river's surface that an Indian arrow might have been shot above it. Soon the cloud passed away.* The Powah next said, she called at the wigwam of the Sagamore of the tribe. The chief's head was thrown down, his eyes looked red from weeping, and he would say nothing to her. She turned to go out. On reaching the cabin-door, and looking upon the plain where the wigwams of the tribe lay like as many tents, to her great amazement she saw no smoke curling up from them. She rubbed her eyes, doubting their report; and lo! the wigwams were now not to be seen; but, on the plain of Yaocomoco, rose up a big mound. Surely the Yaocomocos had past from their hunting grounds, and their bones lay with those of their forefathers! The Powah's tale was believed. It betokened evil to the tribe. They must move away lest so sad a catastrophe should befall them. Like all fatalists, though believing that coming events cast their shadows before, yet they were silly enough to try to run away from them. Now while this movement was going on, two big canoes, Leonard Calvert's ships, "The Ark and Dove," resembling by their white sails birds of the water, first came up St. Mary's river. The Indians hurried to the river's brink, wonder struck, and, as the vessels moored below the brow of St. Mary's hill, between Church-point and Key Swamp, the natives formed into a long, black and dense line of anxious and inquiring spectators. The sails of the two pinnaces were unfurled, and the booming of a cannon from the deck of the Ark sent consternation to the natives. Two boats were manned, and made for the shore. Strangers from a strange land had come to visit them. A treaty was entered into. The Yaocomocos parted with their lands, hunting grounds, and waters; and with the bones of

* Vide "Thatcher's Lives of The Indians" for a vision similar to this, which a Cherokee chief related to his braves, assembled around a council fire.

their ancestors, (a respect for the dead worth the white man's imitation.) They left the village of Yaocomoco never to return. But Adaratha's father did not accompany the great caravanserai in their removal to another home. He settled in Poplar Hill Hundred, in order perhaps to be near to his old hunting grounds.

Here Adaratha was born, and here she grew up a sweet, wild flower in her native woods. The arrow was not straighter than her figure, the raven's feathers were not darker than her hair, the eagle's eye was not keener than her glance, nor was the goddess who breathes in stone, more symmetrical in form than she was, when in first conscious womanhood she stood beneath the spreading poplars before her father's cabin. Like other ladies, who love to recount the slaughter they have made, she afterwards occasionally spoke of the propositions which different red warriors had made for her hand; and which she, without waiting her father's response, always dashed with the remark: "The eaglet of Yaocomoco is too young to leave her mother's nest, and make one of her own." About this time, however, a visitor, or new comer, appeared at Adaratha's cabin. Croshaw, a young chief of the Piscataways, who lived near what has since become the site of the city of Washington, had been out with some braves of his tribe for some days on a hunt: and during the time they had both hunted and slaughtered till the hunters, wearied, determined to return. Croshaw, however, who had never rambled so far before to the South, proposed to his companions to follow the course of the Potomac on to its mouth. They objected the impracticability of the attempt, alleging that deep rivers, such as the Mutawoman, the Nanjemoy, the Wicomico, and the Yaocomoco, would intercept his progress. But Croshaw thought differently, and burning with something of the fever which drove Columbus to discover a new world, and Mungo Park to penetrate into the interior of Africa, determined to try the journey alone. To his gratification he found that an Indian path led off from the course of the Potomac, and pursued a south-east direction; and, as he knew, from the accounts which had reached him of the country, that the Potomac on one side, the Patuxent on the opposite, and the Chesapeake on the third, so enclosed the country as to make it a peninsula, he judged that this Indian path must be on the back bone of the peninsula,

where it was not likely his progress would be obstructed by rivers of any depth. His conjecture was correct. On the third day he had passed down low as what is now known as Leonardstown, the county seat; and was in the neighbourhood of Beaver Dam; when a large beaver, coming up from a branch with a fish in his mouth, crossed the Indian path; and was ascending the hill as Croshaw saw him. He pursued, the beaver dropt the fish, and Croshaw concluded from the size of the latter that the river must be near. He therefore turned a little aside to the left: and, threading his way without much difficulty or further adventures, (the forest being open enough to drive a carriage in it, and the sun informing him of the points of the heavens,) he kept a south-east course. That night he reached a noble spring, which gushed out from under a very large tulip poplar. About ten feet from the ground Croshaw observed that two large limbs interlocked, and then ran parallel to each other, and thus formed a rustic couch. He might sleep in comparative security and comfort. He made his body fast with his wampum belt to one of the limbs, and as his walk had been long and fatiguing, and his couch was more agreeable than it had been for some days, he overslept himself the next morning.

The sun was about rising, and having unfastened his belt he was in the act of descending, when his quick ear caught the sound of advancing footsteps. Though fond of danger, he was too much of an Indian to be off his guard. Shielding his person so as not to be seen, and taking care to see himself, he saw Adaratha coming towards the spring from her mother's wigwam, which was on the hill in sight. She had a bucket made out of a gum, and, not conscious of being observed, was about filling it with water, as Croshaw leapt down from his concealment; and so near to the maiden as almost to touch her. Her first impulse was to drop her bucket, and run. But, by gestures, and in a tone and manner the most respectful, he begged her not to go. He then, in the Piscataway dialect, told her who he was, and how he came there; and, taking off his richly beaded wampum belt, as a token of his good faith, and as an evidence of his rank and wealth, asked her to take it to her parents. Adaratha yielded. They walked in company to her mother's cabin, and Croshaw, as they went along, said to himself: "My journey has ended. Here's

an attraction above the sight of the big water, the Chesapeake. For beautiful to him was the maiden in her Indian costume and simple garb: while he, doubtless in a garb as simple, his face painted and mimic beard drawn in lines from his mouth to his ears,—his black hair tied round with a fillet,—and his deer skin pallium suspended behind, and covering the body in front as an apron, may have made him seem alike attractive to her. For fashion is every thing, and our taste readily yields in accommodation to it. A few words briefly and fitly spoken, after he had delivered the wampum-belt to Adaratha's father sufficiently introduced him. The Piscataways and Yaocomocos were allies, and there were no national prejudices in the way. Croshaw was allowed to build his cabin on the same hill. None of the formalities, with which society among us and in Europe has so properly guarded the intercourse between the sexes, were known to these simple children of the forest. Their love found a voice and interpreter in the wild rose bud, in the sweet south wind that rocked it on its stem, and wafted to them its fragrance, in the light that played on the dew-drop, leaf and water, in the joyous melody of spring, in the cheering laugh of the maize as it grew in the midsummer's sun, in the rainbow that arched the brow of the east after a storm, in the stars, and moon that shed its silvery light upon them, and in the soothing night wind that coming over the forest seemed burdened with love's touching plaint. If music from her magic cell had passed her fingers over the spells of her wondrous instrument, she could not have discoursed more eloquently. With the bud of the eglantine he told his love, and she by accepting it smiled upon him. The parents smoked the calumet, and their tendering it to him made known their adoption of him as their son. A lively dance around a pole before a cabin, a short time thereafter of Indian maidens and braves from the Patuxent were the merry-makings of the bridal. Croshaw and Adaratha then moved to the headland, whither Parson Gordon had just landed.

Croshaw distinguished himself afterwards in an engagement with the Susquehannoks, and as a hunter was not matched by any of his new friends the Patuxent Indians.

His marriage, however, to Adaratha, greatly offended the Patuxent chief, who had wished to wed the maiden himself. But it was not politic to break with Croshaw, and the Patux-

ent chief, till a fitting time, thought it best to keep up the outward seeming of friendship. The former rivals often hunted together, and the hatchet of personal ill-will appeared to have been buried. Years glided by, and with the stream of time, carrying the past and its deeds with it, should have floated on also the dark passions of that past which made this stream angry and dark. Young braves, in whose veins flowed the blood of Croshaw and Adaratha, stood around Croshaw's cabin door; and a lovely daughter, who inherited the image and received the name of her mother, with her arms folded on her breast, in interesting, blushing girlhood, looked in the placid waters, that washed the headland, and saw in their blue depths and occasional sparkle a wide and beautiful world. To her it seemed doubtless to be a world, where trees of colossal magnitude and dazzling foliage made forests of interminable length; where rivers and creeks rolled on majestically, or crept in luxurious ease, and in wavy lines through the country, and where cool retreats arched over by vines, and adorned by flowers of endless variety, beautiful and fragrant all abounded. But time, which softens and wears away stone, only hardens the heart of a savage, and makes that to be stone which before was clay, that might be tempered, in savage breasts.

The sun had gone down. It was an eve in April. Parson Benjamin Nobbes, Mr. Gordon's predecessor, with his family were seated at the supper table. Nice warm rolls, a luxury more often seen south than north, and very rarely at the scant and beggarly fashionable tea tables in our cities, and some charming stewed oysters were smoking on the table.

"Ah!" said the rector, looking with evident pleasure at the supper, "this is well thought of, Betsey. My long ride has given me an appetite, and I feel that I could do justice to warm rolls, and a fine dish of oysters. But," he added, "either it is warm or I am heated. With your permission I will open this door;" rising and opening the door to the west, which looked towards Croshaw's headland, and beyond it to the Potomac river. "James," addressing a coloured servant who stood in waiting, "where did you get these oysters? Two of them will measure more than one of my hands."

"Up the cove sir, jam by the poplar spring, sir," replied the domestic.

"Stop my man," waving his hand significantly to the servant, and holding a mammoth oyster impaled on his fork,

which he was in the act of carrying to his mouth,—“what sound is that? Can it be that any revellers from St. Mary’s have come all the way round to Herring Creek to give us a serenading? or is it meant for you, my daughter?” addressing a young lady who sat near him to the right.

The young lady declared her ignorance, the wife looked evidently uncomfortable, regarding the tones as ominous of evil, and the servant Jim, with his face like the title of a tragic volume, said: “Dem aint no serenaders, massa. Dem ’aint no music performed by human nature neither.”

“Whatever they are,” said Parson Nobbes, “they shall not spoil my supper. So, Betsey, I’ll take a second cup.”

A minute or so passed. There came a wailing sound on the west wind, which seemed as plaintive as the dying note of a heart-broken vocalist—expressing in it all sadness, and yet so piercing withal to ears that had sensibilities that it seemed to shoot through the nerves of Mrs. Nobbes, forcing the blood from the good lady’s face, and so acted upon her that instinctively, with a shudder, she applied her hands to her ears, lest she might hear it again.

“This is strange!” said Parson Nobbes. “You are right, Jim, that sound is not made by any serenaders; but I am not so certain human nature has no agency in it. I fear, Betsey, that human nature has too much to do in it, and if I hear it again I will endeavour to know its meaning;” eating faster than before, and rather now to satisfy the cravings of appetite than the luxurious comfort of one who eats at his ease and leisure.

“Come, my man, there is something wrong. Get your canoe ready,” for now the wailing note had a wildness and sharpness about it that told of poignant distress.

“Master,” said Jim, “dem be ghosts, or wild varmints.”

“Well,” replied the rector, having risen from the table, and with cap on and staff in hand, prepared to go out, “what then?”

“Us do no good; but dey ruinate us.”

“Ah! Jim, I see you are a coward. But suppose they are ghosts; all the better; no harm can come to us; and if wild varmints, as you call them, why, we’ll take Towser and Antony with us, and they’ll make battle with any beast that may be near.”

“Father take this gun,” said the daughter, “it is per-

haps a bear, who has been robbed of her cubs ; for one was seen about here last winter."

"No bear cries like that, my child," said the mother.

"'Taint wolves, missus, I know," said Jim, taking the gun, and looking carefully to see whether it was loaded, and there was a good flint in it; and taking down the powder horn and shot bag:

"Come," said the rector, moving out, "call your dogs, Jim. Betsey, keep your doors and windows locked and fastened; I'll be back soon." The wife and daughter looked at him, as if they would discourage his venturing out, and the mother said to the daughter in a low tone: "Mr. Nobbes will have his own way. He never thinks of danger till too late." The rector, however, and his man, with dogs Towser and Antony, had gone out, were soon by the creek side, and in a few minutes were moving in the canoe in a west direction, towards Croshaw's headland.

"This is a fine night for bogies, Jim, as the Scotch call ghosts," said Parson Nobbes; "the moon's rays fall so silently on the trees and water, the deep shadow yonder in the grove looks so solemn, and that wailing sound, my man, makes you tremble as if you had the ague." The boat during this time had made not as much progress as the urgency of the case seemed to require; for Jim rather jerked than pulled at the oars. "Get away," said his master, becoming impatient, and taking the oars himself. Jim rose, took his master's seat in the stern, and with his teeth chattering, and his eyes open wide and looking fixedly towards Croshaw's cabin, which was a hundred yards off, only, and which now they were approaching rapidly, he muttered:

"Dim Inguns hab intercourse with all sorts of diabolix varmunts. Massa ower proudsome of him grace." A noise now between a wail and a howl swept by them, sometimes sharp and piercing, and then sinking low and almost inaudibly. A light shot up through the trees around Croshaw's cabin, and the smoke in eddies round and round was borne first upward, and then to the left, by the peculiar currents of air, which there prevailed. Towser and Antony growled, and Jim with difficulty kept his seat, while his teeth chattered like a fulling mill.

"What is the matter?" said the rector, springing ashore, and trying to stop the loud lament of Adaratha, who stood by the fire with hands uplifted. One of the Indian children

pointed to a canoe near, and said it had been drifted home by the wind; that there was good deal of blood in it, and that it was believed Croshaw had been murdered. Two days thereafter the following facts were ascertained.

On that day Croshaw was fishing up the cove beyond the headland, when he was wounded by an arrow from an unseen archer who was on shore. He raised himself in his canoe, and vigorously pulled for the land. Another arrow from the same hand took effect upon him, and, as it appeared, this second shot pierced his heart. But as the Cameronian chief wished:

“With his back to the field, and his feet to the foe,
And leaving in battle no blot on his name,
Look proudly to heaven from the death bed of fame.”

So Croshaw appeared to think this was no fit place nor manner for warriors to die in. By a desperate effort he plunged into the water, and swam towards the shore; thinking also that in the water his body would be less exposed than in the boat. He was able to reach the shore; and on gaining the bank, his old enemy, the Patuxent rival chieftain mentioned, advanced to meet him. If he counted on Croshaw's diminished strength, he reckoned wide of the mark. Perhaps never lay more strength in Croshaw's arm than at that moment; with tomahawk raised ready to strike, he stood on the strand watching the enemy's movements, indignant at the dastardly manner in which he had been assailed. The crafty Patuxent chief, blinded either by passion, or relying too confidently on Croshaw's feebleness, pressed on without his usual caution. The blow he aimed Croshaw parried. He heard an Indian whoop from the creek, and looked off for a moment to where the sound came from, when Croshaw, availing himself of his incaution, with one blow laid the Patuxent chief at his feet, and then stood over him prepared to extinguish the spark of life on the first movement of his prostrate foe; when, all at once, Croshaw's eyes became dim, his battle-axe fell from his grasp, and he and the Patuxent chief lay folded together in the embrace of death. The fatal arrow had done its work, and his life and strength lasted just long enough to avenge him of his adversary.

His boat was drifted by the wind that blew down the cove past the headland; and Adaratha, with forebodings of

evil, saw that the canoe was empty, and there was blood on the gunnel. Hence the wailing mentioned, hence the fire to call Croshaw there if alive, and hence all that night, howling and wailing, she watched by the fire on the creek-side. An Indian, who was fishing that day in the neighbourhood, brought the report we have given. The bodies were found. The remains of the Patuxent chief were left to be gathered by his tribe, then few and scattered, or to be the prey of buzzards, while those of Croshaw were duly honoured with a Christian burial, the chief and squaw both having been members of Parson Nobbes' congregation. But after Croshaw's burial, the rector to his surprise found Adaratha less willing than ever to listen to him, and feared much that the death of her husband might shake her faith in the Great Spirit, for permitting an act which she deemed so hard. On one point he failed to overcome her prejudices. The principle of forgiveness was a sentiment which Parson Nobbes feared he had not succeeded in instilling into Adaratha's mind. For, like most savages, she considered it alike weak to forget and forgive an injury. Though the Patuxent chief was dead, vengeance could not wreak itself on him, yet the poor creature could not in her heart say she had forgiven him the cruel deed, which bereft of life her heart's best love, and made her a widow, and her children orphans. "No, no!" she often said, shaking her head significantly, and her dark eyes would lighten up as she would say it, "me no say good to kill Croshaw. Great Spirit no want me love dem that kill Croshaw."

"True," said Parson Nobbes, "but you must forgive them. Though the bad man prompted the act, yet you must not hate and wish you could do harm to the Patuxent chief."

A smile of contempt was generally the only reply, though once she said: "If bad man make him do it, then Good Spirit hate him for do it, and me hate him too."

To this there was no answer. However, Parson Nobbes did not deem himself at liberty to exclude her from the holy communion.

Parson Gordon found the same difficulty, and it was only for some time and after he had pressed upon her this duty, by repeatedly presenting to her the instance of our Saviour, who prayed for His murderers, that she could be induced to pray truly, "Forgive us our trespasses, as we forgive those who trespass against us." Since then she had acted consist-

ently, and she was both happy and thankful to turn from the fabulous Okee, to the God who made heaven and earth, the sea and all that dwell therein. She was now on her death-bed. The name of Croshaw, never absent from her thoughts, was often syllabled by her lips. Her daughter knelt by the lonely bed, bowed by grief, and bathed the cold and clammy hands of her dying mother with fast-failing tears, while Emma and Julia seemed to be deeply moved. A few words from Parson Gordon recalled the wandering thoughts of Adaratha. He then knelt by her bed-side, and his solemn voice was heard in the solemn prayers prescribed for "The Visitation of the Sick." He administered the Holy Communion, and invoked the Divine blessing for "a sick person at the point of departure;" about to wing her flight where sorrow, sickness, and sighing are not known. The final pressure of the hand was given, and the sad last farewell was said; a pressure to be repeated, and a farewell to be changed into a joyous welcome when pastor and parishioners meet to part no more.

From this day the daughter, Adaratha, became an inmate of Parson Gordon's household, and certain arrangements being made, the rector with his daughter, Julia, and McGregor, returned to the Glebe.

CHAPTER IV.

THE MASS—FATHER HUNTER'S SERMON.

“Mother! thy spoiler is thy child!
The Roman scarr'd the Saviour's side,
And now, the Roman, reconcil'd,
Scars the fair bosom of his bride!
Mother—thou could's not know before,
That earth could bear one Judas more!”
COXE.

ABOUT the period of our narrative the following letter from Father Canon, a priest of St. Inigoes' house, living within the precincts and at the lower part of William and Mary parish; said house being at the mouth of St. Inigoes' creek, and on St. Mary's river; was addressed to an acquaintance and relative in the county of Cork, Ireland:

“My dear Patrick:

“You have often alluded in your letters to the mountainous, wild, and desolate aspect of Carbery manor, and said I might have found in Ireland a savage territory enough to practise denials, and a people so brutish that, in humanizing them, I might claim to have done a great work. But America goes beyond Ireland in savageness, even Carbery's rock-bound coast; for the latter is famed for its many harbours, but not a harbour in this western wilderness have I yet seen where I could hope a shelter from the tempest.

“Lord Baltimore hoped he had found a port here for our storm tossed church; but there has been nothing less than trouble and confusion, and wars and commotions since on St. Mary's height he planted his colony. You will remember, I mentioned that, during the *protectorate*, (if the hovering of the kite over the dove before she devours be protection,) of old Noll, one Clayborne, strike out the final vowel *e*, and you have his origin and character, this *Clay-born*, who was the bane of the province, succeeded in getting possession of the reins of government, and laid hereby the foundations of that jealousy of the Catholics, which has ever been manifested in acts of popular dislike and of legislative spleen, and

which jealousy has since been constantly exploding, like so many and irregular discharges of artillery. For two years this *Clay-born* sat in the Governor's chair, and pretended to drive the horses of state; but soon ran afoul of a stump, and his would-be excellency was pitched in the mire. The good Catholic proprietary, through his excellent brother, then governed us for about six years, when one Bennett, aided by some puritans from Annapolis, and by puritan shift and make shift, seized the reins of office, and drove off, a second Jehu. So long as this *saint* had the power, he availed himself of it to help his own. For an act of the Legislature was passed which proscribed, under the name of papists and prelatists, both the Catholics and members of the schismatic Church of England. This measure, however, becomes a precious document to be laid up in the archives of history; showing that the first enactment against religious liberty, which stains the annals of Maryland, was the work of Puritans. Most proper was it that the greatest yelpers after religious liberty should growl if others tasted any of it, as that dog, who whines loudest when a bone is denied him, is most apt, when he has the power, to keep all the bones to himself. Next came on 'the popish plot,' which that unchanged rascal and unchained bedlamite, Titus Oates, fabricated, and William of Orange gave him a pension for it. This led to many cruel state measures against the Catholics, here as well as in England. For the news with us spread like fire in an old, dried stubble-field. A certain militia captain and noted leader of the opposition to Lord Baltimore, one John Coode, travelled with the news from county to county. Third and fourth rate men are ever alarmists; they who tremble in their shoes, and the beating of whose cowardly hearts is as distinct as the click of a clock, wish to be thought Cæsars and Pompeys; being very Captain Bobadils in character. Rub-a-dub, therefore was beat by ragged scarecrows from Severn town to Point Lookout, and from the Elk river to the Pocomoke, and lo! all at once, we have the Protestant Revolution. By the fife and drum, at the point of the musket and fusil, and with 'the pulpit drum ecclesiastic' to help, and the screw of Legislative penalties, 'popery' was to be put down, and 'the reign of the saints' made permanent.

"The first victory which was obtained by 'the godly,' was the turning of all Catholics out of office, and the seizure

of the keys of the offices by the Protestants. Not that these 'saints,' Judas like, loved to hold the bag, on account of the money which was in it. Oh! no! Their treasure was not in earthen vessels. Verily they only meant to put down the kingdom of sin and Satan. The next victory was the complete triumph of the Protestant party; the overthrow of the Proprietary's power for the time; and the passive submission of the down-trodden Catholics to a power too strong to be resisted. On the heels of this oppression of our friends, was passed by the Assembly an Act, purporting to be 'for the service of Almighty God, and the establishment of the Protestant religion.' The first clause is spoiled by the second. The true character of the Act soon leaked out. The Protestant religion was to be established. No doubt the Act aimed at this; but Almighty God certainly was not to be served by making every taxable person pay annually forty pounds of tobacco. Still good grew out of the tax. Our *friends*, the Quakers, found it no less odious than we did, and with us made war against it. For George Fox's followers, believing in the will of the wisp of an unenlightened conscience could not brook the thought of paying a tax to keep up what they called the tyrannous and hoary principles of an unrighteous church. This tax, said they, is worse than the old Peter Pence, which our ancestors paid to Rome. That is even so, we chimed in, exulting at their indignation: and which we could say truly; for we believed it was better to render Peter Pence than the Parson's tobacco tax:—the first being a rendering to God and to His vicegerent, the things which be God's, and St. Peter's, than to pay a tax to a law-church. Quakers and Catholics therefore, as firm and fast friends, stood cheek by jowl in the phalanx against the Church of England. And to help us in the good cause, we had about this time a large importation from good old Ireland of genuine Hibernians. Our opposition, however, only made the enemy more resolved. For, having the majority, he was able to carry his measures easily in the Assembly. Consequently a law was enacted which bound on the colony all the obnoxious and oppressive laws, in relation to the Established Church, which Parliament had passed to operate within the realm of England. This was adding fuel to the fire. It was answering our complaints by giving us yet more reason to complain. It was curing the rheumatism

by substituting the gout. It was an operation about as merciful as that of a Ballinakill barber, who drew teeth without giving any sensible pain to the tooth extracted;—and this was by using the adjoining tooth as a fulcrum,—on which, having rested his instrument, he lifted the complaining snag out of the patient's mouth. We now complained more than ever, and, pushing brother Quaker into the front rank, and, knowing his lungs to be good, and his assurance to be in no need of brass to make it pass with the gold of worth, we supplied him with arguments and objections. It was too bad, we said, that the scorching legislation of an intolerant old world should track us across the ocean, and that even the waters of the briny sea could not quench the brand of the fanatic; but that the fires which Laud kindled in England, should have sent their sparks here, lighting up funeral piles, on which Catholics and Quakers are to be roasted. And so well did we play upon this string, that the board of plantations in England laid the obnoxious Act of the provincial legislature, which needed only the monarch's signature, on the table. Again, however, our triumph was short. Through the influence of Dr. Bray, a high-toned and energetic Anglo-churchman, a bill was now passed, which made the Church of England the established religion in the province: and so oppressive was this bill in its character, as to require the English Prayer Book to be read with the rites and ceremonies of the Church of England, by ministers and lay-readers in every church, or other *place of public worship*, and also revived the tobacco tax. Then it seemed, if never before, that the Catholic Church had been strangled in the province. For the Church of England had during this period increased to near twenty clergymen. It was supported by a few landed endowments. And, being the established religion, its forms of worship were peremptorily enjoyed on Catholics and Quakers, no less than all others, and were likely to corrupt all, during every occasion of public prayer.

“But about this dark day, Providence seemed at one while to smile on us. A pestilence broke out in Charles county. Disease stalked abroad, and Death, who was not afraid of being suspected of favouring the Catholics, and who asked the lawmakers no favours, called at each house, and said, ‘Bring out your dead.’ A touch of the old fellow's hand works conviction better than an argument.

None then was so welcome as a priest, and Catholic priests found a ready admittance to the houses of Protestants. The disease was stayed after awhile, and then, in requital for the services of the Catholic priests, the *grateful* legislature forbad, under heavy penalties, 'all papists, or popish priests,' from entering the houses of Protestants, or baptizing any child whose parents were not 'popish,' from saying mass, or even exercising the ministerial functions in the province. All for fear, lest they might 'make proselytes of his Majesty's liege people!' I thought his Majesty's liege people could be good subjects, and yet worship God in the Catholic Church.

"Besides this Act was another 'to prevent the importation of Irish papists;' and, to end the catalogue of grievances, not only was Lord Baltimore's proprietary-authority withdrawn, and a *royal* governor substituted, but that *royal* governor was Colonel John Seymour! If you knew his Excellency you would be amazed at no atrocity which the Catholics suffered. In his opinion there are but two evils, prelacy and popery,—but one religion to be tolerated, Protestantism;—though this is a many headed, many hued, and ever multiplying religion, whose name is legion, and whose creed is a string of negations. Like the spawn of the fish, it is cast in the mud of human error, and by the heat of human passion hatched, and then on the mad waters of strife it is borne. His Excellency thinks that the only way to convert those, who cannot swallow his unpalatable and tough cut to chew, Protestantism, is, in the cant of the Boston puritans, 'to try conclusions with them;' i. e. convert them by persecution. Yea, if he could, he would give further proof of his regard, send them to heaven in the smoke of a funeral pile. This service Louis XIV., they say, rendered the Huguenots, and that the see of St. Peter approved it. The Church of England owes Seymour no more favours than we do. He nominates and inducts parsons into parishes, without consulting Henry Compton, the bishop of London; and some of his creatures, though 'the godly,' are very unrighteous. However, they have the odour of sanctity,—viz., like Seymour, are Puritans, and hence the ill odour of an evil life is not perceived, on the principle, one stench is expelled by a greater. We have cause to mourn.

"Even the Quakers are now tolerated, while the Ca-

tholics, like criminals skulking from justice, are obliged to seek covertly, and in private, the consolations and ministrations of their priests. We dare not worship in our churches or chapels, and are glad to celebrate the mass secretly in a private house. Still the church will not be so put down. Like a big mill stream the current of religious feeling will flow on. Our people are indignant. Their indignation sustains us. We stand ready to fall or rise together. But this feeling now rather needs restraining, and keeping in due bounds, than to be hurried, lest it may overflow its banks, do more harm than good, or spend itself to no purpose.

"I would write more, good Patrick, but the hour for evening service has come, and the Angelus-bell is ringing. Dominus vobiscum.

"Yours, &c.

"JONA. CANON."

Having read Father Canon's letter, giving the Roman version of the events chronicled in the letters of Parson Gordon, the reader will accompany us to the old St. Mary's city. It was St. Agnes's day, in the Roman Calender, January 21. St. Mary's city had suffered sadly by the removal of the seat of government to Annapolis: though it contained a sufficiently large Roman population to fill a more than common room, whenever this "denomination," in the phrase of our day, assembled for worship.

But the Roman Church of St. Mary's being closed, they worshipped in a private chapel in the house of Mr. Durford; having previously fitted it up with an altar, pictures, crucifixes, candlesticks and the like. On the day mentioned the main street was alive with shopkeepers, tradesmen, farmers, gentlemen, idlers, and servants white and black, bound to the private chapel, which was about a mile from the State House, on the high ridge just back of the plain of St. Mary's. On their way down this street, they necessarily passed the Roman Church of St. Mary's, which was now closed by an Act of the Provincial Legislature, that was wicked and oppressive. The church was built of English bricks, and was a plain and substantial edifice. It had a steeple or belfry, in which whenever the church was opened for service, a bell rang the call to matins; and where, according to the modern usage of the Gallic Church, the

angelus was rung a little after sunset. But now, no sound went forth from that old tower. Like many Roman Churches now, and many Protestant Episcopal, it looked not much like a church, except in its belfry and steep roof; the latter being a peculiarity which unfortunately many churches, now want, being broad and flat. It was sixty feet long by thirty feet wide, and fifteen feet high from the ground to the eaves of the roof. It had, (what might have horrified some), a cross on its spire; but not the weathercock. Strange! the latter originally and for some time in the Latin Church, graced their steeples, commemorating the repenting of St. Peter at the crowing of a cock. But this symbol, Protestants, with an unaccountable anxiety to copy after Romanists, have adopted, while they have destroyed the beauty of the symbol, by making it turn with the wind. Could they have designed by so doing to intimate that our doctrines should always shift and change about? If *ultra* protestantism has a symbol, it is the weathercock; a fickle bird whose note was not expected to call us to prayer, and admonish us how shamefully we have denied our Lord and Master; but whose tail turning with the wind points, not to Christ the polar star, but to whatever point blows the wind of popular opinion. The church was on the corner of two streets. It fronted the main street, which ran nearly north and south from the State House to a cove of St. Inigoes' creek; and its side was on a cross street that ran nearly east and west; passing westward close to Key Swamp, and here curving to the left a little, and forming an elbow, kept parallel with the line of St. Mary's river. This cross street also ran a north-east course towards St. John's creek, distant about a quarter of a mile, and at the head of which creek to the right stood "the castle," the late residence of the Calverts. A rude fence enclosed the church and grave yard; and the cemetery covered about forty acres. How extremely painful it was to the Romanists to be obliged to turn away from their house of prayer, and hide themselves for worship in a private oratory. On this occasion some of the passers by let out hearty curses against his Excellency Seymour.*

* The first Roman Church in St. Mary's stood on what is now a part of the farm of Dr. John M. Broome. The site it covered is on the road to the right, from one hundred to two hundred yards from Dr. B's. residence. About forty acres were attached to it. In 1794, by an Act of the Provincial Assembly, all Roman Churches and Chapels were closed, and, this Act appears not to have been repealed before the

In the crowd thus passing, was a group of four persons, three of whom were on foot, and the fourth on horseback. The last rode a pye-bald animal whose disproportionably large head and large flat feet showed him to be of the flemish breed of horses, then very common; and the rider's inartistic costume proved him to be as poor a judge of taste as of "horse-flesh." He however totally unconscious, (for who is generally of his own deficiencies) seemed anxious by spurring his horse occasionally, to show off his metal, and by an ostentatious display of a brocaded waistcoat to show off his finery. Next to him walked a youth who was rather slenderly built, and whose clothes seemed to have been made for him and no other person. He wore a cap something like a hunter's, and a sword suspended to his side, then worn by all who made any any pretensions to gentle blood. He walked with head and person erect, and in a gait half military, and half that of one who felt the spirit and sans souci of a youthful cavalier. His hair was long, but, disdaining a cue, hung low down on his coat; presenting curling ringlets of rich auburn. The third person, who was evidently the oldest in the group, had a care-worn face. His coat and clothes would have been lightened and improved by a brushing, which would have taken off the superfluous dust and lint. He seemed to be officiously polite; and evinced by his studied and hurried manner, that to please was his object; while the *suaviter in modo*, and the *agréments* of manners appeared to be rather sought as means to an end, than from a spontaneous and disinterested feeling. He was one of the last merchants, who, in days of yore, had figured in the little metropolis. The fourth person walked just in the rear, and like one, who was anxiously navigating his passage. For he would beat first to one, and then to the other side of the road; would slacken his course one moment as if in a dead calm, and the next moment he would press ahead as if a strong breeze had struck him, which hurried him on in despite of himself. He needs no introducer to be known as one who had "been in great waters;" and hence he missed his reckoning on dry land, and rolled

Revolution, the Romanists lost their grave yard in St. Mary's by the uncontested adverse possession of some one, who was not over-scrupulous or nice; and who was base enough to avail himself of a cruel Act of the Legislature, and of a Statute of Limitation, which though wisely designed, and necessary, often favours rogues.

and pitched his person about, as if he had lost himself among the breakers; or was tost by a heavy sea, and wanted wind and sail to keep himself steady.

"You are well trimmed to-day Master Hackett," said the merchant to the youth on horseback. "With your leave, I would know if I haven't seen that horse before?"

"Yes," replied the person addressed; "don't you know that near by the Catholic Chapel in your house last St. Agnes' day father Hunter blessed him?"*

"Blessed your horse?" asked the youth on foot with surprise; "why I've not been long in this new world, and yet I have heard things I do not remember to have heard in England. Tell me, Mr. Durford, have you Romanists a certain day for blessing horses?"

"Did I say so?" replied the merchant, cautiously. "My words were not meant to measure that length."

"I say so, if you don't," pertly spoke out Hackett, "and what care I who mayn't know it. We Catholics call this St. Agnes' day, and my horse here was mightily helpt by a blessing she got this time last year."

"Indeed!" exclaimed Montrose, surveying him closely, as if he meant to know him the next time, and doubted his senses, or sanity. "You are pleased to be witty—now wit is a coin I love to circulate, when I know it to be of better weight than the silver-hammered coin that parliament forbids. Allow me to say your horse would be none the worse for a second blessing. Perhaps it might change the dull flemish beast into a fine barb. Don't you think it might possibly shape her head more like a sheep's, and round her ribs and flanks into a decent plumpness?"

"Mister," said Hackett, "you seem as how to know a leetle about horses. Strange you don't know nothing about St. Agnes."

"Who was she in the name of wonder?" asked Montrose, and turning to the sailor, said—"what is your notion, captain?"

"Very like," said the sailor, "she was a clever Spain-donna, to whom you landsmen douse your flags, and are taken in tow by her." The merchant looked very solemn. "Stop, gentlemen, don't slander a pious saint. I have heern that St. Agnes was murdered by order of King

* See "Christmas Holydays at Rome," by Rev. W. I. Kip: pp. 271

Diocles. He wanted to ruin the virtue of this wonderful girl, but thunder and lightning from heaven destroyed the persons who had her in hand. And Father Canon says that, afterwards, whilst the heathen, brutish soldiers were cutting her to pieces, she, not minding any pain, sang the most heavenly psalms."

"That land-lubber of a king," interrupted the sailor, "was worse than Captain Kid. He I first saw in one of the leeward isles, and some years after, poor fellow, he was in Newgate prison. But Kid, pirate as he was, made men walk overboard; but, hang me, if he, or any other sailor, wouldn't walk overboard himself, before he'd cut up like shark meat a pretty woman."

"That's not strange, captain," said Montrose, smiling. "The King Diocles, Mr. Durford speaks of, must have been the emperor Diocletian. And how should emperors know good breeding as well as a sailor? Emperors don't travel into different countries; they have not a sweetheart in every port. But, say, Mr. Durford, does your priest bless horses on this day?"

"I said he did," again interrupted Hackett, seeing that Durford was afraid to answer. The latter was aware of the suspicion with which the Roman Priests were regarded out of St. Mary's, and feared, if such a report should get abroad, it would involve them in trouble.

"Well sir," said Montrose, addressing himself to Hackett, "tell me what more if you please."

"It oughtn't to be no new thing to a gentleman like you," replied Hackett. "I've hear'n say, that in Rome horses and cattle are blest at St. Agnes' church by the priest."

Montrose laughed, and said, "A first rate idea this!—a priest's blessing to cure a horse of the distemper, and a cow of the yellow horn!"

"I've more faith than you, Master Montrose," said the sailor. "A bottle of wine, when a ship is launched, is drinking a health to old Neptune, and who knows the sea-god won't take the ship under his care? and why shouldn't a horse be sprinkled with holy water to keep him from running aground on a foul murrain, or distemper? The priest sprinkles these beasts of Niggers when he christens them, to keep them from the devil's clutches, and mayn't he sprinkle a horse, when I know some of them have as big a devil in

them, as there is in ever a blast that sent a ship flying over the sea."

"Be it so," said Montrose, smiling. "As for me, I ask none of this flummery. Let me be well mounted, and my horse, like the horse of Persia, may be named 'Wind Foot,' and he may go it like lightning; and I want no priest's holy water to make him stop, or perform well."

"Right! right! it is flummery," interrupted a fifth person, speaking quick and hurriedly just behind them. "Who believes the story, that one Italicus at Gaza, and who there kept a circus, had his horses so enchanted once, that they would not move till a St. Hilarion had the horses sprinkled with holy water? This tale is a mere senile prating an old woman's story, which St. Jerome picked up, and without due caution, retails to his readers."

This fifth person then dropt a little behind. The four in the group looked at each other; each appearing anxious to know who the speaker was. "This is the mysterious stranger," said Montrose in a low tone to the captain; and, then muttering to himself, he added. "Am I not to know who he is? For ask him I dare not, yet why I cannot say."

By this time the party had reached Mr. Durford's residence; where they found quite a large number of persons assembled. As the company entered, the captain whispered to Montrose, "There goes the pretty widow. Bless my eyes! What fine upper works! A well rigged ship this! and every way beautifully trimmed," pointing, as he spoke, to a rather short, very tidy, and trim figure of a lady with a brunette complexion, and full dark eyes; who past by them, and, on coming to the door of the private chapel, (which was a back room,) stopt and crossed herself with holy water. Montrose was about to reply to the captain, when his strange acquaintance, perceiving that Montrose had observed the widow's action, put his mouth close to his ear, and distinctly but rapidly said:

"Romanists would defend this by referring to Tertullian, who says, 'We sign our forehead with the cross, whenever we set out and walk; go in or out; dress, gird on our sandals, bathe, eat, light our lamps, sit, or lie down to rest, whatever we do.' True, say I, there is no harm, provided that was all, (which it is not,) only calling to mind our de-

dication to the service of the Crucified, as we enter the house of God."

But the mere crossings have little virtue in them. In place of making the air, or touching ourselves at four points, let us mark ourselves on the heart. "Here, here," striking his breast as he spoke, "should be in lines of living light, printed Christ Jesus and Him crucified. We should be crucified unto Him and unto the world. I love the cross as a symbol, I love it as denoting our dedication to the Crucified. I love it above all when faith not only makes the hands move, but the heart respond and bow to, and confess I glory in the cross of Christ."

"'Tis an attractive custom," replied Montrose, in a low tone, "and in a pretty woman even more attractive."

"'Twould be hard to say," said his strange friend, seating himself, and making a sign to Montrose to take a seat by him, "what act is not attractive that a pretty woman does? Signs of the cross, and genuflexions doubtless seem very, very proper coming from one, whose every motion is grace, and whose beauty sheds lustre on her every act. But I want more. I want faith, a living glowing trust in the Crucified; that which bears Him on the heart, and ends not with the emotions of the fingers and the knees. I like the lowly spirit which speaks in the lines of the "Dies Iræ:"

"Recordare, Jesu pie,
Quod sum causa tuæ viæ,
Ne me perdes illa die.

Quærens me sedisti lassus,
Redemisti crucem passus,
Tantus laber non sit cassus."*

"But whence the holy water?" continued the speaker. "Why all water was made holy by our Lord's baptism in the Jordan. Our Church of England, in private baptism, allows that water unconsecrated by prayer may and does re-

* These lines are thus rendered by Eustace in his "Classical Tour through Italy." Vol. i. p. 48. Note.

"Remember Jesus! that for me
The paths of woe were trod by Thee;
In search of me, with toils opprest,
Thy weary head was laid to rest:
By Thee was born death's bitter pain,
To raise me up to life again:
Be not such mighty mercies vain!"

generate. Besides, why put it at the church door? If it were the baptismal font this would be a fitting place. True, Tertullian's and St. Chrysostom's day, the people washed their hands before the church door. But this holy water custom is traceable to the heathen temples. Hence, here, Rome is Roman still. For Sozomen, says the apostate emperor, Julian, once, while entering a heathen temple to offer a sacrifice, was sprinkled by the idolatrous priest with water."

The voice of the priest was now heard beginning the mass, and the mysterious stranger stopt speaking. The celebrant, after the aspersion, advanced to the foot of the altar, crossed himself, invoked the adorable Trinity, and then repeated in Latin the 62d Psalm. He next devoutly kissed the altar, said the penitential prayer, the gloria in excelsis, the salutation, "Dominus vobiscum," and the collect for St. Agnes' day. The Epistle and Gospel followed, and then the prayers, which being said in a voice too low to be heard by the congregation, are called "the secret." Whoever has seen the mass, will probably remember the ringing of the bell, and the silence which immediately ensues. The hard featured priest stood bareheaded. For, unlike the clergy of the Protestant Episcopal Church, and the preachers of the denominations, and what is more unlike St. Paul, the Roman priest is not always uncovered in the sanctuary, or house of prayer. The priests' assistant, whose florid complexion and light hair made known the Hibernian, appeared to be deeply attentive, while a second assistant, yet younger, acting as incense bearer, knelt with the censer in his hand, prepared in fitting time to scatter around the foul liquid, which they call incense. We trust "the prayers of the saints" are more fragrant. In consecrating, the priest said, "Hoc enim est corpus meum," and he raised the host. At the same time a small bell tingled to give notice, say Romanists, of the arrival of the Lamb! All then knelt, and the choir then broke forth into an anthem. The services being finished, the officiating priest, Father Hunter, made some remarks on the history of St. Agnes, dilated on her virtues, and alluded to the miracle which a monkish historian tells of a visit that was paid to her tomb eight days after her death, by her parents. The story may be true, as may be the legend of St. Ronan's Well, that Sir Walter Scott has so well dressed off. The parents were favoured

with a vision of angels, and they saw their daughter among "the heavenly host;" for angel visits are only few and far between to an uncatholic, anglice, unromanised world. By the side of Agnes stood a lamb white as snow—symbolical, of course? of the *Agnus Dei qui tollit peccati mundi*. What else the lamb had to do among the angels, the legend-mongers must determine.

Father Hunter made a running and tart commentary on the different state measures, which bore oppressively upon the Romanists. He stigmatized the Church of England, not only as Father Canon had, as a law-church, but as "an Erastian provision to substitute the power of Parliament for the power of God. Worse than Prometheus, he only stole fire from heaven, they would steal the Holy Ghost, and give it to parliament-bishops and parsons." Whether he believed what he said, we say not. It was probably very comfortable to take his satisfaction in this way, wanting a better one. Entering into particulars, he spoke of Henry VIII. as the head of the established church, and said: "In England, the church is deformed, not reformed. The orders of the law-church date," he continued, "at Nags' Head tavern. Lust prompted old Harry, and here he rang changes on the words "old Harry." "Old Harry, indeed! Fit instrument," he said, "to do the devil's work in England! The murderer of two wives, the husband of six, and the adulterous husband of five. He, why he was the embodiment of all that was wilful in purpose, and brazen in impudence."

"He was first a suppliant at the feet of his holiness for a dispensation to put away a noble daughter of the church, Catharine of Arragon, that he might marry Anne Boleyn. And, because his holiness would not sanction this iniquity, forsooth the right of St. Peter, and of his successor must be denied! In the dungeons and vaults of old Rome, St. Peter's first successors were consecrated, and now Christ's vicerent in the superb halls of the Vatican, mid shouts, discharge of cannon and every outward display, receives his consecration; and in England always in Lambeth, the archbishop of Canterbury was invested with the authority of primate. But, lo! Parker, at Cheapside, London! And a tavern was a fit place, indeed, to be made the upper chamber, where the pentecostal spirit was ponred out! or the high commission of the keys imparted! Possibly, as at such places Bacchus holds his court, the divine afflatus came from a stoop of liquor;

and getting merry over their sack, they felt themselves, not only big as lords, but grand as my lord the Pope ! or St. Peter himself, and thus we had the farce of Parker's consecration. The oppressed Catholic Church took refuge here in this wilderness, like the woman in the Apocalypse. The Ark and Dove, the pinnaces which brought over the first colonists, symbolizing the Ark of Holy Church which they bore in the ministry of fathers White and Altham, and the Dove the olive branch of peace to a heathen people, brought the Catholic faith here. This wild country began to blossom as the rose ; the wild Indian lost his savageness ; the holy mass on St. Mary's hill made the fiends of darkness here, till then unmolested, to tremble. And St. Ignatius and St. Michael, and the Holy Mother of God, above all, looked kindly down on this planting of the church. But, alas ! persecution, that demon, who, vampire like, lives on blood, must come and flap his wings here, and first going about secretly and then openly, has since glutted himself with the Catholic settlers of the province. The serpent brood from Massachusetts, under Bennett, came here, and they have turned upon their Catholic friends and stung them. And now the members of the law church can devise no other means of bolstering up their intruding position than by making Catholics contribute to feed their parsons. Yea, more, they must close our churches ; forbid the holy service of the mass in public, and oblige us in dens and caves almost, (for what else seem our private chapels ?) to solemnize the rites of the Catholic Church. Still, I say, let us not despond. ' Domini est terra, et plenitudo ejus : ' ' The earth is the Lord's, and the fullness thereof. ' St. Peter's charter authorizes him and his to go into all the world : and Catholics know that the gates of hell ; yea," he added, drawing up his large person, " the hosts of darkness, led on by schismatic and heretic, though they should be so numerous as by their tramp to shake the earth under them, may batter and thunder at the gate of the fortress, of which St. Peter is the Castellan, till their blows ring again, and still we will bid them defiance. The harder they knock, and the denser and blacker seem the mass of foes, the stronger is our heart in St. Peter's vicegerent. For every shout we return a shout again. Every assault we answer by renewed efforts to defend the fortress committed to our care. " He paused, as if

to collect himself, or perhaps to note the effect on his audience.

"And why should we not? The heretics presume to say, we Catholics are all wrong; that we have a Liturgy in an unknown tongue, and that we are ignorant idolaters. Does it follow that we pray in an unknown tongue, because we prefer to address God in the beautiful Latin language? a tongue that the Catholic Church uses throughout the world, in order that she may always and every where speak the same thing. We all know the meaning of our prayers. Our clergy can read them in the original. The people, far as they should know, know their meaning. And God surely knows Latin no less than English. To whom then are our prayers unknown? To the Protestants? Be it so. The loss is theirs, not ours, and we surely may be allowed to pray what we will and as we will. But it is said, it is against the custom of the primitive church so to pray. So is the eating of blood puddings, and of things which have died by strangling. And yet, who, when a chicken is placed on the table, is so squeamish as to refuse to eat, till he has ascertained that its head was cut off, and its neck was not broken?

"But Protestants mistake the mass. This sacrifice is addressed to God, and not to the people. He surely knows every language, and every dialect of the different languages, that arose from the confusion of tongues at Babel. And good reason have we for not using different tongues in our prayers. We are not the men of Babel, if our adversaries are; and, as our faith is one, we wish the language of our prayers to be one likewise.

"But the mass, says the heretical law-church, 'contains blasphemous fables and most dangerous deceits.' Why? Because we hold the sacrifice of the death of Christ in the mass; believing that the priest here offers Christ for the quick and dead; and for the pardon of our sins, in His blood, which in the mass is offered unto the Father. Even so. And is it sinful to believe this? Rather, is it not blasphemy in those who deny the host to be the body indeed, and the cup to contain the blood indeed of Christ?"*

*It will be remembered that the 31st Article of the Protestant Episcopal Church terms the "sacrifice of masses, in the which it was commonly said, that the priest did offer Christ for the quick and the dead, to have remission of pain or guilt," "blasphemous fables, and dangerous deceits." St. Paul, in Hebrews, x. 18, says, where there is remission of sins and iniquities, "there is no more offering for sin," and in v. 14,

This sermon produced quite a sensation in the audience. On retiring to the tavern of the Free Briton, some young men, who cared, probably, but little for the doctrines which Father Hunter had either advanced or assailed, but who being by family and association attached, some to the Roman and others to the Protestant side of the question, over their ale began to talk these things over, and waxing warm in a debate, which, perhaps, not one understood, or cared for beyond the contest for the moment, they proceeded to blows. The Roman and Protestant quarrel, therefore, was about to be settled with thumps, which often tell better than arguments; when Montrose and the captain entered the hotel. The latter, without asking which side was the aggressor, or which had sided with, or differed from the priest, wielded a stout staff. He caned so effectually, in behalf of what appeared to be the weaker side, that the other party, which chanced to be the Roman, beat a retreat. Montrose laughed heartily at this result, and slapping the sailor on the back began to compliment him for his doughty championship of the Protestant cause.

"The devil, you say," said the sailor, looking amazed. "Protestant or Don, Catholic or landsman, by Neptune, that priest gave you a fierce broadside to-day; for I watched you to see if you could stand fire, and by the powers," emptying as he spoke a mug of ale that stood near, "your rigging and hull was riddled."

"Ah! good captain," replied Montrose, "I'll say this of him. He pours a volley of ball in quick succession, and if his guns had force and calibre equal to the spirit with which he stands to them, he would blow every Protestant out of the water."

"Come, come," said the sailor, pushing a can of ale towards Montrose at the same time, "say now you were about to strike your flag."

Montrose shook his head. "No, not to his mass doctrine." The door now opened, and the stranger who had

"by *one offering* He, (Christ,) hath perfected forever them that are sanctified." But the Roman sacrifice of the mass is on the supposition that the offering of Christ's body *once* must be repeated; since Canons 1 and 2 of Sep. xxii. of the Council of Trent, affirm "the sacrifice of mass to be a true and propitiatory sacrifice for sin." To make St. Paul true, the Council must be allowed to have declared a blasphemy. And they cannot avoid this result by saying Christ is not sacrificed, but only offered in the mass: for St. Paul says, (Heb. ix. 25, 26,) so often as Christ is offered He is sacrificed, or "has suffered death."

evinced such interest in Montrose, entered. He caught, it seems, the last words of Montrose, and appeared pleased with the latter's dissent, but said,

"This is no place to talk over such matters."

"Perhaps you've faith in the mass doctrine?" the sailor asked.

"None," replied the stranger gravely, anxious to avoid all further conversation with him at such a time and place.

"Look here, master landsman," said the sailor, evidently feeling his liquor, and following the stranger to the tavern porch, where Montrose and himself had walked out, "you'd prove, I 'spose, there is a presence, and there aint any? Like a point on the Chesapeake close by, which looks a point some furlongs off land, but close in shore is seen to be no point at all."

The stranger coloured, and did not appear at first to like this freedom either with himself, or the sacred subject so irreverently alluded to; but concluding after a moment's reflection, that the sooner he shook the sailor off the better, and that even a hasty discussion of this knotty point would drive him away sooner than harsh language or rough treatment, he said, that Christ was present in the consecrated bread and wine only in a spiritual sense.

"Then He aint there at all," said the sailor, forcing a laugh.

"He is not less there truly and really, because He is there only in a spiritual sense," said the stranger, firmly.

"Back your helm there," said the sailor, "or we shall go up high and dry on the shoals. You aint afloat now."

"Yes, I am," said the stranger, smiling, thinking it best to humour him. "But even were I to run ashore, Captain, 'tis better than to lose you, as that priest would, in a vast ocean, where you would not see any land, but must, though it mists and storms, let a Roman priest pilot you at will."

"Well," replied the sailor, "aint you lost when you are steering for a real presence, which, as you say, aint real, either?" The stranger could not but smile, but looking serious, he said, "You have been in a squall, Captain?"

"Many a one," replied the sailor.

"And you called it a real squall?"

"Yes, by Neptune and all his whales, there warn't no fun in it; so raal was it."

"Did you see the squall?"

"See it?" and the sailor opened his eyes wide, and started: "You are more of a landsman than I took you to be. Harkye, stranger, can you see the devilish fine hair which holds the needle in one point, let the ship box about as she pleases. I'd like to see you in a squall; you'd think you felt it."

"Well, it was a real squall, and yet not to be seen? Now to make a thing real, it is not necessary we should be able to see it. Hence, Christ's body may be in the sacrament, though we cannot see it there." The sailor looked wild. The stranger proceeded: "Again, a thing may be, which we cannot hear. For hearing supposes a noise made which is reported to our ear. But here is a tree: it has life and grows; yet we can hear it neither grow, talk nor move. A thing may then be which we cannot hear." The sailor walked up to him and looked him full in the face. The stranger continued: "Again, a thing may be, and at the same time close to us, yet we may not touch it." "A ghost," interrupted the sailor. "Thus, here is a bank note of five pounds," continued the speaker: "the paper is not the five pounds, but only the promise to pay that amount by the bank. In touching the paper, then, I do not touch five pounds, but only what will command that sum. Again, here is a piece of bread, the staff of life, but the life or nourishment in the bread no one is certain that he sees, hears, or feels. A thing may, therefore, contain in itself reality and power, as in a squall; life, as in a tree; value, as in a bank note, and nourishment, as in bread, which we can neither see, hear, nor feel. May not Christ's body be so present in the sacrament?"*

"Hold on there," interrupted the Captain, and he hurried out, hoping to overtake the young widow mentioned, who passed near the tavern.

"Walk with me to my room," said the stranger, touching Montrose. The latter obeyed. The stranger said, "You heard an ingenious but disingenuous preacher to-day? Ah! sir, 'tis a low business, and he'll gain nothing by seeking to defame that church, which, in a changeful

* The writer does not intend this homely illustration of a high mystery as the best that can be offered. Being a mystery, any attempt to make it plain would fall below and do great injustice to it. He trusts he will not be suspected of the least intention to disparage a doctrine so holy and comfortable, as that of the real and spiritual presence of the God-man, Jesus Christ, in the blessed Eucharist.

and wicked age, alone seems to be the unspotted bride of Christ. He who scatters filth, besides, is sure to soil himself: though defamation seems to be a common weapon with Jesuits."

"Father Hunter kissed the altar," said Montrose, "and this I suppose is of a piece with other things you would object to?"

"I would, I must," quickly returned his friend. "I know the Jews bowed themselves toward the mercy seat. I know the early Christians bowed reverently towards the altar, and we do the same in kneeling in our pews, and especially in receiving the sacrament. But then neither the Jews, the early Christians, nor ourselves, had or have relics under the altar. We think the altar by itself is holy. Our Lord said: 'The altar sanctifies the gift.' Montrose looked surprised, as much as to ask, 'What then?' His friend continued, 'The sanctity of Roman altars, they think, is derived from the bones of saints under them. In an ignorant age, Canute, the Dane, empowered his agent to buy at Rome the arm of St. Augustine, for one hundred talents of silver, and one of gold. And the monks at Jerusalem profess to show the snout of a Seraphim, which St. Francis, it is fabled, saw. And lying, false, and supposititious relics, the bones of real, and at times the bones of improperly accredited saints, and the bones even of animals, mistaken for those of departed men, are under Roman altars, and it is to these fleshless remains of mortality or beast that they bow. These are thy gods, oh! blinded votaries. Wherefore, their prostration towards the altar is any thing but Christian reverence."

"You would not have them do otherwise than bow?" asked Montrose, with some surprise.

"Of course not," was the reply; "but I would have them worship Him and Him only, whose presence renders a church a house of prayer; I would have them bow to the altar, eschewing all superstitious vanities and abominations, and reverencing the altar simply because, as Christ said, it sanctifieth whatever is offered thereon; and because God calls it his altar, and hence, bones are a profanation to it."

"I was told it was St. Agnes' day," said Montrose, "and I think the priest asked her prayers."

"He did, and here you saw a part of the man's inventions of Romanism." He laughed derisively, and then

checking himself and looking sad, continued: "If such a person as St. Agnes ever lived, how can she, being dead, know that this priest at St. Mary's is asking the benefit of her prayers? Now the apostolic exhortation, 'Brethren, pray for us,' cannot apply here; because the brethren whose prayers were asked by St. Paul, were informed of this fact, and at the time were in the land of the living. Or, admitting that she could be informed of our prayers, is it proper to ask her intercession? Certainly not, because it supersedes the One Intercessor between God and man, even Jesus Christ: or, even waiving this objection, the practice of soliciting the prayers of any departed saint is likely, nay more, certain to lead to the worship of the creature, instead of the Creator. Let us, for example, compare the collect of our church for St. Barnabas' day," which he then read from a Prayer Book. "See how far more scriptural." He paused awhile, and then said, "You observed, Mr. Montrose, that at one time the priest spoke inaudibly?"

"I did," replied Montrose, "and asked myself why he should pray so as not to be heard by the congregation."

"You may well ask the question," proceeded he, "and I defy Rome to give a reasonable answer. Now I have heard Puritan gospellers address God as the Baal priests were told by the prophet to call upon Baal, in a very loud tone of voice: as if, like Baal, He were asleep and needed awakening; or were on a journey, and it required trumpet tones to reach Him. But here is another extreme; the faulty extreme of praying too low to be heard."

"Perhaps," said Montrose, wishing to say something in order to show that he was not wholly inattentive, and yet at a loss what to say,—“they pretend to trace this custom to antiquity?”

"No doubt, no doubt," quickly replied his strange friend. "It is very easy to invent reasons. I have been told that the Greek Christians had curtains, and afterwards screens, before the altar, to make the service of the mass private by concealing the person of the priest; and I was gravely assured that the priest now, like the high-priest of old, should be surrounded with the awful solitude of the sanctuary. Our church has no such custom, because inaudible praying publicly was not known in the early church; because there is no danger of the holy eucharist being ridiculed on the stage, making it prover that it should be

said inaudibly; and because, which I think is the true reason for the Roman practice, our church does not pretend to work the miracle which the Roman and Greek Churches pretend to. And well she may not. Romanists, I know, attach all importance to the miracle then said to be wrought. Our stupid sovereign, James II., carried so far his notions that he became the laughing stock alike of the French and Italians. The Archbishop of Rheims said ironically of him, 'There is a pious man who has sacrificed three crowns for a mass.' I cannot think of it with patience." And as he spoke, his face flushed, and his eye kindled. "Why what is it but an actual verifying of the apocalyptic prophecy of the woman arrayed in purple and scarlet, decked with gold and precious stones? Do we not see the golden cup of sorceries? as some term it, or, as the Holy Ghost speaks, the cup of abominations? And is not the doctrine of transubstantiation one of abomination? Archbishop Cranmer seems to have thought so. According to him, if we lopped off from Popery beads, pilgrimages, pardons, and such like, we only lopped off 'a few branches, which would soon spring up again, unless the roots of the tree,'—and a deadly tree is that Upas growth that is christened Roman Catholicity, 'which were,' he adds, 'transubstantiation, and the sacrifice of the mass, be pulled up.'"

"You don't like this praying so low?" asked Montrose.

"I like no praying by deputy or proxy," was the prompt reply. "Our Prayer Book is called 'the Book of Common Prayer,' because in the prayers the people are expected to join: and to be able to join in them, they must know what the priest or minister is praying. Thus, while the congregation are not expected to follow the minister aloud, the prayers are in short collects that they may, as they are expected to do, at the end of each collect, or brief prayer, answer Amen: hereby giving their assent, and of course making it as much their prayer as the clergyman's. The ancient church knew nothing of this dumb show which Rome exhibits. St. Jerome informs us that in his day worshipping assemblies responded so loudly that their Amen sounded like a clap of thunder."

"But perhaps it is not necessary," Montrose ventured to suggest. "Their minds are raised to devotion by the pictures, images, candles, and incense."

"I hope they are," was the answer, "but I often fear

not. This is, too, too much a religion in which candles, images, pictures, incense and bendings of the knee and body, and crossings take place of the devotion of the heart. God surely asks for more :—and to be a religion and worship of the heart the prayers should be said aloud, understood of the people, and by the people responded to. The Roman priest has all the praying to himself, his prayers are in an unknown tongue, and he often prays too low even to be heard. As I said, the Roman congregations cannot respond to these prayers, as the apostle advises, ‘Amen.’ They are not common prayers, as are our beautiful collects, and hence at the time of Divine service, or their mass, it is not a worshipping assembly. What interest also can the people have in supplications in which they do not join? I know the priest should lead the prayers of a congregation; but then he is not to have all the praying to himself. In our Prayer Book it is said, ‘Let *us* pray.’ We are asked to pray with the minister, and we should, if we hope to be benefited.” He stopped, looked down thoughtfully, and added, “We live in a heartless cold age. If we prayed with the spirit and the understanding, our clergy would feel that their hands were upheld, and our Sundays would be rich in pentecostal effusions of grace and power from on high on pastor and people.”

He paused awhile, and then said. “We were talking of the mass, the host was elevated, and a bell was rung. Do you know why?”

“The elevation, I suppose,” replied Montrose, “was that it might be seen, perhaps worshipped. The bell may have been rung to call attention.”

“This may, or may not be,” explained his interrogator. “For nearly a thousand years the Church of Christ knew no necessity for lifting the consecrated bread, and it was not lifted. The *Ordo Romanus*, and the earlier ritualists make no mention of its elevation. To Gregory IX. we owe this innovation, and, in the same 13th century, William, Bishop of Paris, directed a bell to be rung at the elevation of the host. One error leads to a second, and errors continue to multiply, one being the fruitful mother of many. But the Synod of Cologne, which spoke by authority, says the bishop’s object was not to lead the people to worship the host (which the ringing of the bell does now); but to lead them to remember the Lord’s death,

and to return thanks to Him with minds raised to heaven. But this was not all. A bell was rung just before the consecration. You would explain this, I suppose, in the same way?"

Montrose could not help smiling at the earnestness with which the question was put to him; but, seeing that it gave pain to his questioner, he gravely answered he would.

"No, not so," said the speaker. "The Roman authorities quote this Jewish law: 'And it shall be upon Aaron to minister, and his sound shall be heard when he goeth in unto the holy place before the Lord, and when he cometh out, that he die not.' Most true. But, while we admit that the awful warning, 'that he die not,' viewed in connexion with the 43d verse of the same 28th chapter of Exodus, seems to forbid a priestly act without a priestly dress, we find that the early church did not interpret this Levitical requisition about the ringing of a bell as intended to apply to the priesthood now, as they are about to consecrate, since the church then had no such custom." He hesitated awhile, and then said: "The cases of the Jewish priest, and the Roman priest differ. A bell was directed to be rung *just before* the Jewish priest entered into the most holy place; but in the Roman Church a bell is rung *after* the priest has been in the most holy place *for some time*. Thus the Roman priest entered the most holy place at the singing of the Introit, and just as he began the service of the mass. The reference to the Jewish law evinces the anxiety of the Romanists to plead even the shadow of antiquity for their departure from primitive usage. But they have the shadow, not the light of the Jewish Church, for their innovation. For the Jewish Church may be said to turn its back upon it; and this reference to a Jewish usage is likely to mystify and mislead. True, the elevation of the host, the ringing of the bell, and the deep silence may be well as aids to devotion and quickness of sensibility; but are they not also too like the mimic representation of thunder and lightning on our stage? too like the scene shifting which made so much noise in the Duke of York's Theatre at Lincoln-inn-fields? and being such can they have more than a stage effect? Why, sir, these are mere human contrivances, in times most solemn. Still," and here he paused, and spoke more slowly, "they help on the doctrine of transubstantiation, and that is a point gained for Rome. For the cloud of

smoke from these incenses mystifies, and causes the torch of truth to burn blue. The ringing of the bell at certain Latin words, and the silence which follows, give to the whole an air of enchantment; and hence, when the smoke disappears, the bell ceases to ring, and the awful silence shall be past, why then, the priest will be thought by some to have changed by certain magic words a wafer into a God. Herein, Mr. Montrose, the Church of Rome shows her wonderful knowledge of human nature. She does not tear off the veil from certain mysteries, as would certain non-conformist and puritan brethren, and seek to drag them to light. But, because they are mysteries, she should know further that a simple and judicious announcement of them ought to suffice. Whereas, in seeking to heighten the mystery yet more by stupid contrivances, which are beneath the awful verities hid under them, she incurs the danger of bringing both the truths and the signs into contempt."

Montrose now rose to go. The stranger seemed to be fatigued, heaved a sigh and said. "Young man, bear with me. You will not know now, but may hereafter, the interest I have in your welfare. Ponder my words. We meet again." Montrose then retired, and on going away he said mentally: "His mind has been much exercised on the subject of Romanism. He is free from its influence; but seems to hold it in such dread, that, having, for some cause which is unknown to me, taken a great fancy to me, he fears lest I may be drawn into the toils of these Jesuits and papists at St. Mary's. But I fear that much he said affords matter for far more thought than I have time to give to it."

CHAPTER V.

INDEPENDENCE AND ORDERS OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND.

"The free old Church of England!
That scorned the papal sway,
And cast off Rome's supremacy
In Rome's most haughty day;
That firmly stood when error rolled
Its myriad waves around,
Where Christ had founded her at first,
On truth's unchanging ground."

CHRISTMAS BELLS.

FATHER HUNTER'S discourse at the chapel produced nearly as great ferment as he could have desired. So long as agitation kept Roman calumny afloat, and had the effect of unsettling the minds of the members of the Church of England in the validity of her ministry, without leading to legal measures against the Romanists, this wily Jesuit had doubtless no objection to it. If agitation leads to inquiry, and truth is likely to be the result, no one more than himself would have deprecated it. Rome never trembles more than when the press circulates inquisitorially and freely in the land. When the population is already committed to her dogmas, and practice, then, as is the case in Italy and Spain, and as was the case before the Reformation, she prefers a dead-sea calmness. Pius IX., in our day, established a censorship on the press, and showed an unwillingness to indulge his loving subjects and children the privilege of thinking for themselves, and of finding their way out of their moral and civil servitude. But when agitation has an unscrupulous partizan, like O'Connell, to head it, and by bold and artful statements to startle and gull the popular mind, and work it up to frenzy; so that Rome may ride the whirlwind and direct the storm, agitation is sought. So is it also when one yet craftier than O'Connell, as the Roman archbishop of New York, can, by agitation, persuade a gullible people that the Bible ought to be abolished from schools, lest it may corrupt their children. And Father Hunter knew the potency of bold assertions made unblushingly. The archetype of all such in paradise led our first

moth̃er to doubt even God himself by an ingenious doubt, or an artful lie, as we interpret his remark to her. And the doubt set in motion about Archbishop Parker's orders, he knew would travel. Mrs. Clapper, one of his flock, was not likely to let it remain idle: but rang many changes on this and other statements which her ear eagerly caught. "'Twas bad enough," she said, "to steal, but too bad to steal the Holy Ghost. Such thieving was worse than that of Mr. Promesy, who stole fire from heaven. And this was all the parsons had. They traded in capital that warn't their own. They indeed make folks Christians and good people! when all their power came from parliament. The head of their church was a murdering king. Nancy Bullin was a goose to let herself be made queen by a bloody minded man, who got tired of his wives whenever a prettier face came in sight; and then cut their heads off. And who'd have thought it?" continued Mrs. Clapper, looking unutterable amazement, "that the first Protestant archbishop was made his grace, sitting astraddle of a cask of liquor. Old father Flanagan, good man, would sometimes stagger saying mass; but then on solemn occasions he never took a barrel for a pulpit or a chair. No, indeed. And how pretty did Father Hunter talk about the Ark and the Dove! Fathers White and Altham, blest saints, whom the hard-hearted Protestants put in chains afterwards, worked and prayed hard for us Catholics. And just to think we've got to pay away our tobacco to the parsons. A mighty shame it is!" And here Mrs. Clapper paused, and turned to a bystander, Miss Doolittle, who was a spinster, that Father Time had hurried faster down the hill of life than was convenient to her: for she in her downward progress had found no help-meet to jog on with her, soothing the asperities of the way.

"I'm no friend, more than yourself," said the spinster, in a whine, "to taxing people to pay for what they don't like. The Gospel, by my poor judgment, ought to be without money and without price." Mrs. Clapper had paused only to get breath, which, having recovered, she proceeded in the same rapid way to let off what was uppermost.

"How well did Father Hunter talk about fighting! and why shouldn't we? Aint the country our'n? Didn't Lord Baltimore buy it? And just the night before he landed here, didn't the blessed Virgin appear to him all dressed in gold and white? and taking him along with her, led him to

St. Mary's hill, where he saw a big cross, at the foot of which the old devil lay in irons? And must we now work to feed the parsons? No!" continued the spirited dame, "I'll eat no stuffed ham on Easter first, and fast on bread and water instead of oysters and fish. We can spite them by making no tobacco. And they grumble, eh! cause we pray in Latin. Deed I'm sure I don't pray in that outlandish language. And, if I did, haven't I a right to? But the great blame put on us is for believing in the real presence. Why, didn't Father Flanagan once say that one morning, when he was drinking off the consecrated wine,—his hand having the trembles at the time, he spilt some on his white robe, and that, on looking at it afterwards, he saw a real blood stain there. Why the Protestants' Bible must have the word in it; if as how they warn't 'fraid to put it in."

"No such heathenish word in the Bible," hastily said Miss Doolittle, no longer able to hold in her pent up choler, "but the good book is full of faith, and all about faith. There's no real presence in it. No reality in the matter. We eat only with the mouth of faith. We hear with the ear of faith. We see with the eye of faith. Reality! 'pon my soul, there's nothing of the sort. 'Tis, as I heerd a mighty good man, Mr. Allgrace, say, all figurative. 'Tis like, I am the vine and ye are the branches. I am the door. I am the Shepherd, and ye are the sheep. If the heart be right that's all. Oh, faith is a beautiful thing! Let us have that, and we shan't talk about eating raw flesh, and drinking blood. It's plain as moonshine that's all figurative; and so we ain't goats but sheep when we die, we need not care."

"A man must be moonstruck, sure enough," said Mrs. Clapper, disdainfully, "who'd ever take you for a decent sheep. To look at you is enough to know that; if you ain't a nanny goat, then I've never seen one," and she turned upon Miss Doolittle so furiously as to threaten to demolish her; while the latter, as if to shelter herself from the storm, and, in order to avail herself of the first pause in it, fumbled in her long pocket for her Bible, and then began to hunt out passages to be ready, as she kept muttering, "to wield the sword of the Spirit, and to shut up this creature of the whore of Babylon."

We will let the nettlesome dames fight on, with the hope

that, when the battle shall be over, they may not be as bad off as were the Kilkenny-cats; and proceed to say that these remarks of Father Hunter acted on the people of St. Mary's quite otherwise than as oil on troubled waters. The politic and older members of the Roman church, perhaps, regretted Mrs. Clapper's indiscretions; while the younger and over-zealous exulted at the stand taken by Father Hunter. A few mongrel members of the Church of England looked on, and asked, "To what will this thing grow? We will step aside, and if there be any spoils, join the victors;" but some of the true-hearted members of England's church, who were here comparatively a little flock in the town, taking the alarm, made a strong representation to Parson Gordon of Father Hunter's impeachment of the ministry of the English Church. The worthy rector's "failings leaned to virtue's side." He was as a lion roused when his church was assailed, but cared as little to mix himself in the quarrels of Mrs. Clapper and Miss Doolittle, as Lord Bolingbroke felt complimented by finding himself associated with Fanny Oglethorpe and Olive Trant in the intrigues of the Jacobites. However, Parson Gordon came to St. Mary's, and in order that he might act with due judgment, and that he might waste no powder, should it be necessary to fire his heavy guns against the adversary, he called at the castle to sound and consult Colonel Smithson.

Now Colonel Smithson, who then resided at the castle, was a leading man in the Province; had been speaker of the lower house of Assembly, and ranked high with all parties, but, unfortunately for Parson Gordon, the Colonel was little else but a politician and gentleman. He cared not to take a decided stand for the Church of England, lest he might lose his influence over the Roman population; and his preferences, if any, being for the Church of England, and it being his interest not to oppose what, by law, had become the established religion; the Colonel had no very fixed, decided or salient religious principles. He had heard of Father Hunter's discourse; was surprised at the seemingly incautious heat of the wily priest, and, at the time that Parson Gordon was entering the front gate of the castle, was expressing his amazement to his lady. The servant entered, and said that Parson Gordon was at the door.

"Ask him in," said the Colonel, rising; and as the servant went to the door, the Colonel looked significantly at Mrs.

Smithson, and continued : "Of all jars, my dear, keep me from those of religion. They violate all the rules of courtesy, and the proprieties of society. Erasmus, as I have said to you before, was the only sensible man at the Reformation. To be on terms with one class, you must draw sword and make battle with the other. Not a word about this explosion of Father Hunter's, Mrs. Smithson, if you value my regard. Neither have we any part or lot in Mrs. Clapper's prattling. She and Father Hunter can take care of themselves. This town hubbub will blow off, and, by holding our peace, no toothless bedlamite will pull your cap off, and no crack-brained zealot will seek to run me through with a sword. Ah! what gale of good fortune has blown your reverence here?" he continued, advancing as he spoke to the door, and shaking Parson Gordon cordially by the hand.

"How far it is a gale of good, or ill fortune," replied the rector, "I cannot say; but I will say I have come in a gale; for rarely have I seen or heard, as now, such a tempestuous blowing and rattling."

"What is the matter?" asked the colonel, affecting surprise, and speaking ironically. "My good dame here and I were in London just five years ago, when the worst storm, perhaps, on record, shook the houses of the metropolis to their base; destroyed her Majesty's fine ships, and, doubtless, so pleased the French king that a *Te Deum* was sung in Notre Dame. But you seem as much alarmed as we were then. Surely, sir," and here the colonel smiled at Parson Gordon's known partiality for the Stuarts, "there are no news from St. Germain's? Chevalier George has not landed in Edinburg?" and the colonel counterfeited ignorance admirably.

"Would to God!" said the rector, "that the right of the grand-son of the martyred Charles, without papal bias, were after her Majesty's death recognized—as it is, I wish it not; but I am thinking of other matters."

He then mentioned Father Hunter's sermon, and the effect it had produced.

"Why," said the Colonel, "you do not question Father Hunter's right to instruct his people."

"By no means, colonel," replied the rector, "but, if he hazards assertions disparaging the doctrines or orders of the Church of England, and if these assertions, being uncon-

tradicted, are likely, not only to confirm his own people in their ignorance and darkness, but to mislead and blind those who are under my pastoral care,—must I hold my peace? Am not I answerable to the Chief Shepherd if I fly from my post, and leave the flock to the tender mercies of the wolf?"

"Undoubtedly," said the colonel. "Come, be seated. You divines cannot take things coolly. Mrs. Smithson and myself have just heard that Father Hunter had given Henry VIII. not the best character:—a liberty, your reverence knows, the Catholic clergy are provoked to take in revenge of the wrong he did them by prompting, and effecting the casting off the papal supremacy in England."

"Be it so," continued the rector. "The character of Henry VIII. belongs to history, and history must acquit or convict him. But Mr. Hunter must not defame the Church of England, by representing that Henry VIII. was infamously wicked, and her recognized head; nor must he repeat the Jesuit fable of Archbishop Parker's consecration. He knows that his own orders, like those of all the Roman clergy in Great Britain and this country, emanate from certain intruding and schismatic prelates; and he knows also, or he might if he wished to know the truth, that the orders of the Church of England are free from schism, and, without a single canonical break or informality, are linked to an apostolic source."

Colonel Smithson was too much of a courtier to gainsay Parson Gordon's statement on a theological question; and, being a member of the Church of England, he professed to rely on the apostolicity of her orders; but, like many others who should know better, he had imbibed the opinion that Rome was the older church of the two; and inferred that her seniority gave her authority over the Church of England. Hence he smiled at Parson Gordon's last remark, and, half-seriously and half sportively, turned to Mrs. Annie Jones, who, at that moment, entered the room. She was the fair one the captain went in pursuit of; and who, it should be added, had become a pervert to Rome, owing to the influence of Father Hunter.

"Well, Annie dear," said the colonel, "our good friend here will have to reinstruct you; or rather to unteach you your error about the prior antiquity and claims of the chair of St. Peter. I fear, Father Hunter's zeal has boiled over.

The Church of England owes old Harry no very great thanks, it seems, after all. See, child, how indiscreet you have been in running away from the true church to a schismatic one !”

Parson Gordon understood the force of this attempt at pleasantry, saw the doubt which was couched under it, and determined to meet it at once.

“According to the Roman authorities, colonel, England was christianized by St. Augustine in A. D. 596; but this assertion makes a heavy draft on our credulity. We know that St. Augustine’s labours were confined to a small part of England, and that, twenty years after the landing of St. Augustine there, the Saxons he had converted, with their king, returned to idolatry. The christianizing of Kent could not have been the christianizing of England, unless the less necessarily includes the greater. Nor the having a foothold there about twenty years, and not earlier than in the sixth century, be an occupation of England forever thereafter, and its occupation also centuries before either Gregory had planned, or Augustine brought the Gospel to the Saxons.”

The colonel smiled incredulously, and said: “I have heard this objection before, but considered it only as the ingenious fence of an adversary of Rome.”

“It is more than ingenious,” replied the rector. “It is true. The arms of Julius Cæsar seem to have opened a way both for the civilizing and christianizing of England. The first century of the Christian era saw Britain both under the yoke of a Roman Emperor, and of Christ. Thus, Eusebius says, the apostles preached to the nations on the continent, and, passing the ocean, visited the British isles. Tertullian (A. D. 150) says parts of Britain which were inaccessible, even to the Romans, were subject to Christ. St. Alban, the proto-martyr, in England, as St. Stephen, of Christendom, was put to death for the faith in the Diocletian persecution, and the fact and place of his martyrdom were first perpetuated by a beautiful church, which the venerable Bede saw, and spoke of four centuries after; in whose time it was standing. This fact and place are also commemorated by an abbey, which Offa, king of Mercia, founded in the eighth century; and the abbey church is still to be seen. The church, as your good lady here has often said to me, (for she is a native of Verulam, and which

fact is known to yourself also,) is, you are aware, an immense pile. Besides at the Council of Arles, (A. D. 314,) called by the Emperor Constantine to decide the Donatist controversy, there were present the Bishops of London, York, and Lincoln. British bishops were also present at the Council of Sardica, and the great Council of Nice, all in the same century; for the Nicene Creed is stated in the Acts of the Council to have been passed with the unanimous consent of the churches, of Italy, Egypt, Spain, France, Britain, and Asia Minor. The Pelagian heresy, started by a Briton, broke out in the fifth century; and a council at the instance of St. Germain was held at Verulam, or St. Alban's, which laid it to rest. The Saxon invasion was one hundred and fifty years before Augustine's arrival, and there were then more bishops in England and Wales than now;—fifteen of these bishops are mentioned by name, and we have reason to believe there were as many more at least."

"But," interrupted the colonel, "in the 5th century, the Saxons under Hengist and Horsa invaded England, and expelling the Britons, they must have extinguished, in part at least, the light of Christianity, and consequently a large part of England was heathen when Augustine came."

"Not exactly," replied the rector, "the Saxons under Hengist and Horsa took possession of a few of the southern counties of England. The other Saxon invaders did not penetrate into Wales, and some of the extreme northern and southern counties; and in them Christianity still flourished; for Bede mentions that seven British bishops and one archbishop were in Wales, when Augustine held his conference with the representatives of the British Church; which was under the oak, called Augustine's oak, near the river Severn, and in the vicinity of the monastery of Bangor. The British Church had no connexion with that one which Augustine had founded during his life. St. Augustine's labours besides only extended to the county of Kent, and to founding bishoprics in the adjacent cities of London and Rochester."

The colonel looked surprised. Parson Gordon proceeded. "At Augustine's arrival Ethelbert was king of Kent. He married Bertha, daughter of Chairbert king of Paris. Bertha was a Christian, and she brought over with her to Kent bishop Leirhard. For him she repaired the old British Church of St. Martin's, which was before the Saxon

invasion; and hence you see that there was a Christian congregation, even in Saxon England, and a Christian bishop there, and of course, a branch of the Church Catholic there, before the visit of Augustine. But more, twenty years after Augustine's arrival, Bertha died, Augustine was dead also, Ethelbert's son apostatised to idolatry, and Mellitus, who was bishop of London, and Justus, bishop of Rochester, retired to Gaul; and Laurentius, who was Augustine's successor, was about to retire also. The last, however, pretending, as monkish historians say, to receive a command to the contrary from St. Peter, determined to continue. Under him the church slightly revived, and the dying sparks blazed forth anew."

"I see the force of this statement," said the colonel. '*Nullius addictus jurare in verba magistri*,' is not my motto, especially when I have so able a teacher as you at whose feet I can sit; but," and the colonel, evidently unwilling to yield the point, hesitated a moment; and then continued, "If the British Church did not spring from Rome, it is not indebted to her for her orders, and all spiritual power."

"By no means," replied Parson Gordon, "the bishop, or Pope of Rome could have no authority in England, because, a few years before Augustine's visit, it was not even known at Rome that the Britons were Christians. For Gregory, who, when Pope, sent Augustine to England, saw, when he was a monk, some slaves from Britain offered for sale in the market at Rome; and, when he was told they came from the island of Britain, did not know whether this island was Pagan or Christian; and yet bishops, priests, clergy, and Christian Churches had been in Britain about six hundred years. The British Churches also continued to receive their bishops by consecration from their own metropolitan the Bishop of Caerlon on Usk; and afterwards, when the metropolitan see was changed, from the bishop of St. David; so late as the time of Henry I. in the 12th century. Thus we see a church in Britain six centuries before an emissary from Rome visited the island; a church which was founded, it is believed, in the 63d year of our redemption, before there was a Christian Church in Rome itself. This church had martyrs and confessors, as St. Alban, St. Germain, St. David, St. Asaph and others; a noted historian Gildas; more than thirty bishops and dioceses, numerous churches, and more than one abbey; and was represented by her bishops

in the Councils of Arles, Sardica, Ariminum, Nice, and Verulam, years before the Christians there had heard even that there was a bishop and church at Rome. If these facts do not scatter to the winds Rome's priority and jurisdiction, what will?"

"I was told," said Mrs. Annie rather modestly, and with some surprise in her manner at Parson Gordon's remarks, "that there was no church in England before St. Augustine came there; or if there was that it had almost died out."

"Mr. Hunter has the brass to assert, if he wants the power to make good," replied the rector warmly, "any slander which he thinks will help his side."

"I see all that you say," now joined in the colonel, "but perhaps St. Augustine's mission in England gave the Roman see foothold there? And if foothold, Father Hunter thinks it was a rightful one. Possession being in law more than half."

"A stranger *vi et armis* ousts you of a part of your house, driving you to one wing," replied the rector, "a visitor is received by that stranger, and allowed to instal himself in one or two chambers; are you to be considered as thereby rightfully dispossessed of your property? The Saxons were that stranger, Augustine the visitor, the old British Church the rightful owner. Why colonel, the 'Church of Rome can claim nothing *de jure* from Augustine's visit. The Catholic Council of Ephesus, (which Rome herself acknowledges,) says, 'no bishop shall occupy another province, which has not been subject to him from the beginning. Now in the beginning the province of England was not subject to the Bishop of Rome, but to the British metropolitan, the Archbishop of Caerlon or St. David's whose orders came either from St. Paul, or an apostolic missionary in the first century; to which British archbishop and not to the Bishop of Rome, the British province was subject. It is a singular claim also for Rome now to set up, when for twelve hundred years she had no authority over the British Churches; but when especially for six hundred years, her jurisdiction was not recognized as extending further than the middle and southern parts even of Italy; the northern part being then subject to the Bishop of Milan. It is very odd that the Pope should have authority in England, when, so late as the year 1100, Pope Pascal XI. did not claim to have any power out of the continent of Europe; the British islands

not being included; and if such universal papal domination were rightful, why did Gregory I. who sent Augustine to England, anathematise whosoever might claim to be universal bishop? But Augustine's mission could give the see of Rome no jurisdiction; for his orders did not come from Rome. Augustine was consecrated by the Archbishop of Arles, and the Bishop of Lyons in France; and the orders of the Gallic Church came from St. John, and not through the Roman see. Or, even admitting that, at the instance of Gregory, the French bishops consecrated Augustine, still Jerusalem was the mother church, she is called in God's word 'the mother of us all,' and is so termed by the fathers, and so known to be from the notorious fact, that, from Jerusalem, and not from Rome, flowed the fount of apostolic power. Jerusalem was the primal source, and Antioch, Ephesus, Alexandria, Rome, Arles, Lyons, Caerlon, London, and Canterbury, all churches and bishoprics before Augustine's mission to England, were only collateral branches."

"Very good," said the colonel, "but, I think, I have heard of a certain vestment, the pall, which the Roman see gave to the archbishops, and by which she bound them to her obedience." And he looked archly at Parson Gordon; evidently resolute to make a stand, in order to lead Parson Gordon on, and yet careful not to offend.

"This will not help Rome at all," replied the rector, "no, not even to bind the Saxon Church to the Roman obedience. Augustine, you know, as I have shown, had no authority over the British churches, and consequently nothing, that passed between the Bishop of Rome and himself, can bind or affect the churches in England which were in Wales, and the southern and northern counties adjacent. The question, therefore is, and the only question here, did it affect the church in England which he established in Kent? I stated that it could not, because, twenty years after Augustine's arrival, that church was nearly, if not wholly extinct. For, though Laurence, his successor at Canterbury, sought to resuscitate the church, many years passed before Christianity extended beyond the petty kingdom of Kent. And, Saxon England was indebted, after all, neither to Augustine nor his successors for the Gospel, and her orders; but to Scottish missionaries under Aidan, St. Chad and others; whose orders came not from Rome, but from St. John, in the seventh century; and they were instrumental in converting its

pagan population. Consequently the pall, received by Augustine and his successors, could have bound only that small part of the church in England, which owed its Christianity and ministerial orders to Augustine, Laurence and their successors during this early age."

"It bound *them*, however," interrupted Colonel Smithson, eagerly, "and through them may bind the Church of England afterwards, when their orders became all merged into one stream, which welled forth from his grace of Canterbury."

"It did not even bind the church in Kent," quickly rejoined Parson Gordon. "We read that in the year 601, Mellitus, Justus and Paulinus brought the pall to Augustine. This vestment, a scarf, which was afterwards worn around the neck as a part of the episcopal dress, was not only brought by the same persons, but they brought also with them, holy vessels, altar cloths, priestly vestments, a manuscript copy of the Bible, and a Commentary on the Epistles and Gospels. But the pall, whence came it? It is well known that the pallium pall, was the Grecian habit, as the toga, or gown, was the Roman: the Greeks being called gens palliata, and the Romans gens togata; the former a people wearing a cloak, and the latter a people who wear a gown. In St. Jerome's day, (A. D., 367,) the pall was not an archiepiscopal, or episcopal habit; for he states that Nepotian, who was a presbyter, wore it always, and makes the same remark of Heraclas, a presbyter of Alexandria. And Salvian states that the monks in Africa all wore the pall. It was comparatively late, therefore, that the pall came to be regarded as a part of the archiepiscopal habit. No metropolitan archbishop, or prelate wore it for centuries after Christ. It is inexplicable if the pall drew with it obedience to Rome, and obedience to Rome was bound upon all by the supremacy and universal episcopacy of the Roman see; and if all must receive the pall to act as archbishops or metropolitans, that centuries after Christ no such dress was worn by bishops and archbishops; and, as the pall was the habit of the Grecian philosopher, and afterwards of an African monk, I see no propriety in its becoming any part of the dress of an archbishop; I see no fitness, nor reason why a philosopher's cloak should invest any one with the august functions of an archbishop in the church of God. But how came the pall to be supposed so important? Why it was originally a mere

badge which the Emperors, not the Pope, gave the patriarchs. The first Pope who gave it had no such ideas of its importance or character as Romanists now ascribe to it. He called it *symbolum fraternitatis*, which means, you know, a mark of fellowship, and no more. With the same propriety the person who received it might have returned a pall to him by way of expressing his fellowship. But a mere cloak or dress, by ingenious twisting, since has grown to be a solemn investiture of archiepiscopal authority; a garment redolent with apostolic virtue and power. Pope Symmachus in the year 500 gave the pall to Cæsarinus, Archbishop of Arles, and this Pope Symmachus is the first who dared to advance the doctrine that no assembly of bishops is competent to sit in judgment on the pope. The pride and arrogance of Antichrist however did not then show themselves in the pretended robe of apostolic prerogative, as it did in the bold assumption of being irresponsible to all the bishops of Christendom. For afterwards the pall was not given to all, and yet their authority as Bishops, Rome did not deny. It was not before the twelfth century that the pall was said to draw with it obedience to Rome—seven centuries being necessary for what even Symmachus called a mark of fellowship to grow to be a pall of archiepiscopal authority.”

“You said from Augustine’s time,” observed the colonel, “came the pall down to our day. He and his successors, by receiving it, perhaps, bound their successors after them in England; and if I were disposed to be contentious, might I not argue that he and they bound the church in England to the Roman obedience?”*

*In 1 Kings, xix. 19, the prophet Elijah cast his mantle on Elisha, and thus conveyed to him the office and authority of a prophet, and hence some have thought that here the Roman see derived its custom of investing an archbishop with archiepiscopal authority, by sending him the pallium, or pall. It is very possible, and indeed more than probable that, having concluded to make the pall the instrument of archiepiscopal investiture, Roman authors would see a type of the fact in the casting of Elijah’s mantle, and the conveyance thereby to Elisha of the prophet’s office. But the case of Elisha was no more designed to foreshadow the pall, than the ploughing with twelve yoke of oxen by Elisha, in the same verse, was meant to foreshadow the employment of oxen yoked together by Ceres and Bacchus anciently, or the farmers of our day. The same Roman authors say, as the prophet’s mantle (Zech., xliii. 4, 2 Kings, i. 8,) was rough and heavy, therefore, the pall was made of wool. Durandus tells us that, on St. Agnes’ festival, the nuns of St. Agnes offer two white lambs on the altar of their church; while the *Agnus Dei* is sung in a solemn mass; that two canons of the Lateran Church then take the lambs and give them to the pope’s subdeacons, who put them in a pasture till the time of shearing. After

"You would argue too fast, if you did," said the rector. "The old maxim of Boniface here comes in force: '*Non firmatur tractu temporis quod de jure ab initio non subsistit*,' time cannot strengthen that which did not stand rightfully at first. In the beginning Rome had no jurisdiction in England, and hence, even had the Church of England (which she did not,) tamely submitted to the jurisdiction of an Italian prelate, Rome's jurisdiction being a novelty, could not become of force by the lapse of time."

"How came the bishops then to take the oath of obedience?" said the colonel, "which I understand they took. They acted strangely here."

"This was a sad departure," replied the rector, mournfully, "from the usages of the olden time. For the first thousand years after Christ, bishops, at consecration, merely made a profession of faith. The 8th general council, according to the Romanists, in the ninth century, forbids them to do more. Even so late as Hildebrand's day, bishops simply vowed to observe the rules of the holy fathers; and not till a century ago was the oath of obedience to Rome taken. Thus all past usage or prescription, is opposed to the high claims of the papal see. So modern is the date of papal tyranny! For the first six centuries after Christ our island knew but one head, even Christ, and Dinoh, Abbot of Bangor, told Augustine that Christians in England were under the jurisdiction of the Bishop of Caerlon upon Usk, that being the archiepiscopal see of the British Church. "Even in Augustine's day, and on to that of Anselm, archbishop of Canterbury, four hundred years later, the Church of England kept her independence."

"Soon after this, however," interrupted the colonel, "came in subjection to the Roman see."

"Only gradually. The pope claimed that, having blessed the banners of William the Conqueror, he had a claim on him. Then he for the first time sent a legate into England: the Church of Christ there having known no papal superior, or legatine representative for a thousand years.

they are shorn, and their wool is made into the pall, mixed with other white wool, the pall is carried to the Lateran Church, and there placed by the deacons on the high altar on the bodies of St. Peter and St. Paul. Here the pall is watched, and during the night removed, and by the subdeacons deposited aside till wanted. The most absurd thing of this absurd ceremony is the idea that, because the pall is taken from the body of St. Peter, it imparts the fullness of ecclesiastical power.

In the reign of Henry I. bishoprics were by this king surrendered to the pope, so that, when a see became vacant, the pope, and not the king as now, by the ring and staff, named to the dean and chapter the successor. Stephen, king of England, allowed the pope to have the right of hearing and deciding appeals in ecclesiastical matters. In the reign of Henry II., the clergy were declared by the pope to be answerable for misdemeanours to him only, and not to the secular power. In the reign of Henry III. the kingdom was drained to pay taxes to the pope. Next came first fruits, and then the tenth, as ecclesiastical livings; and thus on by degrees; slyly at first, more boldly afterwards, and by leaps, papal despotism made its strides. It came on like the leprosy of old,—a spot, or, simple swelling,—the tumescence of prelatic pride in the bishop whose diocese chanced to embrace the great city of Rome. He, like prelates now, measured his importance by the city or diocese he swayed; and this leprous spot of papal encroachment spread till it overspread the western part of Christendom. At the Reformation the energies of the clergy, king and people were roused to throw off the fetters of ecclesiastical servitude, and to stay the leprosy which made religion then a mere mumery, superstition the most blind, ignorance the most abject, and a cover and sanctuary to vices the most revolting. There were dumb prayers,—senseless forms, legends that were monstrous,—the clergy often could not read, and the seats of learning were hiding places of abomination. And God be praised that the same faith and worship, which an apostle brought to England, England has now in all its purity in our Church!" There was an earnestness in the rector's manner as he closed, which seemed to forbid further reply, and the subject was for the time dropt. He felt indignant at the shameful aspersions of Mr. Hunter,—anxious to vindicate the Church of England, and regretted that, in vindicating, he could not say one half what, if time were his, with all past history to help, he might say in her behalf.

CHAPTER VI.

THE ORDERS OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND.

"Holy and heavenly spirits as they are,
Spotless in life, and eloquent as wise,
With what entire affection do they prize
Their new born church!"

WOODWORTH.

"WHAT think you, Annie dear," said the Colonel, after dinner, "of Parson Gordon's remarks this morning? I should be pleased, child, to see you back in our old father-church. His remarks have staggered me, and I think they must have had their weight with you." Annie replied that she had attended closely to Parson Gordon's conversation, and hoped she might profit from it; but added that she felt great fear lest she might be doing wrong to listen to any thing on this subject. "I must think, Colonel," she said, "that Henry VIII. had no right to deny the Pope of Rome to be what all up to that time owned him to be. The other kings of England did not; and we know he was too wicked a man for God to make him the instrument of reforming the church."

"I once thought so," said the Colonel, "but, but,—"
"You don't think so now," said Mrs. Annie, persuaded that the Colonel felt a delicacy in closing the sentence. Surprised that he had conversed so much on the subject, she was afraid he would not again advert to it; and when the Colonel turned away saying, "Who shall decide, when doctors disagree?" and then left the room, Mrs. Annie regretted that the discussion or investigation of the claims of the Roman See had been so abruptly terminated. During this time, Parson Gordon was poring over some books in the library, and appeared to be hunting out authorities or testimony. In about an hour afterwards he joined the ladies, and Colonel Smithson and lady were playing cards. Mrs. Smithson complained that the Colonel did not conform to the rules of the game, which the Colonel replied to by saying that in card playing old rules were obsolete. "I can-

not subscribe, my dear," addressing his wife, "to our worthy friend's doctrine, which in Latin is: '*Non firmatur tractu temporis, quod de jure ab initio non subsistit*,' but in English, Time cannot make good a legal title which was void from the first, and it may be true in theology. It is allowable, however, to depart from rules whose only recommendation is their great antiquity; though, according to my lord Coke, to the contrary thereof, the memory of man runneth not. Now, Annie, here, will allow, that in affairs of love that which is oldest has not the best title."

"We will not dispute about the exceptions to the general rule," said Parson Gordon, anxious to bring the conversation back to its former point. "It may be true in card playing, and in affairs of love, that antiquity takes not the precedence of more modern rules, or recent titles, while it is equally true in law and theology, that a claim takes precedence by date. The See of Rome had no authority in England the first twelve hundred years; whereas, authority there was held and exercised by the ancient British Church, and addressing himself to Colonel Smithson, he continued, "You alluded to the instrumentality of Henry VIII., in effecting the liberation of the Church of England from thralldom to Rome, and the impression sought to be conveyed by Mr. Hunter was, that Henry VIII. here did an act for which he had no authority; that Britain was always subject to Rome, and therefore, that Henry VIII. was guilty of a crying sin, in aiding the church in Britain to throw off this subjection; recognizing the very principle I laid down, that that authority, which did not stand at first, for the want of a title then, by time cannot become rightful. Now the statutes of Henry VIII., whereby the papal supremacy was thrown off, were no more than old statutes of Parliament revived, which, for the want of power to enforce them against a spiritual despotism which over-rode every one, had become obsolete, or as a dead letter. Thus, the first traitor in the Church of Britain, who appealed from its authority to the bishop of Rome, was Wilfrid, archbishop of York, in the seventh century; and both Egfrid, King of Northumberland, and the bishops of York protested against this appeal. Thomas à Becket, in the twelfth century appealed to Rome, but the constitutions of Clarendon at the same time asserted the independence of the Church of England, and the statutes of Carlisle in the next century affirmed this

independence. And, about the close of the same century, the statutes of Mortmain and Præmunire, together with those which were passed yet later under Henry VIII., likewise asserted the independence of the Church of England of the Sec of Rome. Mr. Hunter surely forgets that Edward I. in the thirteenth century, by the statute of Mortmain and other measures, struck at the pope's authority, and sought to prevent its excesses. He forgets that the statute of Præmunire, which was made in the reign of Richard II. put out of the king's protection all persons who shall obey the pope in matters where the king, and not the pope, has authority.

"When William, the Norman, invaded England, the pope consecrated his banners, and blessed his host, and, in requital for this favour, his holiness sought to extend his power, hoped the usurper would allow his spiritual power in England, which William felt disposed to grant as thereby he might humble the Saxon clergy, and elevate his own creatures, the Norman prelates, he brought over with him. And then, for the first time, we hear of legates of the pope in England, who undertook to decide ecclesiastical causes without deference to the clergy of the land. And the coward-hearted John, to strengthen himself against the barons, resigned his crown to Pope Innocent III., and then bought it of him as a vassal at the annual rent of a thousand marks. It was surely no great sin in Edward I. to endeavour to shake off this degrading yoke; no great sin in the parliament under Edward II. to deny the pope's authority; none either in the parliament of the next Edward to do the same; all estates of the realm then assembled declaring that king John's grant to Rome was null and void; for it was not concurred in by parliament, and against his coronation vow,—and it was a noble resolution of theirs, if the pope should endeavour to maintain his usurpations, they would resist him with all their power; and the several acts in the reign of Richard II. assert the inflexible purpose of the English church, crown, and people, to allow no papal interference in England; and hence Henry VIII., and his parliament, by forbidding appeals to Rome, or suing there for papal licenses, or dispensations, or for obeying any papal processes, only did what previous kings and parliaments had done."

"I would ask your reverence," said Mrs. Annie, modestly, "though I allow these high subjects to be above my poor

ability, whether we should believe that God would have employed so bad a man as king Henry VIII. to reform the church? His treatment of his wife, poor Catharine of Arragon, and his cruelty to his wives, and his wicked life, make him a sorry means to bring about a good end."

"Annie, like all other ladies," said the colonel smiling, "cannot forgive king Henry VIII. his want of gallantry, his degradation of the sex, and his assertion of a king's authority over his wives no less than over his subjects. He should have remembered, Annie dear, that kings when they marry are but men, that marriage makes every man the vassal of his wife, and that, while every one, like myself, holds it a privilege that his wife's arm should encircle his neck," passing, as he spoke, Mrs. Smithson's arm over his neck, "still, in this dear girdle of attractive flesh and blood, he recognises a yoke which binds him more forcibly than if it were made of adamant."

"Annie is right then," said Mrs. Smithson laughing, "in thinking meanly of one who set your sex so bad an example."

"The character of Henry the 8th," interrupted Parson Gordon, "neither reflects upon, nor is it a part of the movement called the Reformation. Jehu reformed the church in Israel, and God commended him for it; yet Jehu was threatened by the prophet Hosea with the divine vengeance: for, though an instrument used by the Almighty to punish the house of Ahab, Jehu had acted from his own lust of power and hatred, and not the divine motions—Jehu being an idolater, a murderer, and wicked in other respects. The temple in Jerusalem was not any the less God's temple, because it had been repaired by the wicked Herod; therefore the wickedness of Henry VIII. reflects, not on the Reformation, but on himself. But, even if it did, Rome allows that the end sanctifies the means, and therefore, according to her, wicked as may have been Henry VIII., if the Reformation be a good end, the king is sanctified by it."

"But," continued Parson Gordon, "this impeachment of Henry the 8th's character comes very lamely from the church of Rome; it is a limping, and not an honest, manly and erect objection. Pope Julius II. thought highly of king Henry when he sent him the golden rose, previously dipped in chrism, and perfumed with rich musk; because the wily

prelate wished Henry to take part with him against Louis XI. of France. Pope Leo X. entertained a high regard for king Henry, for he sent him a sword and hat which had been consecrated on Christmas day, in token that he, Henry, had distinguished himself as a chieftain of the church, when he was anxious to unite Henry to him and his interests; and the same pope could even say that king Henry's book against Luther was equal to a work of St. Augustine's and St. Jerome's; and this pope and his cardinals conferred upon him the title of 'Defender of the Faith.' Since then it has become the interest of Roman polemics to blacken Henry's character; but, in representing it as offensive, they should think of the fragrance of the golden rose; in speaking of him as the servant of the devil they forget that Pope Leo X. girded about and put on him a consecrated sword and hat, as a noted captain of the church, and that this pope and his cardinals conferred on him the title of defender of the faith. Did the golden rose lose its fragrance at the Reformation? the sword its power? and the defender of the faith sink into its calumniator and worst enemy? If king Henry had then anticipated how his papal ally would requite his services, he would have felt the force of a remark which was made by the court fool at the time he was dubbed 'Defender of the Faith:' 'O, good Harry, let thou and I defend one another, and let the Faith alone to defend itself.'"

"Cousin Annie," said the colonel, "you and I have heard say that, in reforming the church, the reformers established a new or different church from that which they found already established."

Mrs. Annie replied, that she had heard such a remark made both by Father Hunter and Miss Doolittle.

"I care not who made it," rejoined Parson Gordon. "It is either the prating of imbecility, or the venture of malignity. Man can no more make a church than he can a world. If man could make the body of Christ, in and through which we are rendered members of Christ, children of God, and heirs of the kingdom of heaven, he can make his own Saviour; he could save himself, and would need neither a Saviour nor an atonement."

"You did not then pull down the old walls, and, partly with the old, and partly with new materials, re-construct the temple of the Lord," asked the colonel.

"Far from it," replied Parson Gordon, "we pulled down

nothing that was a part of the original Church of Christ. Thus the Preface to the Prayer Book speaks of the Church of England, not as a church, which at that time was established, but as '*this Church of England these many years.*' Tonsal, a cotemporary, writes to Cardinal Pole that, in rescuing the Church of England from Roman encroachments, king Henry VIII. had 'only reduced matters to their *original* state, and helped the English Church to *her ancient freedom.*' It will do for Romanists to keep this charge of the reformers building a new church travelling like a ball, which, they hope, will travel till it gathers such a mass of absurdity as to shock all persons with the Reformation. Its falsehood may help their cause. On the other hand Miss Doolittle, and her class of religionists, entertaining views, which are endorsed by no respectable person before the Reformation, would fain make us believe their views came from the reformers; as if we could not remove the rubbish from a building without levelling the building to the ground; as if to reform were the same as to create anew; as if filth could not be washed off without marring the features that were soiled. Why, sir, the Church of Christ is 'founded on the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ Himself being the chief corner stone.' Admit that Rome is and has been corrupt; to be free from her stains and sins, must we have new orders from heaven, new ceremonies, new doctrines, and a new faith? Displeased with the tags on the seamless robe of Christ, must we tear the robe to pieces, in place of removing the tags gently, and expect God to send us another robe of Christ as seamless and efficacious? A man had a dull knife, to make it sharp, he was not content with whetting it till it would cut as well as he might have desired; but must whet it till he had whetted off all the steel which once belonged to it. God forbid that sacrilegious hands should have undertaken to remove the Lord's candlestick, and substitute a miserable blotch work of man's contrivance! The reformers in England endeavoured to cleanse the church of the corruptions which were the growth of modern times! These corruptions were not an essential part of the church itself. When the face is cleaned of the dirt upon it, it does not become a new face. In recovering from a disease, which disfigured or defiled us, surely we do not lose our identity. Naaman, after he had washed off his leprosy in the Jordan, did not cease to be Naaman."

Col. Smithson then said, "Your reverence allows the see of Rome to be a branch of the Church Catholic; and schism, I think, I have understood, is a separation from the Church Catholic. Rome and our church charge each other with schism. Suppose now, sir, I should wish to maintain against Father Hunter that, to the charge of schism, he, and not ourselves, was justly liable. How should I make this to appear? For, allowing the full force of all that you have said, still here is a dilemma on which, I think, I might be impaled: schism being a separation from the Church Catholic, and Rome being a large branch of the Catholic Church. I am anxious, you see, to extricate myself from so horned an alternative."

Parson Gordon smiled at the good natured and courteous manner in which the colonel presented so delicate a question. "I see," he replied, "no dilemma, or, as logicians say, no horned syllogism here. Aristippus might, I allow, dissuade a bachelor from wedlock by arguing; 'The woman you marry will be handsome or homely, if handsome she will provoke your jealousy, if homely your dislike;' but it does not follow, that because the Roman see is a branch of the Catholic Church, and she refuses to communicate with her, therefore we do not belong to the Catholic Church. Schism, you should know, is a voluntary separation from the Catholic Church; a willful rending of the body of Christ. Now it cannot be said that the Church of England separated from the Church Catholic, because she freed herself from certain corruptions and errors of Rome; for the church is 'the pillar and ground of the truth,' and corruptions and errors are not essential or proper parts of the church: nor did she separate from the Catholic Church in casting off a papal subjection that was neither Scriptural, catholic, nor put on her by her own consent. Before these corruptions and errors, the Church of England was a branch of the Catholic Church, and she was so a long time before papal tyranny deprived her of her liberty. These errors, corruptions, and this papal subjection were not ties to hold her to, nor connect her with the Catholic Church. She could break loose from them, and yet be, as she was before them, and as she ought ever to have been, free and independent; alike of the errors, corruptions, and enslaving obedience of a foreign bishop. But Romanists themselves, and the Roman see, acknowledged that our separation did not put us

out of the Catholic Church. Thus this separation, and all that marks us as distinct from Rome, are set forth authoritatively in the book of Common Prayer: yet popes Paul IV. and Pius IV. consented to approve this book, and hence acknowledge our orders and catholicity; and for twelve years, after we had cast off papal supremacy and papal errors, Romanists scrupled not to worship with us, conforming to the worship of our church; but Queen Elizabeth, refusing to allow the papal jurisdiction, was by the bull of Pius V. excommunicated."

"Why," interrupted the colonel, "I read somewhere that Pius V. was a man of singular zeal and piety."

"That is possible," continued Parson Gordon. "He was certainly singular in cruelty while inquisitor for the holy office; being detested for it by the people of Milan and Lombardy. When raised to the popedom, he was furious against all Protestants: he also condemned a very great ornament of that age for learning to be burnt for saying, 'the Lutherans are to be excused for calling the inquisition a dagger drawn against literature in general.' It was this Pius V. who had the impudence to cause his bull, excommunicating Queen Elizabeth, to be posted at night on the palace of the Bishop of London. Again, our act was not a schism. By the iniquitous pretences and oppressive exactions of the Roman see,—by requiring that as faith which was novel and false, and by insisting on hard and improper terms of communion, she forced us to separate. It was not schism to refuse to acknowledge obedience to Rome; for, if so, then the Church of England was schismatic from the beginning, and continued in schism for twelve hundred years; and if so all the churches of Christendom, except those which were immediately adjacent to the city of Rome, were in schism from the beginning, and so continued for centuries; since centuries past before the papal supremacy fettered the churches of Christendom. From heresy we are also as free: unless it be heresy to deny to the blessed virgin the worship which is due to God only;—to deny the horrible doctrine of the mass; the unscriptural invocation of saints; transubstantiation and the like. Surely a Roman prelate is not God that he can put forth doctrines, which we must swallow on pain of damnation! If one brother refuses to acknowledge the other, because he will not consent to play the part of a truckling

vassal, is the brother so refusing to be proscribed? Herein you see our position. Consequently, there was neither schism nor heresy. It was a reformation, and to reform is not to separate."

"I see the force of all that, worthy sir," replied the colonel, "but my impression was that our church meant to separate from the see of Rome."

"Such, I am aware," rejoined Parson Gordon, "is the opinion entertained, and erroneously too, by some. But it is strange that we should have separated from the see of Rome when we allow her baptism and her orders; while we disallow the baptism and orders of the dissenting bodies. No, far as we can go ourselves towards it, we continue still in fellowship with Rome, though we charge her with errors and corruptions. But she has excommunicated the Church of England, and has declared she will not commune with her; till the former shall subscribe to Roman errors. A strange charge is this of schism. The Church of England holds "the faith once delivered to the saints," and the Roman see has added to this faith certain dangerous and unscriptural novelties, for, at the Council of Trent, she anathematized all who did not believe in the twelve new articles, which Pius IV. inserted in his creed; thus adding twelve new dogmas as *de fide*, and declaring that belief in them was necessary to salvation. If the Council of Trent, and Pius IV., could add twelve articles to the Christian faith, they may add five hundred. But, in adding, they alter the faith, and hence the faith they enjoin is not 'the faith once delivered to the saints,' and of course not that of the Catholic Church. Strange liberty this! Presumption unwarranted,—impudence that is almost incredible! That portion of Holy Scripture only is to be believed as necessary to salvation, which is contained in the creed. The see of Rome, however, claims the right to add to the creed; and this is the same thing as giving us a new revelation from heaven. According to her we must believe, not what God has revealed by His Prophets and Apostles, but what the Council of Trent and Pius IV., or any Roman synod and bishop shall enact as *de fide*. Because the Church of England would not acknowledge Rome's supremacy and infallibility, the Church of England was excommunicated. Who will say that Rome, by her outrageous presumption and high-handed and unscrupulous tampering with things

which belong to God only, is not guilty both of schism and heresy, and that the Church of England is not to be commended and loved for her manly firmness in standing up for the truth?"

There was a pause for some time. The colonel seemed not anxious to continue the conversation, and was about to change it. Mrs. Annie asked "if the Church of Rome did not outnumber in members the Church of England? and was it not more reasonable to believe that she and not the Church of England was the Catholic Church?"

"The many," replied Parson Gordon, "make not the Church Catholic. Our Lord said, 'Fear not, my little flock, it is my Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom.' Both are branches of the holy Catholic Church. Now a large branch is no more a part of a tree than a small one which grows out of it. The same ocean-tide, that ebbs and flows in a large river, ebbs and flows in the insignificant creek. This argument of numbers is a vapid one in truth. Athanasius stood at one time almost singly against the world,—and still with him was the Catholic faith; he and the few, who agreed with him, alone then held the Catholic faith on the article of Christ's Divinity; for this faith is to be known, not by the numbers who hold it, but its agreement with what was believed at all times, in all places, and by all persons: 'quod semper, et quod ubique, et quod ab omnibus.'"

"Will Parson Gordon say," interrupted Mrs. Annie, "how we are united to the Catholic Church, or may know we are Catholics?"

"There are three ways," replied Parson Gordon, "in which we show we are Catholics. The first is by descent, or origin. The Church of Christ was founded on the apostles, and hence must have a line of clergy traceable by descent or ordination, to the apostles. This the Church of England had, even by Rome's acknowledgment, and this she had long before a Roman emissary or legate crossed the British channel. Another is by doctrine. We must believe what the Catholic Church believes, and this the Church of England believes; for she holds the creeds of the Catholic Church, and conforms to the same in worship; and the third is by government. And it will not be denied by any Romanist that the episcopal regiment, which we have, always existed in the Catholic Church. Consequently, be-

ing united to the Catholic Church by the same apostolic origin, by holding the same faith in our creeds, articles, and worship, and by the Catholic government of bishops,—the Church of England is a branch of the Catholic Church; she is united to and in communion with it;—and so much so that the excommunications of a Roman prelate and his coadjutors will act upon the links which connect the Church of England to the Church Catholic, even less than the repeated electric shocks of the torpedo eel would upon an iron chain. They might possibly shock them, but would leave the chain unbroken, indissoluble, and strong as ever.”

“His reverence would maintain,” said Colonel Smithson, addressing Mrs. Annie, “that the excommunications of the bishop of Rome cannot harm the Church of England.”

“Certainly not,” continued Parson Gordon, “a bishop, or a pope of Rome, once excommunicated St. Cyprian and the Churches of Africa. But his thunders neither drove them, nor put them out of the Catholic Church; for Rome herself, afterwards acknowledged the catholicity of St. Cyprian and the bishops of Africa; and these primitive bishops laughed at her fulminations. And why should not the Church of England, while she mourns over the pitiable folly and arrogance of the Roman see, treat her excommunications as the explosions of prelatic spleen and tyranny? Why, colonel, if numbers constituted the true test of a church—returning to the argument, that the Church of Rome outnumbers the Church of England, therefore the former is the true church—then the true religion would be the Mahommedan and not the Christian: for there are many Mahommedans to one Christian in the world. If numbers denoted the true church, then the most popular form of religion only would be the true one. But this sign of a true religion would be ever shifting; as that which is most popular one age will be least so another. We did not then separate from the Catholic Church, nor did we attempt the absurdity of making a church; for as Archbishop Bramhall justly declares, ‘We do not arrogate to ourselves a new church, or a new religion, or new holy orders. Our religion is the same that it was—our church the same—our holy orders the same; differing from what they were only as a garden weeded from a garden unweeded.’ A church may be corrupt without losing its

identity; as it may be reformed without losing it. The ancient Church of God was none the less His Church because the Pharisees had greatly perverted it. 'The whole world,' says St. Jerome, 'groaned, and was amazed to find itself become Arian;' referring to the time when Athanasius almost alone, as it seemed, held the Catholic faith, 'yet still it was not the less the Catholic Church.' Wherefore I maintain that the Church of England is a pure and true branch of the Catholic Church, and that they are mad religionists who say, the religion of Protestants began with Wickliffe, Huss, or Luther; for these three reformers, be it remembered, themselves declared they taught no new doctrine, and started no new faith, and established no new church."

"But, if the corruptions which the reformers in England," asked Colonel Smithson, "freed the church from, made a reformation necessary, did they not make the Church of Rome cease to be a true church?"

"By no means," replied the rector, "for, as archbishop Laud declared in his conference with Fisher, the Jesuit, 'as a thief is a true man in verity of essence, but is not a right one, so a church, though exceedingly corrupt, is still a true church in verity of essence.' For, during this corrupt period of the church, there were, as now, the sacraments; then, as now, the word of God; then, as now, an apostolic succession; then, as now, the Lord's Prayer, the Creeds, and the Ten Commandments. Wherefore, the Church of England, while asserting that the See of Rome 'erred not only in living and manner of ceremonies, but also in matters of faith;' in her 39th article the Church of England calls Rome a church; and her 29th canon, says it was 'not the purpose of the Church of England to forsake and reject the churches of Italy.' " Colonel Smithson was then called out of the room by company, and his lady and Mrs. Annie retired. Parson Gordon sat in the bow of the window for a while, and then paced up and down the chamber. He felt much for the estranged position of Mrs. Annie, saw that her mind was greatly exercised, and regretted her estrangement the more because she was the grand-daughter of Parson Yeo. For this clergyman had done good service in days gone by in St. Mary's, towards giving the church a foothold here. "Something, I trust," said the worthy rector, to himself, "has been done towards opening Mrs. Annie's mind to the

truth. It is inconceivable, did we not know it, in how many falsehoods Roman craft and delusion will involve us. Poor girl! they had made her believe Rome was the only true church; that the bishop of Rome always had authority in England; that the reformers foolishly attempted to make a new church; that the Church of England was in schism; that Henry VIII. was the head of the church of England; that that church or religious body, which was the most numerous or populous, was the only true church; and other absurdities and slanders that it took a Jesuit to fabricate and circulate with impudence unabashed, and a confiding zealot to believe without questioning. God grant," said Parson Gordon, continuing his soliloquy, "that she may yet free herself from the meshes of Roman craft! But then conviction," he added, "is not the work of a moment. To be worth any thing it must be gradual. The mind does not come out at once from midnight darkness to midday light. By degrees only does light break upon it, as the sunlight breaks upon our world; and it is only as the light breaks upon it that the fogs rise, the vapours ascend, and we have a bright day before us." In the interim Mrs. Annie sat in her chamber, painfully and carefully revolving the subjects and matters which Parson Gordon had discussed. "I see the abyss," said she, "over which these cold men would have thrown me. My grandfather's and my mother's church is the true and pure church of Christ. I feared to think it might not be, and had already come to this sad conclusion."

Mrs. Annie might well say she feared to think that the Church of England might not be a true branch of Christ's church. For, poor girl! though young in years, she was old in sorrow, especially in that spiritual exercise, wear and tear of soul, that counts up more heavily against us than years. Her history will be more particularly given at another time. Suffice it now to say, as illustrating her interest in Parson Gordon's remarks, beyond what we have already said, that some time before the date of our story, she became a Roman pervert. And like most new converts, her zeal boiled over. Stillingfleet said of Dryden after his perversion to Romanism, "zeal in a new convert is a terrible thing, for it not only burns, but rages like mount Etna." She was anxious to excel in the new phase of religion which she had embraced. She was conspicuous by her attendance

at the chapel, her frequent devotions, her earnest efforts as chorister, her reverence for the least injunction of Father Hunter, her devout reading of the sickly legends of fabulous Christian Rome; and, as her character led her to look to practice rather than theory, and as she was far more a woman of the affections than of the intellect, she rather concerned herself about the duties than the doctrines of her new faith. But in doing this she had unveiled to her anxious, wondering, amazed, alarmed, and then saddened and trembling heart, the complex machinery of satisfactory penances, and the like, which are the very life blood of the Romish system.

The Catechism of the Council of Trent solemnly declares, "there is a purgatorial fire, in which the souls of the pious are *tormented* for a certain time and expiated, in order that an entrance may lie open to them into their eternal home, into which nothing defiled enters." And Father Hunter in declaring this teaching to her, and by lending her the lives of such saints, (Romish,) as were in illustration of this doctrine, brought this machinery to bear upon her. She was taught that, while God on the sacrament of penance, forgives the eternal punishment of sin, He will not remit its temporal punishment but upon prayers, fastings, alms deeds, the sacrifice of mass, and personal tortures, self-inflicted, on the offender. This lesson inculcated on a mind of Mrs. Annie's sensibility, and there would never be an end, or enough in quality or quantity of satisfactions to make atonement to infinite justice; in order to avert the dread fire that burned in the other world. All Romanists do not feel this anxiety, as all churchmen do not live up to the discipline of their church, though so much milder and more scriptural. But Mrs. Annie did, and as far as she could, lived up to what her nervously anxious fears or hopes led her. She practised with scrupulous fidelity the penal satisfactions for sin which Roman disciplinarians inculcate, fasting rigidly on certain days, reciting her beads and prayers on her knees, or with her arms stretched out in the figure of a cross before an image in the chapel, robing herself with an underdress of sackcloth, and at nights lying down on the hard floor instead of on her comfortable couch. And, if her strength had allowed, and her resolution or faith in Rome had continued, it is more than probable that she would have gone to the ridiculous extremes, practised by some Roman devotees, of mak-

ing the sign of the cross on the ground with the tongue, wearing iron hoops around the body, and, like St. John Joseph of the Cross, kept her eyes for hours rivetted to the floor, denied her ears the sweet sound of music, and abhorred the fragrance of flowers. Whether like St. Pacificus, she would have ate putrid pork in preference to sweet, we know not, though we doubt it. But her strength and health gave way, and her appearance indicated it. Hard as were the self-inflicted tortures, she might have borne them, if her mind could have been stayed the while. But these tortures brought no hope with them to minister to a suffering body. Take away the light of comfort from the heart, the prospect of relief and recompense; and resolution dies, and the body fails. The Roman system works harder than the galley-slave discipline, any one, who, like Mrs. Annie, will endeavour to act it out. She was told that, though God had forgiven her sins, still that His wrath would not be satisfied, unless she suffered so as to make atonement. "True," said her confessor, with something of the spirit of one of Job's friends, "God, on account of your repentance, loves you, and eventually will admit you to unending blessedness; but His infinite justice must be appeased. Hell in a shorter fire, being only some months and years, than awaits the impenitent, is to be your portion after death, unless here, while life is passing," (though every day adds sin to sin, do her best, and of course increases the danger of purgatorial suffering,) "you expiate the Divine wrath by acts and sufferings, which God will accept instead of your suffering in purgatory. I can absolve you, I can give you the sacrifice of the mass, I can give you even indulgences; but they may all be insufficient. It is safest to torture the body, to inflict upon one's self, by way of anticipation, what purgatory might be." Great comfort did such teaching impart to one like Mrs. Annie! It professed to open the door of mercy, but showed that before that door could be reached, a sea of trouble and pain, and denials and tortures must be endured; and even then a material fire, differing from that of hell only in duration, must, perhaps, be endured after death. And no wonder Mrs. Annie's heart sank within her. No wonder the thought of the oncoming wrath took the roses from her cheeks, and the lustre of hope from her eyes. No wonder that after the excitement of the new convert had subsided, and she felt the galling and ruinous operation of this Roman teaching, life

seemed not to her as formerly. Nature ceased to have its Easter-robe when she looked upon it, but was draped in the Lenten garments of heaviness. The splash of St. Mary's river, once so musical to her, and the melody of the night winds in the forest, soothing and suggestive of pleasant meditation, and the sweet moonlight on Elfin Creek, in sight of her residence, to her sad stricken heart gave no intimations of that land of refreshment and peace, where, beside the still waters and in the green pastures the Shepherd of Israel maketh the cup of His chosen ones to run over with goodness and mercy. While thus tried beyond her strength, and breaking down under a cruel and unnatural, and, therefore, stupid and unscriptural system, Mrs. Annie made a visit to Julia, at Pleasant Lodge. Here she met Parson Gordon, whom she had been almost taught to loathe by Father Hunter. The good rector no sooner saw her, than he read the language of suffering in her face. A few words by him spoken in kindness, brought the tears to her eyes. With her tears her heart slowly unlocked a part of its secret. The rector saw enough to divine the balance, and, spending an entire day in her company, managed to prescribe for her case, in such a way that she could not reject the proffered remedy. He showed the unsoundness of the Roman doctrine of atoning for sin by satisfaction, which we can render to infinite justice. He told her that afflictions in this world were not atonements for sin, but trials of faith; that reviling and persecution, and tribulations and chastenings are blessed, because, as St. Peter declares, "that the *trial of your faith*, being much more precious than of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, *might be found unto praise and honour and glory* at the appearing of Jesus Christ." He quoted the case of the prodigal son, and showed that instead of wrath, vengeance and a requirement of personal sufferings or penalties, or satisfactions from the prodigal, God received him at once; "had compassion on him, and ran and fell on his neck, and kissed him;" put on him the best robe, a ring on his finger, and shoes on his feet; killed for him the fatted calf, and rejoiced over him. And at length he gave so different, so much more refreshing a view of the love and compassions of our heavenly Father to His penitent children, than the cold and terrible one presented in the Roman view, that Mrs. Annie could but see her error, and in the bottom of her heart, wish that all scruples

being removed, she could return to the fold she had, she feared, inconsiderately abandoned. She rejoiced then to hear Parson Gordon on the orders of the Church of England; and, foreign as such a subject was from the course of her reading, was surprised to find how much she understood, and how readily she could follow him. The rector saw her position, and while anxious to shake the indifferentism of his host, strove also to enlighten the earnest mind of Mrs. Annie, and to lead her on by well-considered steps to that position where she might stand with the blaze of Divine truth around her, and with the comfort of a reasonable, religious and holy hope. Such being Mrs. Annie's state, she thought much during the interim referred to.

"Oh!" she continued, "divines may wrangle about the true church, and the right doctrine and right way; they may talk about such things in cold blood, as mere questions that their wisdom or research may answer; but these subjects touch me more deeply. I know my ignorance. I know that in a moment of weakness, and perhaps," she added, weeping as she thus communed with herself, "of sin, I yielded to Father Hunter's persuasion. He told me it was want of faith that made me hesitate, and that I had but to believe, and the way would be made plain before me. I was willing to go where I knew nothing, trusting that I should every day see more and more reason to rejoice at my step. But what know I? Nothing, or next to nothing." And she rose from her seat, and walked silently up and down her chamber. "Ah!" she continued, "I can't feel right. I want something more. What is it? Peace, peace, peace!"—groaning,—“the peace of God which passeth all understanding;” something to stay my poor heart on; for really I seem to have nothing. Yet it cannot be want of faith; for I believe I would do any thing to know I may call God Father, and that His gracious promises are made to me. Will I ever know,—will it ever be my happiness to have peace and joy in believing?"

She sat for some time thus communing, tossed by emotions she could not quiet. Becoming more calm after awhile, she added: "Here's another difficulty. It seems that the Nag's Head Tavern ordination of Archbishop Parker, was an ugly business. Can it be true?" A ray of hope darted across her mind, and she added, "If all be a fabrication, then the Church of England is a true, and

pure, and good, and holy, and right church after all. And, oh! how have I been deceived! and my poor heart been wrung! But.....No, no," she added, "I will find the truth out."

She went to the drawing-room, hoping there to find Parson Gordon. He had walked out,—and Mrs. Annie saw him standing on the river's bank, and looking on the calm and placid waters of St. Mary's bay. "Oh!" said she, "that the power, which bade those waters be still, would give me peace!"

After tea, Mrs. Annie drew her chair near to Parson Gordon, and mildly asked, "Did I understand your reverence to say you put no faith in Father Hunter's account of the Nag's Head consecration?"

"I believe as much in it as he does," said Mr. Gordon. "It will do to prate about for the want of something better. This tale is a sort of tub thrown out to the whale, to keep Papists and Protestants from laying violent hands on the true question at issue between the Church of Rome and England: that question is, who were Parker's ordainers? For, even were the absurd story true, that, at the Nag's Head Tavern in Cheapside, London, Parker was consecrated Archbishop of Canterbury, (instead of at Lambeth), this would not affect his episcopal orders; as his orders derive their efficacy from his ordainers, and not from the place. For any persons, less than bishops, having no authority to consecrate, could not have made Parker archbishop at Lambeth, any more than they could have made him archbishop at Nag's Head Tavern; and if his ordainers were bishops, (all due forms being by them at the time observed,) the place of a tavern, being only an unusual place, and not a legal, or canonical impediment, while this place would be an offence against former usage and decorum, still it would not and could not invalidate his orders.

"But Parker was consecrated at Lambeth, where Archbishops of Canterbury are consecrated, and not at Nag's Head Tavern. Because that fact was never questioned, till this Nag's Head story was circulated, and then only by Romanists. And the story is evidently false from beginning to end. Thus, when did it get abroad? In 1604, forty and four years after Archbishop Parker's consecration. A pretty story this to question his consecration! In what form was this Nag's Head story published? In Latin, and hence

meant only to circulate among Roman priests, to whom that tongue was most familiar; the writer not meaning or expecting it would be seen or read by the English;—fearing if in English they would see it, and expose its falsehood. Where was it first circulated? In England it should and would have been if true; for truth skulks not as a coward, and those only who ‘do evil and do not the truth,’ said our Lord, ‘love darkness,’ or concealment. No, it was first published in Italy, where ‘was no one who could or was likely to know to the contrary; and where there was every disposition to disparage the Church of England, by believing a story so discreditable to the orders of its archbishop. When was it heard in England? As nearly about the time referred to as possible, it should have been, in order, if true, its statement might be corroborated, and if false its untruth exposed. No,—this would have enabled the Church of England at once to expose it. But it was first heard in England in 1608, forty-eight years, nearly half a century, after Archbishop Parker’s consecration. A brave story truly! long in coming to the birth, and, when born, like Romulus and Remus, nursed by a wolf on the Tiber till it had strength or audacity to crawl out. It was kept with its Roman foster mother four years, and then the bantling is allowed to show its face in old England. It is passing strange that this story was not known to the Roman clergy of Parker’s day, who were anxious to deny his orders;—whose interest this story would have promoted, and to whose custody the miserable eaves-dropper, if the thing had happened so, who reported that he saw through a keyhole, unknown to all, the circumstances of Parker’s consecration, would have gladly confided it. It is very odd that Heath, the Roman Archbishop of York, who was metropolitan of York in bloody Mary’s reign, before Parker became Primate of Canterbury, and who lived twenty years after Parker’s consecration, and outlived him, knew nothing of the Nag’s Head story. It is passing wonder, if true, that the persons about the Nag’s Head neither knew, nor had heard any thing of this farce at the tavern; but that, after all the actors in Parker’s consecration in Lambeth Chapel had died, this Nag’s Head story or fable should be found circulating with the eagerness with which falsehood ever is received, among the enemies of the Church of England: and even then, like guilt, afraid to look up and come boldly out,

it crept snake-like cautiously from its hole. To believe such a story one must be demented, or reduced to second childhood, in want of a nursery tale."

"Will you be so kind as to say what is the true account?" Mrs. Annie timidly asked.

"It is this," replied Parson Gordon. "Reginald Pole, by death November 18, 1558, vacated the see of Canterbury. Seven months thereafter exactly, Queen Elizabeth issued her writ of *Congé d'élire* to the Dean and Chapter of Canterbury to fill the vacancy. The queen nominated no one, though the successor is always named. Matthew Parker, Archdeacon of Lincoln, and the queen's spiritual adviser was elected; the queen's wishes no doubt being known. The 9th of the next month, December, was the confirmation of the election, and in the Church of St. Mary le Bone, Sunday, December 17th, in Lambeth Chapel, he was consecrated. The archbishop in his parchment journal records this fact; 'The 17th of Dececeember, 1559, I was consecrated Archbishop of Canterbury.' His consecrators were bishops William Barlow, John Scory, Miles Coverdale, and John Hodgkins. Andrew Pierson, the archbishop's chaplain, said morning prayer, Bishop Scory preached on the text, 'The elders which are among you I beseech, being also a fellow-elder.' The archbishop elect was brought by bishops Barlow, Coverdale, and Hodgkins before bishop Scory; saying, 'Reverend Father in God, we offer and present to you this godly and learned man to be consecrated archbishop.' Thomas Yale, doctor of laws, then read the queen's mandate for the consecration, and then after prayer, and the singing of the Litany, and some questions, and further prayers, the four bishops laid their hands upon him. And so minutely given is the account of this consecration that we are told that the bishops of Chichester and Hereford wore their episcopal robes,—surplice and chimere, while Coverdale and Hodgkins had on only their long gowns. How idle and stupid then is the Nag's Head fable! Yea more, how wicked to attempt to support the despotic intrusion of the Bishop of Rome by a wilful lie, a base slander on the Church of England, and a total perversion of an historical fact that is as well authenticated as any other fact on record! For the statement I have given is to be found, with many particulars I cannot remember, in the MS. Library of Benet's College, Cambridge. And in 1513, when the Nag's Head fable

had been in England a few years circulating, Abbot, then Archbishop of Canterbury, assembled the Roman priests then in England, put 'in their hands the original documents' of Parker's consecration; to convince them of the soundness of the orders of the Church of England."

"I fear," interrupted the colonel, "that Father Hunter talks at times without authority. He wishes a thing to be so, and then jumps to the conclusion that it is so; or not caring to enlighten himself takes on blind trust what Roman controversialists assert. But pray, how about Henry VIII. being head of the church? You know what we lawyers are apt to think of the regal supremacy."

"Henry," I admit, said Parson Gordon, "having deprived the pope of his unjust power, wished to stand to the church in the same relation that the pope had been supposed to stand. He ardently wished to be acknowledged the head of the church, and threatened the clergy of the Canterbury convocation with the severest penalties if they should withhold it from him. But, to the credit of the clergy, be it said, that, when the proposition was made, the convocation of Canterbury firmly refused him the title; and, absolute as was Henry, he was obliged to accept from the convocation the equivocal compliment, that, so far as it may be permitted by the law of Christ, he is head of the church.' 'Quantum per Christi legem licet.' But the law of Christ recognizes no visible head of the church; for Christ Himself by that law is styled the head of the church; consequently Henry could not have been. A head however, in temporal matters, regulating its civil and not its spiritual concerns, in the opinion of many a king might be. Wherefore Bishop Burnett, of Sarum, says, in his late work, 'the clergy recognized in Henry VIII. only a temporal authority in temporal matters;' and wherefore Archbishop Bramhall terms the kings of England 'political heads' of the church. And so unwilling were the clergy to allow him any headship at all, even thus rendered comparatively harmless, lest it might grow into what unscrupulous Romanists represent, and thus the 'quantum per Christi legem licet' might be disregarded, that they dropt the title after the reign of Edward VI., twenty-two years afterwards."

"His late Majesty, James II.," said the colonel, "affected to believe that the supremacy in spiritual things, as well as civil, belonged to him. He forgot that Parliament also had

taken away from the crown, visitatorial power over the church. Hence, the new commission court he created, was an illegal tribunal. His command to the clergy of the Church of England, not to touch on Roman differences from them, and his attempt to put down Dr. Sherlock, and Dean Sharp, particularly, the present worthy Archbishop of York, for his sermon on popery, your reverence well remembers."

"Yes, and I have not forgotten that Archbishop Sancroft, involved as his style was, has ably shown that the king's powers in matters ecclesiastical reaches not to a spiritual headship. A piece with James II.'s attempt to subjugate the Church of England, was his allowing a vicar apostolic, as Romanists call it, to come to England, and a papal nuncio, when for half a century, England had not been defiled by such an intruder from an Italian prelate, and for nearly a century and a half she had been delivered from papal nuncios. We have no reason to be ashamed of our Reformed Church of England. The good work began, not like popery, by tyranny, but it was the act of the entire body of clergy in the land—not one in thirty holding back—throwing off the unrighteous usurpation of the bishop of Rome. In the minds of the reformers subjugation to Rome was associated, (for so reads the order in Edward VI.'s reign,) with a 'bondage and heavy yoke,' 'fabulous stories and lying wonders,' 'robberies, rebellions, thefts, whoredoms, blasphemy, idolatry,' and the like. To have submitted when redress was practicable, would have been culpable weakness and indifference. We cannot love Rome without loving the corruptions of which she is the fruitful mother. To come out from her and be separate, is as obligatory as it was to Lot and family to fly from guilty Sodom. Henry's instrumentality, I repeat, imparts no taint to the Reformed Church of England. Constantine the great committed many crimes, and yet he was God's instrument to establish Christianity in the vast empire of old Rome; and it was none the less God's work because Constantine was not pure and faultless. The term universal bishop, was applied first to the Bishop of Rome by the cruel, bloodthirsty Emperor Phocas. So bad a man is a poor originator of a title on which Rome predicates her all; yet Rome values the title none the less."

"Ah! I see how it is," said Colonel Smithson. "Father Hunter treats you as we lawyers at times do an adversary; not believing a word of what we say all the time, we resort

to abuse when argument fails. We pelt with mud, and hope to shame him off, when our balls and bullets will not tell. He has no good argument against the Church of England, but it is convenient to cast upon it some of the odium which attaches to Henry VIII."

"How this may be, I say not now," replied Parson Gordon; "I leave the case with you, and hope you will attentively consider it. You see on what high and impregnable ground the Church of England stands. I wish you to stand with her on the rock, even Christ; and through the Church, His body, be kept united to Him, Who 'is Head over all things to the church, which is His body, the fullness of Him that filleth all in all.'"

After Parson Gordon left the castle, next morning, Col. Smithson and Mrs. Annie looked serious and thoughtful. Mrs. Smithson observed it, and, laying her hand on her husband's, she said: "I wish our rector would let us see him shortly. He might prevail on you to think now and then of God and His praise, rather than the praise of men."

"I am greatly his debtor," said Mrs. Annie, "but," she added mentally, "I cannot now rest till I know more, and I tremble lest the peace of God will not be mine for some time; if it should be at all."

CHAPTER VII.

EMMA GORDON AND JULIA DELAFIELD.

"'Tis not wealth, it is not worth,
Can value to the soul convey;
Minds possess superior worth,
Which chance nor gives, nor takes away.
Like the sun true merit shows;
By nature warm, by nature bright;
With inbred flames he nobly glows,
Nor needs the aid of borrow'd light."

BICKERSTAFF.

WE mentioned that Emma, the daughter of Parson Gordon and Julia Delafield, her friend, after the death of the Indian woman, returned to the Glebe.

The two friends were sitting by the fire-side of the Glebe mansion. Emma had some needle work in hand, and Julia was reading aloud occasionally, and then commenting on Dryden's Poem of the Hind and Panther. Adaratha, whose mother's history we gave, was seated on a low chair between them, working with beads on a moccasin slipper, while a large white cat was sleeping before the fire. Here was a picture an artist would have been pleased to paint; and the repose of all parties was not only favourable to a faithful delineation, but what a master of the art would have wished. Their chefs d'œuvre exhibit generally the inaction which follows upon the workings of great passions, and not the passions in their turbulence and play. The Apollo Belvidere is exhibited, not in the act of discharging his fatal arrow, but watching its effect on his victim. In the Venus de Medicis we see none of the passion and fire we are apt to associate with the Cyprian goddess; and the Laocoon, though supposed to be in the greatest agony, evinces no distortion of limb or feature.

The light of the window fell so directly on Emma's face, as to bring out distinctly her features and their expression, and at the same time so defined her person as to exhibit its undulations and contour. Her face was marked by dignity and calmness, and lit up with "softness and sweet attractive grace." Her person would have been pronounced by old

Cleomenes a few inches too tall for a perfect figure, and by the admirers of England's virgin Queen, it would have been considered many inches too short. Her figure had something of the stateliness we see in the statues of Juno, and her face expressed a little of the abstracted wisdom of Pallas without her severity. Her head was large, well-shaped, and set off by black and silky hair, which was parted over what Scott would call "an open and regal brow." Her eyes were hazel, and had a mild and earnest expression, and a character in them that intimated they could at need kindle or melt, intreat or command. Her complexion was cloudless. A soft tint of rosy health was painted on her cheeks as delicately as we see it on the down of the peach. Her features were regular, her nose was nearly Grecian, her lips nearly rivalled the cherry in fullness nor had they the compression of her father's, and her chin was just long enough to give due dignity to the lower part of her face. And, but for the softness and heart that beamed forth from her eyes, cheering as a wintry sunbeam, one would have said, she would have graced the position of the lady abbess of a sisterhood of nuns. Dignity, calmness, and authority sat naturally and gracefully upon her. Her age, alas! cruel time spares none; and alas! that one who morally seemed able to live on and live out changes placid and firm, physically had to share the wasting wear of a few years. Her age, we hope to be pardoned the liberty, seemed to be a little under twenty-one. How old she was in thought, in moral purpose, in the knowledge and mastery of self, in a just discernment and appreciation of the world, and of things it behooved her to know, our story must disclose. If this kind of years be ours, we need not care whether we stand on the sunny or shady side of any number of years in the ordinary calendar. However, being so constituted and blessed, Emma in girlhood, much more now that she was on the threshold of womanhood, was not unlike Sir Thomas Overbury's fair and happy milkmaid: "She dares go alone, and fears no manner of ill because she means none; yet, to say the truth she is never alone, but is still accompanied with old songs, honest thoughts and prayers, but short ones; yet they have their efficacy, in that they are not palled with ensuing idle cogitations."

So endowed, it was but natural that more hearts than one had confessed her power—a power not less because she

seemed "pure as the icicle that hangs on Dian's temple." Many youths thought her looks said, "procul, oh, procul, este profani," and Emma may have wished to say as much to a certain class. To her father she was a jewel of the first water, and the father deemed himself rich in possessing her. Paternal fondness occasionally forced the remark: "I had the best of wives, and a kind God has given me the best of daughters."

Julia was sitting rather in the shade of the window. We would we had a pencil delicate enough to touch off the contours and proportions of Julia's person, and the nervous and significant changes of her face. A slight form, a fragile person, a thin but not wan face, a complexion transparent as alabaster and changeable as an April sky, a forehead arched and prominent, in which the protuberances of ideality and comparison stood as watch towers, and like watch towers lighted, doubtless often shone more or less brightly, according as the murky atmosphere without made proper, and you have, if not a very intelligible, yet as good an idea as we can give you. Her hair was of a rich golden colour. Having the same coloured hair, is perhaps the reason why Laura was loved by Petrarch twenty-one years during her life, and mourned when dead twenty-seven years more. And, as Julia sat thoughtfully looking up, she passed her fair fingers through her hair, disengaging a curl, and causing it to fall over her face, partially shading it. If each strand of hair that fell were not golden, it looked hardly less beautiful.

Her features were small, being cast like her person in a delicate mould. Her nose was partially aquiline, her lips thin, her mouth rather small, and her eyes were full and expressive. "Proportion," says Burke, "has but a small share in the formation of beauty." Hence there is no proportion between the stalks and leaves of flowers, or between the leaves and pistils, and much less even between the slender stalks of the rose and its bulky head under which it bends. Yet the rose is, notwithstanding, a beautiful flower; beauty being rather owing to than diminished by disproportion. Hence Julia, though according to the rules and measurements for determining mathematically a fine figure, would not be pronounced beautiful, still, in contempt of all rules, her appearance could not fail to command the homage of admiration. Her small person, its etherealness and delicacy even to fragility, made her, in rare

and winning loveliness, a sweet orange blossom that the beneficent Gardener had placed here to bloom and delight the beholder. No one can lift the curtain of events; yet a shrewd observer, which we pretend not to be, would perhaps pronounce Emma to be a woman admirably adapted to this earthly condition of being, and would describe Julia as a creature almost entirely of the imagination, such as youthful poets dream of. And we, if we had sunbeams for tints, and the azure of heaven for shading, and a brush made of the gossamer web, and the photographer's power to transcribe at once, we might venture to paint one so nearly ethereal that she would be as difficult a subject for the pencil, as Byron's Hebrew Maiden, who

"Walks in beauty like the night
Of cloudless climes, and sunny skies."

Some circumstances in the history of the two friends may have contributed to bring out more clearly these peculiarities in their characters.

Soon after her arrival in the province, Emma became acquainted with a youth, Shepard, a relation of the Shepard who is mentioned in Parson Gordon's letter to Dean Aldrich. They met frequently at St. Mary's,—and Emma conceived for him a regard stronger and nearer than she knew herself till some time after. He had uncommon faculties, while a certain recklessness of manner, and wilfulness of daring and opinion, keeping, as Emma believed they did, within the bounds of virtue, invested him with attributes that no other youth possessed; and, if this feeling had continued to deepen and strengthen unchecked and unproved, with all her sagacity and purity, Emma, like other noble women before her and since, might have been doomed to pour from the deep of woman's affection its sunless riches on a comparatively worthless object; making an idol of him whom her pure mind and discernment would have detected and despised afterwards as but common clay in a moral aspect. Shepard lavished upon her the sallies of his poetical fancy, and it chanced that one of them met her father's eye. The lines were these:—

"Come to me, love, and be to me
The sun that lights my pathway here.
Come to me, love, and thou shalt see,
I fear no ill when thou art near."

"Come to me, love, and no tears,
Shed from the font of sorrow's urn,
Will pour their stream in after years
Upon thy path, and make thee mourn.

"Come to me, love, and let that lip,
Than Hybla's honey far more sweet,
Be pressed to mine, and I will sip,
And die with pleasure at thy feet.

"Come to me, love, and let thine eye,
Its dove-like sweetness on me beam;
No clouds shall darken my pure sky,
But all shall light and gladness seem.

"Come to me, love, I ask no more,
Oh share with me the cup of life!
That cup with bliss will aye run o'er,
When thou becom'st my loving wife."

"Were these lines addressed to you, my daughter?" asked her father. Emma blushed, but had the firmness to answer affirmatively. "From whom?" continued her father.

"Augustus Shepard," replied Emma, looking in her father's face, and, conscious of having done or meditated no harm, not afraid to speak the truth. And Emma then, be it remembered, was not quite sixteen, (for this happened a few years before the date of our story,) and speaking in maiden simplicity: having received the lines and others similar from Shepard, rather as a boyish compliment than as a serious or reliable token of the feelings of the youth. Her father said but little; not knowing how far Shepard had made an impression; and, unwilling to speak in a tone of authority or severity, lest he might wound rather than heal the tender sensibilities of his innocent child, for the time he made no further allusion to the subject. A few months afterwards, Emma and her father had been to St. Mary's on a visit to Colonel Smithson's, and were strolling together on the banks of St. Mary's river, when the loud tones of two youths in conversation were heard. The speakers were advancing towards them. Parson Gordon at once distinguished Shepard's voice, and, from Emma's paleness and starting suddenly, saw that she had made the same discovery. "We will draw aside a moment, my child," said the father, "and let the revellers pass," Some bushes concealed them, while within a few feet of them passed Shepard, and another youth, who lived in St. Mary's. Shepard's face, tone, and manner bespoke intoxication; and amid much that was wild, hyperbolical, and indeed at times

evincive of intellect and wit, there were oaths that made Emma tremble. Mr. Gordon said not a word, but his silence, and the expression of his face, spoke volumes to Emma. She walked on silently with him, unconsciously pressing at the time the whole weight of her person on his arm, and showing him by signs unmistakeable that she was struggling with the first shock to the bright and golden dream of girlish fancy. Alas! that such awakenings ever should be! The scene just witnessed cured Emma of her fantasy for Shepard, and may have been one, perhaps the leading cause of her reserve afterwards. It rendered her slow and cautious in trusting the other sex, imparted more firmness to her character, enabled her better than before to say no, when unsuspecting confidence would have prompted compliance; gave a tinge, though slight, of melancholy to her feelings occasionally, and was calculated to fix in her mind a standard of excellence, perhaps, higher than any gentleman in the colony with whom she was likely to become acquainted, could presume to have attained unto.

But shortly after this discovery of Shepard's foibles, Emma became acquainted with the Rev. Mr. Blair, a relation of the Rev. Dr. Blair, who at this time was the commissary of Virginia, and the worthy and efficient president of William and Mary College. It was no objection to Mr. Blair that he came from Emma's dear "land o' cakes and brither Scots," nor that he was a poor missionary who had been sent by Lord Weymouth to itinerate and preach the Gospel in the northern province, of what is now called North Carolina. There was much in this zealous man's character and manners to gain upon the affections of a girl like Emma, who was ever ready to own and admire moral worth, however poor its trappings. He had seen her in Annapolis, and St. Mary's, and found himself much cheered, even when away, by the sunlight of Emma's smile, and the fatherly counsels of Parson Gordon. But at length, overborne by excessive travel, and most arduous duties, shattered in constitution by the fevers on the coast of Carolina, and "sunk with poverty," he returned to England: and Emma heard no more of him. Thus our affections, like spring flowers, are nipt by unkind frosts, and the earliest and sweetest buds rarely come to maturity.

The reader may now ask, who was Julia. Besides what has been already told, and the story will unfold, she was the

niece of Mr. James Holt, who has been already introduced. Her mother, sister to Mr. Holt, died in England, and various reports were afloat about her father. Her mother having died soon after her birth, her father, disheartened by the loss, and looking upon William of Orange, as did many others at that time, as the champion of the Church of England against papal encroachment through the late King James II., he accompanied King William to Ireland, and with him fought bravely at the battle of the Boyne, when the forces of James II. were, as is well known, completely routed. He afterwards returned home, more disgusted than pleased with the after conduct of William to the Church of England; and not only inclined to the Tories, but became almost a nonjuror in feeling. Julia was the youngest of three children. The eldest, a promising youth, was as wilful in purpose, as decided in parts. Her father, high-spirited and authoritative, perhaps held the reins of discipline too tightly over him, and the youth in a passion left college without consulting any one,—and sailed, it was believed, for America. His father tracked him to the vessel, but too late to prevent his embarkation.

The vessel encountered a heavy storm off the Eddystone rocks the day after she left Plymouth. Here the swell is known to be awful, and it was believed, if the vessel survived the storm, she sunk or was buried under the growing swell, which has been known to rise nearly a hundred feet high, washing over the lighthouse at this place. The news sunk like lead upon the susceptible sensibilities of Mr. Delafield. He left England,—lingering just long enough to consign his second son to the grandfather's care, and Julia, then an infant, to the care of Mr. James Holt, who he knew would rear her as tenderly and carefully as if he were her father. Except Mr. Holt, Julia knew not that she had a relative in the new world, and her intercourse with the old world was kept up by a monthly letter from her brother Charles, and an affectionate note every Christmas from her grandfather, old Mr. Delafield; the latter conveying the wishes of the season, and was accompanied always by a valuable token of affection. Her brother Charles was at Oxford when last heard from; but the last month had passed without a letter. Every vessel that came might bring the long expected letter and present from her grandfather, and news of her brother also, if it did not

bring a letter from him. Julia's wishes travelled also across the broad Atlantic in quest of news of one, who, though not so near, may have been not less dear than her grandfather and brother. A youth, Johnson, had been her avowed admirer from childhood, and so intimate and long had been their attachment, that for years Johnson, at least, had thought of the future always and only in connection with her in the bands of Hymen. He had visited the province of Maryland once since Julia had removed here, and as it was during his collegiate term, he had some difficulty on his return in gaining readmission into the university. The last evening they were together had seemed ever since to Johnson fragrant with thoughts that would ever shed their influence over him. The vessel, that was to take him back to England, lay in the harbour. It was a moonlight eve, and the ethereal mildness of gentle spring rendered the air balmy, sweet, and burdened with happiness for all who could appreciate its influence. Julia and Johnson, descending the State House hill, arm-in-arm, walked to the end of the long strip of sand that makes what is now known as "Church-point." The sweet south wind, nearly as sweet as if it came from a bank of violets, "stealing and giving odor," blew just enough to ripple the river gently, and to make that soft low sound glide as the voice of a gentle spirit over the waters. The moonlight stole softly, soothingly down, silvering in one long streak the pretty bay of St. Mary's; while the blue woods on the opposite shore, and the woods on both sides, far as the eye could travel out to the mouth of St. Mary's river, were calculated, like certain airs of music, to waken responsive echoes in the bosoms of young people so situated. Like that sweet south wind, musical and low, stole prophetically upon them the voice from their future, whispering happiness. Brighter than the moon's long line of light, seemed to be the path of life before them; and, carried away by their feelings for the moment, they stood upon the point for some minutes without breaking silence. Johnson then turned, and gazing fixedly on Julia, whose bonnet was off, and whose face was all radiant with the Titian painting of hope, felt that an angel from the spheres stood beside him, and almost held his breath from a delirium of joy. An anchorite who had practised the austerities of St. Anthony in the desert, would have been moved by the sight; and Johnson, hardly con-

scious of what he was doing, raised her unresisting hand to his lips, and speaking with some emotion, said :

"Before that moon shall go down, I turn my face to England."

"No, not so soon as that?" said Julia, starting, and too intent on her question to be aware that her hand was still in Johnson's.

"I would I could say no, dearest Julia," replied Johnson. "The captain told me at sunset, just before I met you in the State House grove, that he had received to day orders to set sail for England before another day had dawned,—and he judges the wind will freshen before morning."

A cloud had passed over the fair heavens of their happiness, and a wind had ruffled its azure surface. Julia changed colour, and taking his proffered arm walked slowly on the river bank. An hour's conversation passed between them, and at the gate of the castle, where Julia had been spending some days, they parted; Julia in unsophisticated guilelessness allowing Johnson to see the depth of her affection for him, and he, vowing all love and devotion, which he truly felt,—spoke of returning to the province after his collegiate course was finished, and asked to be permitted to write to her. Both said and felt that it was a cruel destiny that separated them by a deep, and wide, and dangerous ocean. Julia communicated her engagement to no one; but Johnson in due time apprised Mr. Holt, and asked his approval.

The singular history of Julia's family doubtless contributed to attach Emma to her, as one who needed a sister's love and counsel; and the feeling of desolation, which occasionally came over Julia, in spite of her wonted hilarity and hopefulness, drew her to Emma, as the weak object naturally clings to the stronger, and one who is defenceless, from an instinctive sense of dependance, seeks shelter and protection under one stronger and less dependant. And it is not unlikely also that the dissimilarity of their characters may have increased this mutual attraction. For personal attraction seems to be regulated like electric attraction, the opposite poles of electricity and character manifest a disposition to unite, like repelling like, but opposites being inclined to come together. And, perhaps, attraction acts not unlike chemical affinities. Hence, as acids readily combine with

alkalies, so dissimilar social qualities combine and their combination leads to results as agreeable in the social, as chemical affinities are in the chemical world. Thus Julia's mind found support in Emma's less imaginative judgment, while it was both a pleasure and relief to the latter to unbend herself in the airy sprightliness of Julia. Emma was happy occasionally to lose herself with her friend in dreamy "haunts in dale and piney mountain, in forest, in slow stream and pebbly spring, and in the clear and watery depths." And no less pleasant was it to Julia to leave dream-land for a season, (for as dream-land too often seemed this earth to her,) to walk arm in arm with Emma among the common sense, every-day realities and beings of this matter-of-fact world.

We said that Julia had been reading and occasionally commenting on Dryden's Poem of the Hind and Panther. Father Canon, whose letter we gave in the fourth chapter, had lent it to her, and commended it to her careful reading as a poem remarkable for some of the finest writing of the justly celebrated John Dryden. He had said nothing of its Romish tendency, nor had he prepared her to guard against its perversion, by saying any thing more of it than this praise of its literary merit. He was anxious to warp to his side the susceptible mind of Julia, and calculated that Dryden's ingenious and captivating poem, which speaks forcibly in favour of tradition and authority, would do more with Julia than Bossuet's "Explication of Catholic Doctrines," or his "Variations of Protestant Churches," even could she read them in the original French, or any other favourable exhibition of the Roman question. The first lines of the poem :

"A milk-white hind, immortal and unchang'd,
Fed on the lawns, and in the forest rang'd :
Without unspotted, innocent within,
She feared no danger, for she knew no sin.
Yet had she oft been chas'd with horns and hounds
And Scythian shafts, and many winged wounds
Aim'd at her heart ; was often forced to fly,
And doom'd to death, though fated not to die,"

were really so musical, and presented so engaging a picture that a sensitive imagination was at once interested, and led to wish well to the Roman Church, so agreeably represented. The overstrained allegory, amounting at times to absurdity, where, while "wagging their tails, and licking their paws,"

the two beasts, the Hind and Panther, the Churches of Rome and England, talked learnedly about transubstantiation and the authority of popes and councils, was not likely to offend the taste of one so little critical as a lady of Julia's years and education. Her preferences for the Church of England were not likely to be shocked till the argument of the poem had told on her judgment; for in the opening the Panther was spoken of kindly.

"The Panther, sure the noblest, next the Hind,
And fairest creature of the spotted kind;
Oh, could her inborn stains be wash'd away,
She were too good to be a beast of prey!"

And, though not fully understanding the force of the positions Dryden lays down and seeks to make good, Julia read particular passages over repeatedly, and tried to get Emma to admit their beauty.

To captivate her to the side of Romanism it was necessary to pursue a different plan from that adopted, and for the time successfully, as the reader is informed, with Mrs. Annie. Julia was a creature not so entirely of the affections as Mrs. Annie, but more of imagination. Her fancy must be interested. Something striking as new, fanciful, beautiful, piquant, or exceedingly clever must be presented, and if her mind could thus be enlisted, her preferences and feelings might in time come round. She had more than once, on previous occasions, accompanied Mrs. Annie, with whom she was very partial, though less intimate than with Emma, to the Romish chapel, and the service had rather pleased her. Father Canon, whenever he met her at Mrs. Annie's residence, Elgin Hall, or at Colonel Smithson's, always paid her particular attention. She was fond of writing verses, and aware of this fact, on the plea of getting from her poetic versions of certain incidents in the lives of the saints, he had more than once awakened her imaginative sympathy for the legendary fictions of the lives of their saints. She was now reading a graver production, which in a poetical dress commended papal authority to her acceptance,—and thus the way was preparing to undermine her faith, and to infuse into her more and more of the insidious poison of Romish error. Emma suspected something of the kind, though she knew hardly more about the scope of the poem than Julia. She knew where Julia got it, and she

looked suspiciously on every thing coming from Father Canon. She knew also that the general tone of Dryden's poetry was licentious, and thought Julia would derive no benefit from reading it. This she told her,—and yet more objected to it, when, on Julia's reading the poem aloud, Emma saw that papal authority was maintained in captivating verse, and by a weapon so formidable the Church of England was assailed. She then remembered having read some time previously Dryden's comedy, "The Spanish Friar," written before his perversion to Rome, and she told Julia that one statement of this writer was an offset to the other. In the Hind and Panther, Rome was

"Without unspotted, innocent within,"

but, in his Spanish Friar, Father Dominican, by his gluttony, avarice, sensuality, and hypocrisy, represents her through her priests, as but too spotted without, and too little innocent within. Julia therefore did not readily yield. In place of seeing the case as Emma presented it, she kept insisting on the charms of the poem; maintaining that it was very fine. Her friend shook her head, and remarked that she might read other and better poetry. Julia did not see this to be so, and concluding that Emma was either notional, or disposed to be captious, said with animation:—

"Come, Miss Critic, put on your wisdom cap, and tell me what is poetry."

Emma smiled. "It is easier to know what a thing is than to define it. I know my friend Julia, but would be puzzled to describe her."

"I am a nondescript," said Julia, "and so is poetry. Good—a compliment from one who never compliments. But this is no get off. Come, as Spinster Shooter, my old schoolmistress would say, define this word, and, if you prove Mr. John Dryden not a poet, then I'll read, in preference to Whitsuntide, Plutarch's Lives, no," laughing, "Baxter's sermons, and nothing else."

"A poet I should say," replied Emma, "was a magician who could make persons and scenes to us strange and wonderful come and go, and who skilled in painting can colour highly and fantastically and even naturally very common things, and can dress up things as if his wardrobe had suits for all."

"Mr. Blount of Plymouth," said Julia, archly, "by

your definition, in taking lessons under Sir Godfrey Kneller in painting, was only taking lessons in poetry. For Sir Godfrey made aunt Sally's portrait so natural that she looks as if she was speaking to you. Does Mr. John Dryden do any more, or don't he do this? Why object to his poem?"

"He paints and colours high enough," replied Emma, "but I can't say he paints truly. For, after running down the Church and laws of England, because there Churchmen, Dissenters, and Quakers, as well as Romanists, live, whom he calls the Panther, Bear, Boar, Hare, and Hind, he speaks of the pope's country, and of the country of the dreadful inquisition,

"O happy regions, Italy and Spain,
Which never did these monsters entertain."

Now it may be poetry to paint extravagantly places that are given up to Romish vices; but truth is better than this sort of poetry."

Julia then asked if she thought she ought to read this book no further. Her friend answered that she did, and spoke of the readiness with which Fathers Hunter and Canon availed themselves of every means of sowing disaffection to the Church of England among its members; adding that this "Hind and Panther" was lent to her to corrupt her. Julia then asked, "Pray, what sort of poetry would you like? What would you have one read? I understand Governor Effingham won't allow any printing press in Jamestown. Shall I read that witch-ridden paper, the Boston Gazette? I believe I had as lief study out the hard things which an inspired mathematician, Newton, speaks of, who, by the way, is as great a poet as Shakspeare; for he hangs the planets and stars all in empty space, and says that a power we can't see keeps them in their places, and whirls them on round the sun. Or must I," continued Julia, waxing warm, "read the opera of Rosamond, written by Lord Halifax's secretary, one Addison. The story is pretty—and reading it I feel like one sailing down a gentle river under the motion of a summer breeze. But the songs are bad. I can't set one of them to my harpsichord. Or shall I bring my mind down to see my sex lowered, and believe that every woman is an Oriana, taking all disguises

to win back an inconstant lover? No, I can't bear Farquhar."

"His principles are worse than his manners," interrupted Emma, "but I fear he is not far out of the way in describing the world over the ocean."

"Then what sort of poetry do you like?" persisted Julia. Before Emma could reply, Parson Gordon entering the room said, "I verily believe you and Emma have been keeping the fire warm, and were so earnest in conversation, as to forget the afternoon is passing away without your usual walk."

"That is so, dear father," said Emma, rising quickly. "So, let us forth, Julia. See, Adaratha has been so interested in our argument that she has fallen to sleep, and pussy cat is snoring finely. Adaratha, now awake," and the three being bonneted and shawled, walked out.

It has been said that "rich honesty dwells, like a miser in a poor house, or as a pearl in a foul oyster." And it will be found that wealth of soul or intellect often abide in the poor man's dwelling, and in the homely attire of poverty. In the ground swell of a revolution, and in the sweeping flood of necessity, the pearl of worth will be expelled from its shell, and the rich honesty of thoughts and emotions that money cannot set the value of will come forth and take a stronger position. But especially is it true, that rich honesty, miser-like, dwells in a poor house, or pearl-like in a foul oyster, in reference to females. Around "the wee bit ingle," and "the clean hearth stane," of an humble man, and under the roof of a poor man, we are as likely to see the truest and best specimens of womankind, as in the glare of a court, or the hot-bed of wealth and fashion. For home is woman's sphere. Her virtues thrive best by the fire-side, and under the paternal roof. The blaze of the world would rather wither than strengthen her engaging qualities, and its hot-bed would smother them by the foul weeds that in it grow faster than virtues. The touch of the world also hardens, but it does not improve. While it gives confidence it is apt to corrupt. Many a woman has frowned down another who was vastly her superior in every thing but assurance. Wealth and education may do much to mould the mind and mend the manners, but to be well educated and well mannered it is not at all necessary that a

lady must have caught the air of a city, and be initiated into its customs.

Besides, says Dryden :

"A country lip may have the velvet touch ;
Though she's no lady, she may please as much."

Generally, therefore, female loveliness, like the wild rose, grows best in retirement ; where the Simoon-breath of fashion and folly come not, but flourishing "beside the still waters," sees in its depths only its own pure image, and is radiant with the comeliness of Him who was as guileless as He was good. Nor is it fatal to this result that a woman be educated, provided that her education be not of that sort which will make her a blue stocking. For Minerva, the goddess of wisdom, was said to have been innupta, always unmarried ; doomed to maiden loneliness by knowing, or professing to know more than the other inhabitants of Olympus.

But, while love may seem to "wear the cap and bells of folly," women to be loved long or truly must cast them off, and be more than mere butterflies, or dollbabies, or the playthings of amorous dalliance.

At the time of our narrative, and afterwards, most females were unable to write a grammatical sentence. Pope, a contemporary then, said :

"Most women have no characters at all,
Matter too soft a lasting mark to bear,
And best distinguished by black, brown, or fair."

Our readers will see that Emma and Julia had characters, and that any circumstance could not colour them at will ; but, thanks for this are due, not to the age, but to the sedulous and judicious care with which their minds had been tutored. The age, it is true, in the mother country, was rich in intellectual lights ; but alas ! how little were they appreciated ! A Mrs. Masham (a name perhaps significant), "who had no more sense than would have sufficed to smooth a crumpled riband, or comb a lap-dog," ruled Queen Anne, while Swift and Bolingbroke waited in the antechamber. And in the province of Maryland, ignorance was not less in the ascendant. It was seen in the vapouring Governor Seymour ; and the leading characters we are sketching were, as compared to the great mass,

"Rari nantes in gurgite vasto."

CHAPTER VIII.

TRADING FOR A HORSE—THE CASTLE BOARDED—THE HUNT, &c.

"The stag at eve had drunk his fill,
Where danced the moon on Monan's rill,
And deep his midnight-lair had made
In lone Glenartney's hazel shade;
But, when the sun his beacon red
Had kindled on Benvoirlich's head,
The deep mouthed bloodhounds' heavy bay
Resounded up the rocky way,
And faint, from further distance borne,
Were heard the clanging hoof and horn."

SCOTT.

WE left Montrose on St. Agnes' day just as he parted from his unknown friend, and, to take up the thread of our narrative, we must ask the reader to go back a few days to the period just mentioned. When Montrose arrived at the tavern of the Free Briton, which was on a street that ran parallel with St. Mary's river, and not far from Chancellor's Point, he found an invitation for the captain and himself, from Colonel Smithson, to spend the evening at the castle; and was further informed in the note that the fete would open at sunset, and continue till midnight; and that their host had arranged a stag-hunt, which was to begin a little before dawn, and to consist of a dozen riders. Montrose received the intelligence with very great pleasure, and bestirred himself the meanwhile in looking out for a suitable horse; as the hunt might be no less hazardous than agreeable. And, as he and the captain would need each a horse on other occasions also, they concluded to purchase one.

The county court was then in session, and hence there was a goodly number of horses at the two taverns; Montrose, with the shrewdness of a horse jockey, criticised, and then rejected first one, and then another, and another of the horses, which were offered to him.

"Why man," he said to one owner, "this horse is very sorry. His ears are too big and not straight enough," and on the man seeming incredulous, he added, "I want a tough hunter: I mean a horse whose ears are long and erect as those of a fox."

"I have the horse for the young master," said an old man leading forward the animal. Montrose laughed, and said. "Why, sir, a horse's head is proverbial for its length, and, old man, your horse's head is nearly as short and as narrow as your own."

"What say you, mister, to mine," said a third rustic. "Ne'er horse 'tween Jimstown and Boston kin match him. See what a fine neck, so purty curving."

"Very curving indeed," replied Montrose. "The horse is worthless. He is not even equal to a quarter nag. He would break down by the time a good horse would just begin to get warm." There was a laugh in the crowd, and a bystander said, "This stranger don't want to buy, after all."

"Yes I do," said Montrose. "Give me a horse with a large throat, and that will not curve, but straight, and I'll wager, he'll hold out, when your curving neck horses are gasping on the ground."

Having settled the material points of horse-worthiness, no less to the amazement than the edification of the gapers and loungers at the inns, and to the vexation of some of the disappointed venders; who, having affixed a high price on their horses, hoped to make a bargain out of him, he found one at length which was equipped by nature in all the points essential. His crest was fine and elevated; his breast was broad and strong; his legs were clean, flat, and straight, and his mane and tail were thin and long; besides possessing the other excellences stated. And then our hero, with the practised judgment of a veteran sportsman, and, having ascertained that he was obedient to the bit, spur, and voice, and in such keeping as ensured endurance, felt nearly as impatient for the hunt as any ambitious squire is to win the spurs on the eve of a first engagement.

The captain, however, did not select his horse with like judgment; but supposing that the larger and heavier the animal, the better he could stand a hunt, he bought one that looked to be as unwieldy as an elephant.

Night came, and before dusk a merry but small company met at the castle. The belle of St. Mary's, Miss Evelin of Evelinton manor, and Mrs. Annie Jones, the widow, eclipsed all other fair ones who were there; and, as these ladies may be described particularly hereafter, it will suffice to say, that Miss Evelin did not inspire either Montrose or the captain, while Mrs. Annie impressed them both most favourably;

and that a few of her warm and sunny smiles acted on the susceptible heart of the captain, as so many sparks would have done on well prepared tinder. On Miss Evelin, Montrose felt disposed to play off those airs and speeches, which young men are so apt to do on a coquette; while he felt drawn to Mrs. Annie, as to one whom he must esteem, and under certain circumstances might love. The captain entertained for the belle of St. Mary's a kind of distant homage, which kept him respectfully at bay; but, when he looked at Mrs. Annie, he felt inclined to take down sail, let go anchor, and lay within speaking distance.

About ten o'clock however, pursuant to the good habits of the olden time, the ladies retired, and the gentlemen, who were to be of the hunting party, also retired to make their preparations. As they were leaving the castle, the captain in a low tone said to Montrose, "Ahoy! messmate, I'm bound on another chase afore weighing anchor for this cruise in the forest. And, egad, I think 'twill be easier to get in her wake, and under her windward. For, look ye, Master Montrose, this is a sail worth the boarding."

"What means the man?" said Montrose. "Why captain, the pretty widow, or the apple-toddy, has turned your head. You are going to give chase to whom."

"Well, the upshot is, 'tis, as we were told, St. Agney's night, and they say the very time to go a cruising for love. Mrs. Annie, that girl with the eyes of a Spanish Donna, sleeps in the right wing of this castle, and I'm sure the charm will work. For aint she put out her light, and gone below."

"The charm will work! She has put out her light! What nonsense is all this? Come, captain, if you talk so, I shall think the best thing to be done is to put you to bed. With so little ballast as you have on board, you will capsize."

"Hold on there," said the captain. "I overheard Hackett, the fellow with the brocaded waistcoat, say to Lawyer Brief, the little attorney, that he meant to board the outside of this castle to night, and going aloft to Mrs. Annie's birth, spin out a bit of poetry."

"Well," interrupted Montrose, "you mean to break the fellow's head, and get your's broken for intermeddling?"

"I have no fears of having my bows run into by a craft like him," replied the sailor; "but I won't say I won't

shiver his bows. But, as I was telling you, Hackett dropt the bit of poetry, and here it is,"—producing a piece of paper,—“and I mean, now that I have got the fellow's papers, to clap on all sail and take the prize from him; for you must know, this being St. Agney's night, wind and tide favour me.”

“How, in the name of wonder! with this paper do you propose to bring about this matter?” asked Montrose, more and more persuaded the captain was cracked.

“Easy enough. You'll see after I've boarded the castle,” replied the captain.

“What! like Jachemo in the play, who stole into Imogen's chamber, you mean to take notes of your sleeping beauty, sing next to her a catch, which is to wake her up, and, no sooner has the pretty Mrs. Annie got a glimpse of you, than away you dodge out of the window?”

“Why not?” said the captain, resolved on the experiment.

“Hoity toity, captain,” continued Montrose. “You served under Admiral Benbow, eh?”

“Ay, Master Montrose.”

“And your rough commander couldn't whip Du Casse, the Frenchman, with but one ship against a fleet?”

“Ay, ay!” replied the sailor.

“So neither will you, with the force you have, take Mrs. Annie in the castle. But let me see the bit of poetry you have.” And, taking the paper by the light near, Montrose read as follows:

“List! lady, your lover is here,
Mark him well, while he is near:
See a gallant, bold and true,
Who loves none so well as you,
And would on thy sweet brow
A kiss imprint,—and let thee know
It will his happiness be
Ere long to marry thee.”

“First rate,” said Montrose. “So a son of Neptune has left the briny sea to wet his feet in the dews of Helicon?”

“Lawyer Brief wrote it,” said the sailor.

“It is to be hoped,” said Montrose, “that in the court of law he draws up his pleas better; if not his suits will go against him.”

Montrose now urged the sailor to lie down, and rest

himself a few hours,—gave orders that he himself should be called up some time before day, and then, throwing himself on the bed, was soon asleep. The captain, however, on amorous thoughts intent, sallied forth for the castle, with a rope; by means of which he hoped to reach the house, and afterwards to escape from it. On reaching the castle, he saw that Hackett was before him, whose figure he detected stealing along under the shadow of the wall on the right side, and whom he next saw climb up into a tree that projected over the wall, and by a limb of which, he observed, he descended into the yard. The captain followed close upon him, and having reached the top of the wall, looked about to see what had become of Hackett, being anxious to know how he proposed to scale the house and effect an entrance through the window into Mrs. Annie's apartment. He saw Hackett seize a small ladder, which was in the yard near him, next plant it gently against the side of the house under the window, and slowly ascend it.

"'Twill be time enough for me to try," thought the captain, "when the fellow runs aground, or gives up the chase: and how can he navigate without this bit of a paper?"

Hackett reached the top of the ladder, and there stopt. The window was fastened down by a catch, or fitted very tightly in the groove. Hackett, resolute on succeeding, shook the window violently, and made such a rattling noise as to awaken the fair sleeper within. For starting up alarmed, and thinking more of robbers than St. Agnes or a lover, she threw a robe de chambre about her, and, hurrying to the passage, gave the alarm: which alarm, however, neither Hackett nor the captain immediately knew of.—Colonel Smithson came out at once at the summons of his fair guest, and Hackett soon saw, to his consternation, a light in Mrs. Annie's room, and heard voices below stairs. He hastily descended, climbed the wall, and was congratulating himself on his lucky escape, when he heard the heavy growl of a large mastiff, that a servant had just unchained. Hackett waited no longer. Fear lent him speed. He descended the outer side of the wall; but ignorance how to proceed here detained him a moment. Servants of the castle might be in the main street waiting to intercept him should he take this route. A wide field lay before him; but should he trust himself in this direction, the dog would unquestionably overtake him before

he could reach the cross-street, where the field terminated. There was one, and but one avenue of escape. He could run close outside the wall in rather a north by east course, and, turning then to the left, cross a foot-bridge that spanned the head of St. John's Creek. This would soon bring him to the ford just outside of the creek's mouth. Here he might cross, and for the night, or the time, find shelter on the other side. But, in effecting this feat, he must be quick about it, or the dreadful mastiff would be upon him. This was Hobson's choice,—no better, or other as good, offering, it became Hackett's. He ran as he had never run before, and gained the bridge before the dog was outside of the walls. He was soon at the mouth of the creek, preparing to ford just beyond it, when the woods rang with the heavy and deep toned bark of the mastiff in pursuit. Hackett heard no more, paused no longer; but pushed into the creek, cold as it was, waded across, and, breathless and dripping with water, pushed forcibly against the door of one Snarler, whose house was on the hill, near the creek's mouth. Providentially, perhaps, for Hackett, Snarler had not yet retired, and at that instant was in the act of bolting the door, as Hackett kicked and beat at it, clamorous for admittance.

"Open the door; open the door I say," bawled Hackett.

"I must know who you is first," said Snarler.

"Would you have me murdered?" again bawled Hackett, kicking and beating yet harder.

Snarler caught the word murdered in part, sounding to him as murder, and he strove now to shoot the bolt inside; seizing at the same time a stick, as if he would contest the entrance.

"Then, fool!" said Hackett, maddened with fear and desperation, (for the dog was crossing at the ford,) "I'll break open your door, and your head too. I'd fight a dozen like you before I'd fight that dog. I thought Colonel Smithson had sent him away."

Thus speaking, Hackett caught up a log of wood from a pile near by, and drove it forcibly against the door. The door gave way, and Hackett, like one possessed, burst into the house, and, before Snarler could do any thing, or recognize him, he ran hastily up stairs, and shut after him a bedroom door, which he fastened at once inside. This was the work of a moment, and just in time to save him; for imme-

diately afterwards in rushed the dog. Snarler, like one bewildered, stood irresolute what to do, and wondering who could be the uncereemonious intruder; when the dog seized upon Snarler, threw him down, and would have cut his throat, if the servants rushing in had not beat him off. All this time the captain saw only a part of Hackett's movements, and being further out, had means of clearing himself and reaching the main street, which he did, just as the servants at the castle were coming out of it. In no pleasant mood he returned to the Inn of the Free Briton. On the way he passed some revellers who were out on a spree, and were going, as they said, to wet their whistle, and fill their horn. The captain saw them walking arm in arm, two by two, and heard them lustily sing:—

“Old Bacchus is a merry fellow;
One quaff of him is worth a crown;
For whomsoever he makes mellow, —
He makes a king, though before a clown.”

The captain had not been in long, before Montrose was called up by the servant, and was surprised to see the captain sitting moodily in a chair, looking into a fire of half dead embers.

“The widow still, captain, eh! I fear man this thing called love has broken your rest. Oh! ’tis a sad enemy to sailors—worse than crossing the line. Cupid tosses you tars on a rougher sea than Neptune does; knowing that tossing is only in the way of your profession. But, bless me, you seem to have had more than the usual tossing to-night,” surveying the captain more closely. “Shipwrecked, eh?” Still the captain made no reply. “How long have you been up?”

“I’ve not been below to-night,” said the sailor.

“What? Not taken to your berth yet?” continued Montrose.

After a long pause the captain mentioned his abortive attempt, and Hackett’s flight; at which Montrose laughed heartily, and in which, after a while, the captain joined.

Servants entered then, and reported that the horns were sounding, and that lawyer Brief and the collector had just passed on their way to the castle. Montrose walked out with the captain.

"Ah! whose hounds are these?" he asked, seeing some fine hounds.

"They belong to Colonel Smithson," said the servants.

"See, captain," continued Montrose, "what fine eyes, black as the widow's, and nearly as soft. Notice what fine rush tails, and what round and cat-like feet. And then their ears! Yes, by Jove, captain, the hounds of Theseus could not have surpassed them; for these also have

"Ears that sweep away the morning dew,"

"There's no mistake about them," continued Montrose, inspecting the hounds closely, with all the interest of a veteran sportsman, or hunter. "What can be more elegant than the gait of these hounds? Equal almost to that of an English fox-hound—equal, you would say, perhaps, to a ship under sail. No, no, now that you are smitten of the mischievous god, it would be the highest compliment to say their gait was equal to that of Mrs. Annie, the lovely widow, especially, captain," slapping the sailor on the shoulder, "when you were giving chase to her, and she outsailed you. Why, captain," continued Montrose, not observing the moody silence, and the disconcerted look of the sailor, "to raise such hounds as these; raise them well, I mean, as these seem to be, it needs more pains than it would take to educate a country gentleman; for most of the country gentry raise themselves. Like the weeds in their fields, they grow up without raising; but a first-rate hound requires every pains," and he was proceeding to describe their education as a theme he loved to dwell on, when the groom admonished him it was getting late; and here breaking off, Montrose and the captain, mounting, rode off. All were in movement at the castle, and lights streamed forth from the large windows upon the court in front. The colonel, with the manners of a courtier, met our acquaintances at the door, and with a bow, which Lafontaine would have called a note drawn at sight, requiring instant and due acknowledgment, full of grace and dignity, and with a courtesy that obliged and pleased, he ushered them into the parlour.

The colonel was about the average height of men, though not large. He was neat, but not foppish; courtly and imposing in tone and in manner, and in all was made to move among men, and impress them favourably.

"The large meadow," said the colonel to his guests, "lies to the north-east of the town, and here is probably our game. But we must be cautious. Remember it is an old hart. He was seen grazing in that meadow yesterday. Now these fellows at this season do not herd together as in December; but go generally in fours. We must, therefore, separate him from his companions. His layer we may, perhaps, find in the thicket near by, and may easily distinguish it from the bed of any other deer. But then," and the colonel spoke as gravely as if he were planning an assault on an enemy's outpost, "let us be sure we have found it, for if the hounds, by mistake, should get on the wrong scent, our sport is spoiled. I can tell it, however, when I see it, and I am anxious that the hounds should strike his scent, and keep it till they track him to his layer to-night; and this cannot be far off. Let us be careful to unharbour so as to make no mistake. For, from the hart's age and strength, it will be no child's play to hunt him down."

"His age?" asked a short, thick man dressed as a Roman priest, "then you believe in the *longa et cervina senectus* of Juvenal? and in the Gaelic notion that the stag's life is thrice as long as man's?"

"To some extent," said the colonel, "and we shall say this old hart has lived long but to learn wisdom and craft to baffle and foil us."

"So much the better," interrupted Montrose, "and only what deer stalkers count upon at times. The ready and certain sagacity of the stag has outwitted many a Nimrod."

"All the more glory in winding the most at his death," said Lawyer Brief; a prim little man, whose body was in perpetual motion, and whose chief ambition, it seemed, was to put on all the dignity imaginable, and which evidently cost him an effort. "All the more glory, colonel," he continued, "I feel as much ardour for the hunt as if I had always heard the music of the cry of the hounds, instead of the wrangling discord of a court-room."

"No doubt, no doubt," replied the portly priest we mentioned, whose blooming face, ruddy complexion, cheer-loving eye, and open countenance made him look like any thing but a priest of the order of Loyola. "You have had the very practice to make an expert sportsman. For never was stag or hart so hunted down, as you hunt a poor fellow, when you have a suit against him; and, being so adroit by

your capias in ferreting the defendant out of the thickets, and always ready to sound the mort huntsman-like, when you have him in your clutches, you will beat us all."

"Even so, Father Canon," said Colonel Smithson, looking archly at the company. "Ah! father, you know the attorney well. Often has he confessed the quips and turns of his profession to you. We must be up and stirring then; and, besides, I understand, he has promised the antlers of the hart, as a present, to Miss Evelin."

"They are to be hers, gentlemen," said the little attorney, colouring a little, and then straightening himself to look big.

"Provided you can get them," said Montrose, who conceived no fancy for the attorney, "one little obstacle is in the way, the conjunction *if*. Get over that, and you may have the antlers."

"Very true," replied Father Canon. "The conjunction *if* might be in his way, if it were not a copulative conjunction, but, as the worthy counsellor has thought of coupling, it won't be in his way, and I'll wager, should he need stag's horns to win Miss Evelin, he'll even put them on his own head, and cutting a more graceful figure than Falstaff did as the stag of Windsor Forest, he will look so very engaging under the old mulberry at moonlight, (I will not say under the apple tree, close by where the thirty-nine are given,) that Miss Jane will pity his bachelor-loneliness, and——"

"Exactly so, Father Canon," said the colonel, interrupting him, "and relieve it:" laughing as he spoke. "So, gentlemen, before we go, fill round a bumper to the amorous stag of St. Mary's. Better luck to him than his illustrious predecessor."

The glasses were filled and emptied, and the oaken roof echoed with the glee of the company; in which Brief, though smarting a little under their gibes, was too politic not to join.

"We are losing time," said the colonel.

The company then rode off, taking the road towards a large meadow, which was to the north of the town. The moon shone brightly; the air was mild for the season; a gentle wind from the west was just perceptible, and but little, if any, frost was falling.

"A lovely night this for a hunt," said Montrose, as he and the colonel rode on together.

"Divine," replied the colonel, stopping a second, and looking inquiringly about him. "Not cold enough, nor dry enough to destroy the scent. To hunt such a time would tempt a gouty man out of bed."

"That aint all," said Montrose, "I have heard my father say that King William, impatient at old Duke Schomberg's tardiness, remarked he had not come to Ireland to let the grass grow under his feet. I should say from Cæsar's movements," pointing to one of the two fine hounds, "we are near the hart, and will have a busy time of it."

"Yes, yes," said the colonel, quickly. "Look Cæsar, look," cheering the hound. He had hardly spoken before the hound gave a deep yell, and it was so full and strong that it went travelling on the morning air, floating out of the meadow river-ward, on reaching which, it rolled onward, and lost itself in distant echoes on the other shore.

The colonel, a true huntsman, ordered the groom not to cast the two hounds till he had given the usual signal. And, addressing Montrose hurriedly, urged him to keep close to Cæsar, and see whether he snuffed the scent of a roe, or fallow deer. On the two followed, without loss of time or speed, and were led by the sagacious dog to the point desired. The colonel's face brightened up, and his voice assumed that wiry tone which excitement is apt to produce. "Here he has been. Yes! now I'd give something to find the layer where he was harboured to-night." Cæsar, the meanwhile, sagaciously busy, snuffed the air, and quickened his pace, and then unable to keep in his joy, barked and yelled. The hunters were on the look out, and kept as close to him as they could. All at once, Montrose, raising himself in his stirrups, and pointing to the right, cried out in a loud tone: "Here! here he is," when a noble stag or hart, with lofty antlers, sprang from his couch in the thicket, and with the speed of the wind seemed to bound across the meadow, proud, doubtless of his strength and activity; and, like men at the onset of the race of life, expecting easily to distance all in pursuit, and to be able to reach a sheltered nook, or commanding eminence, where he might look disdainfully and securely down upon his enemies. Colonel Smithson gave instantly three blasts of the horn. The hounds spoken of were instantly uncoupled and put upon the scent; and then the whole pack snuffing the tainted air, each in a tone peculiarly his own, and which chimed in with all, opened

in a concert whose music a hunter will declare was second to none. One voice after another of the excited hunters cheered. Deep went the rowels of the spur into the flanks of the horses. Crack went their whips; and, with yells like Indians, splashing in the mud, and clearing the brooks and bushes in the way, with a hunter's recklessness, on they bounded. But none more so than Montrose, who with face flushed and every muscle strained, felt as proud as did Conrad on a different element:

"Who would not brave the battle-fire, the wreck,
To move the monarch of her peopled deck?"

No money at that moment could have bought his horse from Montrose. They next pressed through a heavy growth of oaks. Behind Montrose, and just ahead of Colonel Smithson, the Captain was plunging fearfully upon his unwieldy beast, shouting as if he had a trumpet, "Ship ahoy! heave to there! or I'll run you down."

"Have a care, captain," said the colonel, catching the sailor's bridle, "or you'll break your own neck, and your horse's too, in the ravine just ahead of you."

The hart made for St. Mary's river. Montrose had pushed ahead of his company, and by dint of excellent horsemanship, and the protection of Providence, had been saved from more than one break-neck disaster; and as he came in sight prudently reined in his steed, and stopt to observe where the deep mouthed baying of the hounds would conduct him. The sound coming to him from the north, he pressed up a high hill on the river's bank, where he might make his observations, and guide his movements with judgment. The hill on which he stood is elevated about a hundred feet above St. Mary's river, and a mile and a half to the north of the State House, on the river's right bank. Here there was a little clearing, which was a part of Snarler's farm, to whose house Hackett, it will be remembered, made an unexpected visit in running from the dog.

The sun's red beams were just visible in the highest window on the south side of the castle. A mist hung upon the river as if nature had cast a light and gossamer veil upon it. The water was still and peaceful. The blue of the wood lined the shore, and Montrose stood for a moment listening to the blended cries of tenor and bass of the different hounds. Leaving all behind him, the stag stood on a lofty eminence

just beyond, and above that on which Montrose had made a momentary halt.

The eminence was crowned with majestic oaks, which were few and far between; and it was so open that Montrose distinctly saw the hart stop, and, throwing his antlered frontlet proudly aloft seemed to be listening, as if anxious to catch the different cries of the hounds in pursuit, who were winding along the curving shore of the river below the hill. Oh! that man, whose passions like well trained hounds, hunt him down from dawn to the sunset of life, would thus gain the summit of an eminence in his furious career and stop; and noting his foes in pursuit, would turn to the only safe retreat which the Gospel offers, to the right, the narrow, and upward path. A moment more and the hart was gone. In the meanwhile the early risers in the town heard the merry horns ring out their peal, and Mrs. Annie Jones, and the inmates of the castle, were awake, and listened anxiously to the sounds which came into their chambers with the morning air. Mrs. Annie had recovered from her alarm, and stood at the window, looking towards the sheet of water, whence came the sounds of horn and hound. And, as she was looking out, the servant entered, and delivered the bit of poetry which our friend, the captain, had dropped in his flight.

"This is Lawyer Brief's work," said Mrs. Annie, recognizing the handwriting. "He is smitten with Jane, and by mistake took my window last night for hers. Surely he couldn't think that St. Agnes would favour his suit."

She immediately dressed herself, hurried out, and showed the paper to Mrs. Smithson, and the two then bantered Miss Evelin, telling her this was a love-token of the attorney, whose enterprise the night just past had failed; and they were much amused at the indignation with which the haughty beauty received this supposed evidence of the attorney's regard.

During this time the huntsmen pursued their way with unabated zeal, and when they reached the lofty hill, where the hart was last seen by Montrose, they sent up a shout and blew blasts that made the woods and waters to ring again. As it was a primitive forest, many a deer was roused from his lodge, many a fox scared from his kennel, many a timid hare driven from her seat, and many a fish-hawk startled from his airy nest on a dead tree. Only

on days of yore had the Indian hunters, chasing the fallow-deer and roe buck, sent up and down the glens and hills of the Yaocomoco a more deafening shout; but horn and hound then, did not, as on the occasion referred to, deepen and improve that yell, and make it musical. Further up the river stretches a meadow, where were some deer whom the noise had startled forth, among whom, with the craftiness peculiar to the stag, the hart dashed, driving at the same time the herd together, and among whom he fed, in order hereby to deceive his pursuers and lead them off on a different scent. This artifice succeeded in part. The younger hounds, who had outstripped in the race, were thus led astray.

"We are alone," said Colonel Smithson. "The captain, to my surprise, is yet in his seat; Father Canon and the counsellor are behind; while the rest of the party have been misled by the young hounds after a roe or buck of the herd, that just now was grazing in this meadow. I'll sound my horn and call them back;" which was done nearly as soon as said.

"The hart, I should judge," said Montrose, "from the actions of your fine hounds, has pushed towards the head of this river, and we shall then have a hunt in the forest."

In the meanwhile Father Canon had taken the hunt rather coolly for a sportsman, and was dragging along in the rear with the attorney. The latter had already conned a set speech, representing that his tardiness was caused by his reluctance to leave the priest alone; though he had found the latter of service to him. Brief was a sorry horseman, and timid, being afraid to ride faster than a certain gait, while the priest, who asked nothing more than a subject for his wit, unable to repress his merry mood, as he rode alongside of the attorney, while he jogged him, said,—

"Confess, friend Brief, if Miss Evelin were only here that she would be a dearer deer than any which feeds in the forest; and closer to your heart than this hart of an old stag we are chasing."

"What then, father?"

"Why," continued the veteran joker, "confess, man, and be shriven. You love the girl out of reason, and I'll make it reason by giving you absolution."

By this time the stag had reached the head of St. Mary's river; and, here changing his course, he doubled for some hundreds of yards, and appeared inclined to return to his old range. This partial retracing of the route brought Montrose and the colonel once more together. The colonel's horse was nearly spent; though his rider, now falling in with the whole pack of hounds, and the main body of the sportsmen, felt no discouragement; but cheered on the pack, called to the hunters to push on, and, spurring his jaded steed, his party co-operating,—he and they renewed the hunt with energy.

"The hart makes for the forest," shouted the colonel. "He means to push for the Patuxent."

"Cheer on, boys," cried out Montrose. "A bold push now, or we lose him. If he takes soil, our hunt is spoiled. He won't hold this long."

The hart was evidently failing. He ran in a high and lampering gait. His mouth was black and foamless, and his tongue fell out; unmistakable signs that he had run his best, and, if he were well pushed, his race would soon be over.

So thought the hunters, and as the poor hart, with the energy of desperation, struggling for life, after a second's pause, as if to collect breath and strength, and perhaps snuff in wind enough to hold out upon, then darted into the forest, which stretches between the head of St. Mary's river and the river Patuxent, deep went the rowels of the spurs into the jaded horses, up rose the desperate shout of the riders, "On, on." The clanging horn sounded if possible louder than before; and the two favourite hounds bayed deep and strong. Poor beast! Not one of the eager and anxious sportsmen thought of the pain he was inflicting. Even the hounds, dumb beasts also, were as pitiless. Men, even so, hunt down their fellow men. When the hard-chased human stag, almost spent, with a commendable courage, bears himself up, and makes one last effort, instead of admiration and pity, his pursuers say, "We shall have him now." And they shout after him with redoubled hatred and virulence, "Down with him! Down with him!"

Colonel Smithson came to a fence, which he attempted to leap; his horse fell, and threw him, without hurting him, while the poor animal, with a groan, lay down to die.

The collector, Mr. Craft, was not far off. He had abandoned his horse as nearly dead, and was seated under a tree soliloquizing: "How unprofitable is this hunting! I've lost a valuable beast by it; yet I durst not refuse the colonel's pressing invitation. A man must make sacrifices now and then to keep on the bright side of such men as the colonel. His support got me my office." Another of the party had been unhorsed, and others were hors de combat,—in hunter's phrase, hors de chasse,—in reality, hors d'haleine, out of breath,—and perhaps considered a longer hunt hors de raison, very unreasonable.

The captain had fared no better. It was not his fortune, like Commodore Trunnion, to find a river in his way, in which he might get once more into his native element; though doubtless, like the commodore, on a similar occasion, he thought the hunt had been against all the rules of sailing; being often in the teeth of the wind, and almost always with the certain prospect of capsizing, or being wrecked. More than once he had called upon Neptune and his horses, and vowed, if out of this gale, he would never trust himself on land in another, especially on so crazy a hulk as he attempted to steer. For he had been thrown. His left arm hung nearly useless by his side, and his face was almost as badly scratched as if he had been in a Kentucky fight. Fortunately, however, the captain found what was next as good as water. His horse landed him in a morass, from which, with difficulty, he extricated himself; and, as he was walking to a house near, he muttered: "Right glad am I to run into a harbour at last. I was a great fool to go a cruising after a stag that outruns the devil." Still the hart kept ahead, and Montrose and the two hounds kept close to him; all three being nearly spent. At length they ascended a hill, which afforded a fine view of the Patuxent, and of the hills and woods of Calvert; but vexed was Montrose also to see that the hart lost no time in descending the hill, while the two faithful dogs almost hung upon his haunches.

"Oh!" said he, "that I had a mile or two to stretch further, and he should be mine. He may be mine yet," said the youth; pressing his horse to the utmost the tired beast could bear up under; and he hurried down the hill, shouting loud as he could. His voice however was too hoarse to be heard far. Close prest and hard beset, the hart,

though within almost a stone's cast of the river, turned and stood at bay; prepared to do execution against the dogs and even Montrose, should either or all venture to attack him in his extremity. "I must call in the dogs," said Montrose to himself. "Perhaps," he continued, drawing a short and stout sword that he wore at his side, (for, like ancient knights, he was "*gladio cinctus*,") "I can manage him with this." So saying, he called off the dogs, dismounted and fastened his horse; and then advanced to an encounter which no practised hunter enterprises without some concern; well aware how very perilous it is to assail a hart at bay. The hounds stood off and barked, as Montrose slowly and cautiously advanced; by dexterity hoping to give the stag a side thrust, and counting on the stag being too exhausted to drive either very hard, or correctly. The crisis was at hand; but the hart at once turned, gained the river bank, and plunged in.

"Too bad," said Montrose, "too bad." The jaded stag, with his person nearly hid, made the stream as is usual, and kept far enough from the bank to leave no scent. The baffled dogs stood and howled, and Montrose, deeply mortified, looked after the stag, saw his ripple and a black something just above the water move the river. "Where was he? Where was the captain?" were his next thoughts. To the country he was an entire stranger, and night was not far off.

For the first time Montrose began to feel much fatigue, and having fasted since over-night, he was very hungry. "It is possible," said he, as he slowly retraced his course up the hill, "I may fall in with some of the party. Perhaps the sound of my horn may bring us together." He blew his horn long and loudly, and the echoes travelled in the woods and along the river; but no answering horn was heard. He ascended the hill, and there stood dubious what course to take; for there was no road near. "My horse," he continued, "cannot carry me much further. What shall I do?"

At this moment he heard the noise of a horse's hoofs not far off. He hallooed, calling on the person to stop. A voice replied. He followed the direction of the sound, and found quite a tall, stout person, dressed as a clergyman, waiting for him. Montrose, in courteous terms, stated his difficulty, and the stranger, who was Parson Gordon,

assured him that they were near the house of a decent forester. Here they would stop for the night, and could promise Montrose comfortable quarters. The latter expressed his surprise in finding a clergyman in these wilds.

"I held Divine service this morning," said the parson, "in a chapel in this neighbourhood, and I administered the sacrament of baptism to some children. I reside in St. George's, whither I am bound."

"You are acquainted then with Parson Gordon?"

"I am Parson Gordon himself."

Montrose expressed his pleasure at the discovery, announced his name, and stated that an intimate friend, Charles Delafield, had often spoken of him as rector of the parish where his sister resided.

"Charles Delafield? Why he is the brother of Julia, and nephew of Mr. James Holt." Montrose assented. They continued the conversation till they came to the forester's house. Here Montrose found the captain, who seemed not sorry to have found a port. And we shall leave them for the present, with the remark, that the day following, Parson Gordon, on his return home, was informed of Father Hunter's sermon, and that on the second day he had the conversation which we have given, at the castle, on the orders of the Church of England. We will add that Montrose had the hunt over again in his sleep that night. The sound of the horn rang clearly in his ear, and all the night he was chasing a phantom stag. He often came near, but found it as hard to run him down, as he had the stag he had chased while awake.

Colonel Smithson, after losing his horse, walked on a few miles, and finding and hearing nothing of the party, turned about, and bent his course towards St. Mary's. After going, as he supposed, in the neighbourhood of his associates, he determined to try the efficacy of sounding his horn. He accordingly blew a treble most as spiritedly as if he had killed the stag, and was exulting over his fall. Hardly had he sounded before a number of horns, answering in a general recheat, were heard from a thicket to the right, near the banks of the river. He hurried to the spot, and, on ascending a hill, saw his compeers in the chase, (Montrose and the captain excepted,) sitting on the ground by a large spring, making merry. A shout went up from the party,

as the colonel came in sight, and, among the voices greeting him, Father Canon's was most distinguishable.

"Right welcome, worthy Venator," said the priest, "after your successful hunt! You have killed the stag, given the hounds their reward, and have come to call on us to help you dissect him, and being very considerate and benevolently disposed to distressed corydons, you have left the antlers on him for the counsellor, that he may keep his promise with the belle of St. Mary's?"

"Oh, certainly," said the colonel, entering into the joke, "and if I had thought a moment, I should have known why Father Canon did not anticipate me in this pleasure."

"Yes, yes," said the priest, "I am a true Israelite. I have a hankering after the flesh pots of Egypt."

"And do not object either to the grapes of Eshcol," said the colonel.

"How could I? Worthy sir, I am not so wicked as to have forgotten St. Paul's advice to son Timothy: 'Do not still drink water; but use a little wine for thy stomach-sake, and thy frequent infirmities.'"

"Which infirmities, father," said the colonel, "being frequent, require frequent use of the remedy prescribed."

"Most wisely reasoned out," said the priest. "Besides, I go for the *otium cum dignitate*; that sort of dignity which is most comfortable, as I would paraphrase it. You have not forgotten old Catullus? Not his memorable lines?

"*O quid solutis est beatius curis?*"

You know them. Great, he says, is his happiness who, throwing aside all cares, coming home overworked, takes his ease on the wished for couch. Now, I would improve this. He is yet happier, say I, who, before lying down, uses '*vino propter stomachum suum, et frequentes suas infirmitates.*' Ah! that is it," laughing heartily. "Yes, takes a little wine for his stomach's sake and his often infirmities. This helps digestion, and enables us all the better,

"*Desiderato qui acquiescere lecto,*"

to lie down on the wished for couch. But come, sir," rising and making room for the colonel, "you are just in time. We have settled the knotty points, disposing of the substan-

tials of duck and venison, and were about to finish off by a spirited and especially spirituous application."

After further pleasantries, the colonel and collector, taking each a horse from their grooms, made all haste towards St. Mary's, hoping to reach there by bed time. As the two, Father Canon and Colonel Smithson, rode on together, in a tone pleasant and yet meant to be more, the colonel said to the Roman priest:

"It must be your love of good fellowship, or perhaps your desire to accommodate your friends, and not a hunter's passion, which gives us the pleasure of your company on such occasions?"

"Who says I am not as ardent a sportsman as Nimrod himself?" replied the priest. "I'll defy the counsellor to go beyond me. He goes for the stag's horns and I for the stag's meat."

"How happens it," asked the colonel smiling, "that you always bring up the rear?"

"Ah, good sir, I am kept in terrorem of a canon of Egbert, who was an Archbishop of York when England was in dutiful obedience to mother church. This canon imposes an abstinence of three years from flesh upon any priest who shall go a hunting. Wherefore I wait in the rear for the deer in the basket, instead of leading the van after the deer in the woods."

"But seriously, father. We have hunting parsons in the Church of England, and you, as a Catholic priest, do not think there is any incompatibility or incongruity between hunting and your priestly calling?"

"Why should there be any?" replied the priest, raising himself in the stirrups, and looking fixedly at the colonel. "Why, sir, it was thought no sin but in the archiepiscopate of York. In the reign of king Edgar, the bishop of Rochester kept a nag that was noted throughout the kingdom, and his lordship's hounds were so famed that, by the laws of Canterbury, the archbishop fell heir to the bishop of Rochester's nag and his famous kennel of hounds; and in default of an archbishop living at the time, the nag and hounds became the property of the king."

"Why, Father Canon," said the colonel, looking at him archly, "I thought you hailed from Cork. How is that you are familiar with the customs which prevailed in England?"

a place your countrymen are not apt to speak of favourably, much less to quote with approbation."

"I have the misfortune to be an Irishman, though born in England," said Father Canon. "In sight of old Rochester castle, my infant eyes first saw the light, and there had I my childish gambols. Well do I remember the banner, which, on St. Andrew's day, floated out from the ruined tower, as a notice to the tenants to come forward and pay their rents, under the penalty of having them doubled at every flowing of the tide of the Medway. My father, a native of Cork, moved to England, and farmed it on a patch of ground in sight of the old castle. Always would he grumble when he saw the flag out, and I have often since thought that this penalty on the rent payers was of a piece with the abominable cruelties which William of Orange and his Protestant army committed, retreating from Limerick."

"This custom about archdeacons hunting, must have been peculiar to Kent," asked the colonel.

"No," said the priest, shaking his head, "hunting was anciently a general thing. Archdeacons used to visit parishes with such a train of followers and number of hounds that the poor parish priests found their little stores for the year nearly if not quite consumed, at times, by the visitation of their superior. Why may I not hunt, then? Especially why not, when the pack is not mine, and when, like an archdeacon, I eat of my entertainer's store? Yes, when I am not tied down to the slavish rules of the gossellers? For," added he in a peculiar manner of mimicry, which made the colonel laugh:

"Quoniam meæ sunt omnes feræ silvarum."

May not an humble servitor at the altar hunt as well also as do the uncircumcised and Philistines?"

"True, father," replied the colonel, laughing.

"I see a great reason why a reverend father should give us his countenance on such an occasion," interposed lawyer Brief, who rode just behind. "The moving disasters of field and flood make it proper that the mediciner of the soul should be near, no less than they require the presence of the mediciner of the body; in the event of an accident from over-venturesomeness in the riders."

"Of which necessity," jocularly replied the priest, "The worthy counsellor can testify. He knows that a priest can

play the part of a squire as well as of confessor. Ah! you know not how his valour outran his discretion. Indeed, Miss Evelin must know with what difficulty I restrained the impetuous lover. I feared, lest, in his eagerness to wear the stag's horns, he might get horned himself."

"Come father," said the attorney, slightly flurried, "I have the misfortune to mount a worthless nag."

"Who doubts it?" said the priest; "wherefore my kind offices were needed on this score also. And, colonel, we poor priests, appear to be designed to act in many capacities in the distribution of parts, allotted to mortals. Boccacio's Priest of Varlungo, you know, contrived to make himself acceptable to the women, not only by quavering out his kyries and his sanctuses on Sundays, but by daily presents of cake, holy water, and candle ends, at the time he gave them severally his benediction. We are frocked, and denied the privilege of a beard, which, in seeming to unsex us, gives us a claim to the sisterly regard of the daughters of Eve."

"Which sisterly regard," said the colonel, laughing, "begins with the bits of candle ends, till the women let you burn your fingers and theirs; as did the reverend lover of Beleilore in the story mentioned."

"Ah! colonel," said Father Canon, trying to look grave, "This is a slander by a merciless satirist of our holy order. Many masses, many pater noster, and many ave marias have yet to be said to fetch him up from the depths below."

"But, father," said the colonel, "I see, from the lights at the castle, that Mrs. Smithson is still up, and here the road forks. Ride in with us. By another spirited and spirituous application, I'd give you a chance of showing, better than you could in the forest over the basket, the *otium cum dignitate*."

The jolly priest laughed very heartily, shaking his fat sides at the time; but, after awhile collecting himself, and looking quite grave, he replied:

"It might be *otium* to night, but it would be *dolor et moestitia*, grief and repentance, to-morrow. Father Hunter is rigid as a puritan about late hours. So adieu. And take my blessing, and, as it may not be out of place, my parting advice." And lowering his voice so as to be heard only by the colonel, he added; "When you go in chase of

an old hart, take a more efficient help than a brief attorney, who is in pursuit of the will of the wisp of a sweet heart." And then turning to Brief, he said: "Pleasant dreams to you, counsellor. I hope soon to hear of your dearlike endearments under the mulberry; and I promise you that mother church will noose matrimonially so closely the stag and hind of St. Mary's, that even the counsellor himself, with the scissors of Themis, cannot cut the knot."

The next moment the witty priest was out of sight; jogging on to St. Inigoes' house, distant about six miles; while the colonel and company, wishing and saying many kind things of Father Canon, pursued their way to St. Mary's. Cowper detested "a cassocked huntsman, and a fiddling priest," and an habitual humourist in the ministry, with all his social cleverness, cannot command for his office the respect due to it. Father Canon here however both followed his natural bent, and took that course which in rendering him popular, would advance his church. Romanism is tied down to no absolute rules. Its clergy can and do play the ascetic or the bon vivant according to circumstances. They are "all things to all men" that they may "win souls" to St. Peter. Baxter, the puritan, on the other hand declared late in life that his conscience then smote him more for having joined in youth in the then usual recreations of a Sunday evening, than it did for the sins which he then committed, lying, disobedience, and stealing. Moliere's Tartuffe, or Hypocrite, imposed a heavy penance on himself because he had killed a flea in anger. Such overstraining on the other hand does quite as much harm to the Gospel of Christ, as Father Canon's too great accommodation to the world. The result for the time however is that Father Canon and the like win their way; if they leave souls as dead as they found them. The Tartuffes and puritans gain upon the weak-minded, and undiscerning, while with Macaulay, all, who have judgment, must look with loathing upon the class he describes, who esteem "the sad coloured dress, the sour look, the straight hair, the nasal whine, the speech interspersed with quaint texts, and the abhorrence of comedies, cards, and hawking, the signs of true holiness."

CHAPTER IX.

THE ROBBERY.

"For thee the robber's sacrilegious hand
Plunders the shrine; for thee the murderer stains
His arm and soul with blood; at thy command
Sudden rebellion frights the peaceful plains;
Traitors for thee in horrid council sit,
And scone'd in night on kingdoms downfalls meet,
Pernicious Gold! Thou poisoner of the mind!
How dost thou cherish guilt of every kind!"

THEOBALD.

HACKETT had locked himself in a room in Snarler's house, hardly conscious in his fright of what he did. In the room was burning a candle, and on the table lay a bundle of papers, tied with a red string, and marked on the back "Valuable." Snarler was rich, and Hackett knew that he had one valuable in his possession, viz. : Hackett's note for one hundred pounds, the immediate payment of which Hackett feared would be pressed. Hence, alarmed and and perturbed as he was, he no sooner saw this bundle, than he seized it, hoping to get back his own note, which he meant to destroy. He next looked about for means of escape. The room overlooked the garden, and Hackett trusted, should the garden gate be shut, to escape alike, at the same time the clutches of Snarler and the dog. He raised the window, and getting out, descended by means of a projection of the chimney.

In the meanwhile, Snarler, followed by his negroes, (for he was the only white person in the house then, his niece being absent that evening,) knocked at the door of the room in which Hackett had locked himself. They received no answer; they pushed, and next endeavoured to force the door; but, being bolted inside, it resisted their efforts.

"We'll break open the door then," said Snarler, impatiently, "though it's a new lock that cost me all of five shillings. I'll teach this scamp, this dog of a villain, to come to my house at night, and to treat me so." But the door was not easily forced. Snarler stamped with rage.

"Open the door I say. Open the door." No answer

being returned, he ordered an axe, and several blows being given with it by a stout negro man, the door came open. Snarler was standing at the time with a gun in one hand, and a club in the other. One of his negro men stood to his right, armed with a large stick. Another negro, the one who held the axe, stood to his left with this formidable weapon prepared to cut down any one who might show himself; while a negro-wench stood with a savage looking carver's knife at her master's back.

"'Tis well you aint here, sirrah," said Snarler, talking between his teeth.

"Yes, yes, massa," said the negro wench, "Old Sall fight for true:" brandishing the large knife.

"Dis strange," said the negro with the club. "Nobody here, yet him knock massa down, and den him lock de door. Ky, me fraid, no good come of dis."

"Good!" said Snarler, greatly vexed, and gritting his teeth. "The devil's in it. He's run off with all, every thing," and like one demented, he pulled his hair, beat himself and cursed furiously.

"Money gone, massa?" asked the negro woman, who was allowed as much freedom as a white person; "money gone, massa?" and she rolled up her eyes so that little but the whites of them were perceptible. "Fore God! me eat him what rob massa so."

"Money gone?" in a tone of violence replied Snarler, clinching his fist, "yes, by the smoke of the pit, and——" His eyes flashed, and his voice became hoarse; and the poor man for awhile between rage and regret was beside himself.

"Why, massa," said the negro with the axe, "dat critter what come in house, go out dis window," pointing to the window.

Snarler caught at the suggestion, and offered to reward handsomely any one who should catch the thief, and especially who should recover the stolen package with its valuable contents. They looked out of the window; went round the house; explored the garden, and inspected every thing and every where immediately about the dwelling, where a thief would be like to hide himself. But all was in vain. Hackett had got out by the window, and escaping from the garden, gained his room at the tavern, and was there busied examining the papers in the bundle, not long after the captain had returned from his ill starred expedition.

Valuable as were the papers, the paper that Hackett wanted was not in the bundle. The package consisted of deeds and notes, which Hackett either did not know to be valuable, or which he was afraid to appropriate. What to do with them was now the question to be resolved. He knew that Snarler would be unwearied in his efforts to ascertain the thief, and it is quite certain that the poor simpleton would not have been guilty of the theft, if he had not been urged by the fear of legal pressure on his note, which Snarler had lately threatened, and which he knew, from Snarler's avariciousness, would be enforced to the utmost rigour of the law, and to the payment of the last penny.

"I'll see Lawyer Brief," was Hackett's conclusion, "and ask him to get me out of this scrape." For he wanted sense or integrity to perceive that restoration was the Christian and honourable, as well as the safest way of extricating himself from his embarrassment. How many persons are rogues, wanting either nerve or intellect to do the thing that is honest! Though it is possible, even had the right way been discerned by Hackett, whether his knowledge of Snarler's vindictiveness would not have deterred him from pursuing it. In his anxiety about the papers in his possession, Hackett forgot the hunt, in which he expected to take part. On the morrow, still forgetting the hunt, he called at the office of Brief, and there being informed that Brief would not be back before night, his engagement was brought to mind; and he felt uneasy lest his absence and the robbery of Snarler, being connected together, would fix the charge upon him. He had not time, however, to turn this matter over before, to his consternation, Snarler himself entered the office. Hackett, by most men, would not have been termed a coward; but a sense of guilt will make cowards of the bravest. His first thought was, Snarler knows I robbed him, and here he has come after me; and so strong was this idea that his legs nearly gave way under him; his heart beat so loud he was afraid it was heard by others, and with a trembling hand, he began to pour out water into a tumbler from a pitcher that stood near, and which he drank in order to be doing something by way of concealing his fears, and also to relieve a dryness of throat, which fear is apt to beget.

"Where is Lawyer Brief?" asked Snarler of the youth, who was reading in his office; and, without waiting for a

reply, he proceeded to tell of the affair of the night just past, representing it as one of unparalleled atrocity, exaggerating the value of the papers missing, denouncing the utmost vengeance against the offender, and concluding by saying, he meant to advertise him, and start in pursuit every constable in the county. Surely never had man before been so outraged, never had thief taken off such a prize, and never would vengeance so bitterly pursue and overtake the guilty. With the hyperbole of passion he added, "I know the rascal. He can't escape me. I'll make him sweat."

"You know him, Mr. Snarler?" asked the law student, "suppose you describe him then."

"Don't I know him," replied Snarler, "why, yes, I know that man there," pointing to Hackett, "and mayn't I know the thief what robbed me?" and Snarler seemed greatly moved.

"Mr. Hackett, are you sick?" asked the student. "How pale you look!"

Hackett became yet more faint at this remark, and sank down in a chair. Fortunately, Snarler was not looking at Hackett, being too much excited to observe the effect of his words, and not suspecting Hackett, was not likely to suppose his remarks could have any bearing on him.

"Lawyer Brief aint in, eh?" continued Snarler, "I heerd say at the tavern that he'd gone a hunting. A pretty business indeed! for Mr. 'torney, court time too. The colonel can 'ford it. But I must lose my property that Mr. 'torney may play the big gentleman. I cause no one to lose by me, and I want a writ at once. But I can't do nothing afore I know what to do. But so it is. 'Tis too, too bad. I've been robbed, and I mean to catch the fellow, that do I. But Mr. 'torney aint no better than the lazy lords over the water. 'Twon't do, no indeed! I'll, I'll," and the incensed and disappointed Snarler, wanting words to say what he meant to do, bolted out of the office and rode down the street. It was some time before Hackett could summon resolution to return to his lodgings. Judge his alarm on finding that Snarler had posted up at the Mulberry in the State House yard, and at the two taverns an exaggerated account of the robbery; and had warned all persons from trafficking for, or receiving the stolen papers, which he particularly described. Hackett dreaded now to see any one, and was even afraid to lock himself in his room, lest he might be there arrested. He

walked out therefore, and, carefully avoiding to meet or accost any one, unconsciously strolled in the direction of, and over the narrow footbridge, he crossed the foregoing night, and when he came to the strip of water over which he had waded in his flight, saw a young woman, Snarler's niece, at the water's edge, who had just landed there in a boat.

"You is the very person I wants to see, Mr. Hackett," said the young woman with a little embarrassment. "Here's your handkerchief, aunt Sall picked up under my window."

"It ain't my handkerchief," said Hackett, with ill feigned spirit, and in a manner so guilty as to contradict his words, "I've not been to your house, Miss Euphy, in a week."

"Your name's on it," said the maiden, colouring slightly.

"I may as well tell all at once," said Hackett mentally, and he was about thus to relieve himself of the weight which bore him down, when Miss Euphy continued:—

"There's no great sin in coming to our house, Mr. Hackett," and this was said with an air of offended dignity, "if uncle didn't mightily fuss about it."

Hackett breathed more free. The secret was not out, he was still safe.

"But," proceeded Miss Euphy, "don't leave any thing for uncle to get hold of. He frets my life almost out now."

The simple maiden suspected that Hackett was in love with her, and that having called the evening before to see her, he had dropt his handkerchief in the garden.

"I will not," promised Hackett with more calmness than he had felt for an hour or two; and with some kindness and courtesy in his manner, he added, "You were going towards town. If you'll walk the back street, I'll walk with you."

"Much obliged to you, Mr. Hackett," replied Miss Euphy. "You're too proud to walk with me before the castle, now that Mrs. Annie Jones is there. I can walk by myself," and she turned away, seemingly vexed. Hackett thought it would be well to keep on terms with the imperious miss, and it occurred to him that by exhibiting himself in the public street, and along with Snarler's niece particularly, he would lead the public off from his scent. For guilt is most apt to escape detection when it puts on the bold front of innocence.

Their walk ended at Mr. Durford's, whose wife was Hack-

ett's aunt. Here they found, which was no unusual thing, Father Hunter, from whose sermon we gave extracts. As Miss Euphy and Hackett entered, the priest and hostess were closing a long chat on the event of the foregoing night. After a few minutes, Mr. Hunter whispered to Hackett, and the two left the room.

"Do you mean to marry that young woman?" asked the priest, looking searchingly, as if he would probe to the inner sanctuary, Hackett's hidden purpose, and in a tone of voice that implied no equivocation.

Hackett hesitated a moment; ignorant how to reply, and wondering at the question. At last he faltered out,

"No. I believe not."

"Why?"

"Well, well, I—I."

"Don't love her you would say?" corrected the priest. "You are smitten with Annie Jones. Young man, it is the misfortune of fools either to leap beyond their mark, and be where they can do nothing, or to leap into a pit, and short of their mark, by leaping too high. Annie Jones you never can win, the other you might."

"Why not?" asked Hackett, who, though awed by the priest, did not relish his dictatorial manner.

"Think you," and his eyes looked through Hackett, and his manner made him tremble, "that Annie Jones, whose hand is sought by Augustus Shepard, the first man of his years in the province, would mate with you, William Hackett, who any how,—even with a name for honesty, could not be higher than that of sheriff of the county?"

"Why aint I good as Augustus Shepard?" asked Hackett, getting bolder.

"Because brains will weigh more in public opinion than ignorance and conceit. But would you know further?" Hackett thought he saw a still darker shadow pass over Father Hunter's face, and a scornful smile follow it, as he proceeded, "Because Annie rates herself too high to mate with a thief."

Hackett's countenance fell, gasping for breath, and speaking with difficulty, he asked:

"Who told you I was a thief?"

"Did you not try to force Mrs. Annie's chamber window last night? Did you not promise to be one of a hunting party, and breaking your promise, did you not force Mr.

Snarler's front door, and take from his bed-room some valuable papers? And then running away that there might be no mistake about it, did you not leave your handkerchief in the garden, a tell tale on you?"

"Who told you them tales on me?" asked the accused, faintly.

"Some scratches of verse were found, which Lawyer Brief gave to you, and these prove you to have been the genteel gallant, that attempted to slip into a lady's sleeping apartment. Your absence from the hunt, and your handkerchief in Snarler's garden, convict you of being at his house that night. Whether now, you did more than pocket his papers,—and entertain no improper wishes about them, your future conduct must show. And this is my object with you now. Your aunt and myself would save you."

"How?" asked Hackett, catching at the hope thus held out.

"Make your suit to Mr. Snarler's niece, and the note he holds against you will never be sued upon, Euphy Snarler being your wife."

"How about the papers?"

"Give them to me, and I'll be responsible that all ends well."

This assurance lifted a load from Hackett's mind. He surrendered the package, and going from one extreme to the other, felt that never was he happier than when he left the house with Miss Euphy. Their walk was now on the back street, through a forest of large trees, and, either from the exuberance of joy, which is apt to break over in an extravagance, or in order to obey Mr. Hunter's orders, which, as a Romanist, he deferred to generally, he made a declaration of very tender regard for Miss Euphy. The lady was not prepared for this avowal, and treated it at first as the mere explosion of eccentricity, and was a little indignant at his trifling with what, in her opinion, was a serious subject, and, in her heart, a sacred one. But he counterfeited so well the lover's part, and pressed his suit so earnestly, that she could not doubt him. Her regard for him was the growth of many years. However he may have stood in the estimation of others, he was her *Magnus Apollo*, and what we wish to believe we are easily persuaded to. In her honest simplicity therefore, she allowed him to hope for her affection, and, in a time undefined, her hand. Poor Euphy, like every

other dreamer in this world, calculated on a day not distant when all obstacles would be removed, when opposition would yield, and a cross uncle would be very kind.

Mr. Hunter examined the papers, and at first was nearly as much disappointed as Hackett had been. "If Hackett marries that girl," he soliloquized, "he will get Snarler's fortune, and through him the church will gain another family, and the influence money ever exerts. This is something. But the deed I want of St. Mary's church-yard I do not find. Well, finesse now must effect what fraud began. I have other papers. 'Tis as well."

The afternoon therefore of that day he called at Snarler's.

"You have lost valuable notes and papers, and have, I suppose, no clue to the thief?"

"I didn't say," replied Snarler, not liking this prying into his business by a Roman priest, and whose visit even very much surprised him; (for he professed to dislike cordially both the papacy and papists,) "I could not find the thief."

"You do not care then to recover your papers," rising to go.

"I didn't say no such thing," replied Snarler; "can't you tell me who's got them? Come now, you knows, maybe."

"I never intrude my kind offices," said the priest, "and even were I disposed, as you know the thief, 'tis unnecessary."

"You know the thief what robbed me of my notes and deeds, and won't tell me, eh!" said Snarler.

The priest looked very sternly, and fronting Snarler, said, "You must not so misrepresent me. Because I offered my services to help to the recovery of your property, it is construed as proof I know the thief. If an officer of the law, or friend, aids in recovering a thing stolen, is he to be charged with being *particeps criminis* in requital for his services? Persons who deal so largely in the current, but perilous and wicked coin of defamation, merit no kindness, and I am not disposed to show them any."

"Stop, if you please," said Snarler, beseechingly, calling him back. "I'll do any thing that—that," hesitating how far it was safe to commit himself, and while so undecided Mr. Hunter finished the sentence for him.

"Any thing I please to ask, you were about to say? Eh!"

"Yes—no—yes—no," answered Snarler, perplexed.

"Very good. I ask a surrender of your title to the ground, occupied by St. Mary's Church, and grave-yard."

"May I be—" said Snarler, and we care not to write it down; and kindling as he spoke, "What! Give up my title to forty acres in the valuablest part of St. Mary's town?—a title that in a few years longer, as you haint got possession, will be mine agin the claims of your church! Give up the best chance I could have of breaking down your pope's rookery in these here parts? Give up?"

He wished to go on, but spoke so hurriedly, becoming too vexed to think or speak clearly, when the priest, interrupting him, said solemnly:

"Your title came by fraud, and is no title at all. A wicked and illegal Act of Assembly closed St. Mary's Church. While it was closed, a person who never had foot-hold on the premises, nor the shadow of a title, gave you a deed; you and the alienor knew at the time that your act was roguish. Now, on the faith of a deed so unrighteous and piratical, you have taken possession. I hope you Protestants may have a better title to heaven. Your possession however, wrong as it is, counting on the known unwillingness of the courts here to do us justice, you think we cannot dispute successfully. A few years more, (and fraud always makes such drafts on time, expecting to see them honoured,) and, by virtue of the very Protestant Statute of Limitations, you hope to have a clear and good right to the ground, now covered by St. Mary's Church and grave-yard. A most holy statute! like that of Mortmain, worthy of Henry VIII. and your Protestant sovereign James I." Snarler appeared anxious to interrupt him, but there was a something in the priest's manner that kept him quiet. "Be it so," continued the Jesuit. "If you prefer property so obtained to the notes and property you have lost, nil disputandum. There's no disputing about preferences for one sort of property over another, more than about tastes. Some birds and animals prefer to drive away other birds and animals, and take their nests and lodges from them, and hold them in preference to their own. And men, I suppose, may be allowed the same natural preferences of property got dishonestly over that which comes righteously. But anathema maranatha be to him, who will not suffer the Lord's people to make their nest in the courts of the Lord's house, and rear their young there; but who, laying unholy hands on the ark of God,

shuts out the priest of the altar, and seats himself in his filthiness, with his forged and wicked papers, in the sanctuary !” And he turned angrily away.

“ ’Twon’t do,” muttered Snarler. “ I can’t get my papers except at his own price.”

So hurrying after him, he offered to sign any paper Father Hunter might draw up.

The latter slowly returned, and with Snarler entered the house. Pen, ink, and paper were produced ; and an instrument in due form was written out, relinquishing all title, claim, and interest in the property mentioned, and handed to Snarler to sign. Biting his lips, and too greatly vexed to conceal it, Snarler was about to affix his name to the paper, when the priest checked him.

“ One moment. You have a niece. She is in the house. A witness is necessary. I’ll call her.”

And, before Snarler could reply, in an authoritative and calm tone, he called Miss Euphy, who came, and while Snarler, with increased reluctance and vexation, signed the instrument, signed her name as witness, and retired.

“ Now I want my notes and deeds,” said Snarler impatiently.

“ In good time,” rising and closing the door, and then the priest folded up the instrument just executed, and put it in his pocket. He had also bolted the door inside.

“ Promise me now,” said he, “ that you will make no efforts or inquiries to ascertain, much more that you will make none to prosecute the person you may suppose stole your papers.”

If wrath ever was before pent up in the bosom of the choleric Snarler, and burnt to find vent, it did then. He clenched his fist, and, pressing his teeth together, and looking fiercely, while his eyes flashed, he said :

“ No, by the smoke of the pit, I won’t.”

“ Why seek out the thief ?” said Mr. Hunter calmly, seeming not to have noticed Snarler’s agitation. “ You have your property. What more ?”

“ I want to teach him, and them that’s like him, to keep hands off what’s mine,” said Snarler. “ I want to let him know who I am.”

“ If that be all,” in the same calm tone, “ you take much trouble to do what might be done with less ; and, perhaps,

what being done already, there needs no repeating a lesson which is already known."

"How?" asked Snarler, looking up, amazed and puzzled.

"Why, your character, I presume, is well known, and if it be not known by this time,"—and he laughed scornfully,—“the lesson you would give by an act of vengeance will not help it. But, if you would make this character respectable, make it a character,—and not be merely Mr. Snarler, now's your time. Example, you know, is better than precept. You have laid violent hands on property not yours, but belonging to the Catholic Church. Now, in surrendering that unjust hold, you teach the lesson your character needs to raise it out of the quagmire of contempt, and you teach it, besides, in a way to be remembered and respected."

"Curse him!" muttered Snarler. "There'll ne'er be no end of this here charge about that popish church, which this dog of a Jesuit keeps throwing at me. I wants vengeance; I means to have it."

"That is the secret then," said Mr. Hunter, catching the last sentence. "Poor fool! What would it profit you if your worst enemy were in your power, and you could wreak your revenge upon him. But perhaps 'tis well. You cannot do a righteous act except by constraint. The spider has venom, and so have certain reptiles; and it is not only their natures, but necessary to them occasionally to relieve themselves by discharging it. And you must get rid of the gall and spleen, which are no doubt oppressive to you. Be it so. Be it so. Besides, it might be supposed that you relinquished your claim to the property of the church from motives of integrity; and such a supposition would belie your character. It is well that roguery should be undisguised. Prosecute, then, and if you can find him, hunt down the poor wretch who only did what you are doing, take the property of another. When rogues prosecute rogues, we may look for justice. And, yea more, every body will say, 'This is so like Mr. Snarler. He thought it no harm to rob the Catholic Church, but felt a holy horror at being robbed himself.' And, if people before doubted, none will hereafter doubt that you have the heart of a beast under the sorry image of a man. We do not expect a wolf to be merciful, nor a hyena to be good tempered."

Snarler sprang to his feet, and quivering with passion, rushed to the priest with a large cane to strike him. The colossal frame of Mr. Hunter swelled out beyond his usually large dimensions, at this proffered insult. He wrenched the staff from Snarler, broke it as if it were a pipe-stem, and throwing him on his face, held over Snarler a part of the broken cane, as if about to administer to him bodily chastisement; and the whole passed in as little time as it has taken to tell it. After holding Snarler down a moment, he raised him slowly, and very quietly asked if he had any further reason to allege why he ought not to abandon all thought of finding out and punishing the thief. Snarler's feelings were indescribable. Fear, anger, shame, and mortification, each in turn, and to a certain extent, disturbed him. He walked up and down the room, hoping to collect his scattered thoughts; and was undetermined how to respond to the question just put.

"I should be pleased," continued the priest, "to have a longer conference with you. But night approaches, and I must have your promise before I go, that I may leave the papers with you."

The calmness with which this was said, and the resolution and great physical strength of Mr. Hunter, convinced Snarler that he must do as he was bid, or lose his papers. Sweet seemed to him the pleasure of revenge—too sweet to be wholly abandoned—and he determined to make the promise exacted, but break it at the first opportunity. After a pause, therefore, he said:

"Give me the papers, and I promise."

Father Hunter had looked into the human heart too often and long to be easily deceived. He knew what was passing in Snarler's mind, nearly as well as he could have told him. He produced the notes and deeds that were stolen, and, making Snarler acknowledge over his signature that every paper missing was found again, he delivered them into his hands, and, as he was at the door, about to take leave, he said to Snarler in a tone of great solemnity:

"Beware! of either saying, or even breathing, much more of attempting aught against the supposed thief. It will be followed, if you do, by consequences you will regret. The cricket in the crevices of your wall sees and hears you when you know not, and I will have my eye upon you when

you least suspect it. Beware ! No precautions can protect you. You have no safety short of a faithful performance of your promise."

He turned away, and as his heavy person moved to the water's edge, where a boat was in waiting to take him to St. Inigoes', Snarler looked after him, and heard the warning of the priest ring in his ears for some time. He stood in the door as one spell-bound, and felt afraid lest even his thoughts might tell upon him. At length he raised his eyes, to be assured the priest was really gone ; that he might breathe free. He then walked back to the sitting-room, and was muttering to himself, "How strange Father Hunter should have discovered the papers!—Who could have stolen them?—Why did the priest wish to protect the thief?" when negro woman Sall entered, and asked if massa Priest Hunter had gone? "Mighty glad, he come see massa. Him know ebery ding. Him git massa property for he."

"How you know that?" said Snarler, peevishly.

"Who don't know dat, massa?" replied the wench.

"So 'tis," he muttered, "this wench, my negroes, all keeps no secrets from this here priest. They tells him every thing. He's God to them, and finds out things I can't even dream. Let me do never a thing and they blabs it to him. But I've lost forty acres in town, worth many pounds, and this is the blessing of popery. A nice religion and cheating 'tis;" and, Snarler, smiting his forehead, sat down in a chair; chewing the bitter cud of mourning over property that was as dear to him as his heart's blood. Such regrets give the miser here a foretaste of the hell he is to know hereafter.

Snarler's advertisment was, as we stated, publicly posted, and, of course, publicly commented on. Various conjectures and surmises were thrown out as to who could or was likely to have committed the theft. Some wished to have it believed that they were wondrous wise, in certain inklings that they could tell, which could not fail to reveal the thief. Others, that were not exactly free from the stain of Adam's sin, and who possibly might be tempted under very extraordinary circumstances to break the eighth commandment, expressed a holy horror of the dreadful crime; and said that no means ought to be spared which might lead to the ascertainment and summary chastisement of the robber. A third class laughed and said; "Well, old Snarler is robbing every day by dexterous shifts to make those who borrow from him,

pay more than the six per cent., allowed by the assembly. 'Tis all right."

With different feelings the advertisement was read by Mr. Holt. No sooner had he seen it, than he discovered that a certain will, whose existence he had long, suspected, establishing the right of his nephew, Charles Delafield, to a most valuable body of land in the province, was among the papers stolen. It was the will of Snarler's relative, deceased; which by withholding from the public, Snarler fraudulently held this land as his own. Accordingly Mr. Holt appended below a notice, claiming this will for his nephew, and offering a reward to the finder.

Good reader, the world is not overstocked with clever folks. Allow me to say a word about Mr. Holt. He was said to have been a grandson of Sir John Holt of Oxfordshire, and cousin to Sir John Holt, the great Chief Justice, and Privy Councillor of James II.*

We know not at which of the colleges at Oxford Mr. James Holt graduated, nor at which of the five Inns of Court he studied law. But his great diffidence, sensitiveness, and almost feminine delicacy, it was said, prevented his arguing cases in court; for, while a student at the Inns of Court, he was never known to take part in the usual exercises and readings in the public hall, obligatory as they were. His father was a merchant, and left him property enough to support him without looking to the bar for it. Soon after his arrival in Maryland, his wife and only child died; and a tombstone, still in good preservation in Poplar Hill churchyard, which stood in the aisle of the first church there, and is dated 1701, it is believed, marks the last resting place of the latter, his son Joseph. Severely did these afflictions wring his heart. He thought he was crushed beyond the power of recovery when his dignified and engaging lady, though long a sufferer, was taken from him, and his heart then clung to the child Joseph, and hung and doated on him with a fondness that seemed to master every other feeling. It was an engaging sight to see the little prattler seated on his father's knees, toying with his father's face, while the parent bent over him and kissed, and kissed again his sunny

* Sir John Holt, in 1689, was elevated to the post of Lord Chief Justice of the King's bench, and continued in this high office till his death, in 1709; living at the period of our narrative, and being in his 66th year.

face and curly head. Never seemed a flower in a prison as lovely to the inmate as Joseph to his father. But that sunny face was soon clouded with death, and those golden locks were cut off, and treasured as dear but harrowing memorials of the angel boy that a Heavenly Father had taken to Himself. And from the grave of his child Mr. Holt turned to the resting place of her who had been for many, many years the wife of his bosom. The sob of manly grief, and the ill-repressed groan, spoke more than words. He turned his face homeward, and it seemed he was turning his back on those who loved him better than all. He hurried on, unconscious of the notice of the attendants upon the funeral. He entered his gate, and in the pathway to his front door a little prattler was wont to greet him with tones more than musical, and at the steps was wont to stand, with hand extended and face so bland and welcoming, she who loved him next to heaven. But that little prattler was gone, and that angel wife no longer stood in his door way. He tried to eat his solitary meal, and then sat, with bosom bursting with emotion, in his desolate chamber. The past, where was it? There, to his right, she had sat times uncounted. Her sweet kindnesses, her sleepless attention to his wants, her love that had been one thing ever, all were his now only as of the past. Had he prized them as he ought? And that bright sunlit face, so confiding, all soul and all ingenuousness, which looked up to him from the innocent on his lap, he should see no more this side the judgment day. Oh death! we can only look up after your blow, when we can say, we shall live again.

As we mentioned, Julia, after her mother's death, was transferred to her uncle's care, and the heart-stricken mourner found much to cheer him in her winning ways. Merciful dispensation of a merciful Father, that causes spring flowers to grow after the heart has become so dead in appearance as to be covered with withered leaves and blasted boughs!

CHAPTER X.

THE MEETING—A DISCOVERY.

"If man's convenience, health,
Or safety interfere, his rights and claims
Are paramount, and must extinguish theirs;
Else they are all, the meanest things that are,
As free to live, and to enjoy that life,
As God was free to form them at the first;
Who, in His sovereign wisdom, made them all."

COWPER.

THE week following, Emma and Julia were making their preparations to ride to Pleasant Lodge, where Julia lived with her uncle, Mr. Holt, when Adaratha, the Indian girl, with a rueful face and dejected manner, approached Emma and said:

"Adaratha no go home now. Mother gone to Great Spirit, and me no stay here."

Emma was slightly moved and said, "A thousand pardons, Adaratha." And smiling at the needless fear of Adaratha of being left alone at the Glebe, Emma, by way of experiment, added:

"Can't you stay here till we come back? Robin will be here. Here are the keys, and cook won't neglect you. We'll return by Sunday."

And this was said so quietly and naturally that Julia herself was hardly less deceived than Adaratha, for Julia was about to protest against this arrangement, as Adaratha rose, kissed Emma's hand, and in a tone of distress, said:

"Bye, bye, we go—go"—pointing—"where Adaratha and Croshaw gone. Great Spirit have house big enough for all."

"No, no, Adaratha," replied Emma, "all in fun. I wanted also to see if you wished to ride with us. See, Robin has a horse for you likewise."

Adaratha was satisfied, and cheerfully rode off with them.

The morning after their arrival at Pleasant Lodge, Emma, on descending the stairs, found that her father, Mr. Holt, and Julia were walking in the garden.

"Here is the first crocus of the season," said Mr. Holt, presenting the flower to Emma. "Like the child of misfortune it comes in cold weather, and unbidden, asks of us a smile."

"Quite poetical, uncle," said Julia. "But," looking, as she spoke, archly at her uncle, "a sweet crocus seems too pretty a flower to be compared to a beggar. Never is his face so smiling, nor he so well dressed. What think you, Emma?"

"I would say," replied Emma,

"As I did," interrupted Mr. Holt, smiling.

"That the crocus," continued Emma, "by blooming in a chilling season, teaches us to look happy and unchilled in the midst of trouble."

Mr. Holt smiled, and said, after a moment's pause, "I feel ever sad at the return of the crocus. Its appearance calls up painful remembrances. True, it comes the harbinger of Nature's spring; but it admonishes all like me, that our spring in this world is not to return. Flowers," he continued, addressing Parson Gordon, "are most fitting symbols of purity and innocence. We decorate a bride with flowers, and strew them in her path, and thus intimate the personal and moral beauty which we associate with a bride; and also express a kind wish that in her path through life may ever spring flowers of hope and happiness. And, when death has marred God's fairest master-piece, we scatter flowers on the coffin and grave, to denote that the human plant, 'cometh up as a flower and is cut down.' I love symbols, sir. I love especially whatever around me addresses itself to an inner nature that is not of the earth earthy; that seems prophetic of on-coming events, and that shadows out a deeper meaning than the dull sensuous eye and ear alone take in."

Parson Gordon assented to this remark, and commented on the fact, that the sacred utensils in the tabernacle were fashioned after flowers; that the ephod of the Jewish priest was embroidered with flowers; and above all that the loveliness of flowers never has been marred, nor their fragrance made fetid by their perversion to idolatrous purposes.

Early that morning after breakfast, Julia, Emma and Adaratha sallied forth to enjoy the morning air in a ramble through the meadow, which lay between the house and the river. They reached the banks of the Potomac, which

were covered with a growth of forest trees, and the ladies and Adaratha were standing near the banks, listening to the splash of the waves on the beach, which was about fifty yards off. Old Homer knew well the music of the billow dashing on the sand, which he expresses in his memorable line "*παρὰ δὲνα πολυφλοίσβοιο θαλάσσης;*" and Newton was content to stand upon it, and pick up pebbles as a child. The friends were commenting on the pleasant lullaby of the waters, and Julia was giving utterance to a wish that, like a fish-hawk, she could erect her chamber so near as always to hear its splash and roar; when Adaratha's quick Indian ear caught the voice of a man singing. Their conversation was suspended, and, listening attentively, they distinguished, as Julia said, that he was singing a sonnet.

"Few better judges than you, Julia," said Emma, in a low tone, archly, "to know a sonnet to a lady from a march or other song. Perhaps he is one of your girlish flames from old England, who has followed you to these wilds."

"Hush!" said Julia, laying her hand on Emma's mouth. "I want to hear him." Emma, who was a little in advance, and taller than any one in company, raised herself a little and said:

"Here is our serenader just under the bank to our left. Minstrel-like, he's lying at his ease, with gun and game near."

"I think I know the song," said Julia. "Yes, they are lines by the court poet, Waller, which, I have heard, he wrote to Lord Leicester's daughter, and that she made him sing in vain."

The lines ran thus:

"Oh, how I love my careless limbs to lay
Under the plantain's shade; and all the day,
With amorous airs my fancy entertain,
Invoke the muses, and improve my vein.
No passion there in my free breast shall move,
None but the sweetest, best of passions, love!
These, while I sing, if gentle love be by,
That tunes my lute, and wings the strings so high,
With the sweet sound of Saccharissa's name.
I'll make the listening savages grow tame."

The voice was melodious, the air well sung, and there was a striking boldness and free-heartiness in the manner.

Having sung the sonnet, the minstrel yawned, heigho! "Well," said he, "I fear I may not see much here but savages. Two good specimens of womankind I have seen;

where's the third? Waller hoped to tame the savages of Bermuda. I have no such ambition here; I may as well hang up my lute, and expect old Eolus to fetch music out of it."

"We had best return," said Emma, and the three ladies were returning in a quick gait to Pleasant Lodge, Mr. Holt's residence, when the stranger sprang to his feet, gun in hand, and quickly ascended the bank. He thought it was a deer he had heard, but, on gaining the bank, and finding himself within a few feet of the party, he seemed embarrassed. The stranger, who was Montrose, in a moment recovered himself, took off his cap, and made a courteous bow; displaying in the act a face beaming with health and intelligence, a light and graceful figure, and a fine head of hair; part of which fell down below the shoulders, and on this occasion was tied by a fillet. The party stopt.

"Fair ladies," said Montrose, "no harm or offence, I assure you. I was about to do a very savage act." He paused a second, and then added: "I took you for game; but," he was about to add, "such game is more likely to catch than be caught;" but he only thought it. "Let me not interrupt you," he continued, moving slowly to his horse near by, which they had not seen before.

"Our walk," replied Emma, thinking it respectful to answer a courteous speech made by one who seemed to be a gentleman, "ends here. The creek interferes with our walking further in this direction."

Montrose was a little dubious whether to join them, or let them retire without him. Like ninety-nine men out of a hundred, who love the ladies more than they are afraid of them, and believe our sex all the better for their company, he concluded to accompany them; and leading his horse by the bridle, with a smile, and something about pleasure, &c., he placed himself between Emma and Julia. Pleasant Lodge was a mile off. The road curved; for Mr. Holt had not fallen into the depraved taste that then prevailed with many, of making straight roads,—trimming trees according to mathematical lines, and the like, in imitation of the Chinese. His house was on a commanding height, and afforded a fine view of the meadow, the Potomac river, the bay of St. Leonard's to the right, and a native

of the old dominion would add, of the Virginia shore. Montrose broke silence.

"I hope, ladies, you did not hear my silly remark?"

"About what?" asked Emma, with as much naiveté as if she did not know what.

"About savages," smiling as he spoke. "The mere freak of an idle moment. An idle brain, you know, is apt to betray us into indiscretions and follies."

"We had no right, nor did we mean to intrude," replied Emma. "We were not expected to hear, certainly not to take note of your words." Whether Montrose was flattered by this last remark we know not. "But,"—she hesitated: his frank countenance and manner encouraged her to say on,—"you must impute our listening to our native wildness. A gentleman fresh from England we do not see every day."

"Yes," added Julia, colouring, "and savages may be pardoned a little curiosity."

Montrose was not to be beaten.

"Savages, indeed! Allow me, fair ladies, to say, in the words of Massinger, 'These are the flowers of the country's garland.'"

Emma and Julia coloured slightly; and Emma after a moment said,—

"A rude country like this has a garland whose flowers are trifling, compared to those which grace the courts and halls of the old world. We are content, and even thankful, to resemble the wild rose, or the dogwood blossom. The bee may notice us, and the winds blow on us. He who gave us an humble lot, will not forget us in our obscurity."

Montrose bowed again, and in a manner rather affected, said: "As one Joseph Addison says of the great qualities of the great Duke of Marlborough, I must say of yours, fair ladies,

"Raised of themselves their genuine charms they boast,
And those who paint them truest praise them most."

"We believe as much of that as you do, sir," replied Emma, with dignity,— "No more, if you please."

Montrose understood the hint, and anxious to find a pleasing subject, began to descant on hunting, its joys, and advantages. The friends let him run on, and Emma at

length asked, thinking it became her to say something, if he was fond of hunting. He assented, and asked if it was wrong?

"I should say it was wrong," replied Emma, guardedly, "to take pleasure in whatever gives pain, much more death, even to a poor bird or beast."

"What?" asked Montrose. "No, surely. Why there are no game laws here. What harm can there be, then?"—and he appealed by his looks to Julia, as if he wished to elicit her opinion.

"I think shooting is wrong, sir," said Julia. "I can see no pleasure in it. It is very cruel, and very unnecessary," betraying quite as much aversion by her manner as words.

Montrose was not so easily put out of conceit with an amusement which he ranked among the first of manly accomplishments, but with a bow and smile said,

"You ladies think hunting is neither a refined nor a manly sport?"

Julia assented.

"May I know the name of my fair antagonist?" asked Montrose with some emotion, and then rallying, added, "for, when challenged to the most difficult of all tournaments, a contest of wits, in which we have to parry the sword of a lady competitor, that will cut where a heavy battle axe can make no impression, it is comfort to know, when vanquished,

'Deinde magni dextra cadis,'

by whose fair hand we fall."

"Julia Holt Delafield," replied Julia, colouring.

"I might have known it," muttered Montrose, as if talking to himself.

Emma and Julia exchanged glances.

"What do you mean?" was on Julia's lips, as she rather advanced towards him with brow flushed.

"An unexpected pleasure this," said he, announcing his name, and handing, as he spoke, a package of letters. "Here are letters for Mr. Holt as well as yourself." The current of conversation was at once changed, and Julia made many inquiries after her brother, which Montrose with some embarrassment answered.

"I have been told," he continued, "that your brother Charles and myself are very much alike."

"So much so," replied Julia looking at him narrowly, "that I would take you for him; though brother was not as stout as you are when I saw him last."

"Well," said he in a tone of exultation, "I know your brother's opinion to be as mine about hunting."

"Oh, Charles always was a wild half-tamed colt," replied Julia. "I'll venture that he often thinks more about cruel sports than his books."

"Stop Julia," interrupted Emma, "here's a letter dropt out of your package."

Julia took the letter, and, recognizing Johnson's hand, coloured a little.

"I would say that this gentleman, who is coming towards us with the ladies," said Mr. Holt to Parson Gordon, "may be nephew Charles. He looks like him."

"No," replied the rector, and mentioned having met with Montrose.

"This won't do," said Montrose to himself, "I shall be found out. I must make my answers short as I can, and lead off the conversation on hunting, or any thing but myself." Consequently, after an introduction to Mr. Holt and the company, by Parson Gordon, who kindly greeted Montrose, and which introduction seemed to cost the latter an effort to go through with, he adverted pleasantly to the discussion in the meadow on the merits of hunting.

"I was vanquished, and was about to beat a retreat when the discovery of the sister of my friend, Charles Delafield, enabled me to change the subject. But now that I may enlist one of you gentlemen on my side, I would ask Parson Gordon if I am after all a heretic in advocating hunting as not an ungodly amusement? For Nimrod, if I remember, was a mighty hunter before the Lord; and it does not appear that he is condemned for being so."

Parson Gordon smiled, appeared to see nothing in the question, more than was seen on the surface, and, with due seriousness, explained that Nimrod was not spoken of as a mighty hunter before the Lord, in approbation of his life or habits as a hunter; "for the words," said the rector, "simply mean he was a hunter in the superlative degree; and, as his name imports, a rebel, I should infer, he was a bold hunter, and bad man."

"Bacchus and Nimrod," joined in Mr. Holt, "you are aware, Mr. Montrose, were one and the same person, not that I have read that Nimrod was intemperate; and it is unjust even to Bacchus to say he was so. For on the ancient gems he figures as a young and graceful god; Psilas, or wings, being his name, to express his joyousness. Silenus was a drunkard, not Bacchus."

"But hunting," said Emma, "is apt to lead to drink, and perhaps this is why Bacchus, being a hunter, was suspected of indulging in liquor."

"Well ladies," replied Montrose, "I cry quarter, you heard me try to sing a sonnet of Waller's. Now this poet, having complimented Cromwell, on the restoration of Charles II. congratulated this monarch also. How is this, asked the king, your piece to me is inferior to that addressed to Cromwell. Waller replied, poets always succeed better in fiction than in truth. And ladies I failed because I plead for the truth."

Having retired for the night, Montrose said to himself. "Here am I in my uncle's house, with my sister, and yet am known to neither. How foolish in me to bet Johnson I could conceal my name Delafield, and take that of Montrose; though, by my uncle's will, who was displeased with my father for leaving his family, I must take it hereafter to entitle me to the Coverdale estate. Now, being so bound, I must keep dark. But this is no child's play; my tongue burns to speak out. Julia suspects me, though she has not seen me for a long time. Uncle looks hard at me as if he would look through my disguise. But the time for which I am bound will soon fly by,—and then I'll turn the joke on Johnson. But ah!" he added, struck by a new idea, "there's a difficulty; from an advertisement I read yesterday, I see that the will proving my right to a whole continent of land, as we say extravagantly, is in being, and Uncle Holt and I should put our heads together, and do at once what's necessary in the matter. I see I am a fool then, and Johnson will have the laugh on his side. This won't do, no it won't."

He pondered the subject for some time, and appeared to be much perplexed. "I wish Johnson were here," he added, "his head is full of expedients. It is but right, as he got me into a scrape, he should get me out. But my head to-night is too full of something else for bright discoveries."

And Montrose, finding no avenue of escape, but that of divulging his name, which he did not mean to do,—realised what thousands have done before and since, that man's wit, with all its cleverness, cannot get out to daylight in the labyrinth of deception.

He mused some time, and then shaking himself, continued :

"Here is an acquaintance I have formed, Miss Emma, and an angel she seems to be. What a day have I passed? It will be to me the day of days. That lovely woman, my beloved sister, my dear good uncle, and that noble specimen of a man, Parson Gordon, what a group to be thrown in. And to-night, when I stood with them in the front yard, the moon shone brightly, the broad Potomac rolled majestically in the distance, and the stars looked sweetly down. 'Twas too charming almost to be reality. At one time, while gazing on Julia, I thought she looked unearthly, and Emma stood where fell the broad blaze of the candle on her brow. She turned, and what a look! My poor heart drank it in as the thirsty stag drinks the cool waters on a midsummer's day. But this will not do. I must go to bed."

He tried to sleep, but sleep is a capricious goddess, and Montrose very soon and for some time lay a castle building. He was to wed Emma, and take her with him to England. They would make Coverdale a paradise, and to bring it about, he revolved how and when he might again see her. He must keep his engagement to be at the castle on the morrow. At length he thought, there will be service in Poplar Hill next Sunday. Emma would be there, "and so will I." Calmed by this hope, an emollient to his mind, and ice to his fevered brow, he fell asleep. The next morning he rode off to St. Mary's.

"This is a fine youth," said Mr. Holt, "very like Charles. He has the earnest manner which his father had before him, and his head is not unlike his also, though less so than yours, Julia. Are you willing to own him for your brother?"

"Really, uncle, I know not what to say. If not Charlie, he might pass for him. I could hardly keep from throwing myself into his arms and calling him dear Charlie."

"Let him be your brother," said Emma, smiling. "We shall see more of him. And let me tell you, I thought he was a particular acquaintance of yours in disguise."

Julia coloured, but made no reply. Sunday came, and

the usual congregation gathered in Poplar Hill church yard. The church was a plain wooden edifice, about the size of the present plain and indifferent one. It was long and narrow, however, and had a steep roof, which gave it more the appearance of a church. For, at that day, the people had fresh in their recollections the noble edifices which the wisdom and piety of an age less worldly than ours, had erected for the worship of God. Then, barns and tobacco houses were not the models after which, we will not say churches *are* fashioned, but they seem in some places now to be fashioned. King David could say, "Neither will I offer unto the Lord my God of that which cost me nothing." The cant of the present day, however, is that God asks the worship of the heart, and hence meanness can keep its money and put up a sort of Bethlehem stable for the sanctuary. But, as Dr. South justly observes, "God will not endure to be served or prayed to by them in such places, nor accept of their barn worship nor their hog-sty worship, no, nor yet of their parlour or chamber worship, where he has given them both wealth and power to build him churches. For he that commands us to 'worship him in the spirit,' commands us also 'to honour him with our substance.'" The very fact of costliness is the thing most wanted. The spirit which leads us to erect an edifice to the Most High, should be one of sacrifice. No money should be spared, no labour withheld, no decoration wanted, and every thing should be there which is necessary to render it outwardly and inwardly meet for the offering of praise and prayer, meet as the sacrifice of our first, our best, our costliest to Him who made and hath redeemed us, and meet for the habitation of His holiness.

About the church was a promiscuous group in which the castes of society were more distinctly marked than they are in our day of levelling down. There stood Colonel Smithson, affable and accessible to all, but still repelling familiarity by a dignified self-respect, which protects better than a body guard. Here stood the worthy rector, whose bland welcome warmed where it fell, and to approach whom was felt by the parishioners generally to be a privilege. At that period, even among the puritans, the minister was regarded as the "ambassador of Christ." The lower classes knew their places from those above them. The few rich, and they were rich compared to the small fortunes which fill their places now, stood rather to themselves, as rank then, like rank in

England now, being in an imaginary circle, into it no one in the lower ranks could pass without certain outward forms which for its own protection society imposed. A bell tingled, and in a few minutes the crowd were all reverently in their places, and among that worshipping family Montrose saw his sister, uncle, and Emma. The responses went up loud and in good time. An air of devotion pervaded the congregation who sat or rose, as the service required.

The grey head and youthful locks were alike bowed, as Parson Gordon said, "Let us pray." Their metrical psalmody, then just introduced, was rough indeed, and greatly inferior to the noble chaunts it superseded; still, when the clerk gave out the psalm, with harmonious concert ascended the voices of this little assembly here gathered beneath the shadows of a primitive poplar forest. No stray sheep wandered or held back outside during the prayers. For, bad as were some of the laity, and sceptical as had been others, their badness and scepticism made no demonstration in the house of God. Nor, at that day, had either so far extended as to cause any during the service to stay out of the church, and, with their feet resting upon a grave, to discuss the merits of horses, the price of grain, the proper time of seeding, the prospect of the crops, or the scandal of a neighbourhood. How lovely is devotion in the house of God!

— "How lovely to see
Matrons and sires, punctual to the call
Of their loved Church, on Fast, or Festival,
Through the long year the House of prayer seek,
By Christmas snows, by visitation bleak
Of Easter winds unscared from Hut or Hall,
They come to lowly bench, or sculptured stall;
But with one fervour of devotion meek.
I see the places where they once were known,
And ask, surrounded even by kneeling crowds,
Is ancient Piety forever flown?
Alas! even then they seemed like fleecy clouds
That, struggling through the western sky, have worn
Their pensive light from a departed sun."*

As Montrose came out of the church, he felt some one touch him. He turned, and the stranger, who had enlightened him on the services of the mass, on St. Agnes' day, said:

"This preacher is not as unfair as Dr. Barrow, leaving nothing to be said by any other. His manner is quite as

* Wordsworth, slightly altered.

earnest as Bishop Burnet's, though he preaches from a manuscript, and does not extemporize; Atterbury with his memoriter is more artificial. He is after Nathan's sort. We wish to hear him further; but like not ourselves the better for it." Montrose was about to reply, but the speaker hurried away, mounted his horse, and, waving his hand, said: "We meet again."

Montrose accompanied Parson Gordon and Emma to the Glebe, and during this visit his mind drank in the father's solemn and engaging wisdom; while his heart quaffed as nectar, it could quaff always, and not tire, love, hope, and happiness from the presence of Emma. But such is youth! The nectar of the daughter's presence was more likely to intoxicate, than the father's wisdom was to keep sober.

CHAPTER XI.

PLEASANT LODGE—MRS. ANNIE JONES, AND OTHER CHARACTERS—
DANCING.

“There was a sound of revelry by night,
And Belgium’s capital had gathered then
Her beauty and her chivalry, and bright
The lamps shone o’er fair women, and brave men :
A thousand hearts beat happily ; and when
Music arose with its voluptuous swell
Soft eyes look’d love to eyes which spake again
And all went merry as a marriage bell.”

BYRON.

A FEW days afterwards came Julia’s birth-day, and Mr Holt, in compliment to his niece, invited a goodly company from the city of St. Mary’s, and the country immediately adjacent, to Pleasant Lodge. According to the early habits of that day, the guests began to assemble before dusk, and the family of Colonel Smithson alone rode in a coach on that occasion ; coaches and carriages being then rather uncommon, even in England. And it was a gay and pretty spectacle, that of thirty riders, ladies and gentlemen, advancing along the meadow, or winding round the circular road up the hill, on lively nags. The company were gaily dressed, and laughing merrily or talking socially and cheerfully as they came on ; while the heavy coach of Colonel Smithson brought up the rear ; lumbering along with the armorial bearings of the owner painted on the panel, and moving at the same time in a gait nearly as slow, and, of course, quite as royal as that of the great mogul, when he appears in his coach drawn by oxen. While the company were thus riding along the meadow, they had a fine view of the plain and strongly built mansion of Pleasant Lodge. The house was nearly square. It was two stories, beside an attic, high, and was surmounted by a steep roof. The external workmanship was very massive ; the house being compactly built of the best materials, and by workmen who had served their apprenticeship in England. It was, therefore neither a Roman villa, nor a light maison de bouteilles, with which the campagne of

France abounds ; but a substantial English house ; such a house as showed that the proprietor had driven his stake down here for life, and did not mean, like some with us who build rather for show than use and durability, to pull up his stake, and migrate still further to the west. Westward ho ! then meant to plant one's lodge within the sound of the roar of the Atlantic's waves, and not, as now, where sleep the billows on the Pacific shore. There was no flourish of Doric, Ionic or Corinthian columns in an ostentatious and superfluous portico. Mr. Holt had not made the discovery, which some have since made, that a gentleman's private mansion should resemble the Parthenon. We will pity his ignorance, but must not blame him, as the eighteenth century was more than a century behind the nineteenth. Without a portico or piazza, it was, as stated, a strong and comfortable house ; and this remark means a great deal. A low, badly lighted and circumscribed dwelling will do for a pig to fatten in, for a penitentiary convict to repent of his misdeeds in, or for a monk to make his cell of. It is true the Horites and Anakims lived in caves, but the poets tell us that Prometheus was a great benefactor to humanity, in bringing men out of holes and caverns, and teaching them to live in edifices of brick and mortar. For what is so likely to cramp the play of intellect, and shorten the swing of imagination, as a low pitched house, whose chambers are cells, and dark enough to be prisons ? We must be comfortable in our lodge to be inclined to stretch out, or ambulate either our physical, moral or intellectual man ; unless we are ambitious to be poets, and must, perforce, take a garret ; where the closeness of our apartment heats the brain to poetic extravagances. Old Priam was no fool, when he enlarged his palace to fifty chambers ; and Nero never said so good a thing, as when, having built him a house, which covered more ground than did the farm of Cincinnatus, he exclaimed :—" At last I have a house fit for a man to live in."

The large doors to the houses in Barbary and the Levant, their wide and spacious chambers, marble pavements, open and airy courts, and their cool fountains, all so necessary in that country to abate the ardours of a tropical climate, and so favourable to thought and comfortable musings, indicate likewise that, if they are barbarians in their ignorance of Christianity, and backwardness in the utilitarian arts, they surpass us in what so greatly contributes to the comfort of

life, pleasant and commodious private edifices. Servants in livery met the company at the steps. Mr. Holt felt not half the consequence that these sable ushers did. Black ebony shone not brighter than their polished skins. Their woolly and curly hair was most carefully combed, and their faces were radiant with glee, or solemnized with an affectation of dignity that would have become a king at his coronation. Pity it was that Cuffy did not know what a wretched state slavery was! In the hall the guests were received and welcomed by Mr. Holt, and in the hurried question and answer, and in the warm pressure given and returned, civility had a part, and heart a share likewise.

Now that the company has been admitted, let us walk in and report what we see. The interior was plain. Mr. Holt was a plain Englishman in his taste, and it has been well said, "John Bull has as furious an antipathy to bright hues as his brute protonyme for scarlet." The upper part of the drawing room was adorned with stucco-work. The ceilings were wainscotted, of oak, and not painted, a neat but grave coloured wood, and perhaps with propriety here, as gilded ceilings, with heraldic blazons and painted windows, belong to Gothic architecture, and would have been unsuited to the house. Hence, though the company looked cheerful, and bright candles were

"Shining o'er fair women and brave men,"

still on a rainy day to be shut up in a room which is in a grave colour is as depressing to the spirits as the murky atmosphere out of doors. Such a room, in wanting the numerous lights and lively draperies of a drawing room to animate and enliven the visitor, is wanting in "the flowers and sunshine of artificial life." We love not the Puritans for banishing the harmonies of beauteous colours as well as of sweet sound from merry England, and almost envy the days of Queen Bess, when the chambers were hung with arras, and both the ornaments and architectural decorations of them were coloured and gilded. And these same Puritans, in affecting to be wiser than their forefathers, affected to be wiser than all others. It is mentioned that Solomon, the wisest of men, had in his palace curtains which were comely and beautiful, while it is stated that the tents of Kedar, Ishmaelites, were black, and as the Psalmist said, "Woe is me that I am constrained to dwell with Mesech, and to have

my habitation among the tents of Kedar." Who would not echo the sentiment if doomed to live under the black flag? even the Kedar tents of Puritanism, where the sombreness of death shuts out cheerfulness and life?

Among the company in the drawing room were our acquaintances, Emma, Julia, Mrs. Annie Jones, Miss Evelin, and Miss Euphy among the ladies, and Parson Gordon, Colonel Smithson, Lawyer Brief, Darnell, and Mr. Holt, and others besides, a few of whom will be mentioned in good time.

Some might have said that Emma and Julia were pre-eminent, while others would have termed Mrs. Annie and Miss Evelin the cynosures of the room. It will be remembered that Mrs. Annie was a brunette, that her eyes were very dark and full, and that her stature was low but remarkably genteel, tidy, and elegant. She had more than half put off her widow's weeds, and it was, perhaps, hardly proper that she should have put them on. Life had not past very evenly with her. A few years before she was much admired by a then youth. Augustus Shepard, nephew of the Shepard whom Parson Gordon mentioned in his letter to Dean Aldrich, and who formerly, as was said, was an admirer of Emma; but Annie's father could have had no faith in Goldsmith's doctrine that, as liquors become muddy before they brighten, so the best wits ferment before they ripen. He broke off the intimacy with Shepard, and forced her to receive the addresses of a Mr. Jones who was old enough to be her father.

"True," said Annie's father, "the child don't love Mr. Jones, but then love's a very silly thing, 'twill do for rhymers and romancers, but can't keep off poverty. Ah! when that comes in at the door, love goes out at the window. I didn't marry your mother for love, no indeed, and we've never known the difference. I was rather pinched for property. Your ma had some, and my wise old father said to me, John, Jane Yeo is pretty and smart. Them's two things enough to make a silly youngster try to get her; but she has got what's worth a sight more. Ah! my boy, her father, Parson Yeo, left her a snug little estate at his death. I am her guardian, and can tell to the halfpenny how much 'tis worth. You are a youth of some parts, and won't find it hard to get on the weak side of Jane. Go, make your love to her, and 'twill be so convenient for me to pay over to you this money.

"I was obedient," continued Annie's father, with a face which showed that he thought he had done a very meritorious act. "Your mother, child, was quite too young, and, by the way, too well raised, to have fallen in love with any one. She was told by my father that the family had arranged a match between us, and all went off exactly right. Now, Annie, you've never known your mother and I to have had any very serious squalls, though sometimes every thing didn't move on like a boat with a nice little wind down St. Mary's river, so, child, be advised."

Annie heard all this fandango; how much she believed is another question. She could not be satisfied that her father's experience was a safe guide to her. She had besides rather a penchant for Shepard, and when affection at all inclines one way, and a parent's orders force the other way, the will may submit, but the effort costs pain. She heaved many sighs, lost her appetite, and felt, like Iphigenia, about to be sacrificed. But in Mr. Darnell's family the iron rule prevailed. The knot was tied. A large party were making merry on the occasion, and none seemed so happy as the bridegroom. As well he might at an acquisition, which, if it brought the maiden's heart along with it, in value would have weighed down his fortune, rich as he was, ten times told. Poor Annie, amidst all the glare of dress, looked like any thing but a bride; pale, trembling, and heart-sick. "All will be right," said the avaricious father; for money is a wondrous panacea, and setter to rights in the opinion of a certain class. "'Tis mere girlishness. 'Twill wear off." They were playing blind man's buff. The groom was blindfolded. The room rang with laughter. The groom stooped for a moment. His apparent awkwardness gave general satisfaction. He fell to the floor. The laugh was still louder. The bride looked as a statue all the time. The groom lay still. Two or three ran to help him up, and one person was heard to say, "Poor old man! Your ankle bones are too weak for a bridegroom." "He can't move," said a voice, and the next instant the alarm was given that he was dead. The grim monster had more compassion on Annie than her father. He left a will giving his entire estate to his future wife. Of this Annie then knew nothing; but those soulless pieces of flesh and blood, who are prepared to sell themselves for money, even to wrinkled decrepitude, should have seen the young widow's indifference,

and heard her involuntary, remark, "I am now free—oh what a riddance!" Perhaps they would realize, or might think it possible that there can be a state of life worse than single blessedness; and that a poor and honest female is happier in her loneliness than a wife, who is tied to a husband, feeling as a living body would with a corpse fastened to it—unable to love corruption, and loathing in her soul this thing called a husband.

The new married couple among the Hebrews bore garlands of flowers; and the first Christians crowned them; but marriage is now so much a thing of convenience, that Hymen's chaplet should be at times a garland of thorns, stinging nettles and hellebore. On this evening, however, at Pleasant Lodge, there was much about Mrs. Annie to attract and awaken affection. Her deep brown eyes, glossy black hair, perfect brunette complexion, the rich fullness of her eyes, and the fire, animation and soul that kindled in them, played about her lips when she smiled, or which lit up with occasional flashes her whole face, all gave to her appearance a winning warmth and tenderness. And the religious cares which now perplexed her, while they rather saddened that sweet face, and gave a melancholy softness to the flashings of her eyes, made her rather more beautiful. If Mrs. Annie's life had been prosperous, and no cloud of anxious thought had darkened her pure sky, she would have seemed as the Venitian, whom an old dramatist paints, "brisk and sanguine, that smiles upon me like the glowing sun, and meets my lips like sparkling wine, her person shining as the glass, and spirit like the foaming liquor." But all this was chastened down. She seemed of earth and yet not earthy. She endeavoured to enter into the festivities of the evening, and yet in the expression of her eyes, solemn and religious, sweet yet subdued,—her heart appeared to thirst for other joys. If a seraph from heaven had mingled in the throng of that evening, how empty would its pleasures have seemed to him! Mrs. Annie appeared to have something of the same feeling.

Miss Evelin, the belle of St. Mary's, was a more ambitious and showy beauty. The roses bloomed upon her cheeks. Care cast no cloud over her sunny face. Her look was free, open, and bold. Long curls hung about her neck in pretty and fantastic forms, though overmuch powder concealed the colour of her hair. Her attire bespoke care,

attention, and even much cost. Her lip curled imperiously, while her small ears and classic features gave token of patrician descent; and her manner clearly bespoke consciousness of superiority. It was evident that Miss Evelin considered the young ladies about her as inferior stars to herself in the galaxy of beauty, and that she looked upon the gentlemen as belonging to a class a little above that of serving men, whom she would sufficiently honour by allowing them to pick up her handkerchief, and who might deem themselves everlastingly her debtors, if she should so far condescend as to hold a *tete à tete* with any of them.

Our acquaintance, Miss Euphy, the niece of Snarler, we said, was there also. She was pretty, tall, and stout, without much dignity or grace, rather flung herself about than moved, felt awkward, and seemed to be more so in endeavouring to make others think she was perfectly at home, and she would even have been more passable, had she not been tricked off in a dress that was ridiculously gaudy. Like most persons in the lower orders, Euphy did not fancy the staid colours of puritanism. In her simplicity, she loved colours which rival "the gorgeous hues of sunset, and the lustrous splendours of a poppy field;" and rarely seemed peacock prouder of its plumage than Euphy of her finery. It would have been cruel to have denied her the means of parading it; as it would be cruel to tie up the tail of a peacock, and thus not allow the vain creature to exhibit it.

These were the greater lights that shone forth this evening; gemming the parlour of Mr. Holt, and only shining less brightly than the stars which set off the coronet of night. The dress, which was then worn by the ladies, doubtless appeared to a beau or gentleman of that day, not only unexceptionable, but in the very best style; and best adapted to the wearers: they the wearers being the pictures of which the dress was only the gilding and framing. To our taste, which, we admit, has been puritanized, some of the ladies would have seemed to have been inappropriately dressed; and, most so of all, the belle of St. Mary's. Her dress was in the extreme of the fashion then dominant. She could not have been surpassed in the lowness, with which she wore her tucker, except by Henrietta of England, the queen of Charles II., and by Nell Gwyn, the Duchess of Cleveland; and other fair but infamous beauties of the court of the

merry monarch; whose fair frailties are so well hit off, and vividly too, by Count Hamilton: and who are indebted to their great painter, Sir Peter Sely, for perpetuating

“The sleepy eye that spoke the melting soul.

Miss Evelin, however, being a beauty of a more imperious character, may have designed in her queenly humour to awe the lords of creation into a most reverent homage of her charms. Possibly she had not seen Ovid's description of Daphne, in which, after praising her golden hair, beaming eyes, tempting lips, and fair arms, hands and fingers, he wisely adds,

“Et nudos media plus parte lacertos,
Si qua latent meliora putat.”

and which Dryden paraphrases:

“He praises all he sees, and for the rest
Believes the beauties yet unseen the best.”

To this indecorous nudity, let the reader imagine the fair Miss Evelin with a head-dress quite as lofty as the mural crown of Cybele; her dress spread out by immense hoops; her hair profusely powdered, and her whole person so perfumed by musk, that, as she moved, she seemed to be breathing and giving out odour, and he will see her as she appeared this evening.

Among the gentlemen was one Darnell. He belonged to that too large class, who will leave on the roll-call of the army of mankind little else but their names; and these names will only record that they lived and died. As he stands not alone, some may think his place is one of honour. Doubtless Darnell and his compeers may be all heroes in their own estimation. That they are tolerable models of physical humanity, no one will doubt. Their heads will do also for blocks in barber-shops to dress wigs on, and to learn hair cutting by; and their proportions will answer for tailor's signs to exhibit the latest fashions upon, and, when they are charged with morning dreams, or fresh from the steams of a groggery, they strut and swagger as if the whole nation rested upon and looked to them.

Shepard, however, was of a stamp greatly superior. He seemed to be made to leave his mark on the age, should means be presented. He was audacious and resolute, ambitious to climb aloft by the ladder of fortune; like Pistol

esteeming the world his oyster which he would open; keen, penetrating, a Bolingbroke in brilliancy and fascination; and a Swift in sarcasm, without the coarseness of the Dean. His dress was unique, being like the man extravagant, costly, and singular; not unlike that of Sir Harry Wildair, the model of fantastic fops of that day. He was conspicuous by a big periwig, even larger than the capacious ones then generally worn, by a black velvet coat, a long and richly brocaded waistcoat, yellow velvet shorts, pearl buckles to his stockings, and gold buckles to his shoes, and by showy red heels to his shoes: the whole being made yet more noticeable by a black beard of exorbitant length and fullness. Conscious of the observation he was attracting, he entered the last of the company, with a bow which Chesterfield might have made, and then made a circuit of the parlour; beginning of course, at the opposite end of the room, where sat his fair hostess, Miss Julia, and managed to say something witty, original, or that passed as peculiarly apropos, to each lady in passing. Shepard loved to walk a gauntlet of this kind, each new female face acted as an additional challenge to put forth his best faculties, and he generally found himself at the end fresher, keener and brighter, than when he began. His appearance so impressed Montrose, that he resolved to make his acquaintance. Shepard was now in his neighbourhood, and had stopt just before Miss Evelin. Montrose and Mr. Holt were near enough to hear what passed between them.

"I have not the honour of your acquaintance," said Miss Evelin, bantering Shepard on his beard. "I know no gentleman who dresses so much like a—" and she hesitated. "You are not the Mr. Shepard I have seen once or twice."

"Oh, yes," replied Shepard, twirling his moustache, and displaying a set of teeth that outshone the porcelain, "but the Mr. Shepard improved."

"Disguised, you mean," she said, "and, pray what character are you personating?"

"I'll answer with very great pleasure," Shepard bowed profoundly, "if Miss Evelin will be so obliging as to say whether I am to recognize in her the belle of St. Mary's, or some gay beauty from the Court of Venus, who means to dazzle us with her charms."

"I always appear, sir," curling her lip, and looking as if she would annihilate him, "without disguise."

"Possibly," and there was a sardonic smile that said more than words, "it would be well if Miss Evelin were a little disguised. If she will allow me, I will show her how a mouchoir can set off the charms even of the lady of Evelinton manor."

Quick as said, he took from her unconscious hand her highly scented handkerchief, and laid it over her bosom and neck. In an instant the fair one's face and neck were crimsoned, and, if a lady's eyes could have shot lightning, hers would have blasted him.

Mr. Holt now touched Shepard, and introduced him to Montrose; and, then giving his hand to Miss Evelin, said:

"I agree with you, Miss Jane, that our friend's beard so disguises him that he hardly appears in propria persona. Though Perseus speaks of Socrates as *magistrum barbatum*,—a philosopher with a long beard,—yet Mr. Shepard cannot mean to pass for so grave a character. Unless," turning to Shepard, "you have adopted the eastern opinion, that the beard is the greatest ornament of the person. Though I am so old-fashioned as to think the beard is in inverse ratio to the brain. Wherefore I think you should be obliged to Miss Jane for reminding so sensible a gentleman of his departure from good taste."

Shepard smiled and bowed, understanding Mr. Holt's remark as a well intentioned and dexterous method of relieving Miss Evelin from her embarrassment; and fearful, lest he might have transcended the bounds of gentlemanly courtesy, acknowledged his obligations to Miss Evelin, and by a well turned compliment endeavoured to dispel the cloud from her brow. But Miss Evelin had either made the important discovery that pretty phrases were mere breath,—or her wrath was not to be appeased so easily; and Parson Gordon and the three gentlemen mentioned were speaking of the customs of antiquity, and the parson remarked, that shaving was accounted ignominious by the ancient Hebrews; for that David's men were so disgraced by being shaved by Hanun, that the king directed them to tarry at Jericho till their beards were grown.

"That would have been a heavy penance," said Shepard, looking significantly at Brief, who heard his remark, "on a friend of ours, who has not had even beard enough to

consecrate the boyish down to Jupiter Capitolinus, as did Nero."

"Never fear on that score," replied the attorney, aware it would not do to dodge the shot, and being very sensitive and resentful, as it might lower him in Miss Evelin's opinion. "I shaved many years ago; but wanting a Jupiter to whom to present my boyish down, as Mr. Shepard seems anxious for a good supply of the article, by his great cultivation of it, if he'll accept it, 'tis at his service."

"I dare not presume to such an honour," said Shepard, "but there is one who may, and that the present may honour alike donor and donee, I will furnish you with a gold box to hold it. In me it would be arrogance even to touch the first shavings of one whose very hair is venerable," (the attorney's hair being quite grey,) "I will, therefore, as the valuable relics may be as precious as are the parings of St. Anthony's toe-nails," (alluding to Brief's Romanism,) "with a set speech bear the offering to the queen of your affections."

"Perhaps," said Montrose, "Mr. Brief thinks a cleaner face would better become the ambassador of so grave a matter."

"The matter being grave," joined in Mr. Holt, jocularly, "Mr. Shepard is the man to act in it; since a clergyman, who stood high in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, being asked, why he wore the longest and largest beard in all England, replied, 'I wish no act of my life may be unworthy the gravity of my appearance.'"

The sound of music was now heard, and Colonel Smithson, advancing to Julia, asked her to walk with him the minuet. Our grandmothers, who remember the colonial times, may remember with regret that this stately dance has been abandoned for the vulgar jig. The minuet required great dignity and grace to execute it well: for which Colonel Smithson's dignified and easy manners admirably fitted him; and hence Julia, aware of this fact, and diffident of her own performance, was afraid of a juxtaposition in which she might lose by comparison with her partner, and therefore firmly declined the colonel's request. He then bowed to Emma, who accepted his proffered hand for the dance, and as the two took their place on the floor, conversation was for a while suspended. Emma moved

along the floor as gracefully as a swan does on the water, and with as much ease as if she were in her native element. The figures were executed also without a solitary mistake, embarrassment, or precipitancy. The two did their parts with the regularity of clock-work, and in perfect time with the music. The colonel's bow was worth half a dozen speeches, for the much, inexpressible any other way as well, that it said; while the slow, ready, and finished curtesy of Emma showed how gracefully a lady's form can bend, and how well the carriage of the body can be made to convey whatever is courteous and complimentary.

"Can you surpass that bow in England?" asked Shepard of Montrose. The latter shook his head.

"The old dramatist," continued Shepard, "said correctly of one of his heroes, 'He being gold, needs no stamp of grace to make him current;' for, with the colonel's stamp of grace, if a man was brass intrinsically he would pass current any where; and, without that stamp, which so many want,—being rough diamonds, or gold in the mine unwrought and uncoined,—merit often fails to circulate in the mart of the world."

Montrose soon thereafter found Emma at liberty, and embraced the earliest occasion to seat himself alongside of her; and endeavoured to play the agreeable, (as under such circumstances, who will not?) in the best way he could. The playful and excited colloquy of a young lady and gentleman is exhilarating as champagne, and at times no less sparkling; but, like champagne, it is transient, and leaves a void, and perhaps a heaviness after it. While the more sober and quiet tone of conversation, where the mind is under less excitement, and rather rills forth than bubbles up the thoughts, which are uppermost, comes forth pure, bright, and healthy. And Emma was not sorry to find under the heydayness of Montrose a well of thought deep and pure. Triflers may force a laugh, but they soon become bores. Not far from them sat Julia with her harpsichord in hand, and Mrs. Annie and Shepard were standing by, conversing with her, and were urging her to sing with the promise of accompanying her.

"He can't turn a tune, or sing a note," whispered Annie to Julia, and the latter said to Shepard:

"Annie sings, but can you?"

"I have long endeavoured," bowing and smiling, "to be

au fait in every accomplishment that makes the gentleman. If singing be one of the marks of a chevalier, sans peur and sans reproche, I will even undertake to sing."

"Will you?" replied Julia eagerly, her eyes sparkling.

"On one condition," he said, "provided you will sing the ballad which you composed on the history of the late Indian Chief Croshaw, and the remarkable echo in the cove where he died. Mrs. Smithson has a copy of it, and sang it for me at the castle."

"Do sing the ballad, Julia," urged Mrs. Annie, who, aware of Shepard's great audacity and address, mischievously wished to see how he would extricate himself from a promise he could not literally keep.

"Do sing," joined in Miss Evelin. "I know that so charming a man as Mr. Shepard must sing most charmingly. What think you, Annie?"

Mrs. Annie did not express her opinion; while Shepard with mock gratitude thanked Miss Evelin for the high opinion she expressed of him. Miss Evelin then said, addressing Mrs. Annie, and lowering her voice:

"His singing must be as charming as that of the frogs in St. John's pond."

Shepard heard the remark, and, smiling most graciously, said:

"I feel that I am some inches higher since Miss Evelin deems me a charming man, and considers that my vocal powers are only equalled by her favourite serenaders in St. John's pond."

"The song—the song," now cried out a number of voices. Montrose and Emma joined the group, while Julia, with her arm around the harpsichord, and Annie standing by her, and taking part, sang as follows:—

"The winds blew loud o'er Lulla's stream,
The briny waves rolled high,
Mildly shone the moon's pale beam,
While in the gloomy wood
A maiden of the forest stood,
And thus spoke out her bosom's sigh.

"Great Spirit! oh, the red man save!
Croshaw, from Ogees drear,
Thou lov'st the warrior true and brave,
For his country battling;
Who, amidst the arrows' rattling,
Seeks an honoured death and grave."

"Still howled the wind, and out the wood
 — Came forth a doleful cry;
 A fitful light blazed high, then stood
 The winding cove midway;
 As Adaratha thus did pray,
 She saw it move on gloomily.

"No living wight may tell how cold,
 Like ice upon her breast,
 Sank the sad news, now surely told,
 Croshaw no more would come;
 Nor speak the darkness of that home,
 His presence-light so oft did bless.

"And ever since o'er Lulla's stream,
 Echo an answer gives;
 And in the echo Croshaw seems
 On earth to live again.
 E'en so do all good men,
 In after times a witness leave."

No sooner had Julia begun the ballad, than to the surprise of all present, and of Julia particularly, Montrose joined in; and both chimed in with the tune, and repeated the words with a familiarity, indicating that the air and words were alike known to him. With amazement depicted in her face, Julia asked him to tell her how and when he learned this tune and the words.

"Certainly," replied Montrose with ill-concealed embarrassment. "I obtained the words and tune from your brother at Oxford. He showed me the ballad you sent to him, and mentioned to what air you had adapted it."

"That may be," said Julia, thoughtfully, "but Charlie was ever at some trick, and I have half a mind to ask him if he aint Charlie. But, no," soliloquizing, "he could not be so cruel as to carry his hoax thus far."

Several voices now demanded that Shepard should sing, or pay the penalty. Shepard smiled, remarking he had taken part in the ballad; but that his voice was on the same key with that of Mr. Montrose; so much so that only the most practised ear could have detected that he sang at all.

"Then," replied Julia, thinking she had fairly entrapped him, "you will sing it now by yourself. Come, I will give you the air on the harpsichord, and we will judge how perfect you have become in the ballad." And she seemed to enjoy the dilemma to which she had forced him.

Shepard saw the exultations of Julia, and did not fail to see the very evident satisfaction of Miss Evelin at his appa-

rently inextricable position. To be cornered is at all times unpleasant, by ladies especially so.

"Really," replied Shepard, "my great modesty could not carry me through such an ordeal."

"He has forfeited," was the cry, and it was unanimously agreed, Shepard excepted, that he should pay the penalty.

"Let this be a song," suggested Julia, "of Mr. Shepard's composition, and let us have it now," looking mischievously at their supposed victim.

"You forget, Miss Julia," he said, beseechingly, "that I have not wet my feet in the dews of Parnassus, nor drank of the fountain of Hippocrene, as you seem to have done. A song comes not from me so readily as from yourself. But, if I must, I must. You ladies are inexorable."

Seating himself, and looking hard at Mrs. Annie, as if he would drink in inspiration from her face; so much so that Annie blushed, and dropt her head, he wrote, and then read as follows:

"Oh! touch for me that harp again,
It stills my bosom's maddening pain,
And makes me dream, tho' dream in vain,
That thou art mine. It must not be,
I hear no more thy minstrelsy.
Then touch for me thy harp once more,
No Druid priest had e'er such power
To stir the soul. I seem to be
An angel blest in hearing thee.

"For, when I hear thy magic strings,
My heart with joy and gladness rings
As water gushing from the springs,
It bounds to meet thee, and to be
Where flows thy voice of melody.
Then touch for me, &c.

"Less sweet at evening hour the hum,
Which from the groves and waters comes,
More fragrant would it make a home,
Than odours in the quiet dell,
Which wafted rise from mossy cell.
Then touch for me, &c.

"For what is wealth? and what's renown?
A king's no king without a crown;
Unwed he's poorer than a clown,
Who has a wife to sing to rest
The cares and troubles of his breast.
Then touch for me, &c."

Compliments poured fast on Shepard; and Julia, asking a copy, promised to find an air for it; and then in an under-

tone said to Annie, "You must help me to sing it, as you were the muse he called upon."

Next followed a dance, that was then much in vogue, the lavolta. It was not unlike the modern waltz; resembled it in the whirling motion, but differed from it in being more decorous and decent. Lawyer Brief found room on the floor, but, not securing Miss Evelin as a partner, stood up to dance with Miss Euphy, who was much larger than the attorney. In executing this dance, the gentleman turned his partner round a number of times, and then assisted her to make a lofty spring. In activity the attorney answered very well. For few persons could leap equal to him, and he expected by this endowment, of which he was not a little proud, to supply the want of momentum. Our hero of the forum, therefore was not conscious that, while he was taking such fearful leaps to the admiration of the young, and amazement of the old folks, he was in danger more and more, as the dance went on, of taking a leap too far or too much; like other knights, whose ambition betrays them into dangers and scrapes. For awhile all continued well enough. He whirled round in the giddy dance, as if each touch of his partner infused into him an additional charge of electric fluid; for, observing that Miss Evelin was looking all attention, and, as he supposed, all admiration, he bounded off and away, and spun round merrily, till the room, and every thing in it, whirled in mad confusion. And when he came to the vault or cabriole, required by the dance, he would summon all his strength, and up he would spring and off again he would dart. His partner seemed to be in ecstasies. Dancing to Euphy was the most exhilarating of enjoyments, and hence, as she saw the old negro fiddler lay his head back, and, drawing his fiddle bow with a sort of inspiration across the strings, make the instrument talk most eloquently, all so acted on her, that she sprang to Brief so furiously, that if the spirit of dancing had been embodied, it would have taken Miss Euphy's form. As on, therefore, swept the fiddle bow, on they whirled; the louder twanged the sable minstrel's strings, higher bounced Brief, and round and round more fleetly whirled his partner and himself. But, as they went, spinning like a top, with fearful velocity, Brief's foot was caught in the long dress of an aged dame in the room, to the sad rending of the dress, and greater vexation of its owner. In a moment he lost his balance, shot off in a tangent, and

pitched headforemost into the lap of Mrs. Muchado, a garrulous old woman, where his fall was nearly as much broken as it would have been by a feather bed. Confusion ensued. Brief was mortified and vexed. Mrs. Muchado broke out upon "the impudent presumption," as she termed it, "of the fellow, taking such liberties, and before so genteel a company too." Peal upon peal of laughter rang in the room, then came jibe, and joke, and jest. The black fiddler laid aside his bow and violin, wiped his dewy brow and said :

"Neber hab I seen Massa Brief dance so sarvighously. Ky, him leap like a swimmer into Mistress Muchado's lap."

To retire with dignity after such a catastrophe, necessary and proper as it may have been, was a difficult feat. The attorney was not equal to it. He was not a man to take a joke, and laugh with the loudest. Crestfallen he rose from his soft repose, and, looking up with shame and vexation to Mrs. Muchado's cloudy face, he gathered up his little person, and folding his arms, retired, as he hoped, with dignity, from the room.

This scene was not witnessed by Parson Gordon and Mr. Holt, who withdrew to the library soon as the minuet began ; and they were discussing affairs of the parish, when a figure, that neither of them had before seen, entered the library ; accompanied by Mr. Doolittle, a vestryman of Mr. Gordon's parish, and whom the latter introduced as the Reverend Mr. Allgrace. Parson Gordon had time to scrutinize him, and whispered to Mr. Holt, "This must be the man I overheard praying at Mrs. Doolittle's the night I mentioned to you." But how came he here ? What was his business ? were questions which the rector and host asked themselves, and could not answer. Homer says :—"All strangers and beggars come from Jove," and Mr. Holt was too imbued with the sacred duty of hospitality to receive them discourteously.

Mr. Allgrace was dressed nearly as much unlike the company present as he could be. While they wore periwigs, his hair was cut as short and round as if a gourd had been used in trimming it. While they had shoe buckles of gold or silver, he wore a plain black string to each of his shoes. While their faces looked cheerful ; the wrinkles and furrows being smoothed out in compliment to their host, and the corners of their eyes and mouths were turned up good-humouredly, and an expression of good fellowship lighted up the features of all Allgrace's face was drawn out into a most

lachrymose expression, and seemed to be under a cloud; looking as if he were, not at a feast, but a funeral. He was hardly introduced, before, in a tone low and soft, as if his words came up from the depths of a heart full of the searchings of the spirit, (alas! how many persons are homines multæ religionis, nullius pene pietatis, and their words come up from the bathos of darkness and emptiness?) Allgrace said:

"I did not suppose that you would have been present at dances and assemblies, where the wicked love to haunt."

Parson Gordon was surprised, but resolved, however, to hear him out.

"Ah! I fear," and the figure rolled up his eyes, "that no good cometh to the flock, where the shepherd holdeth to the righteousness of ungodly meetings, and banquetings, and revellings, and the such like."

"Explain yourself," replied the rector, waxing warm at this unwarrantable salutation; and yet, perhaps, feeling anxious to shake him off, as St. Paul did the serpent at Melita.

"God forbid!" continued Allgrace, "that mine eyes should look upon iniquity. I saw, however, a lovely maiden in the other room in an unrighteous employment—dancing, sir, like the wicked daughter of Herodias, and I was told she was the daughter of Parson Gordon."

"My daughter's name and character are sacred," quickly and sternly replied the rector. "If you wish to rebuke what you think to be wrong, implicating myself, I will hear you, though the time and place are unsuitable."

Allgrace was for a moment awed. Mr. Gordon and Mr. Holt both exchanged glances,—and the former asked if it was to dancing that he objected so strongly?

"Woe is me! if I did not," replied Allgrace, opening his eyes wide, and throwing himself into an attitude for declaiming. "Amazed! amazed! amazed! am I, that a preacher of righteousness don't know we are commanded not to be conformed to this world."

"Ah!" said Parson Gordon, surveying him with mingled pity and contempt, and saying to himself, "He either needs a straight jacket, or he acts the pharisee to perfection."

"I am amazed, you don't know," continued the puritan, "we are commanded, under the pain of damnation, to come out from the world, and be separate; yea, to touch not,

taste not, and handle not the unclean thing.' Ah me! sadly, desperately, beyond hope almost, utterly gone from original righteousness is the human heart. It is but filthy rags and an unclean thing."

"That may possibly be the case with some," said Parson Gordon, mildly. Allgrace seemed not to have heard him. "I thought," he continued, "these commands were yea and amen to all who love the Lord Jesus. For we must confess Him, or He will not confess us; but a fire to the bottom of the pit will burn out our iniquity. But that a minister should attend the gatherings of the wicked—" he wished to add, "a minister's daughter," but he caught Parson Gordon's eye, and came suddenly to a halt. Mr. Holt looked very uncomfortable. The good man was struggling between a wish to show the unmannerly intruder the door, and his repugnance to order any one out of his house.

Allgrace's texts had no more connexion than beads on a string; break the string, and they would never again be strung in the same order. Parson Gordon knew this; but contented himself with remarking:

"As your texts have no bearing on what you witnessed this evening, your denunciations of it as a sinful conformity, a denial of Christ, and gatherings of the wicked are far fetched conjectures; proper stuff, sir."

"Do you presume to say," asked the puritan, "that the Bible does not say that dancing is sinful? Why, sir, it is plain enough to the spiritual man, who discerneth the things of the Spirit;" and he looked as if he thought himself to be vastly superior to Parson Gordon in spiritual apprehension. The rector could not help smiling, and said mentally, "It is a waste of words to talk to him."

But Mr. Holt was anxious that Allgrace should be rebuked, and he, to effect this object, said:

"I have always understood that dancing was not malum in se, bad in itself; and that, while it is spoken of in the Scriptures it is never spoken of in dispraise or in condemnation." Allgrace appeared to be in a brown study. Doolittle looked as if he would help him if he could. At length Allgrace said that the catechism denounced pomps and vanities, and that dancing was a pomp and vanity.

"Dr. Bray, in his admirable lectures," replied the rector, "on the catechism, does not so interpret the catechism, and the great Dr. Hammond did not, with all his learning, dis-

cern that dancing was a pomp and vanity." And Parson Gordon smiled as he continued. "Good honest old Thomas Fuller says, 'Running, leaping, and dancing, the descants on the plain song of walking, are all excellent exercises.' "

"I care not," said Allgrace, in a mood not the best natured, "for such writers. Go to the Bible. Did Abraham or Job dance? Did the early martyrs dance? Answer here."

Parson Gordon smiled, and replied, "I am obliged to you for referring to the Scriptures. But, I fear, you read the holy book through glasses that must hide much. Jeremy Taylor says, it is written within and without, and besides the light shining upon it, there must be a light shining on our hearts, unfolding the leaves, and interpreting the mysterious sense of the Spirit, or we read it in vain. Now dancing was the usual concomitant of music among the Hebrews. Miriam, the sister of Moses, and the women in dances and songs glorified God for rescuing them from Egyptian bondage. David danced before the Lord after the ark, and Jephtha's daughter came to meet him returning from the battle with timbrels, and with dances. The daughters of Shiloh danced at the feasts of the Lord. The psalmist renders thanks that God has turned for him his 'mourning into dancing.' The prophet Jeremiah, predicting the restoration of Israel, says that Israel will again be 'adorned with tabrets, and go forth in the dances with them that make merry;' and adds, 'then shall the virgin rejoice in the dance, both young men and old together.' Solomon, in Ecclesiastes, says, 'There is a time to dance.' Now these authorities need no comment."

Allgrace breathed hard and hurried. He was evidently unprepared for this testimony. He threw his head back, and heaved a deep sigh; shocked possibly at the unevangelical character of the Old Testament Scriptures. After awhile he was able to say: "The Gospel, sir, the New Testament, teaches a purer doctrine; I stand upon it. The Old Testament is all types and figures."

"Nothing of Holy Scripture," replied Parson Gordon, solemnly, "came of man or man's wisdom, but 'holy men spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.' The Old and New Testaments are alike the word of God; and what Old Testament saints did without offence, and what the Spirit of holiness then sanctioned, cannot be a grievous offence

now. But the New Testament also is against you. What say you of the prodigal son?"

Allgrace was aghast. "There is nothing of dancing here," he attempted to say, with boldness.

Mr. Gordon turned to St. Luke's Gospel, and read, "Now his elder son was in the field; and, as he came, and drew nigh to the house, he heard music and dancing." "This parable," continued the rector, "came from the lips of Christ. The dancing was in the house of the prodigal's father; and by that father God is represented. Consequently dancing and music, as expressions of joy, seem to have had the sanction of our Lord Himself; and, according to Him were, in His house, tokens of joy that a prodigal son, returning to Him penitent, was dead no longer, but alive again, lost no longer, but found. You are equally mistaken," proceeded Parson Gordon, "as to the opinion of the early church on this matter. The ancient canons, and the ancient doctors in their writings, say nothing against dancing as wrong in itself. They condemn, however, and very justly too, the impious dances that were then practised—not among Christians, but among the heathens. And it is a fact worth preserving that we can find in the canons of our English Church canons on games, hunting, hawking, theatres, chess, dice, and football; all of which are forbidden to the clergy; but none on dancing. Now, as dancing has existed from the days of Job, and continues to this day, if it be, as you would have it believed to be, so greatly repugnant to God's word, and so outrageously sinful, be so kind as to explain why neither His word, nor the church has condemned it in any age?"

"It is all right then," replied Allgrace, with a sneer, looking at Doolittle, and muttering, "I have not found for some time a minister so full of the pomps and vanities."

"Dancing," continued the rector firmly, "becomes sinful by the company which may attend it, and, when it does, it will come under the condemnation of the ancient canons. Like every thing else, it is criminal if carried to excess; for we should 'be temperate in all things.' It is criminal, also, if it be sought as the only vent of pleasurable feelings. For, while the young are allowed to relax themselves with music and dancing, as did David and the ancient people of God, they should remember likewise that we are told: 'Is any merry, let him sing psalms.' And dancing will certainly be sinful, like any worldly employment, carried to the same

extent, if its influence should beget or foster in us a love of the world,—or engage us in its amusements, to the neglect of the things that make for our eternal peace.”

Allgrace looked amazed.

Parson Gordon continued, “I am neither an advocate nor denouncer of dancing. We are not all alike constituted. Persons of a melancholy or austere temperament may honestly consider dancing a very unchristian act, and I blame them not for refraining from it. Others with hilarious dispositions, as my worthy host here, when he is in a pleasurable mood, can see no impropriety in it, and I must, with the charity that hopeth all things, believe he is not the less piously inclined because his feelings occasionally carry him in this direction. A David could dance before the ark without sin, as well as a Jeremiah please God in lamenting the sad state of Israel.”

“I must hold my peace about dancing then?” asked the nonconformist.

“Cry aloud and spare not,” replied the rector, “against a world of unbelief, scoffing, and ungodliness; expose the anti-christian hierarchy, whose head is seated on the seven hilled city; do this as much as you please. But, if you wish to advance the cause of Christ, do not denounce your brethren whose tempers are less morose than your own. Against the waves of the world on one side, and those of Rome on the other, do our best we can do no more than keep the ark of Christ erect, and push her onward. Or, if you conceive dancing to be sinful, put it down as much as you can; but do it not to gratify a gloomy and hypochondriac temper; do it, not because you feel in no mood to dance yourself, and thus reprove in your neighbour a cheerful spirit which you ought also to cultivate; but condemn it when you find it absorbing the affections to the exclusion of holy joys, and such things as enter into a Christian’s consolation.”

“A Christian ought to weep and lament,” interrupted Allgrace,—“to rend his heart and not his garments.”

“True,” replied Parson Gordon, “at certain times and on fitting occasions, but not always; for an outward cheerfulness of temper our Saviour seems to require us to exhibit, even when we fast, that we may ‘appear not unto men to fast.’”

“You’d have all to dance, then?” interrupted Allgrace.

Parson Gordon smiled, and then said: "No, but so to live that, as the apostle advises, we may rejoice evermore. Alas! sir, we often mourn and repine when we should sing and rejoice. All nature laughs and shows a smiling face. God's book shines in promises sufficient to dispel every gloom that can gather about us here. And it would be well if our affections, taking the wings of the morning, went soaring upwards;—that we, animated by a hope that renders our path a shining light, that shineth more and more unto the perfect day, found in our homely duties, our chiefest pleasure; and, like the Eunuch, seek to do what we are commanded, and go on our way rejoicing."

The loud roar, which was occasioned in the other room by Lawyer Brief's disaster, startled the speakers at this stage of their discussion, and produced a pause of a few minutes, when Mr. Holt availed himself of the opening to remark, with a smile, that the Egyptians, no less than the Jews, had their solemn dances, the chief dance among whom was the dance astronomical, and of which the sacrilegious and idolatrous dance around the golden calf by the Israelites was an imitation.

"I should say as much," interrupted Allgrace, glad to find the shadow of an argument on his side. "Dances are idolatrous, heathenish, the vile capers of the old beast himself, the revels of Satan; in them he dances,—and wo! wo! to those who give in to such abominations." And, as he spoke, he became so transported he fairly capered about the room, and threw his arms wildly about.

"This, I suppose," said Shepard, (alluding to Allgrace moving about,) who, unknown to the parties had joined them in time to hear Mr. Holt's last remark, and Allgrace's reply;—"this is a dance of the furies, which was once so celebrated on the stage at Athens, as to strike the spectators with terror. I would suggest to your reverence," looking at and addressing Allgrace, "not to carry in your features so much distortion when you dance next time; unless you mean to put us out of conceit with dancing, by showing how ugly and frightful it is."

The cool impudence and irony of this remark startled the rector and Mr. Holt, and threw Allgrace off his guard. Shepard enjoyed the confusion of his victim.

Allgrace, recovering himself, hastened to say,

"I dance! I dance! Ungodly man! Do you charge me with dancing?" throwing his eyes up. "No! never!"

"Most humbly I crave your pardon," said Shepard, with affected humility, bowing low.

"No, no, sir," gruffly responded Allgrace, anxious to say more, but wanting breath or courage to accomplish it.

"Perhaps," said his tormentor, looking significantly at Mr. Holt, "you only meant to show us the opera dance."

If the charge of theft had been made against Allgrace, he would not have been more indignant. Boiling with emotions too strong for words, he rushed from the room. Shepard opened his eyes wide as if he had acted most innocently, and Parson Gordon knew not exactly what course to pursue; but Mr. Holt let himself out in a hearty laugh, and the rector could not keep his countenance.

"He is a nondescript," said Shepard, pointing to the retreating figure of Allgrace. "Where did he get his breeding, or his ideas? The first among hostlers, and the last in a conventicle. A solemn prosaic simpleton. Yes, he is a pretty fellow. What would he have said, if he had been at the coronation dinner of Richard II., when the king, bishops, nobles, knights, and all the company assembled danced so heartily in Westminster Hall, to the music of the minstrels, who were deemed worthy to touch their harpsichords on this grave and festive occasion, that the old hall rang again?"

"No," said Parson Gordon, "he is sincere, and only doing what his creed and party ever have done."

"Father, dear father, do come here," said Emma, hastily entering the room; and then withdrawing with some confusion, as she saw Shepard, and colouring slightly from the remembrance perhaps of the regard she once entertained for him.

Parson Gordon left the room, and Emma said, "Excuse my calling you; but Adaratha is surely beside herself. Look," pointing to the Indian girl, who, it seems, was in an adjoining room when the dance began, and who appears to have heard the music, and looked upon the dancers with some indifference, till the lavotta began, in which the counsellor became notorious; when, savage-like, forgetting every feeling in the excitement of the scene, she had at first taken her seat on the floor, and almost lay there, apparently carried away by the intense feelings awakened in her. And

after the dance was resumed, on the attorney's discomfiture, Adaratha became so excited, that she rose from the floor, and humming at the same time a wild tune—she began to stamp and jump, and clap her hands,—and with gestures, and in a manner the most violent, betrayed immoderate joy.

“Poor child,” said Parson Gordon, looking on the frantic movements of Adaratha, “little does she know or dream of sin in the untutored steps she is taking. The infant, overjoyed, leaps in its mother's arms,—the child in a frenzy of joy dances about the room, and this poor child is innocently doing the same.”

But these days are gone. We have discarded the harp, lute, and viol from our feasts. I trust we are better than our forefathers who kept them at theirs; better particularly by denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, and by living soberly and righteously in this present world. We should exceedingly regret to see a clergyman lower his dignity by figuring in a dance; and we have never known the cause of godliness advanced by balls; but, while we allow ourselves no time for music and dancing—let us bestow the time thus saved, not in mammon seeking, nor in hurtful frivolities of any kind; but in such employments as become those who would pass from things temporal to things eternal; in praising Him who hath called us to be saints, and, by growing in grace and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, fit ourselves to praise Him hereafter “in His name Jah, and to rejoice before him.”*

* The reader may consult Rees's Encyclopedia, Article Dance, and Bingham's Antiquities of the Church. In the latter work, (Bohn's Edition, pp. 1007, and in pp. 1224) Bingham says: “Bare music and dancing, without any immodest or antic tricks, seems hardly a crime worthy a canon to forbid it.” And we may judge by St. Chrysostom's sharp invective against this and other extravagances, which were committed at marriage feasts, there must have been something more condemnable than dancing to have provoked this good father's severe denunciations.”

After commenting on Isaac and Rebekah's marriage, and Jacob and Leah's, Bingham adds: “From all this it is plain, that it was not a sober entertainment at a marriage feast, nor *bare music and dancing*, nor a modest nuptial song, that the fathers so vehemently declaimed against as satanical pomps; but it was the obscene and filthy songs, the ribaldry and lascivious actions of mimics and buffoons brought from the stage, joined with their immodest dances, and other like vanities, tending to corrupt youthful minds both by seeing and hearing which they justly inveighed against, as unbecoming the modesty and sobriety of Christians.”

See also, Hart's Ecclesiastical Records of England, Ireland and Scotland. Cambridge, 1846, pp. 85, 87, 91, 113, 115, 121, &c.

CHAPTER XII.

REV. MR. ALLGRACE—AN ADVENTURE—A DAY AT THE CASTLE, &c.

"The hypocrite is a saint, and the false traitor a man of honour, till opportunity, that faithful touchstone, proves their metal to be base."

PEVERIL OF THE PEAK.

ON leaving Mr. Holt's library, Allgrace and Doolittle encountered Colonel Smithson in the passage, and with him the former had a brief conversation. These worthies then made rather a precipitate retreat from Pleasant Lodge; both evidently, and Allgrace especially, satisfied that Parson Gordon was not a godly minister, and lamenting, in words at least, the woful condition of the parish under such a pastor. So thought the puritans of the parishes and of their rectors and curates in England when they obtained the ascendancy, and they turned out or drove away the clergy to the number of some thousands, and gave the livings to fanatical preachers, and to lawless troopers from Cromwell's army. On entering the library, Colonel Smithson was informed of the conversation reported in the last chapter, and after a hearty laugh he remarked:

"Mr. Allgrace, I fear, is only like his fellows, the self-named godly. He thinks, I doubt not, that grace dispenses with the rules of society. According to him 'the saints' have received a dispensation to show no respect to persons; and are empowered at all times to preach the word." And here the colonel smiled as he proceeded. "Preaching the word means, you know, to speak their minds freely to all, without respect to the conventional rules of an ungodly world. Hence, according to him, your being rector of the parish, and he being a visitor, were mere accidents, and should not be taken into account when sin is to be rebuked. But this is not all. I have news for you," and the colonel put on a mysterious face, as if he had something of great moment to impart. Parson Gordon and Mr. Holt expressed a wish to know what it was. "Allgrace," continued the colonel,

"brings a letter from Governor Seymour. You know his excellency to be a meddlesome, and would-be reformer of the church, after the pattern of Geneva. His excellency writes me about the ecclesiastical court, and, to prepare himself, he says, to act understandingly, (but, as I will add, so as to consult his private views and wishes,) should such a court be created by the next assembly to try the clergy of the established Church; he wishes to know who of my acquaintances among the clergy will be likely to be affected by it. All which seeming deference, to my judgment, and seeming desire to shield the clergy of my choice, I understand, and rate it at its proper value. What it is worth, your reverence and my worthy host need not that I should say. Unfortunately, however, for his excellency, there chanced to be but two clergymen in the whole province, who are justly obnoxious to evil report; and one of these," and here his voice and tone were very significant, "rumour says is Mr. Allgrace himself. But they are of the same religious cast with his excellency; and it would not be kind, nor very brotherly in his excellency to deal rigorously with brethren of his own household. Consequently he would have no objections to the creation of such a court, as it would be an engine of power, he being its president, that he might so wield as to fill every parish with clergymen whose opinions faithfully reflect his own, provided the control of it was left to him, and thus Allgrace and such as are like-minded could come under the broad ægis of his excellency's protection. He counts with confidence on the passage of the bill next assembly, and as confidently with being able to control it. Hence, in view of this event, he has deputed Mr. Allgrace to come here and elsewhere, and hunt up charges against your reverence, and every other rector who is not orthodox by the rule of Baxter, the late Bishop Hooper, and the like. And I should judge, from his excellency's letter, (carefully worded as it is, and well as he has glossed over his true motives,) and particularly from Allgrace's accidental, and perhaps, incautious remarks, (for he feels his strength,) that this worthy has the promise of your parish on your ceasing to be rector. The remarks of your reverence on dancing, therefore, and the fact that Miss Emma, your daughter, danced, will form matter enough for a tragic volume of indictment before this court."

"But whence came this Mr. Allgrace?" asked Mr. Holt. "Who is he?"

"You remember," replied the colonel, "that at the battle of Sedgemoor, the Duke of Monmouth and his army were completely defeated. Allgrace was in the ranks of the unfortunate Duke, and doubtless with Ferguson and others harangued the troops on the godliness of rebellion. Hosts of fugitives escaped in a number of ships to New England. Allgrace came with them; and, as his imagination and that of his companion teemed with Old Testament images, they named the river in Massachusetts, on which they settled, Buttermilk river; judging they had come to a new Canaan, a land flowing with milk and honey."

"That cold country, I fear, has not helped his temper or creed," said Mr. Holt. "I remember hearing a remark of your eccentric countryman," addressing the rector, "the Bishop of Sarum, 'that the Covenanters knew little of the essentials of religion, and that, while the hot men among them were positive, all were full of contention; and, I fear, Mr. Allgrace and his fellows are no better.'"

"'Tis so, I am pained to believe," said the Rector thoughtfully. "Truth has a tough contest. Romanism smothers up corruption with the pomp of ceremonial and the assumption of infallibility; and Dissenters and Non-conformists wish to leave nothing that is older than Calvin."

"I would add," continued the colonel, "that Allgrace at heart is a Puritan; and I question whether any of the descendants of those, who came out with Robinson in the May Flower, are more bigoted, more austere outwardly, more morose, and more repulsive in all that makes the external man, and the inner too, as far as we can discern. No unmeet representative, however, of the dreary solitudes, icy and rock-bound coast, and stormy and cheerless country of New England; his creed allows of no pleasures,—has in it nothing that is sunny and warm and comfortable; and wars against quiet and repose, as every way unfriendly to the spiritual growth. Contention, therefore, is his element; persecution his natural bent, and agitation his business from morning till night, and from night till morning. He comes here, therefore, only to act out his character. He comes here, therefore," continued the colonel, "hot and rancorous in his dislikes, yet so insensible as to be chilling

as his Plymouth rock ; black as the billows on Cape Cod ; and merciless as the north-west storm that howls in December over Massachusetts. And for what ? To break in upon the peace of this parish, and when its peace is gone, and you, worthy sir," addressing himself to Parson Gordon, "are driven off, he means to ensconce himself in your place."

Parson Gordon, during the communication of this information by the colonel, had remained silent, and appeared to be weighing deeply what he heard. Looking up at the colonel now, and seeming not to have heard the last remark, he asked :

"Pray, how came he to have orders in the Church of England?"

"Why," replied the colonel, "I knew him by reputation at Annapolis as one of the active agitators there about ten years ago. During a while he flourished well. Allgrace and a number of itinerant preachers from New England were then very busy. Their conventicles were well attended. Converts to the doctrines of Robinson and Calvin were made almost daily. You could hardly go to a house in Annapolis, or a hut on the road side, in the most obscure forest recess, where they had not insinuated themselves. 'Extempore prayers and preachments,' warm, as they said, from the Spirit, and needing not a bishop's hand to give the unction, were all the rage ; and never were people so taxed as they, never did money so readily and abundantly fall into the pockets of the Gospellers."

"Yes, yes. I remember the circumstance from report," said Parson Gordon ; and then turning to the colonel, the parson continued : "Being so well paid, Mr. Allgrace for one of his shrewdness has made an awkward mistake in seeking orders in the Church of England, where his pay will be almost nominal—a few pounds of worthless tobacco occasionally."

"His shrewdness is not at fault here," said the colonel. "Money and the comforts of this world is the game he is hunting ; and now that Puritan preachers have worn their cause threadbare, the people having discovered that, under the wide brim and steeple hat of the Puritan, and the Geneva-cloak, there lurked no less the man of unholy echery than of many texts of scripture, and of godless gain no less than of a prosy declaimer on vanities. Allgrace, to start his game, must sound now another horn. Coming as

a parson, however, if he can get a snug living, (the living here is better than Puritan preachers get now,) he is not a loser by the change."

"But how does he excuse or justify this change?" said Parson Gordon with indignation.

"Why," said the colonel, smiling, "his duty is to seek the lost sheep of the house of Israel; and, if he can't find and bring them to the true fold with the knotty club of a Boston Puritan preacher, should he not go after them with the pastoral staff of a parson? His calling is to save souls, and if they won't heed him as a preacher, may he not turn parson in order to command their attention, and win them to the faith?"

"That is," said Parson Gordon gravely, "provided it be not perjury to seek orders in a church when at the same time you deny their orders. That is so, provided it be no sin to swear obedience to bishops at the same time you deny any obedience is due to them, and mean to render none. That is so, provided a man may subscribe to the creed, liturgy, and articles of the church, while *ex animo*, truly he subscribes, not to these, but to the Westminster confession. Ah! colonel, it were better that a man should maintain his integrity, and in this world be poor, and of no account; looking to his reward in heaven, than to have fat livings, and worldly honours, at the loss of integrity, and to the loss of soul and body in hell."

"It is a shame," said Mr. Holt, "that dishonesty can so easily attain its ends. But, colonel, I feel obliged to you for this information, and will be still more so, if you will explain how happens this Mr. Allgrace to have fallen upon Doolittle, as his guide, companion, and friend?"

"Allgrace," replied the colonel, "knew Doolittle in Annapolis, and he has discovered, as I knew some time ago, that Doolittle's sister has some property; and he may seek an intimacy with Doolittle, in order to win his sister Dorothy. But, besides all this, he has hit upon the right man to help him. For, when a stand is to be taken, or an opinion advanced in the way of good, Doolittle is slow to act. I never yet knew him to compromit himself in defence of a friend, or for a principle. But, let him be committed in the wrong, as he is most generally, and you may guide or force a mule more easily. Or let the Roman Church be mentioned, and he is like said mule, when he fancies that a

large bee is at his flanks, disposed to bite and kick most furiously."

"But I have never yet understood why Doolittle became so set against Rome. Can you instruct us, colonel?" asked Parson Gordon.

"Doolittle," replied the colonel, "once went to Portugal. There he saw an auto da fe. As usual was conspicuous the procession of penitents and heretics; the former having on black coats with painted flames pointing upwards, and the heretics with the same kind of dress, but having on them besides pictures of dogs, and serpents, and devils, which were painted on their breasts. This sight was enough to make a nervously timid man dread the Church of Rome, but his nerves were subjected to a yet more fearful spectacle. He saw these poor creatures strangled, their bodies burnt, and, while they were screaming with agony he heard the Dominican inquisitor curse them. Hence Doolittle cannot think of Rome, or of any thing or person that in his ignorance has any affinity to it, without regarding the person or thing as he does Rome; and now religion with him is an anti-Roman mania."

"You are probably right," said Mr. Gordon, "but Doolittle now seems disposed to play the Dominican inquisitor himself, on whoever does not give in to the crudities and irregularities of the non-conformists."

"No doubt of it," replied the colonel, "and precisely what we should expect. Ingenious man! He thinks the only way of avoiding the black coat of an auto da fe victim, is to put on the black coat of a puritan; the best plan of escape from the painted devils of the inquisitorial office is, (though he is living among protestants where no such office exists,) to consign to the devil, by his sweeping condemnation, all prelatists and papists. Between the two, he, like every other ignorant fanatic, cannot discriminate, and he seems to be fearful he will certainly go to the flames, if he does not do his utmost to send there all who by any possibility might wish to send him to them."

Supper now was announced; the board groaned with its good things, and Allgrace and Doolittle were soon forgotten in dishes more savoury and palatable than the dissection and reductio ad absurdum of puritans and their infirmities. Even Brief's face brightened up as he saw a vacant seat near Miss Evelin, and love and good cheer seemed to have banished

from his memory the night's disaster. In due time thereafter there was a hurrying to and fro, all was motion about the establishment, and the hive of human bees that were clustered together so agreeably began to separate. When would the same company, neither more nor less, none missing and none added, but all there should the roll be called, meet at the same house under circumstances either the same, or as pleasant? Never! and yet we congregate, and then take leave without thinking that every face before us will not again be seen at one time this side of eternity, and perhaps never, even in that world to which we are hastening. Good evening, or good bye, we say, and with a laugh, or cheerful remark, we mount, and away. The night is cold, the air bracing, the moon shines brightly; many voices of fellow-travellers are heard about us, the tramp of horses is heard likewise; we button our cloaks around us, urge on our steeds, and talk rapidly and cheerily, and the good bye is not only forgotten, but we may never again stand on our host's threshold, and repeat it.

Colonel Smithson's carriage was returning by the meadow, and had reached the ford of Blay's creek. The tide was up, the moon was full, and, before the driver could guard against it, or was aware of his perilous position, the horses were swimming. Screams came from the carriage; and Mrs. Annie Jones and Miss Evelin heard the rushing of the water, felt that the carriage was sinking; down it appeared they must—effort seemed useless, and nature found in them the same voice and language, crying and tears, it had when in babyhood, helpless, as they were now in womanhood, they cried for help. Colonel Smithson, and the gentlemen, who were riding behind with him, hastened ahead, and tried at the risk of their lives, but in vain, to release the ladies and save them.

"My God!" exclaimed the colonel, "this is dreadful! Can we not cut the traces? Then the carriage will be stationary. It won't do," he added, "the water is pouring in. They must drown." All this time the colonel and Darnell and Brief were about the carriage, spending their efforts to no purpose. And the awful result just stated seemed to be inevitable when two riders coming from Pleasant Lodge dashed into the creek.

"Here's the difficulty," said one, who was Montrose, "I find that the driver, instead of crossing directly over, has

turned his horses too much to the right in the deep water. Now," speaking rapidly to his companion, Shepard, "if the horses can move the carriage but a step or so, the place may be forded."

No sooner said than he ascended into the carriage box, giving his horse the while to the driver, cracked the whip sharply, Shepard urging at the same time, and the carriage was seen to move. A shout went up from the other gentlemen, and the carriage moved a little farther. "We are nearly out of deep water," shouted Montrose. Crack went his whip. "Go! go!" shouted many voices; the belaboured and urged steeds strained themselves to the utmost. "All right!" said Colonel Smithson, and he laughed and cried by turns.

Montrose hastened to open the door, and taking Miss Evelin in his arms, wet, cold, and frightened to insensibility, bore her on his horse, Selim, back over the ford, through the meadow to Pleasant Lodge; no other house being within five miles.

Shepard extricated Mrs. Annie, a prize to him, and bore her, as he thought the most precious burden his arms had ever supported, over the ford and meadow, likewise to Pleasant Lodge. Mr. Holt's hospitable mansion accommodated that night all the persons just mentioned, and, besides, the members of the house; Parson Gordon, Emma and Adaratha having returned to the Glebe by the forest road. For, like the tent spoken of in Arabic fiction, Pleasant Lodge could accommodate few or many according to circumstances, and, though we cannot say,

"And now the midnight draught of sleep,
Where wine and spices richly steep,
In massive bowl of silver deep,"
— The page presents on knee,"

yet, as Mr. Holt had not learned the new commandment, "drink no wine or strong drink," at his instance his guests quaffed moderately of the warming grape, and found that and a large hickory fire both comfortable and wholesome after their wetting. The ladies received no injury from the accident; and the casualty became only an event to be talked about, and meditated over. The next day, attended by Shepard, Montrose and the colonel, Brief and Darnell, they rode to St. Mary's. On arriving at the castle, all the

gentlemen but the two former retired. The accident seemed destined, however, or likely to be more than an accident.

Montrose and Shepard had only done what every other man would have tried to do under like circumstances. But such a service on minds rightly constituted leaves the fragrance of a grateful remembrance. Mrs. Annie could not think of her singular preservation by the united address and boldness of Shepard and Montrose, without the very natural feeling of gratitude, and hence had a further reason for liking Shepard. His passion for Mrs. Annie had not slept, since he had abandoned all thought of Emma, and he availed himself of this opportunity of pressing his advantage. And few men possessed equal powers of pleasing. He was not handsome, nor, unless he meant to be, agreeable. There was at times an expression about his face which few understood, and few persons besides could be as repulsive, when he chose to make himself disagreeable. He was now in an agreeable mood, and his homely features, and his face, expressionless as it was occasionally, brightened, kindled, and shone with uncommon radiance and attractiveness. He himself was, perhaps, not unconscious of his varied talents; for who is? If we were, we should not use them. If we are, it may be doubted whether we have any. In the way of accomplishments, Shepard could do almost any thing but sing. Still he had the soul of music and poetry. Indolence was his chief fault, and his mind, active in devising whatever he asked, cared not to put forth an effort till goaded to it by some cause external to itself. Mrs. Annie, however, was at this time, as generally, stimulant sufficient to arouse him, and call into active and engaging development his rich powers. He seemed now to breathe in an atmosphere both entrancing and exhilarating; and an atmosphere that seemed to relieve his mind from every clog and give it wings; and Montrose, who was near him, conversing, playfully, with Miss Evelin, was both pleased and amazed at the colloquial affluence, which Shepard exhibited, without seeming to parade it. He, Montrose, was less under the influence of the mischievous god, and also less in danger from him through Miss Evelin. Still, Montrose was not altogether free from his influence, nor wholly safe, when he shot at him, through the charms of the belle of St. Mary's. On this occasion the imperious beauty laid aside her hauteur, and putting on the cestus of Venus, became dangerously attractive. And, as

Cupid is said to be so potent as to ride at times the fierce lion as his steed, and again to break the thunderbolts of Jove, he had tamed down the haughty Miss Evelin. A day in the country has been said to resemble an Idyll; sparkling and singing itself away in a light song; and this day at the castle seemed to be one. The party were light-hearted, free from care, and abandoned to the enjoyment of the moment. Where they were sitting, they had from the windows of the castle a fine view of St. Mary's bay, its silver sheen, and the deep blue woods beyond; while the rural and sweet, soothing aspect of every thing out of doors reflected on the company its own comfort and cheerfulness. They talked of love, poetry, mountains, torrents, cottages and courts. Montrose sat in the bow of the window, and contributed his part to fill out this rhapsodical explosion of youthful feelings, and of a dreaming heart. And, as he gazed upon Miss Evelin, he was surprised and pleased to observe how the generally statue-like, and soulless character of her face now was touched into softness and a glow. "She is really charming," thought he. "What a change." And then checking himself, he added, "But she is not equal to Miss Gordon."

How common is it for young persons, so situated, to deal in hyperbole? and how apt is the mind under the gentle stirring of the spirit of love, to bubble up, and sparkle! breaking out occasionally in notes of melody, and glittering with flashes of light; like a sylvan lake which is touched by a gentle breeze, and lighted up by sun-beams. Shepard felt all this, and, while Montrose was singing with the ladies, Shepard took a pen he found near by and wrote the following:

"Our life is as a river,
 Flowing on, flowing on.
 A light on it is breaking,
 A boat on it is shaking,
 The waters play around it,
 The breezes gently fan it;
 Hope as helmsman trims the sails,
 Dreaming not of coming gales,
 Blithely sings merrily on.

"Our life is as a river.
 Flowing on, flowing on.
 The white sail is bending,
 The boat is swiftly wending,
 The waves around are foaming,
 And off we fly a roaming;
 Wanderers bold and free,
 Eager for the distant sea,
 And blindly hurry on.

"Our life is as a river,
Flowing on, flowing on.
Rocks are under lying,
The winds are sadly sighing,
Clouds begin to gather,
Look out for stormy weather!
The seagull wild is screaming,
And we of peace are dreaming;
The sun is going down.

"Our life is as a river,
Flowing on, flowing on
And we can stop it never,
Since onward it is bound,
Far out to open sea,
Where is no land, nor tree,
No shade, nor rosy bower;
But storms do ever lower
Upon the wanderer's way.

"Our life is as a river,
Flowing on, flowing on.
Then let us take our pleasure,
Without stint, or measure;
And wait not for to-morrow,
Lest there will be sorrow;
And stranded on the shore,
Our journey shall be o'er,
On life's narrow sea.

"Our life is as a river,
Flowing on, flowing on.
But what care we for weather,
If we take it together?
We'll wander slowly in the coves,
Listen to concerts of the doves,
Bathe at night in the moon's ray;
Then, gliding gently to the bay,
Make our life a holiday."

Having written these lines, Shepard passed them to Mrs. Annie, who read them, blushed, and fearing lest Miss Evelin and Montrose might see them, put the paper in her bag. Shepard and Montrose past some days at the castle in such good company, and the latter at length was almost unable to define his position with regard to Emma and Miss Evelin: being not unlike a piece of steel, which is placed equidistant between two magnets of the same powers of attraction.

The next Sunday Montrose, at the risk of displeasing his unknown friend, attended service at the Roman Chapel. After mass he and the ladies with Shepard spent the day by invitation at Mr. Durford's; and there they met Father Canon and Lawyer Brief. During the afternoon, as is common in the families of some members of the Roman Church even now, cards were introduced; and Montrose was pressed

to make one of the party. Mrs. Durford was the partner of Father Canon. A relative of Mrs. Durford, who was present, was the associate of Mr. Brief, who however, would have preferred Miss Evelin; and this last signified to Montrose a wish that he should assist her in the game. "This won't do," thought Montrose, "I am proof against this solicitation." And he firmly declined. In this act conscience had a share, and perhaps also the fear lest the news of this sinful profanation of the Lord's day might reach the ears of Emma and her father. For our characters, like our lives, are a mingled yarn of good and ill together.

"Some protestant scruple, I presume," said Father Canon, half ironically. "But a scruple, Mr. Montrose, is a small matter; only the twenty-fourth part of an ounce; or, as some say, the third part of a drachm. Well, now, one's conscience must be shaking in the balances, if the twenty-fourth part of an ounce will make it kick the beam; and one's throat must be unreasonably small, if his conscience cannot swallow the third of a dram!"

"Conscience indeed!" said Mrs. Durford, "what has conscience to do with it? Mr. Montrose surely means to make fun of us," and the good lady laughed, as if she had discovered something extremely ridiculous. "Conscience about playing cards on Sundays. Why, what can be more harmless?"

"'Tis a very great matter," joined in Shepard, smiling, "this thing called conscience. It doth make cowards of us all."

Miss Evelin turned to Montrose, and, with a look that came nearer shaking his resolution than an argument might have come, she said, in a tone half reproving and half inviting, "Surely, you see nothing very wrong in cards, where there is no gambling?" A simple question this.

"I have played," he replied, evasively.

"You play still," she continued, and he was hardly proof against her archness; "and if it be a sin to play cards at all; why not on one day as well as another?"

"There is no sin in eating meat," replied Montrose, "yet according to your church it is a sin to eat it on Fridays. However, I stand ready to do whatever is courteous and honourable. For my own sex there are many things I would not do, which I could not refuse at a lady's command."

Father Canon was about to explain, but Montrose gave him no time.

"If scruples," he continued, "may be easily swallowed, and are but dust in the balance, I happen to have a protestant conscience, and hope you will excuse me for having a smaller throat, and less swallowing capacity than a Catholic. A sin which might choak me, you might wash down easily as a trifling crumb with usquebaugh or ale."

Father Canon seemed anxious to reply to this remark. The slightest cloud passed over his face. He changed his position in his chair, shuffled the cards in hand, and hemmed twice, as if clearing his throat. But after a pause of a few minutes he concluded to let pass whatever was unpleasant, and with a bland smile said:

"If you belonged to our order, Mr. Montrose, you would see the propriety of an occasional relaxation. Your Protestant Bible tells you it is wrong to be idle all the day, but not to work all the day. Esop says the bow must be unbent sometimes. If there be an unpardonable sin in dealing or handling cards after mass in the morning, why it must be a discovery of bright Dr. Calvin."

Shepard looked hard at Montrose, as if he would know why he refused, and said, ironically, "Surely your education embraced a part at least of the various and profound arts, which are played by fifty-two square pieces of paste-board?"

"I can play at primero, picquet, and ombre," replied Montrose, "but prefer not to play on Sundays."

"On Sunday! Sunday!" said Father Canon. "You forget, Mr. Montrose, that while in Jamestown and the Virginia province, card playing is punished by fine, or whipping, we in St. Mary's, thanks to Lord Baltimore, are not so tied to a judaical sabbatizing of Sunday. I'd undertake to absolve you of any sin you may commit here."

"Thank you," said Montrose, ironically. "Doubtless you think a primero particularly a very Christian game, when that saintly man, the defender of the faith, Harry VIII., loved it well. Card-playing cannot be scandalum magnatum, when that self-denying man, Jack Falstaff, boasted his love for it,—and penitent for having neglected it, said: 'I never prospered since I foreswore myself at primero.'"

The cautious priest felt this caustic reflection, but said nothing.

Shepard looked up, both amused and gratified, and whispered to Montrose, "A thrust most skilfully made."

The playing went on, and Montrose hoped he would be no further importuned. Mrs. Durford, however, a very woman in one thing at least, ignorance when to yield a point, opened upon Montrose her battery again, and laboured to make it appear that his dignity in some way might be lowered by yielding.

"I see no dignity," he replied, beginning to feel a little sore, "either in playing, or in refusing to play cards. I have made my apology to Miss Evelin, if she accepts it, I hold myself excused. I now repeat it to Mrs. Durford, and if she insists, I must obey."

"Oh no! by no means," replied Mrs. Durford.

"Indeed!" said Miss Evelin, and this acknowledgment of her sway seemed to make atonement for his refusal.

"Dignity," said Father Canon, "is a habit to be put off or on according to circumstances. Count Grammont found Cardinal Richelieu jumping with his servant, and, in order to make his court to the cardinal, offered to jump with him, and allowed the cardinal to beat him."

"Which means,"—joined in Shepard, waggishly, laughing at Father Canon as he spoke,—"that you must jump cards with our good cardinal here, and be the courtier to play very badly."

There was then a laugh, and Montrose, addressing himself to Miss Evelin, was glad to be able to pass the time in conversation, while the rest were playing. Still Montrose's attention was often caught by the interest which the priest showed in the game of picquet which he was playing with Mrs. Durford. One moment he was calling out, "Carte blanche; come discard." The next, striking on the table at the time, "Ah! see here; tierce, quart, quint, and sixième." And then, pushing back the chair, "Give me joy. The tricks are mine."

"Yes, yes," said Mrs. Durford. "Ah, father, we poor women are always tricked by you."

And then followed a hearty laugh, and the jolly priest began to deal out again.

In the meanwhile Mrs. Annie, who was playing with Brief, thought painfully of her own want of courage to

refuse taking part in what she feared was wrong. Few, when Satan woos to sin, have the moral nerve to say, "No." We are apt to shuffle off, not cards, but holy responsibilities, and well established principles; and, instead of looking at and acting upon them, to evade them. Montrose himself, though brave, was not brave enough to tell that Roman priest, card playing was a desecration of God's holy day. Ridicule sharper than a spear he feared would pierce any breast plate he might throw before him; and he did not wish to appear ridiculous before the ladies too.

After the card party, Father Canon drew his chair close to Montrose, and seemed anxious to establish between them the best amity, and Montrose did not turn his back on the flag of truce. But the father wished to do more. He seemed anxious to know something of the state of Montrose's mind,—

"Miss Emma is —," pausing as if he wanted words, and looking closely at Montrose.

"A charming woman," replied the latter, instantly.

"Quite a confession," said Miss Evelin, hearing the remark.

"No doubt, no doubt," said the priest, "for you must know, sir, that, although our celibate vow denies us the privilege of appropriating any of the daughters of Eve; still we do not any the less admire their loveliness." And there was an earnestness and *con amore* manner in Father Canon which said that he would not have objected if he, like St. Peter and the Apostles, could have been, as St. Paul advised, the husband of one wife. "Even I have often admired Miss Gordon's force of character, and have asked myself, where did she get it from?"

"You forget," replied Montrose, courteously, "that Parson Gordon's whole person, manners, and conversation, indicate great strength of character."

"No, I forget no such thing," quickly said the priest. "The parson is one of the best specimens of a Scotch clergyman I have seen. We do not agree in all things, but our barks are sailing on an ocean big enough for both of us to make a harbour without either running each other down, or getting in each other's track. Some men, Mr. Montrose, are like dark lanterns. Their light shines but in one direction. They can see but in one way, and all else is dark to them. They have no sense of the outward, and certainly

none of the inward, and no sympathies but in the narrow line where their feeble light extends. Tell them of any thing else, because, forsooth, they do not see it, they will not allow it to be true. They are practical believers in the saying, all truth is in a nutshell; but they claim to have cracked the nut and ate the kernel, while they maintain that you and I and others can get but fragments of the shell, over which, they say, we are ever wrangling."

Montrose smiled, and remarked that Father Canon must have been drawing the likeness of Mr. Allgrace, of whom he had just a glimpse at the party; and the priest explained that he had encountered this worthy the day before in the State House yard. His long cassock, cap, and girdle, let him know who he was, and added the priest:

"If the arch fiend himself had been near, the creature could not have seemed more put out. He hurried out of the yard, and I, taking him for no mean representative of Satan, began devoutly to cross myself, which he no sooner discovered, than he quickened his pace, apparently more frightened by the sign of the cross than my priestly undress."

During this conversation, the attention of Montrose was called by a remark which Miss Evelin made to Mrs. Annie, and evidently intended for her only:

"Oh, Annie! Father Hunter has put on me such a penance that I want to play with you to get rid of a part of it at least. What say you?"

Before Mrs. Annie could or did reply, Lawyer Brief, who, during the evening had envied Montrose the company of Miss Evelin, heard this question, and caught at it as a means of enjoying her company, and said that he would take Miss Jane's banter with pleasure. With some embarrassment Miss Evelin said,

"Oh! your penance is too heavy. You lawyers tell too many stories. I am afraid to run the risk."

"I'll be answerable for that," replied Brief, in a tone of supplication. "Let the condition be, if I lose I do your penance, and my own too. If I win, I stand as now, in statu quo."

So fair a proposition Miss Evelin could not object to, though the attorney was the profferer. The play began, was carried on spiritedly, and, perhaps by the counsellor's management, Miss Evelin gained the game, and thereby relieved herself of the penance which her confessor had

imposed upon her. Hereupon Montrose turned to Shepard, remarking in a low tone :

"Her sins sit lightly on her. What a farce is this ! She obtained from her confessor the promise of absolution from her sins on the condition of certain penances, and she has rid herself of the penances by a game of cards on Sunday !"

"Well," replied Shepard laughing, and continuing the same under tone, "can you blame her ? She's wise to shuffle off responsibility on the first occasion."

"Brief is a dotard," said Montrose, "to be willing to be saddled with her sins, for one of her smiles."

"Ah ! it is a weight he can easily carry," said Shepard ; "he's a packhorse that has to carry so many heavier burdens that Miss Jane's peccadilloes are but a few pebbles thrown into his saddle bags. And besides, the attorney is probably as adroit in letting his confessor as little into his weak points as he would an adversary in court."

They were now summoned to tea, and this delightful beverage was regarded then as a rarity, as it was then just finding its way to the tables of the upper classes, not however without a horror from some who maintained that tea dealers were immoral members of society, and who agreed with Patin that tea was "*l'impertinente nouveauté du siècle*."

At table, Montrose sat opposite to Father Hunter, and surveyed at leisure this singular and singularly striking man. The points of this gentleman's mind and character were strongly marked in his face. If Goethe was, according to Heine, the impersonation of Grecian art, he may be said to have been the embodiment of Jesuitism. While Goethe's eyes were tranquil as those of a god, from under Father Hunter's heavy brows and lids, as from a pent house, his cold and ever roving eyes looked forth sternly, searchingly, and unquietly, evincing the insensibility of an order that tramples on human ties, and the unquiet ambition that, like the wind, would penetrate every where. His face wore the expression of care, except when he smiled ; but Mr. Hunter's smile, like Marmion's showed that

"In the glances of his eye
A penetration keen, and sly,
Expression found its home."

His powers were evidently very superior, and it is prob-

able that, under other circumstances, and generally in his own estimation, they may have been, and were, powers for good; since energy, will, ability, were plainly his by the lines and character of his face and head. But he wanted urbanity—there was a lack of brotherhood and sympathy with his kind. Goethe is said to have carried his head ever proud and high, not so with Father Hunter,—his was generally bent downward. He was too concerned, perhaps, to look up,—either cared not to catch the smiling and happy face of nature, or was unable to lift himself above sublunary cares to Him, who alone can fill our hearts with joy and peace; and who can enable us to go bounding on our way with the wings of the morning, and to meditate calmly and devoutly in the serenity of the eventide. Mr. Hunter was one of the instances, often seen, of men occupying positions which are too circumscribed for their range and grasp of faculties. It would be painful to see a Michael Angelo no more meetly employed than in carving and working on cherry stones. When a youth, chipping blocks in his father's carpenter shop, Hildebrand may have felt and suffered from a portion of that far reaching ambition which he afterwards displayed, when, as Gregory VII., he filled the papal throne; and doubtless it cost Father Hunter much trouble to smother the flames that fired him in his humble station. If, with his ambition and gloomy cast of character, he had been clothed with the frock of a dominican, Torquemada might not, more aptly than he, have presided at the judgment seat in the deep vaults of the Inquisition. But all these powers for good or evil on a large scale were, however, not exactly thrown away in his lowly sphere. The Church of Rome takes human nature as she finds it, and, by giving it scope and play to a certain extent, as Napoleon did good and bad characters under his government, makes it serviceable to her ends. For no one in the province did as much for Rome as Father Hunter; no one made as many proselytes, or intrigued as successfully with the Protestants. Even Dr. Bray, at the convocation he held in Annapolis, spoke of, and deprecated his influence.* We fear, however,

* In the appendix to Dr. Hawks' Ecclesiastical Contributions to the His. of the P. E. Church in Md., pp. 515, Mr. Hunter is spoken of by Dr. Bray, the Commissary, as the chief among the numerous priests at this time in this province; and whose intrigues and activity are said by the Commissary, in his address to the convocation, to have made "more perversions to popery than in all the time Maryland has been an English colony."

as the shrewdest casuists know least the workings of their own hearts, that this diplomatist in religious matters—this negotiator of the interests of souls, and this diver into the secrets of others, never introverted his diplomatic sagacity. He had a glass to look into the hearts of others, but no mirror to reflect to him his own. And it is probable that this knowledge of the deceitfulness of the human heart, never led him to suspect the guilelessness of his own. Some would ascribe this to the school of which he was the embodiment, and others to the practice of the confessional and his life of uniform intriguing. He who believes that the end sanctifies the means, will scruple at no means which he may deem necessary—like Eugene Aram, commit murder to obtain money—or, like the Pharisees, compass heaven and earth to make one proselyte, though hell, not heaven, is the gainer thereby.

But, alas!

“What a tangled web we weave
When first we practise to deceive?”

Under the best circumstances of life, poor human nature cannot always stand upright; and it assuredly never will be upright, and see and love the truth for itself, if it is trained in a school whose guidance is not upward, but oblique, and whose training is not in the straight and narrow path, but in the tortuous by-road of dissimulation.

After the company retired, and Mrs. Annie was alone in her chamber, the events of the day had not left on her mind the impress she would have wished. The intellectual conversation of Father Hunter, the facetiousness of Father Canon, the wit of Shepard, and the direct sense of Montrose, had not removed a sort of consciousness that this was a day one too much on the debit side against her in the doomsday book of God. It was a holy day—an oasis in life's desert—and she had not rested from worldly pleasures, and by fitting occupation drank of the life-giving fountain. Still Mrs. Annie felt that Father Hunter's power over her for good or bad was not easily resisted. She felt herself yet in a measure in his toils. His dictum might not make her regard with entire complacency that which all her previous habits had led her to condemn as sinful; still his dictum made it seem to be not wholly wrong; and, in common with others of his flock, who, unhappily, were even more under his control, she felt his influence as a secret, all-seeing

and yet invisible oversight follow her into her closet, challenge her secret thoughts, arraign her conscientious scruples, and impress her with fear. It might be wrong, then, to keep Sunday as they had kept it—Father Hunter may have erred in the slavish discipline which she had inflicted upon herself at his instance. He did the Church of England, she doubted not, great injustice in impeaching her orders; but for some time, being her confessor, he had been to her as God—and hence, while she wished she had spent Sunday differently, and felt uncomfortable for it, she could not, and did not, firmly resolve not to abuse that holy day in the same manner again.

CHAPTER XIII.

AN ADVENTURE AND ITS CONSEQUENCES.

"'Tis at such a tide and hour,
Wizard, witch, and fiend have power,
And ghastly forms through mist and shower,
Gleam on the gifted ken;

* * * * *
But there are sounds in Allan's ear,
Patrol nor sentinel may hear,
And sights before his eye aghast
Invisible to them have passed."

SCOTT.

AFTER supper, Mrs. Annie and Miss Evelin—attended by Shepard and Montrose, we should have said—returned to the castle, and soon thereafter, Father Canon rode home; and last of all Father Hunter got into a boat that was at the State House wharf.

"Pull the canoe to the Tavern of the Free Briton," said the priest to the negro who acted as the oarsman, "and be quick about it. I must be at St. Inigoes' before moon rise."

"Yes, yes, massa priest," said the negro, pushing off the boat, and rowing it towards the landing near the tavern. The stars were shining brightly, the night was cloudless, and though the moon was not up, yet it was not too dark for some persons, who were on the wharf next to the State House Square, to recognize distinctly the person of Father Hunter, as his boat passed by the wharf, within twenty yards of it. There were three persons on the wharf, and they had watched the boat anxiously from the moment she left the landing at the foot of the State House Square; and close and anxious whisperings and a few heavy mutterings passed between them about Father Hunter.

"There he is," said one, whom our readers will please to recognize as Snarler; "and now, if we gits him into our clutches, we'll have that release the popish son of thunder gagged out of me. Come, friends, hurry after him." So saying, Snarler and his two companions descended into a boat, and began to unfasten it.

Meanwhile Father Hunter's boat was fast gaining on the tavern wharf, which she reached very soon after the boat of Snarler and his assistants had got fairly out into the stream. "Wait my return here," said Father Hunter to the negro; and he hurried to the house. As he came to the door Father Hunter saw that half-a-dozen young men were sitting around a table with bottles before them, and appeared to be as merry as liquor could make them.

"Come, come, my hearties," said one of the revellers, "here's to the pious, glorious"—hiccup—"immortal memory of our late and most—most"—hiccup—"excellent King William, who freed"—hiccup—"freed us from popery, slavery, brass money, and wooden shoes."

"With all my heart," said one of the party, "wooden shoes and popery," and he filled and emptied a glass as quick as said.

"The very thing," said another, "immortal memory," and his head fell almost on his bosom as he spoke, "to—to—to—King William, who's—who's died for brass money, and popery;" and down went his glass.

"Fools," muttered the priest, and he turned away.

"Here's a letter for you," said the landlord, coming out, and giving him a letter, "left here by the mate of a vessel from England direct, which anchored off here near the wharf this evening."

Father Hunter took the letter, and muttering, said, after reading it:

"Sad times in old Ireland. So it seems the Protestants are not willing to be bound even by the Limerick treaty. Dr. Dopping, the usurping bishop of Meath, has denounced the articles of the treaty in a sermon, and advises that no faith be put in Catholics. Well," he continued, "these fools had better, with the well wishers to the exiled son of their late maltreated sovereign, James II., drink to the health of the little gentleman in black velvet—that mole so providentially sent—whose little hillock made the horse of William of Orange stumble, and broke his collar bone—lucky fall was it for the church. Thus Providence, by means of agents most contemptible in appearance, brings even kings to an untimely end." The revellers shouted again, and his dark face looked darker. "Shout on, meet worshippers of Bacchus. Shout on, drunken idolators of a dutch prince. Shout on—if old Tacitus were living he would class you with the barbarous Germans of his day.

They thought that life could have no charm equal to the hope of an infamous paradise of undying drunkenness after death. Shout on—your echoes will reach those vaults, where, with drunkards and the like, you will hold your revels hereafter.” He stopped a second, and read the letter over again. “Well, the times are trying to us indeed!—the seething caldron burns here and it is smoking in Ireland. I found it too hot there, and came here. Happy, painful and sad as it was to leave lovely lough Coutra, to work for holy church in St. Mary’s, and work I have had, and work I am likely to have. Between churchman and puritan I have my hands full. Be it so.”

And the priest with the letter crushed in his hand, from the powerful emotions that shook his heavy frame, turned slowly away from the tavern on his return to the boat, muttering as he went on:

“They used to tell me I was no Celt, for I want the flaxen hair and ruddy complexion of the descendants of the ancient Erse. My blood, and skin, and temper too,” he added in a melancholy tone, “bespeak the Milesian. Dark passions and a spirit of revenge belong to my race. For wise purposes doubtless was I so constituted. The ends of Holy Church may be attained, and this feverish blood be cooled in a thirst of revenge on our persecutors. How? is the question. The release is obtained,” he continued, with evident satisfaction, “and a merciless extortioner both defeated in his lust of property, and left to champ the bit of unpleasant thought. Good, good! What next?”

At this moment the priest heard the splash of oars, and then the sound of feet stepping ashore to the right of the road to the landing, and evidently but a few paces from the wharf.

“Some more mad bacchanalians,” he continued. “Fools! that toast of yours will be changed into groans for mercy.”

“Now, friends,” said a low voice, speaking quickly and in a tone so nasal as not to be mistaken, being Snarler’s unquestionably, “now, brave friends, here’s a handful of the yellow fellows, if you nab him.”

“Yes, yes,” muttered the soft voice of Doolittle, “throw the rope well over his head, and then we’ll all hold on.”

“Trust me for that,” said the third person, in a tone of deep solemnity. “I’ve no love for the beast or any of her gettings,” and the three men stood at an angle of the road

immediately by, and just touching which the priest must pass, and he had reached this point with the word mercy on his lip, with which Father Hunter had closed his last reflection, and was so intent on his own thoughts as to have walked on with his head as usual turned to the ground. The next moment he felt a rope thrown over his head. He threw his hand up to catch it and free himself, when his assailants, being too quick for him, succeeded in getting it around his neck, and being fastened as a noose, they had no difficulty in throwing him down. Strength and resolution, all of which to a very great degree were the priest's, availed nothing, when a noose was tightly drawn, and the tighter too, the more he struggled. To rifle the pockets of the prostrate body, while the sufferer was barely able to breathe, was no difficulty, nor were the unscrupulous assailants slow in availing themselves of their advantage. Some papers, besides a breviary, were seized, and the trio prepared to hasten to their boat with their spoil, when a voice was heard calling to another just following, "Help! help!" and the next instant the strange friend of Montrose, followed by Montrose, fell heartily upon Snarler, Doolittle and company. The first blow aimed with his cudgel, told effectually on Doolittle, who, more scared than hurt, fell, piteously crying, "Oh, don't, don't kill me." Montrose came upon Snarler. He aimed a blow with his short sword at him more hotly than judiciously, and Snarler, like one bereft of his senses, seeing the jeopardy in which he was placed, made no resistance, and Montrose, supposing he had struck him, though his sword merely cut off Snarler's cue, pushed on after the third person, whom he got up with just as this worthy gained the boat, and, with oar in hand, was endeavouring to push it off. He raised the oar menacingly, and Montrose, reckless of consequences, was about to spring into the canoe, sword in hand, when the oar descended upon him so heavily as nearly to knock the breath out of his body. "God of mercy!" exclaimed the strange gentleman, "he is murdered!" and almost breathless, he pressed on, feeling, though a man of years, so nerved by anxiety and resolution, as to be equal to any encounter. He had gained the boat and was about to lay his hand on it just as the worthy in it was getting it off. "This is my place," said the priest, coming up at the moment, with voice half choked; "I'll settle with this robber." Jumping into the boat as he spoke, with force

and vehemence almost supernatural, he wrenched the paddle from him whom he now recognized to be the Rev. Mr. Allgrace. The next moment the priest had thrown the paddle into the river, and held Allgrace pinioned in his arms as tightly as if rivets of iron fettered him. The boat in the meanwhile, from the impetus given to it, glided into the stream, and Father Hunter, with his prisoner in his grasp, sat in the boat, and both were out of the reach of Montrose and his strange friend, as the two were about to come to the priest's assistance.

"These rascals," said Montrose, speaking quickly, and addressing his companion, "Doolittle, Snarler, and I verily believe the Rev. Mr. Allgrace, for who else can look so like him? meant to have murdered this stout priest. Let us hurry to his boat which is near, and go to his assistance."

But the negro, who was left at the boat, hearing the scuffle made when Father Hunter was throttled, ran to his assistance, and came just in time to undo the noose and allow him to repair, as he did, to the assistance of Montrose. In the meanwhile Snarler, minus his cue, though a gainer by the release which he was so fortunate as to have kept hold of, and greatly alarmed, hurried back to his house; Doolittle, with one of his teeth knocked out by the well aimed blow of Montrose's strange friend, rose hastily, and seeing Snarler ahead hurrying into the city, pressed on after him. In the interim, also, the negro, who had been on the lookout, saw enough of the events just related, to discover that the priest was in the other boat, which now, driven by the wind, was drifting towards the landing place below the State House.

"Fore God!" exclaimed the negro, "massa priest and one man in boat—and boat row itself. Massa priest want me for true." And negro Jack was soon alongside of the other boat.

"Here, Jack," said the priest, "take this man, tied as he is, to St. Inigoes' house, and tell Father Canon to put him for safe-keeping to-night in the closet of the private chapel. Do you hear me?"

"Ay, ay, massa priest," said the negro. "Massa den," he continued, as he spoke, lifting the well manacled body of Allgrace out of the other boat into that which belonged to the priest, "want me for hab coffin made for dis man:" for, from the unresisting condition of Allgrace, Jack inferred

that the next thing necessary to be done with him was to bury him:—as the private chapel was used for the burial service of the Roman Church just before interment.

“Do as I tell you,” said the priest sternly, “and see that this man does not escape you.”

“Ah! he not dead den,” said the negro, feeling more comfortable, “me ’fraid for true to take de corpse by mine self home; but de live man no more hurt me dan de hog in a bag. So be quiet you massa dere;” laying Allgrace with some difficulty in the bottom of the boat. The priest then took an oar from the other boat, and, as he was paddling towards the State House wharf, and Jack with Allgrace well secured was making all haste towards St. Inigoes’ house, Father Hunter said, muttering to himself.

“Worse and worse. One bold and audacious attempt has wrested from me what it cost me all my tact and resolution to get. The release is no longer mine. Two men, besides this reverend puritan parson, have my papers. The parson has it not about him, though I should judge, from a letter I have from his pocket from Governor Seymour, I hold in my hands a document of some value to be turned to account hereafter perhaps. The other robbers I don’t know. They must have escaped. What next?”

The priest jumped ashore, and, climbing the steep ascent to the top of the hill, he walked more rapidly than usual towards Mr. Durford’s residence; meaning there to pass the night.

“What next? My rescuers were this youth Montrose, and a stranger that I saw St. Agnes’ day at the chapel. Can he be Delafield? that gifted but unfortunate, that generous but rancorous hater of the apostolic see? What does he here? When first we met he was in Dublin, and, being taken suddenly very sick, his landlord, a good Catholic, without consulting him, sent for me. Well do I remember his reply in answer to my interrogatives and suasions about attaching himself to the holy see; some wildness then the effect of disease only removed in part, being still upon him.”

The holy see!—Most holy indeed! Holy especially in Ireland where, as you Celts say, “to go to the chapel is to go to the stone; yea worship where the ancient idolators in Ireland worshipped. Beltane fires then were kindled there, and fires like unto Baal are now kindled in your modern idol temples.”

"And now," resumed the priest after a pause, "what does he here?" "But, but," and the priest walked less rapidly, "what is to be done with that puritan parson? Father Canon will, with all his ready wit, be at a loss to know how to dispose of him. Well, well, perhaps it matters not. His friends, my assailants, will be too afraid to further commit themselves to move in the matter. So I'll consult with my good friend Durford, and wait here to-morrow; and despatch at once a note to Father Canon."

He had now reached Mr. Durford's; whom he found at home, and with whom he was closeted in serious conversation some time, and then the servant with the note as mentioned was despatched. What were the contents of the note, and what was the disposition meditated of Mr. Allgrace we know not.

While these things were passing, Allgrace, helpless as a log, and in a mood and with feelings not the most enviable, lay in the boat. So soon as he could recover himself to speak, he endeavoured to ascertain from the negro what he meant to do with him, and after much questioning, could only extract the reply: "Why, massa dere, me put you in de closet for true, where de dead man lay; and be still dere, nothing trouble you." Allgrace shuddered at this intimation, and he made a desperate effort to break loose. But his efforts were useless, and he was content to lie still, and submit to the hearty laughs of the negro, who chuckled with no little glee to see as he said: "Dat massa priest tie de white man as massa priest hab niggur tied when he gwine to be whipt."

"Will that priest of Satan have me whipt?" said Allgrace, half choking with passion and fear.

Jack's reply was laconic, and to the point. "Ky! Massa want for steal, and massa want for murder, and den massa dink he no want flogging to make him no steal, and murder next time."

"If that mass priest," said Allgrace, with badly suppressed fear, "lay his ungodly hands on one, who, like me, stands high with his excellency Governor Seymour, he'll rue it, ay! that he will." This was rather muttered than boldly spoken out.

"Ungodly, heh!" said Jack. "Fore God! massa it ungodly to steal and kill; and if you aint den niggur Jack do penance ebery day dis week. Ungodly heh! Look here

massa, niggur like me no steal, no kill, and me aint de devil's man much as dem what does. And you want for kill and rob, and den say you aint de child of de devil ! and dat massa priest is, cause he tie you to hab you whipt good for true."

Allgrace gritted his teeth, and cold sweats passed over him at the mention of the castigation which seemed certainly impending. He strained himself to the utmost, and succeeded in sitting up ; but he could do no more.

"Come, come, massa," said Jack, laying his hand upon him, and forcing him down on his back, "you be easy dere. Massa priest Canon wont give you more dan one little hundred lashes. Dem no kill you, massa. You take dem, and, like poor niggur, eat your breakfast, like noting happen."

"My good fellow," said Allgrace, softening his tone and manner, "put me ashore any where but where that mass priest lives, and you may have half the money there is in my purse in my left pocket."

Jack stopped, rested his oars on the gunnels, and asked him to repeat his remark, as if he doubted the correctness of his ears ; which being done, Jack wished next to know how much there was in the purse.

"Ten crowns and a half, with some pennies," said Allgrace, solemnly.

Jack's eyes glistened, and his teeth, like a row of pearl, became very distinct. "Ten crowns and a heap of siller besides," he muttered, "Jack rich for true. Massa priest no want dis money, and massa priest no know dis robber got it."

This said, Jack's resolution was taken, and his plan formed. He intimated his wish to count the money for himself, and, as the moon was now up, it was bright enough to do this. Allgrace yielded, thinking this was the only chance of escape, and being willing to part if necessary with the contents of his purse, rather than be at the mercy of Fathers Canon and Hunter, and be locked up with the dead, as he feared he should be in the private chapel. Jack took the purse, counted deliberately over and over again each crown piece, and each penny, and more than once asked how much massa say all was.

"Ky !" said Jack, chuckling, and looking at the money. "Dis make niggur heart feel good. Dis buy whiskey ; it

buy backy ; it buy blanket ; it buy lasses ; it buy fine clothes for Jack, and Jenny, him wife, and my seven darters and sons ; and den money heap arter all left in Jack's pocket," and suiting the action to the word, Jack returned the money to the purse, and put the purse in his own pocket.

Allgrace observed it all, but thought it well enough to let Jack's avaricious feelings work their influence, upon him ; as thereby he might be more likely to gain him over.

But Jack was more knave than fool. "Money mine now," said Jack mentally. "No more massa's dere. If niggur let dis massa go, den, massa priest whip me for sartain. Why me not keep money, and let massa, who rob and want for murder, get whipping?" And so Jack concluded, in spite of the intreaties, remonstrances, threats, and even heavy denunciations of Allgrace, who was now worked up to the most ungovernable rage. But Jack knew Allgrace to be powerless, and hastened to row ashore ; being now more anxious to have him in a place of safety, than Allgrace supposed a few minutes before he was ready to release him.

"Come git up, massa robber," said Jack, raising him. "Here, massa priest Canon," addressing Father Canon, who, aware of Father Hunter's punctuality, and of his wish to be at home by moonrise, felt some anxiety to know what could have detained him. We may conceive his surprise on seeing Allgrace, and tied too, and on not seeing Father Hunter to explain it ; and, above all, on hearing the extravagant tale of Jack, that massa thief and two others would have hung up massa priest Hunter by the rope, with which Allgrace was now tied, but for him Jack, "and two other white gemmen ;" and that massa priest Hunter say, "Keep dis here robber in de closet good and safe, whar de dead corpses stay till he come back." For once Father Canon felt neither disposition nor ability to crack a joke ; but helping Jack to get Allgrace out, he called a servant, and ordered Jack and him to take him to the closet designated, lock the door, and then bring him the key. His orders were obeyed, and Father Canon revolving many, and not the most pleasant thoughts, returned to St. Inigoes' house.

In the small room or closet, where Allgrace found himself, there was no light, but it was very dark. Forebodings of the worst kind came across his mind, being associated with all that was most fearful which he had read or heard,

or supposed in the dens and caverns of the inquisition ; and of which the lashing that Jack spoke of was to be but the first or least part. These fears impressed Allgrace most painfully ; and strange to say, yet acting as they did on his callous and singularly constituted heart, they produced no remorse ; for not once did Allgrace regret his attempt upon Father Canon ; not once did his conscience smite him for the violence he had offered to one who had not injured him, —nor was his conscience so tender as to be hurt by the suggestion, that, in the violence offered to Father Hunter, he was guilty of robbery. His conduct in that whole transaction, with singular obtuseness to every thing, except what favoured previous views and wishes, he believed was precisely what it should have been. It was no sin, he thought, to throttle and rob a Roman priest, but it was a most heinous sin to dance, even when the company present was select, and the motions were neither unbecoming nor improper. We fear Allgrace in some respects resembled the fox in Dryden's Tale of the Cock and Fox.

“ ——— full fraught with seeming sanctity,
That feared an oath, but like the devil, would lie ;
Who look'd like Lent, and had the holy leer,
And durst not sin before he said his prayer.”

How long Allgrace had lain there he knew not. Time past on leaden wings. After long, dreary, and painful watching, listening to every noise, and trembling at every sound, lest it might intimate his near injury, Allgrace heard a step in the chapel immediately adjoining, and saw that his closet-door had been unlocked, or by some means came open. The puritan so lay as to see distinctly what passed in the chapel. Judge his horror on finding an altar with lights upon it, a crucifix, and some books of offices ; a corpse extended on a bier, the face of the dead covered with a white sheet, and a cross laid upon its breast. Then began the solemn service of the dead, and he distinctly saw and heard Father Canon and his assistant as they were engaged in this fearfully impressive office. Thus the puritan was present at mass.

The chant and prayers in due time were over, a light barely visible was left burning on the altar, and Father Canon and his assistant retiring closed the chapel door. But they left open the closet door, and Allgrace would have been greatly relieved if they had closed it. He would

have looked in another direction rather than at the white, and now frightful sheet, which covered the face of the dead; but, either from inability to move, or from fear, or from both together, he lay looking on the unpleasant, and, to him at such a time, appalling sight. Every thing was still as death. He could hear even the beatings of his own heart. The pale, dim light on the altar made every thing seem more fearfully frightful, especially the stiffened corpse, from which he found it impossible to withdraw his eyes.

Allgrace felt cold tremors pass over him, and each moment seemed to him an hour of agony. Would day ever dawn? The lash was dreadful, but his present state was so wretched that the lash he thought would be preferable. Surely the day-light never penetrated into the chapel; for hours, he felt confident, had passed, and yet day had not come. And it was terrible to be obliged to lay there, and to be forced to look upon what chilled him into horror. At length he heard, or thought he heard, a light step. His heart beat violently. A shadow passed across the room, and so lightly that, if the person were real, he must have walked upon air. Allgrace groaned, and he thought he should have died, when he saw a tall figure dressed in white advance slowly and stealthily to the corpse, and, lifting as slowly the sheet that covered it as if the dead might waken, gaze wildly upon the face of the corpse; and then, in a manner and tone most idiotic, break out into a chuckle or half laugh. Surely an infernal fiend had come there to look upon its victim, and then laugh over its ruin. The figure then turned its glaring eyes to the closet, and, if a goblin damned had looked upon Allgrace, he could not have been more frightened. He wished to scream, but his voice refused its utterance. He sought to call for help, but this was impossible. The poor creature would have prayed, but beyond a sinking of the heart, and a crushing sense of danger, and a horror that froze his blood, he could do nothing; and this state would in a few minutes have extinguished the spark of reason, if not of life, in Allgrace, had not the figure, with a scream that seemed the wail of a lost spirit, darted out of the chapel the way it came. And, notwithstanding, such was the intensity to which Allgrace was roused, that he lay back in a swoon, insensible of any thing.

He had hardly been in this state before the chapel door opened, and Father Canon, followed by two servants, came to the closet.

"The puritan has swooned," said Father Canon, "what has frightened him? Come, quick, bear him hence! Here," he added, taking some water, and sprinkling Allgrace's face with it, freely. Allgrace opened his eyes wildly, muttering indistinctly. "He is not dead," continued Father Canon. "A puritan is not so easily killed as may be supposed. Come, men, undo him, and bear him hence, and see him safe at the State House landing, and hurry back."

In a state of half consciousness, Allgrace was borne down to the boat, and was nearly half way to the State House, before his sensibility had entirely returned. The cool night air assisted greatly to this effect, though even when he landed at the State House wharf, he was not free from some bewilderment, and felt much as we generally do after a distressing and frightful dream.

CHAPTER XIV.

THE MEETING AT MRS. DURFORD'S—A BOUT BETWEEN PARSON GORDON AND FATHER HUNTER ON THE ROMAN SCHISM.

"Unless to Peter's chair the viewless wind
Must come and ask permission when to blow,
What further empire would it have? For now
A ghostly domination, unconfined
As that by dreaming bards to Love assigned,
Sits there in sober truth—to raise the low,
Perplex the wise, the strong to overthrow—
Through earth and heaven to bind and to unbind!
Resist—the thunder quails thee! Crouch—rebuff
Shall be thy recompense! from land to land
The ancient thrones of Christendom are stuff
For occupation of a magic wand,
And 'tis the Pope that wields it: whether rough
Or smooth his front, our world is in his hand."

WORDSWORTH.

As Father Canon stated, there had been no interruption of the harmony externally subsisting between Parson Gordon and himself, nor had there been any between the former and Father Hunter. And, if affairs had been allowed to take their own course, there might have been no formal rupture afterwards. For both the parson and the priest had the right to edify their separate congregations, and if, as was unavoidable, their opinions clashed, while their people arrayed themselves into parties, this disagreement need not set them against each other as two fierce polemics. It is said that the Chinese put two crickets into a small bowl, and then, tickling them with a feather, make them jostle each other, till, becoming enraged, they fight so furiously as to tear each other limb from limb. But only men of the cricket stamp, whose range is a narrow bound of contracted views, can be set on by others to fight for religious differences. However, Parson Gordon was called upon to make the argument in the fifth chapter to rectify the views of Colonel Smithson and Mrs. Annie, by Father Hunter's aspersive remarks on the Church of England; the priest had intrigued with some of his people, and hence, though not wishing, he could not avoid a personal conflict with him.

We mentioned that Father Hunter spent Sunday night at Mr. Durford's, and here the next morning he saw, and had a long conversation with Mrs. Annie, and ascertained to his regret and vexation that he was fast losing his hold upon her, for she not only believed in the orders of the English Church, but almost doubted the regularity if not rightfulness of those which the Roman clergy held in Ireland and the province of Maryland.

"May I ask," said Father Hunter, with forced calmness, for the events of the foregoing day had not improved his temper, "where Mrs. Annie obtained such views?"

"Certainly," said she, with some emotion; and, alarmed at the expression of his face, she was just able to give the substance of Parson Gordon's remarks at Colonel Smithson's.

"Who told you my orders were questionable?" and the priest trembled as he spoke, and his eye nearly froze Mrs. Annie.

"Parson Gordon," was the faint reply, "but at another time."

"Too bad," said the priest. "You must leave the pure fountain of Catholic truth to drink at the turbid puddle of heresy. And he told, heh! that my orders came, not from the Catholic Church in Ireland, but from a schismatic body there? that I was ordained by intruders, and not by St. Patrick's successors? A pretty statement truly! As if St. Peter's vicegerents could be intruders in St. Peter's jurisdiction; as if the shepherd had not the right to gather the sheep into the fold, wherever he might find them. In schism heh! Then the angels, who kept their first estate, were rebels, and Satan and the host, who fell with him, constitute the proper hierarchy of heaven!"

Mrs. Annie knew not what to say, and was not a little pleased when she heard a rap at the door, and Parson Gordon was announced. Father Hunter seemed to be evidently displeased; while Mrs. Durford, coming from another part of the house, advanced to meet the rector, saying mentally:

"The very thing I wished. This parson has wofully corrupted poor Annie. Father Hunter is greatly put out about it, and I mean he shall have a chance to pay the parson well."

In some respects, Mrs. Durford resembled the Dean's lady, as described by Crabbe:

"Miranda sees her morning levee fill'd
With men in every art and science skill'd,
Men who have gained a name, whom she invites,
Because in men of genius she delights.
To these she puts her questions, that produce
Discussion vivid, and discourse abstruse."

The good lady feasted upon the thought of seeing the two divines in hot controversy, and, if her address could bring about such a result, she determined to spare no means necessary to it. So soon as Parson Gordon was seated, and had delivered a message to Mrs. Annie from his daughter, this being the object of his visit, Mrs. Durford, afraid lest he would then take his leave, as he probably would have done, wished to know if he did not admire a new picture which she had lately obtained from Ireland. Now the picture was very harmless, and the parson could not dream that this would open a wide field of controversy between him and Father Hunter; whom he had met occasionally, and whom he did not like on account of his intrigues with the members of his parish. The picture was over the mantle-piece, and in full view of the company. It represented St. Patrick, "the apostle of Ireland," with his episcopal robes, mitre, and staff; and surrounded on both sides by a crowd of people kneeling. Under the saint's feet were a number of snakes, which he appeared to be crushing. The rector observed the picture, made a common-place remark and smiled. "You smile," said the hostess, "You like my picture, eh! Was I not very fortunate in getting it? Or perhaps you've no faith in the patron saint of Ireland, and laugh at me for my Irish partialities?"

"I smiled," he replied, "at the painter's audacity," and he turned to the priest; and pointed out the want of artistic taste in the conception; and then, addressing himself to Mrs. Durford, said, playfully, "you see the saint, madam, does not move a muscle of his face. Do you think that St. Patrick could have trodden even snakes to death so coolly?"*

"Why parson," said the lady, "perhaps you don't fancy this picture of the snakes for another reason? You don't think it is a true story? 'Tis true though, aint it father?"

* In my possession is the life of St. Patrick by an unknown author or compiler; which was printed and published by John Murphy, Baltimore; the frontispiece to which contains the picture referred to in the text.

"We read so," said the priest, warily. "The Catholic Church has not in her holy army of saints one more distinguished than the apostle of Ireland. His works, labours, odour of sanctity, and miracles, are well attested and established."

"Not his expulsion of the snakes," rejoined Parson Gordon, smiling.

"Oh!" interrupted Mrs. Durford with an extatic start, "Nothing can be more certain. To deny it is to deny the faith—I didn't know, parson, that you were such an infidel," and the good lady laughed outright.

"Good madam," said the priest, slowly, "St. Patrick's expulsion of the snakes may stand or not as a fact established, but it does not touch the Catholic faith. The church has here expressed no opinion. Joceline states that St. Patrick, being on the western coast of Connaught, he gathered together the different varieties of serpents, and venomous creatures, and drove them headlong into the western sea."

"Why all this," said the parson, looking with some surprise at the priest, "is of a piece with other absurdities, that are occasionally palmed on the credulity of mankind. The Irish chroniclers, you know, are not remarkable for their accuracy, nor do they seem to be desirous or careful to conform their statements to the soberness of truth. The English monkish historians have also become ridiculous in tracing back the history of Britain to Brutus, a Trojan, the contemporary, according to them, of Eneas; making the settlement of Britain before the building of Rome. But your Irish chroniclers go back even to Adam, whose grand-daughter, according to them, settled Ireland. We were taught to believe that the first naval expedition, recorded by profane writers, was that of the Argonauts; but the monks of Ireland will have it that the first naval expedition was that of the Milesian colony which came to Ireland, and, with the same recklessness of truth, and prodigality of imagination, they say Niul, son of the first Milseian chief, who was first of the O'Neill family, married Pharaoh's daughter, and gave his name to the great river Nile."

The priest looked incredulous, and returned only a contemptuous smile. Parson Gordon, unabashed, continued:

"You know that St. Patrick's earlier biographers say nothing of this supposed miracle."

Mrs. Durford expressed her amazement, and the priest gave him a searching look, and said :

"You forget St. Patrick is the apostle of Ireland; and the first of that golden chain which connects the Irish Church with the chair of St. Peter; and that, for this reason, and the saint's labours and miracles, we revere him."

"The golden chain, which connects the Irish Church with St. Patrick, did not start from the chair of St. Peter, as you term the Roman see," replied Parson Gordon, slowly and firmly.

"This is news!" said the priest. "Is it a discovery of which you are the trumpeter? or did some one make it for you?"

"The discovery," replied the rector, "is as old as the fact it discloses, and, if it be news, I am happy to be, even to you, the herald of good tidings."

The priest knit his brows, and, with some flurry, said : "The grace of meekness is as much needed in an argument as the skill to parry or return the thrusts of an antagonist."

"Very true," replied Gordon. "No offence was intended. This grace of meekness, better than a well padded doublet, deadens the force of blows. I will proceed then to the proof." Confronting the priest so as to command his attention, Parson Gordon stated that St. Patrick was, by birth, a Briton, and was admitted to holy orders by St. Martin, Bishop of Tours, in France, or by some other Gallican Bishop, and that the orders of St. Martin, or the Gallican Bishop ordaining him, came from St. John, and not from St. Peter.

"I care not," said the priest, speaking quickly, "where the saint was born, or from whom descended, or who gave him the grace of orders. I know St. Patrick received from the apostolic see the confirmation necessary to his episcopal and metropolitan authority."

"This cannot be," replied the rector, "for, according to the spurious decretals of Gregory VII., (which you Roman divines, however, admit to be of authority,) the pall must be given, in order that subjection and obedience to Rome may follow. But the pall was not given till near one hundred years after St. Patrick's day; and it was six centuries later when papal obedience followed. Hence not at all, in this saint's lifetime, could there have been such a confirmation

of his authority in Ireland by the Bishop of Rome, as would have bound him and his successors to own the supremacy of the Roman see."

"The Irish Church then never was connected with the chair of St. Peter?" asked the priest derisively.

"Not from the beginning," replied the rector. "Her orders, through St. Patrick, came not from Rome. Her doctrines and practices also differed from those at Rome;"—and, in despite of the contemptuous incredulity with which the priest received this statement, Parson Gordon then stated, that, for the six hundred years, from St. Patrick's time to the twelfth century, when Ireland came under the papal yoke, infants were baptized on the eighth day—Epiphany was a day for the public administration of baptism. Easter was kept on the Sunday between the 14th and 20th days of the paschal moon. Wednesday, was a fast day; the sacrament was administered in two kinds; and other customs, not known at Rome, and wholly of eastern origin, were observed in the ancient Irish Church. "Nor was this all," continued the rector, waxing warm, "while the members of the Church of Rome bowed the knee to images,—the members of Ireland's ancient Church refused to worship them; and actually went so far as to accuse Rome of heresy in opposing the decrees of the Chalcedon Council about the three chapters; charging Rome with a leaning towards the Nestorian heresy. Now, if her orders, coming through St. Patrick, from the Gallican Church, which traces her orders from St. John—and if her customs, agreeing with those of the Churches of Asia Minor, (whose orders came from St. John,) do not prove that the ancient Irish Church is of eastern origin, and therefore not indebted to Rome for her orders, what will, or can?"

"Ah! my fair friend and myself are greatly edified," said the priest. "How happened it, however, that this papal yoke was thrown over the Irish Church? For we find this independence of the apostolic see, and these eastern customs all melted away in Ireland. Pray tell us;" and this cool insolence, more than an argument, said how little with him weighed the rector's statements. And it demanded no ordinary self-command to pursue, in defiance of it, the even tenor of his way.

"I wish to prove to this poor child Annie," said Parson Gordon, mentally, "that this Father Hunter is a schismatic,

and that she left the Catholic Church in leaving the communion of the Church of England—and her salvation is worth more than the reputation of a skilful fencer in retort.” He therefore replied :

“In A. D. 1140, we find the earliest assertion of any thing like papal jurisdiction in Ireland. For the first time, then, the pope was allowed to confirm the authority of the Irish bishops, though even then the right to nominate persons to fill the Irish sees was not conceded to him; and the dues, called Peter-Pence, were still paid the Bishop of Armagh, who was the primate of all Ireland. Fifteen years afterwards, (1155,) Pope Adrian gave permission to Henry of England, ‘both to conquer and instruct the Irish people,’ and he obliged them to receive Italian monks in place of their spiritual pastors, the Irish clergy, and to profess the Roman faith to the denial of the pure faith of their fathers.”

“You admit the apostolic see,” said the priest, “had a foothold in Ireland in the twelfth century, and you know it has had one ever since; be so obliging, sir, as to say whether the Catholic clergy there are schismatics.”

“Certainly,” replied the rector. “By your own admission the apostolic succession there was in St. Patrick and his successors, and the Roman Catholic clergy there have not his succession, but that of St. Peter. A man, for example, living in Maryland, claims to have been sent here by his late Majesty, William of Orange, though all the time he is an agent of Louis XIV. This is an illustration of your position, and that of your ordainers, the Roman bishops in Ireland.”

“When you have made out your argument,” said the priest, curtly, “it will be full time to end with an illustration. The finish of the column, by giving to it a Doric, Ionic, or Corinthian capital, is only applied after the marble has been quarried, and its proportions worked and chiselled.”

Parson Gordon smiled. “The clergy in Ireland in 1560, who were in possession of the sees and cures, threw off the papal supremacy; and the Roman Catholic clergy there, from that time to the present, hold adversely to them and their successors, and consequently are intruders and schismatics. Especially so, since these Roman bishops came there first at the instance of a Roman prelate, Pius IV.,

and ever have derived their functions and mission from a source not in Ireland, and not traceable even remotely to St. Patrick, and not acknowledged by the rightful and true Catholic clergy there. A limb cannot belong to a tree unless it grow from it. A river is not a part or continuation of the same water, when it flows not from the same font with the water to which it is said to be identical. You surely will not maintain that St. Patrick's succession does not reside in St. Patrick's, but in St. Peter's successors! or that St. Patrick's succession, after all the talk about it, is, like a rill, absorbed and swallowed up in the great ocean of St. Peter's vicariate!"

"But could the Irish clergy rightfully cast off obedience to the holy see?" asked the priest.

"Why not?" quickly rejoined Parson Gordon. "The Irish Church was independent of Rome a thousand years. She was in bondage to her only four hundred years, and has been again independent for a century and a half; and which independence she will most probably ever maintain. Through the giving of four palls in the twelfth century to the four archbishops of Ireland you claim that the Irish Church came under the yoke of the Roman see. Be it so. But were not the bishops of Ireland, four centuries later, as competent to refuse the palls, as they did, and by the refusal, disavow all papal dependance. Certainly. Obedience to the Bishop of Rome is no where enjoined in Scripture, or Catholic antiquity; and this claim of Roman supremacy and obedience, being pressed by the Bishop of Rome, produced the lamentable separation of a portion of the branches of the Catholic Church; and in this same twelfth century, when the Irish Church was enslaved, the churches of the East and West parted asunder—not to meet again perhaps for centuries."

"Well, sir," said the priest, "you have found me a patient listener, I hope you will allow. But I fear Mrs. Annie will think that we divines are very, very prosy. Mrs. Durford has wisely retreated. Young ladies would prefer a discussion in which poetry could scatter its roses, and the smart contact of opposing bodies would strike out fire occasionally. We are taxing her benevolence."

Mrs. Annie took the hint, and withdrew.

"I see his drift," said the rector to himself. "He either wishes to remove Mrs. Annie from harm's way, as he

judges my arguments, or we may be coming to the tug of war; and he does not wish to be restrained by her presence. It is perhaps as well for her. More for the present she might not digest."

And, without waiting for him to proceed further, the rector said:

"You know what took place at the Reformation. The Irish bishops availed themselves of the withdrawal of the state's oppression, and the assistance of the civil power, and they returned to their former independence. Thus, in the ritual which they adopted, and in the doctrines and rules which they maintained, they returned, nearly as practicable, to those which their predecessors had anciently holden. You must allow, then, that the Irish Church now, I mean that which is in communion with the Church of England, has St. Patrick's succession, and the doctrines and usages in all material points which in his day prevailed."

"The Irish bishops and clergy," asked the priest, changing his tone to one of unusual blandness, "had, you think, a happy escape from the paternal authority of the Roman pontiff to the authority of the English king. Was it not flying from the wide-spreading shade of the majestic cedar of Lebanon to the pitiful shadow of the bramble for protection? Yea, flying from him, whose outstretched arms and benign countenance showed him intent on his Master's charge, to that cruel secular power, which, vulture-like, employs its talons only to rend and destroy? In this sense kings and queens, I suppose, may prove themselves nursing fathers and nursing mothers to the church!"

The rector saw the *petitio principii*, the begging of the question, in this remark,—a mode of argument not uncommon, and he also perceived the sneer it carried with it.

"It was a strange display of fatherly authority," he replied, "in Pope Adrian, in the 12th century, to empower Henry II. with fire and sword 'to plant the Christian faith in Ireland,' quoting the Pope's letter. It was as strange a display of the same fatherly kindness to seek to corrupt the fidelity of the Irish to their spiritual fathers, the bishops and clergy of the Irish church! The Roman pontiff may have resembled the majestic cedar of Lebanon in ambitiously extending the mildew shade of his branches, or power, over the Irish church, when it was basking in the sunlight of its own apostolic guides. And the protection of the Roman see

was that of the bramble and thorn, since all in Ireland, as elsewhere, who have fled to it, have been pierced and bled from it, wounded by Roman exactions and bleeding from the evils which the Roman schism caused in Ireland. Great benignity was it in Pius IV. to seek to lure them on to error! But, it seems, according to you, that the secular power is a vulture when it is not made the executor, and, I may say, executioner of Rome's behests! Now Pope Adrian found the sword of Henry II. very convenient to drive the Irish into the Roman obedience. Where were the vulture's talons then? Not there, you will say; but these talons were all outstretched and fatally rending when Queen Elizabeth's sword, against the wishes of Pope Pius and his successors, was wielded to protect the Irish from the intrusion of an Italian prelate. Strange! you forget the service which Constantine, Charlemagne, and others rendered to Christianity, and how gladly bishops of Rome welcomed ever the secular power when their own spiritual thunder was disregarded, whenever 'Holy Church' had to deal with people or princes who knew their rights and were unyielding. No, sir, Pius IV. had no authority or jurisdiction in Ireland. Consequently the priests and bishops he sent there, his titulars especially, were intruders. Their succession was but schism hatched and perpetuated, and from a spiritual ancestry so doubtful came your orders and the orders of the Roman clergy in Ireland and this country."*

* By a change of country schismatics do not lose their schismatic character, for we may say in the words of the adage, substituting *ordinem* for *animum*, "*Non ordinem mutant qui trans mare currunt.*" The Papists being schismatics in Great Britain, as such came to the United States to establish colonies, and their character continued the same. The ancient Donatists, with all their orthodoxy, became schismatics by refusing to commune with the Catholic church, because the church would not conform to their ideas of discipline. The Romanists will not commune with the other churches of Christendom because the latter will not bow to the supremacy of the Roman see, and, like the Donatists, such non-communion renders them schismatics. The Romanists in Great Britain, who came over to America, are still more schismatical, for, besides non-communion, they have established separate altars in opposition to the bishops there of the Church of England, and the bishops in Scotland and Ireland, who are in communion with those in England; these being the rightful occupants of the sees in these kingdoms, and by coming here and seeking in the United States to establish colonies, they are further guilty of perpetuating their schism. Nor is this all. The first bishops of the Protestant Episcopal Church, Drs. Seabury, Provost, and White, were consecrated, the first in 1784, and the two last in 1787. But Dr. John Carrol, first Roman bishop of Baltimore, was not consecrated till 1789. There is a third difficulty in the way of the Roman orders in the United States. The ancient Synods required that at least three bishops should consecrate, and yet Dr. Carrol's orders

The rector looked excited, and the priest did not seem to be in any better humour.

"Unless," continued the rector, "certain miracles which were reported to have been wrought at the time of this Roman schism in Ireland, will make it all right, canonical, and catholic!"

"Be so kind as to explain," replied the priest, with well counterfeited ignorance. "If you were a young man, I should not wonder at your attempting to refresh a dry controversy with occasional fiction. It is like throwing a flower upon a dusty path. But you, as myself, are a little too old to deal in fiction. In place of playing with flowers, which may please the eye and regale the scent, we are expected to handle thorny and not the most fragrant truths, at all events to deal in a more marketable article than Protestant scandal."

"Very Protestant indeed," replied the rector, with a smile, "when the fabricator of what you term a scandal, was your Roman bishop of Ossory. But why tell you? You know that, during this schismatic movement in Ireland, it was said that a Protestant governor, who was a member of the ancient Irish Church, not a Romanist, was heard talking with the devil, that soon afterwards an explosion was heard, and the governor was found awfully mangled, and died raving mad. Neither have you forgotten that, (in order to help on, I must so interpret it, this schismatic movement,) it was said that St. Columbkille took the form of a wolf, and, seizing a fire brand, carried it in his mouth, and, applying it to a magazine of powder, thereby destroyed a large number of Protestants. How far such a movement could have been a righteous one, which needed such ridiculous tales to give it the colour of divine sanction, and whether the devil and a wolf were proper colleagues or allies in the Roman cause, I leave to those to prove who started and circulated such stupid stories."

came from Dr. Walmsley, a single consecrator, and what is more, Dr. Walmsley himself was consecrated, it is believed, by only one bishop. According to Champney, a distinguished Roman divine, where the orders are doubtful, the authority is invalid. Hence, the orders of the Romanists here, being doubtful, or only probable, their bishops here can have no true and valid episcopal vocation. What stuff then is all this too general prating about the Roman Church here being the Catholic Church. Impudence started this assertion, impudence maintains it, and ignorant people believe any thing so started and maintained. (See Palmer on the Church: p. 1, ch. xi; p. 6, ch. v. xi.)

The priest made no reply for some time ; at length judging it best not to let the discussion end so abruptly and unsatisfactorily, he remarked that the rector had not forgotten that, after Pope Pius IV.'s time, other bishops were sent to Ireland to keep alive the flame of apostolic grace, as he termed it.

"The titulars of Dublin and Cashel, who were salaried by the Spanish government?" replied the rector. "On their arrival in Ireland in 1617, they found the Irish sees in possession of rightfully ordained bishops, who came rightfully by them, and these bishops treated the Roman titulars as intruders. But, persisting in their wicked intrusion, these titulars raised the standard of revolt, and if your orders came through them, rather than through their predecessors in the same schismatic movement, they are here tainted with schism."

"You speak oracularly," said the priest with scorn. "I pretend not to have drank out of Protestant diggings either into the Scriptures or profane authors. My quaffs have been small, but I confine them to the pure stream of Catholic tradition which wells forth from under the eternal city, and travels down to us in the edicts and canons of the Catholic church."

"Impeturbable man!" interrupted the rector, losing his patience at this dodging of the question, and this falling back on a remark foreign to the subject, and designed to distract by its empty pretension, "I care not where you imbibed your information on this subject, my statement you cannot overturn, and my conclusion you cannot disprove."

"So you would maintain the righteousness of your ecclesiastical establishment in Ireland?" said the Jesuit, scornfully. "You have four archbishops and eighteen bishops in Ireland, and yet of laity who agree with them in creed there are not more than one-fourth as many as belong to the see of the Bishop of London."

"Why not?" replied the Rector, instantly, "the ancient archdioceses and sees continue if the Romanists in their jurisdiction outnumber those who hold the pure and ancient faith. You had no Romanists in China or Paraguay when your church established missions there. If it was proper for the Roman Church to have an ecclesiastical establishment among heathens it is proper that the Church Catholic proper should have one among a people who have greatly erred from

the true faith. Yea more, it is necessary. You cannot be trusted to indoctrinate the people." The rector said this warmly, and as he spoke he encountered the disagreeable scowl and the cloudy brow of his antagonist. "I must be plain," he continued, "my remarks are to our subject, not meant for you personally."

With a sardonic smile of derision and vexation, the priest affected to acknowledge his obligations for the courtesy.

"You cannot be trusted to indoctrinate the people of England," pursued Parson Gordon, "because you have had the masses under you since the schism first broke out there in the reign of Elizabeth, and in place of enlightening them you keep them in such ignorance that no part of Europe is more debased, more abandoned to superstition, and ungodliness." And the rector drew a picture of the moral depravity of Ireland contrasted with the comparative enlightenment and great moral superiority of the people of Scotland and England. The teaching of the Church of England, and even that of the Covenanters, had produced fruits of advancement and melioration, while the teaching of Rome was slavish, bestial and ruinous alike to mind and morals, to the individual and the masses. He then asked triumphantly if Rome alone had the true faith, and the candlestick of the Lord was with her solely, how happened it that what he called the schismatic and heretic Church of England trained up a people who stood first in the scale of intelligence and virtue? How happened it that the wolfish and bearish indoctrinating, as he termed the Covenanting teaching of the Kirk of Scotland, had produced a race of men who, though rough in manners, and behind England in letters, were of hardy virtue, and generally read to a very creditable extent for their times in the Word of God?

The priest winced under the inquiry, and, true polemic-like, denied the facts, clear as they were.

The rector was rather amazed at his assurance, and reminded him of the wretchedly low state of the Irish at the Reformation; when, according to Browne, Archbishop of Dublin, a cotemporary, even the secular clergy could not say the mass, nor even pronounce the words of it, and when the clergy exacted large fees for baptisms, weddings and burials, and were charged by the jury of Clonwell with concubinage, and with having wives and children. "In all this I see cause to rejoice at the Reformation in Ireland," said the rec-

tor, "for, if, as was stated at the time, 'fabulous stories and lying wonders' misled the people, and 'robberies, rebellions, thefts, blasphemy,' &c. abounded, the sooner papal thralldom was thrown off the better."

"Let pass, let pass," said the priest, roughly, unable longer to hold in. "You throw at me very frequently a formidable word, schism, sir. Words are mighty things; creeds are made out of them, and salvation hangs upon them. Pray, enlighten me with your ideas about it," and the affectation of ignorance and derisive scorn were admirably blended together.

The rector was sensible of all this, and resolved to master his indignation, and meet his adversary as a Christian soldier with the panoply of truth, and the grace of patient endurance. He, therefore, referred Father Hunter to 1 Cor. i. 10, where division or schism is condemned, and all are exhorted to be perfectly joined together. He quoted Romans xvi. 17, 18; where causes of divisions are condemned, and schismatics are said not to serve the Lord Jesus. He quoted 1 Cor. v. 11; where St. Paul classes schismatics with fornicators, covetous, idolators, railers, drunkards, and extortioners; and lastly, St. Jude, 19; where he terms schismatics sensual, and deficient in spirit.

"I want proof that we are schismatics in Ireland from the *lex scripta* of the fathers," said the priest, impatiently.

"All in good time," said Parson Gordon, "you remember a passage of St. Cyprian on this subject in his treatise, '*De Unitate*?'"

"Yes, yes," said the priest, repeating it, "*Nemo existimet bones de ecclesia pope discedere. Let no one think that good persons can leave the church. Most true; for, as the good bishop continues, Triticum non rapit ventus, nec arborum solida radice fundatum procella subvertit. Hence, sir, the wind scatters you Protestants, who are the chaff; while Catholics, who are the wheat, remain steadfast. Your roots extend only to Luther and Calvin; ours, being those of the Catholic Church, which is as a mighty oak, fasten themselves about the rock of ages; and so securely that the storm—blasts of passion, and the hurtlings and beatings of diabolic hail—pass over its lofty and wide-spreading boughs harmlessly, the noble tree all the time holding itself proudly aloft.*"

Parson Gordon seemed pleased at this display of life in

his antagonist, and continued: "You remember also that St. Ignatius, in his epistle to Trallus, says, 'He, who is within the altar is clean; but he, who is without, that is, without the bishop, presbyters, and deacons, is not clean.'"

"To the point, if you please."

"A river must wind its course," replied the rector, "to gather water enough from tributary rills to roll in majesty to the sea. You remember what St. Ireneus says here?"

"May my right hand forget its cunning," said the priest, "if I forget it. 'Nulla enim ab eis tanta potest fieri correctio, quanta est schismatis pernicies.' Hence you reformers, as you styled yourselves, should not have rashly attempted to improve the church; because the schism you committed was a greater evil than all the evils you could hope to remove. Let me thank you, sir, for this charming promenade in the groves of Catholic antiquity. Let us wander about here awhile." There was a cool and impudent complacency about him, which would have disconcerted one who had less self-command (that rarest, most difficult, and first of virtues,) than the rector; who, however, was not wholly unaffected.

"You shall be gratified," he replied. "For you will please leave the study of the martyred bishop of Lyons, where we now are; and walk with me to Constantine's great city. Here are convened one hundred and fifty bishops from the east, and Timothy, Patriarch of Alexandria, is in the chair. They are now about passing the sixth canon, to become in all time to the Catholic Church a rule for guidance and government. Let me translate it. 'We include, under the name of heretics, those who have been formerly cast off by the church, and those who have since been anathematized by us; and, *in addition* to those, those also, who indeed pretend to confess the sound faith; but *have separated themselves, and formed congregations in opposition to our canonical bishops*; or, as some render, *the bishops in communion with us.*'" The rector waited a second to note the effect. "Now," he continued, "apply these quotations. The Roman clergy in Ireland separated themselves, and formed congregations in opposition to the canonical bishops. Consequently the Council of Constantinople stigmatizes them, and, of course, their successors as heretics. Admit that they may have judged it became them to do so, still St. Ireneus says, they are not to be excused, and hence had no right to

attempt it. St. Ignatius next instructs us, that these and like separate Roman congregations, in abandoning their spiritual fathers, the bishops and clergy of the Irish Church, are unclean. They cannot then be a pure church, or pure parts of the Church of Christ. Your Roman congregations can also have no permanence; for St. Cyprian terms them schismatics. Well now, sir, what is the testimony of God's word in support of this opinion? Why, being schismatics, this word denounces you as reprobates, sensual, and reduced to the grade of the worst offenders. Further, you are aware that there can be but one Catholic Church in one place; as there can be but one altar, and one bishop. Hence your altars raised in opposition in Ireland, your bishops created and officiating there, in defiance of the canonical bishops then in charge of the Irish sees, give us reason to doubt whether either your ordainers or yourselves, being so trained, so descended, are any part of the Church Catholic." The priest tried to force a laugh. "Now," continued Parson Gordon, "on the ground of supposed schism, you condemn the reforming movement in England and Ireland; whereas the sin of schism lies at your door, and you have done, and do what you condemn; St. Patrick's succession then, and your boasted catholicity are—"

"Stop, rash man, no more," said the priest worked up above the point of forbearance. The door opened suddenly, and Mrs. Durford summoned the parties to tea. And the good lady had a stock of smiles and courtesies, laid up in bank, to be drawn on occasionally, which, with a good supper before them, could not fail to relax the brows, help the tempers, and relieve the minds of the disputants. Man is a physical being no less than an intellectual and spiritual one, and tea and attractive eatables come in very seasonably, and act as an agreeable diversion after hard study, or a knotty argument.*

* Palmer's work on the Church of Christ, Appleton's edition, vol. I. part II. chap. IX., above referred to, contains much on the subject of the Irish schism that the reader will find it to his interest to know: and Dr. Hook's Life of Archbishop Browne in his Ecc. Biography.

PILATE AND HEROD:

A TALE

ILLUSTRATIVE OF THE

EARLY HISTORY OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND,

IN THE PROVINCE OF MARYLAND.

"And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together: for before they were at enmity between themselves." ST. LUKE xxiii. 12.

"Full many an eve, and many a morn,
The holy lamps have blazed and died;
The floor by knees of sinners worn,
The mystic altar's golden horn,
Age after age have witness borne
To faith that on a lingering Saviour cried."
LYRA APOSTOLICA.

BY REV. HARVEY STANLEY,

RECTOR OF THE HOLY TRINITY, MD.

VOL. II.

PHILADELPHIA:
PUBLISHED BY H. HOOKER,
S. W. COR. EIGHTH AND CHESNUT STS.
1853.

PRINTED BY SMITH & PETERS,
Franklin Buildings, Sixth Street below Arch, Philadelphia.

CONTENTS OF VOL. II.

CHAPTER XV.

	PAGE
An Unamiable Character—Vice leads to Detection—An Adventure, and its Consequences,	7

CHAPTER XVI.

Superstitions—A supposed Vision of the Virgin—Lines on St. Mary's Eve, and on St. Dunstan—Captain John Coode—His Residence—Fears of a Night-Attack, . . .	23
---	----

CHAPTER XVII.

An Ugly Dream—Elfin Hall Besieged,	36
--	----

CHAPTER XVIII.

Laying of the Ghost by Father Canon—Conjectures on it—Mr. Allgrace's Nocturnal Visitors,	53
--	----

CHAPTER XIX.

Parson Gordon forced by a Storm to St. Inigoes—A Bout on the Pope's Supremacy, Horace and Purgatory, . . .	66
--	----

CHAPTER XX.

Mr. Delafield—His Reflections—Montrose Kidnapped, . .	91
---	----

CHAPTER XXI.

A Taking not a Robbery—Coode's Death—Mariolatery, .	104
---	-----

CHAPTER XXII.

Julia finds her Father—The Invocation of Saints—An Unpleasant Interview—The Worship of the Virgin, . . .	119
--	-----

CHAPEER XXIII.

A Delicate Inquiry—Perplexity of Montrose—A Strange Discovery—All Parties in Trouble,	PAGE 143
--	-------------

CHAPTER XXIV.

Adventure, Boldness, and Address of Montrose,	162
---	-----

CHAPTER XXV.

Redman not mortally Wounded—Annie sees her False Po- sition—A Courtship—A Discovery—A Scene at Poplar Spring—A Happy Day at the Glebe—A Storm,	176
--	-----

CHAPTER XXVI.

Adventures on the Way to Annapolis—Quaker and Ro- manist banded together against the Church of England —The Law-makers and Rev. Mr. Allgrace—Shepard's surprise and discovery,	193
---	-----

CHAPTER XXVII.

Annapolis — Governor Seymour—Captain Fendall—In- trigues against the Parsons—All in Commotion,	212
---	-----

CHAPTER XXVIII.

The House Meets—The Hall and Lobby Members—Mr. Delafield's Speech, and its Effect,	224
---	-----

CHAPTER XXIX.

Shepard's Hesitancy and Tact—The Supper—A Song— Whitter won over—Shepard's Speech—The Bill amended —Chagrin of the Puritans and Romanists—Shepard Assaulted by masques—Triumph of the Clergy of the Church of England,	240
--	-----

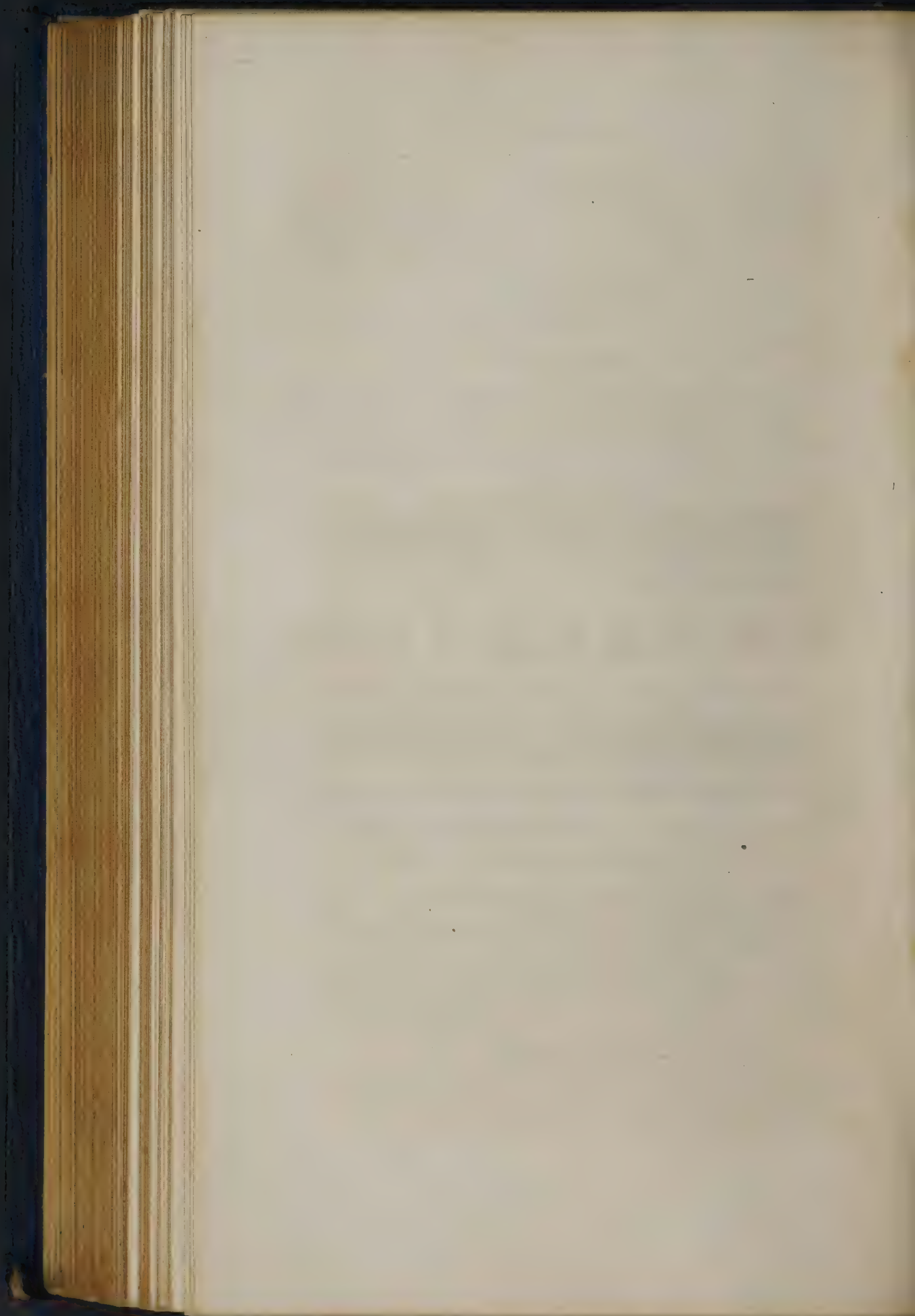
CHAPTER XXX.

The Conclusion,	265
---------------------------	-----

PILATE AND HEROD:

A Tale of the Church of England,

IN THE PROVINCE OF MARYLAND.



CHAPTER XV.

SNARLER—HACKETT—VICE LEADS TO DETECTION—AN ASSAULT AND
A MISTAKE.

"Passions wild, and follies vain,
Pleasures soon exchanged for pain,
Doubt, and jealousy, and fear,
In the magic dance appear."

GUY MANNERING.

Low fleecy clouds swept over the Chesapeake. The wind blew from the east, bringing with it as usual piercing and unpleasant humidity. The surf beat on the beach, and wild fowl, as before a storm, were noisy on the white wave; flying hither and thither; and then, with a wild scream as they descended to the water, huddled together; each one seeming to be clamorous to speak out his opinion, and perhaps concert means for their mutual weal against the coming storm. A schooner, with but half her sails set, was making up St. Jerome's creek; that empties into the bay a few miles above Point Lookout. Her helmsman seemed to understand his business, he ran her in without grounding on the shoal that makes out in that neighbourhood, and laying close to the shore to the left, dropt her anchor, and the sails are furled.

"Let down the boat," said the helmsman. "Captain," he continued, "I'll see you at the court house to-morrow," addressing our friend Captain Fulford. "When this storm blows over, you'd best work round to St. Mary's. Here you're snug, should it blow all the water out of the bay."

"Ay, ay," said the captain. The boat was let down, one man jumped in with the helmsman, and the two soon rowed ashore; and while the sailor in the yawl skulled back to the schooner, the other, who was Snarler, made his way up a hill to a house or hut nearly hid by a forest of trees.

"My trip to 'Napolis," muttered he, "may be mighty service to me. Hah, the captain knows a thing or two. He heerd a fellow who came here with him say that young De-lafield would soon be here. Zounds! should he come, and,

without the will that I've got as tight as death has got him who made it, prove all this property here, and at St. Mary's to be his'n, I'm boxed. But no, I aint born for nothing. That are will no body shan't see, and I hain't had lawsuits not to know Delafield must have the will to get his daddy's property."

He now came to the door of the hut. The door was fastened. He walked round the house—"What?" said he, "that wench Euphy didn't send my critter arter all! If I don't comb that black rascal, Jim, down and make the wench know her business aint her'n but mine, then may I be shot. This won't do," he continued, and forcing open a shutter, he entered the hut. "What? What's this? A man as I live—and asleep too. What can he want here? I'll bet he has been thieving." No one would have said so but Snarler; for the house was as naked of every thing to tempt a thief as Snarler and the like are born into the world physically and morally.

"I'll brain the whelp," he continued, seizing a chunk of wood from the fire place; but, as he was about to strike, the sleeper turned over, and Snarler saw it to be his man. Dropping the chunk, and kicking the negro—he brawled out lustily, "where's my critter?"

The negro rubbed his eyes, and recognizing his master, hurried out to catch the horse, who had rambled a little into the woods. The horse was caught, and Snarler rode on to St. Mary's. This unwholesome specimen of a man was about five feet nine inches high, carried but a little flesh, stooped somewhat, and walked quickly and unsteadily. His dress troubled him but little, provided his pockets were golden. His face and features were not large. His forehead was low and narrow. He had evidently no constructiveness, and never sowed any wild oats. Plutarch says, those who sleep in the moonlight are stupid and senseless; and perhaps the lunar influence of this lower world may have dulled in him quickness and sensibility. He was a usurer out and out, and according to Lord Bacon, "the greatest Sabbath breaker; because his plough goeth every Sunday. For his money lent out worked for him Sundays as well as other days." He had also a peculiar expression, or perhaps want of expression, that might have led an observer to think he was a man of great simplicity, or ingenuousness, if this simplicity, or vacancy, had not been at-

tended by an unamiable cast of countenance, and a singular meaning out of the eye, that seemed to prove his simplicity to be the absence of all high, noble, and exalted sentiments. The unpleasant expression in his face was also a tell tale, denoting him to be one of those unhappy temperaments, who make themselves miserable, and, so far as they can, all around miserable likewise. This inanity of any thing noble and elevating in the expression of Snarler's face was increased by the half-snub character of his nose, most generally indicative of small shrewdness and fox-like sense. The greatest fault in Snarler was the littleness of his soul. He seemed to have no kindness or affection.

He moved in his nearly solitary home, (having only his niece, the simple-minded Euphy, about him,) as might float an iceberg on the ocean; repulsive and cold, but without its splendour. He appeared to think that warmth of manner, or a kind word, or the display of kind feelings towards the poor girl, who depended on him, was a waste of time, a childishness, weakness, and improper condescension. So seem to think some would be greater men than Snarler, for fear lest they may lower their dignity; forgetting that a common table spoon will hold his brains who wants a soul to feel and care for others, and that the dignity which rests upon a cloudy face, a knit brow, and a pinched or screwed up lip is as properly the orang-outang's as theirs. If Snarler gave his niece any thing, or granted her a request, he did it with the ungraciousness with which he might throw a useless bone to a cur, that he felt half inclined to give a kick to. If he asked her for any thing, his wishes were orders, authoritatively expressed, and so snappishly that the poor girl trembled when she waited upon him. And it was Euphy's great cross and trial to be poor, and especially to be dependant on this churl of an uncle, who thought it behooved him to watch her as suspiciously as he did his money, to grant her no favours he could decently refuse, and to find fault with every thing she did—often too before he knew that he himself would not have done the very thing, and precisely as she did it. And, if at any time he should chance to be out of humour, and this was nearly all the time, Euphy was made to feel his spleen, till he had tired himself down in fretting; or, unless she could contrive to steal away to a neighbour's house, and there, under the

plea of bad weather, indisposition or the like, she would stay free for awhile from his growlings and petulance.

"Sad life mine," she would say. "Uncle thinks I'm only made to fret at. Indeed! I'll marry Mr. Hackett. Love in a cottage is better than this sort of life; though uncle does say marrying without money is the foolishhest thing in the world. I'd rather be an oyster in a shell, then I'd be quiet, than pass such a dog's life as this."

These meditations of the victimized girl often would be interrupted by a squealing voice, calling out,

"Come here, wench! You are always out of the way. Now look at you. This aint either Sunday, nor aint it a holyday, and yet you have got your best frock on. Very well, wear it out, and you'll wear your rags to the next party."

The trouble about the notes and papers, which we mentioned, did not improve Snarler's temper, and, though by violence he had gained the release, he was not without fear of Father Hunter's revenge. His own desire for revenge also, being still unsated, wanting an object to vent itself on, like the fox in the Spartan's bosom, gnawed inwards, for this diabolical feeling burns to return an eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth, and feeds on substances so unquenchable that time cannot abate it, and is so inveterate that intreaties and concessions only fan and keep it alive. "A soft answer turneth away wrath," but not malice. Such was Snarler.

Hackett, who was the cause, in a degree, of this poor man's misery, was hardly less wretched, though differently affected. He had taken one false step, and, as Tacitus said of Tiberius, his remorse left as deep and bloody a print on his mind as the stroke of the scourge does on the slave's back, and hence it appeared that the memory of that step, together with the thought of the consequences, would ever haunt him. He could not dismiss it from his mind, and even when it seemed that the hateful vision had disappeared, something would call it up, and he was tormented with an ever present fear of being at last detected and exposed. For, though not a man of education or refinement, and certainly not one of principle, (he would not have stolen if he had been,) Hackett's vanity and sensitiveness to opinion were so great that exposure seemed worse to him than death. This cowardice, unable to face the public, renders men untrue to all obligations, bad friends, and dangerous acquaintances, as well as

untrue and hostile to themselves. There is, besides, so intimate a connexion between virtue and every thing about us, that every thing seems to threaten and likely to tell on us, when we have done wrong. Wherever he went, Hackett saw thief written. He could not hear a remark that did not, by implication, seem to point him out as a wretch that ought to be exposed. If he entered a store, or the tavern porch, or a parlour, and the company was laughing, or whispering low, conscience at once suggested that he was the subject, and he almost wondered at times why the public had so long forborne bringing him to punishment. Much indeed of this was conjecture, but his situation was not without dangers. He had visited Miss Euphy, now his betrothed, as mentioned, twice, and secretly; once during Snarler's absence, and the second time after dark, when Snarler was at home; and Euphy received her lover in the back porch. And it so happened that, the morning after the robbery, Snarler found Hackett's foot-track by the chimney in the garden, which he accurately measured, and it happened also that Hackett's visit did not escape Snarler's vigilance, for after bidding Euphy good evening at the porch, he retired by way of the garden—Snarler might hail him from the window up stairs if he went away by the front gate. But, in departing by way of the garden, he left his foot-print on one of the beds, which the suspicious Snarler saw the next morning, and, measuring it, found it to correspond with the other track which he had measured.

"Father Hunter or not," muttered Snarler at the discovery, "the thief was here agin, and I mean to catch him if I can."

Euphy overheard this remark, and hastened to report it to Hackett, and it seemed to him now that exposure was near and inevitable. "Be ye sure," said Moses to the Israelites, "your sin will find you out." And Hackett knew this remark to be true, if he had ever heard it. Strange! while a hand invisible, by ways alike wonderful and efficient, protects the good man, there is neither shelter, a place of refuge, nor escape for the rogue. "Commit a crime," says an unknown author, "and the earth is made of glass. Commit a crime, and it seems as if a coat of snow fell on the ground, such as reveals in the woods the track of every partridge, and fox, and squirrel, and mole. You cannot wipe out the foot-track. You cannot draw up the ladder,

so as to leave no inlet or clue. Some damning circumstances always transpire. The laws and substances of nature, water, snow, wind, gravitation, become penalties to the thief."

Seeing his detection thus near and certain, Hackett disclosed every thing to Euphy, and love is so blind, and a woman in love is so unwilling to believe aught against the object loved, that she credited his story, pitied him for being in a situation which so tried and corrupted his integrity, believed him to be after all worthy of confidence and affection, and promised faithfully to do her best to lead her uncle off from his scent.

While matters were in this state, Hackett imprudently made a third visit to Snarler's house, the owner being at the time, it was believed, in the town, and he and Euphy were sitting in the back room, when the servant announced that Miss Gordon, the parson's daughter, was at the door. Hackett rose to go, advancing towards the front door, but, to his amazement, he saw Snarler not far from the gate, and about entering. If he had been innocent, or hardened in guilt, he might have withdrawn, and calmly and easily encountered Snarler. But, as is usual in such cases, in the attempt at further concealment, he rendered his detection more certain. He therefore went out the back way and by the garden. Snarler at this moment met a servant, and was informed that her niece had company, Parson Gordon's daughter and a gentleman, without saying who the gentleman was. Muttering something about the unseasonable hour of visiting, saying that he had enough of the parson in the tobacco tax he had to pay, and he thought all would be better off if they had religion without paying the parson, Snarler walked past the front gate. In walking away, Snarler passed along side of the garden fence, and he had hardly come in view of the garden, than he saw the figure of a man in the act of retiring.

"I'll catch the rascal now," said he. "That's the fellow."

He hurried on by the fence to a back gate, thinking there to intercept the intruder. This garden back gate opened on a bye-road, which led to the highway; and, as Snarler turned the corner of the garden-fence, which was close to the gate, he saw a person walking away from it to the public road, and concluded that this was the person he was in quest of. Seizing a club, he ran furiously toward this person, and so rapidly as to be upon him just as the latter discovered Snarler.

This person was Montrose; who, a few minutes before, having espied Parson Gordon and Emma on horseback, riding towards Snarler's, walked in that direction, hoping to fall in with them, and especially ascertain where Emma would spend the evening in St. Mary's. But Parson Gordon rode with his daughter no further than Snarler's gate, and Montrose met neither of them; and, presuming that Emma might have called on Euphy, walked towards Snarler's.

By mistake he took the private road leading to the back gate of the garden, and had discovered his error, and was on his way to the main road, when he heard a noise in the bushes. He turned round, and saw Snarler, with his face livid with passion, in the act of striking him with the club mentioned. Montrose sprang hastily aside, and evaded the blow, which was prompted by too much temper to be aimed surely; then springing upon Snarler, (for the youth's blood was up,) he threw him to the ground; and, before the latter could explain, which he might not have attempted, or Montrose could think to demand an explanation, he administered to the choleric Snarler four or five smart blows with his own club; and, then keeping him down, asked the meaning of the assault.

We often want a few syllabic formations to wreak our thoughts into expression. If we had but the picture-language of the ancient Mexicans, or the knotted cords of the ancient Chinese and Persians, we should seek in vain to say what we mean under certain circumstances. And now, even with our language, rich, full and expressive, Snarler was at a loss, and the historian of this worthy disaster is also unable to say what precise feelings or thoughts were uppermost with him. He was mad, mortified, vexed, and yet cowed. His anger was not whipt out of him, but only kept under. He was humbled, and yet he vowed mentally he would have the law against Montrose; who, he supposed had first robbed, and now beaten him. And his code of morals, like that of Allgrace, did not condemn his robbery, and almost murder of the sturdy priest of St. Inigoes'. He was mortified to be thus handled by a young man, and by his supposed plunderer, and yet this mortification was hardly greater than his vexation at having aimed his blow at Montrose so badly.

But Montrose had put a question, and he was resolved to have an answer; for raising the staff, and repeating his demand, he gave Snarler to understand he would beat him

again and more severely. Snarler saw at once the necessity of reply, and, nearly choking, said :

"Hadn't I the right to hit a man what robbed me?"

"Dotard," replied Montrose, kicking him, "who told you so?"

"I saw you jest now," said he, "stealing away from my house by the garden."

"I have never been to your house, nor in your garden," replied Montrose, and he then explained how he came there.

"That's not believable," said Snarler, mentally; but, keeping his thoughts to himself, he added, "Let me git up, sir."

Montrose suffered him to rise, and then asked and received an explanation.

"The person, you saw in the garden," he continued, "you think stole your papers. I heard you had recovered them."

Snarler assented.

"Among them is the will, not recorded, of your niece's father, proving that the testator, acting as the agent (of my father he was about to say,) of Mr. Delafield, bought for his factor a large body of land; which, in the absence of said will, you hold as yours by your relationship with the deceased. Charles Delafield, my friend, and whose agent I am, claims his father's property. I can prove my attorneyship. I want the will, and will pay you handsomely for it."

"That there will haint got any such proof, and it is good for nothing. My cousin was out of mind when he wrote it."

"Give me the will," said Montrose, "and I will find and make good the proof out of it. Come, old fellow," hoping to soften him, "I'll give you ready money down for it."

Snarler seemed to be in a quandary. The property he held was very valuable, but his title might be overthrown.

"Give me," he replied, after musing some time, "jest half the property your friend, Charles Delafield, thinks hisen by the will, and I'll give you the paper."

Montrose felt vexed at this exorbitant proposition. The fellow, unrighteously and unlawfully, withheld a will proving a large estate to belong to Charles Delafield. He held, by withholding said will, this large estate as his own! To neither will nor estate was he entitled. His roguery besides deserved punishment. And now unblushingly he asked half of a large estate to surrender what was not his, and

which every obligation bound him to give him up freely. Hence Montrose, with eyes flashing, replied, "No."

"What then?" asked the usurer. "I can burn that paper, if I mind to, and alter it; you haint no proof that Charles Delafield owns the property."

Montrose looked sulky, and felt that he was in Snarler's power.

"What say ye to giving me a thousand pounds? Your friend won't miss it;" and, lowering his voice, and approaching Montrose, so as to make him hear by a whisper: "If you don't, I knows how all them there fine acres, a mighty big tract of forest land 'tis, may be mine." And his eyes kindled, and a smile played about Snarler's mouth, and he clapped his hands together with a sort of chuckling laugh, as if he had the property, as gold, in his hand: "Yes, all will be mine."

"Miscreant!" said Montrose, seizing him by the collar, and shaking him. "Give me the will, or take the consequences."

Snarler did not think any consequences were likely to ensue beyond a rough handling, and, remarking that he had not the paper about him, he looked anxiously up the road to see if any one was approaching, or in sight, or within call. Seeing no one, and not liking the expression on the face of Montrose, he muttered:

"If you hit me, I hope you know I can have the law of you?"

"Contemptible wretch!" said Montrose, restraining himself with difficulty. "If, by beating you, I could beat honesty into you, I would negotiate our matters with this instrument,"—shaking the stick over Snarler's head. "But come, I'll give you one hundred pounds, but not one shilling more."

"Won't you let me go to my house?" moving towards his residence, "I can't take that offer."

"Pass on," said Montrose, vexed,—anxious to do something, provoked to be foiled by such a man, and, like better men, under like circumstances, relieved himself partially by a threat. The menace Snarler knew to be a mere bravado, or rather thought the future had no danger if the present gave no signs of it.

"Pass on," continued Montrose.

Snarler moved on slowly, glad to be rid of Montrose,

yet puzzled how to shape his thoughts from what had past.

"'Tis strange, that's a fact," said he. "He warn't the thief that stole my papers, and he haint been to my house neither; and yet he's the fellow, sure as a gun, I caught coming out of the garden. There's no mistake there. And didn't he say he meant to have the will? This looks mighty like he knowed where I keeps it, and he counts on gitting it agin. But then he's a very Indian in fight! Zounds! I thought he'd have murdered me, and he talks big like them folks that's too grand to steal. Ah! but then may be, perhaps,"—and Snarler caught at it as a bright suggestion,—“he thinks it aint stealing to take from me what aint mine; neither wasn't it stealing to take my release from that dog of a priest. And he takes it for his friend the owner. He's the fellow. I must look out. He'll sartainly come.” He stopt at his gate, and stood there for sometime soliloquizing.

After awhile he appeared to have digested his thoughts.

“Ah! Thief or no thief, I'll say he's one. A pretty gentleman to threaten me with his big words. Yes, I wonder if the law,—the law can't put him where he'll have to kick and splutter?”

Montrose looked after Snarler, anxious to see Emma, but doubting the propriety of following her into Snarler's house. He walked some time before Snarler's gate, and, as Emma came out, he advanced to meet her. But what's the meaning of all this? Emma received him so coldly that it nearly chilled in him the warm current of words to ask what he had wished, and the yet warmer inner current of feelings that must start the words into movement.

“My stay in St. Mary's will depend on my father, who is at the castle.”

“Will my sister be there with you?” he asked, forgetting his assumed character.

Emma looked amazed. “I have not the pleasure to know her.”

“Miss Julia,” colouring as he corrected himself. “Miss Gordon's manner is so strange that my head wanders.”

“The wandering of the head,” said Emma, excited, “is not the worst of evils.”

And, waving her hand coldly, she urged on her horse, and the next moment she was gone.

"There she goes," said he, soliloquizing. "She has shot words at me that pierce deeper, and rankle more than would a poisoned arrow. What have I done? Surely not my little flirtation with Miss Evelin. I was not Miss Gordon's declared suitor. I am still uncommitted, and she is not the woman to infer matrimonial intentions from a bow, visit, or compliment. But it is possible something happened at this scamp's house." He thought awhile, walking on slowly. "I think I see now. Snarler took me for the fellow who robbed him, and which person, he said, he saw escaping by way of his garden. But can he think so now? Well, he is not too good so to misrepresent me. But Miss Gordon would not credit such a story of me, and from such a source?" And self-esteem was for a moment not a little wounded at the possibility of the thing. "What then?" He walked on, chewing the bitter cud of painful thought, and it is not only bitter but very unmanageable, when, after turning over various suggestions, the mind can conclude nothing satisfactorily, and has still the cud to chew. And at times the temples throb with anxiety, and we press our hand to our brow, as if to support the weight that bears us down, and as if, by the action, we would aid the brain in arriving at the truth we want. "Ah!" he continued, "Can it be this? Desperation! No, surely. Yet possibly. That old fool has a niece, a simple, trusting girl, and Shepard told me she was attached to Hackett. Snarler opposes the connexion. Hackett, perhaps, lover-like, as he cannot get to his charmer by the door, enters by the window. It must have been his figure Snarler saw in the garden. He had made her a visit, and Snarler was about to surprise them, when he decamped. Euphy, of course, would not tell upon him. Better, she thought, that suspicion should rest on any other than Hackett." And for a moment or so the light this research into the field of hypothesis brought with it appeared to calm him a little. Truth is ever less painful than error to a mind qualified to receive it. "Snarler," he added, "thinks I am his niece's secret lover; and so believing, and prejudiced against me, in the heat of his passion, he has returned to the house, and associated his niece's name and mine together in a manner, which might not be discreditable if Hackett's, but is so when mine is mentioned. Miss Euphy, of course, could

only deny. Explanation was out of the question. May not this be it? We'll see."

After supper, with Shepard along, Montrose repaired to the castle. They waited some time for the ladies. Colonel Smithson was not at home. In this interim Montrose said, soliloquizing :

"It was due to me not to condemn me unheard, and, if she thought proper to assail me, it was but fair to hear me in my defence. Let Miss Gordon appear. I'll present to her the bold front of innocence, and show her, if she can be unjustly caustic, I can be distant."

Advancing footsteps were now heard, and the rustle of dresses. Miss Evelin's laugh could be distinguished. In came the belle of St. Mary's, Julia, Mrs. Smithson, and, more than all, thought Shepard, Mrs. Annie. But Miss Gordon was missing, and Montrose, who felt strongly inclined, a moment before, to act the hero's part, not seeing Emma, felt neither a hero's ability nor stoutness.

"Emma is not well," was Julia's apology to the visitors. More Montrose could not ask. During the evening Montrose managed to engross the company of Julia, and he skilfully availed himself of it to put her in possession of certain facts necessary to place him above suspicion, adroitly, as he hoped, keeping out of sight his motive in referring to the matter, and he closed his statement with the remark :

"I waited to see Miss Emma, not doubting to find her, as usual, kind and welcome as a February sunbeam after a dreary winter."

"You found the disk of your sun obscured?" interrupted Julia, smiling, and seeing exactly how matters stood with him. "It was misty, I suppose,—bless me, you gentlemen never carry fogs about with you?"

"A fog, mist, and an easterly storm to boot," continued Montrose. "Cap off, and hand to my mouth, and looking as gracious as the first courtier of the King of France when his majesty speaks, I made my greeting. But, to my courteous bow, she returned a very distant acknowledgment, to a very civil question she gave an enigmatical answer."

"All right," said Julia, laughing. "If we don't queen at sometimes, you lords of creation would make us mere serving women. But what then?"

"Of course I became embarrassed," he said, "and made a slip of the tongue, and then apologized; saying, my head

wanders. Miss Emma retorted, the wandering of the head is not the worst of evils. She then rode off, light as air, and I felt heavy as lead." He hesitated, doubting whether he should let her any further into his matters. "I called this evening."

"Then my presence is very unnecessary," and Julia playfully rose as if she was about to retire; but soon reseated herself, saying, "well, sir knight."

"I hoped kind fortune would make amends for the day; but Miss Emma is not to be seen," he continued.

"A woful disappointment," and Julia laughed, evidently enjoying his chagrin. But a light cloud passed over her face, and sympathizing with him, she added, still in a cheerful tone,—I'll sing to you, what shall it be?

"Poor Colin Brown once lov'd a maid,
And ne'er lov'd swain as he,
The maid she coldly shook her head,
When he said marry me.

"Poor Colin sighed, oh sweet-heart dear!
One sunny smile I pray;
I ne'er shall know but vexing care,
'Till you my love repay.

"The maiden prest at last said yea,
To Colin Brown so true,—
Her smile it chased all clouds away
And he no more was blue."

Montrose was amused at the song, and said he hoped that Colin would get smiles again.

On his return to the tavern, and while conjecturing whether Julia did not more than suspect him to be her brother, a waiter at the inn brought him a letter from his strange acquaintance; stating that he hoped to be in St. Mary's soon, and trusted to find him there. The writer announced himself by his signature as simply a friend.

The conjecture of Montrose in reference to Snarler was correct. This singular worthy, with the feelings and suspicions which Montrose imputed to him, entered his house, and regardless of the presence of Miss Gordon, broke out on Euphy. "You a nice lady! Pretty manners this! So you, and a Mr. Montrose—eh, have been having—what do you call them?—ah! tate a tates, but what I call in English improper meetings. I was about to come on you and your sweetheart, sitting, I vow, lovingly together, an im-

pudent fellow, in my house, when he takes the hint, and clears. I saw him though, that I did, and I'll fix him yet."

Euphy was of course confounded. She rejoiced at Hackett's escape, but could not understand how Montrose and herself were so connected together in her uncle's imagination. Emma made her precipitate retreat, and on her departure Snarler became so insufferably abusive, that Euphy, alarmed, gathered up her best clothes, and fled to the castle; and on being interrogated by Mrs. Smithson, who had heard Emma's version, how Montrose was mixed up in her affairs, the guileless girl ingenuously acquitted him of any part in them. Mrs. Smithson kindly asked no further, and Emma, before the next day learned enough from Julia and Mrs. Smithson to see that she had done Montrose injustice.

After Euphy's retreat, Snarler, perforce, having no one in the house to let out his ill humour on, calmed down; but, still indignant at the supposed misconduct of his niece, went to her room hoping to find some evidence against her. On the floor he saw lying pieces of a note, which was addressed to her, and which, with some difficulty, he read.

"Ah! here's the gentleman's fist," chuckling as he spoke. He took up the first pieces and read as follows:

"DEAREST EUPHY,

"I wanted to come and see you yesterday, but your cross uncle stayed home all day."

"A nice tempered, honey and sugar spark this," muttered Snarler, not relishing this reflection on his equanimity. "'Tis all the thanks I gits for being kind." He put together some more pieces, and read; viz.:

"I'll come to-morrow. Be sartain not to go out."

"To-morrow," said Snarler, "the very thing. Let's see what day 'tis? Ah! there's the time in his handwrite. He wrote yesterday, and said he was a coming to-day. He cum to-day, and I've catched him by this." He read on:

"When we are married, and I am a happy man, I'll ask your jailor no odds."

"Married!" muttered Snarler, and the idea struck him with amazement. "Married! Zounds, by the smoke of the pit, if the fellow is driving arter that, I won't run my fence across the road. No, indeed, he may put in a double team, and I'll see the coast's clare. But let me read this over again."

"When we are married, and I am a happy man, I'll ask your jailor no odds."

"Zounds! by the smoke, 'tis jist as I read it. Now the fellow aint poor; for old Delafield wouldn't 'point a poor man to manage agent-like so much property. And it would be a devilish clever bargain for the wench."

"Here! Jim!" rising and calling a negro from the kitchen. The servant came. "Go, tell Euphy I wants her at once. Do you hear me?"

"Miss Euphy, Massa," replied Jim, "hab gone to Massa Smithson's, and de tide all up high, and all de horses fellow sarvants hab him out, and Uncle Lazyzy hab gone off wid de cunnue."

"Well, well," said his master, "you go for Euphy early by break of dawn and tell her to come home, and she needn't be afeard."

"Fore God!" said Jim, on his return to the kitchen, "Massa mighty sorry him make Miss Euphy run off."

Snarler resumed his work of reading.

"Be sure you look out for me, and believe me, till death us do part,

"Your true love,

"WM. HACKETT."

"Hackett, Hackett," muttered Snarler, dropping the paper, "and the whelp has got a mind to hack me outer my property. And that wench's raising has come to this, eh! And a beautiful sweet couple they'd make. And when they puts my head under dirt, they'd dance, and make my money fly. He's the fellow too what robbed me, and that note of hisen aint paid either. Jim," rising and calling the servant, "go to your work at break of dawn, and if I catches you gwyng arter Euphy, I'll make you sing."

"Yes, massa," replied Jim, with eyes wide open. "Miss Euphy come back hersell."

"Now," soliloquized Snarler, once more in his room, "I'll cut that gal off with a shilling, and burn that are will." He spread out his papers to do as he said, when a paper he saw made him start. It was a letter from Euphy's mother, Snarler's sister, and who was, perhaps, the only person that Snarler cared for half as well as himself. That one spot in his heart had no ice, and showed he was akin to his kind. The letter spoke of Euphy as only a mother could—

then of the mother's ill and fast-failing health; and, in terms that must have cost tears to write, commended the child to his care.

"Be kind to my baby,—think of me when you do for her. I shall soon be cold, and can do nothing for her."

Snarler's eyes became dim, and he pushed the letter from him. After a while he resumed it, and read on:

"If my dear child should have failings, remember, Tom, that we all have faults; and forgive them for my sake; and think at the time you are not forgiving her, but a sister who took and raised you after our mother was dead."

"I will," said Snarler, with difficulty finding words. "I'll take her home!"

The letter proceeded: "We shall meet no more in this world. Oh! do not forget to love and do for my poor motherless child, when I am dead and gone! and depend on it you will have the prayers and blessings of your loving but dying sister,

"EUPHEMIA."

A sigh escaped from the bosom of Snarler. He raised his hand to his eyes, and wiped away a tear. "Well, well," said he, "I must let her have her own way. I'm a very, very fool—" and he seemed to choke a little. "I'll do what she asked me in her dying moments, poor crittur! I wish Euphy was here." Folding up the papers, and tying them carefully, he put them away. "Jim!" bawled out Snarler.

"Yes, sir—yes, massa," answered the negro, from the kitchen, coming to the house.

"Euphy must come home by sunrise. Hear!"

"Poor massa! poor massa! all aint right with him," muttered Jim. And all was not right; but one thing was—and this love for his sister, showed that, even Snarler was not totally depraved, nor an incarnate fiend.

CHAPTER XVI.

SUPERSTITIONS—A VISION OF THE VIRGIN—ST. MARK'S EVE—LINES
ON ST. DUNSTAN.

"Now the wasted hands do glow,
While the screech-owl sounding loud,
Puts the wretch that lies in wo,
In remembrance of a shroud.
Now it is the time of night
That the graves, all gaping wide,
Every one lets out its sprite,
In the churchway paths to glide."
MIDSUMMER NIGHT'S DREAM.

MUCH that is now labelled superstition, and, like poison, laid on the shelf with its mark on it, was formerly, and at the period of our narrative, regarded as neither unwholesome nor unsafe doctrine. Scientific discovery and philosophic research have done much to disabuse men's minds of the grovelling superstitions and infantile imbecility connected with the spiritual world, and the danger now is that we may run into the Sadducean heresy of denying a future existence, and a resurrection of the dead. We would neither affirm nor deny the existence of ghosts. What the ancient Jews believed, as is evident from the parable of Lazarus, what the Greeks maintained, as is proved by the story of Simonides, what the modern Italians admitted, as appears from the ghostly revelation about the missing canto of the *Divina Commedia*, and what our ancestors generally believed, as is clear from the strange stories of ghosts which have come down to us, cannot be wholly false or unfounded. When we find, as here, the *quod semper*, and the *quod ubique*, two out of the three characteristics of truth, we should pause, and hesitate a long time before we reject. "The things of the spirit are spiritually discerned," is true in more than one sense. We may be very rational, or rather rationalistic, very sensible, or rather very physical, and while sure not to err in the ventures of faith, we may close every window that could let any light whatever in upon the soul. There is a "divine faculty" we all need, and which not consulting may in us be

———"Chained and tortured, cabined, cribbed, confined,
And bred in darkness."

The telescope cannot inform us about the spiritual world, neither can the stupid spiritual rappers tell us any thing of it ; yet that world is vast, and compared to the world of sense "as a continent against a cabbage garden." And because we cannot pass out of the cabbage garden, let us not, sage-like, put on a knowing look, and say we have looked over the palings, and find there is nothing outside. As "the stork in the heaven knoweth her appointed times, and the turtle, the crane, and the swallow, observe the time of their coming," even so should man know or have faith in that better land to which he is to migrate. We know not what we are, how we are, and what and how we shall be, but to us as it has been to others, it may eventually be given to discern through the clouds a star here and there, and, by their discovery, to light ourselves on to a further knowledge, and in time, more and more openings may be discovered, till we shall stand with a clear sky over head, and the vast heavens of glowing truth shall be seen shining down undimmed, "not a star obscured."

The ladies mentioned, however, in our story, may be pardoned for being more credulous than ladies in the same class are apt to be in our day, Mrs. Annie particularly, as she was not wholly free from that slavish state in which

"Faith, fanatic faith once wedded fast
To some dear falsehood, hugs it to the last."

Her mind had been painfully exercised on the subject of Romanism. Her brain at times seemed to be addled by the questions which perplexed it, and her nervous system was in such state that any hallucination was more than possible. What we wish, we are very apt to believe. When we have made up our minds that God by a miracle will enlighten us, a miracle is nearly as good as forthcoming ; we see what, with our ready credulity, passes for one. It is possible, and no doubt occasionally happens, that such persons see what we never can and never may. St. Stephen unquestionably, as he was dying, "saw the heavens open, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God." St. Paul was unquestionably taken up into the third heavens, and saw things too glorious to be revealed. A good man now may have revealings of God that are only less wonderful than the

fire which burnt in the bush out of which God spoke to Moses, and the light from heaven, beyond the brightness of the midday sun, which smote Saul of Tarsus with blindness. A spirit like Nathaniel's will be apt, and indeed certain, to see heaven open, and angels ascending and descending. "Your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams," was the promise to the children of the Church of the First Born. But, as spectral lights hover over graves, and are believed to be mere luminous vapours of the earth, earthy, so lights as lurid and unheavenly often pass for such as shone to Moses and St. Paul, and visions that are the hallucination of distempered fancies and over-wrought sensibility, pass for true and veritable angel visits, and peeps of dawn into the glorious day which after death is to burst upon us. And no better than a distempered hallucination was that we are about to record.

It was at the twilight hour; Mrs. Annie was at her residence, Elfin Hall. Her friends, Emma and Julia, were below stairs, and Mrs. Annie, having felt unwell that afternoon, had retired for a few moments to her chamber. She rose from her couch, suffering from much more than an ordinary depression of mind. While sitting on the bed, in a painful reverie, and looking, she knew not where, the dim and shadowy outlines of a female form passed between her and the window. It was but a moment, and the figure was gone. With some difficulty Mrs. Annie rose, and pale with emotion and tremulous, she tottered out of the room, and descended the stairs. Her friends discovered that something had happened, and, soon as Mrs. Annie found words, were told by her that she had seen the blessed virgin. This declaration startled them, and was said so earnestly, and was so evidently credited by Mrs. Annie, that they were puzzled what to think of it. For, at that early day, it was not known that physical causes, as Mrs. Annie's indisposition, a diseased state of mind, (her anxiety about her rather equivocal state, hovering between the see of Rome and the Church of England,) were sufficient, with darkness or the twilight hour, to make her see a shadowy form, and so impress her imagination, (impressible as it was to the merest incident,) as to clothe and shape this shadowy form into the blessed virgin.

"It cannot be," said Emma, mentally, "though Annie believes it. "It may be so," thought Julia, and her imagination, taking this as a starting point, made an incursion into

the world of possibilities. For Emma was freer from superstitious weakness than either Julia or Mrs. Annie; though not altogether free from it; her Scotch education embracing superstitions as a part of it. To her, as to every other of Scotia's daughters, they were as household words, and as the lessons of childhood, and so rivetted, that reason afterwards could not break loose from them. However, from the weakness of a Roman devotee, Emma was wholly free, and her mind was steeled against any impression that came from Rome. Hence, she regarded Annie as under a pitiable delusion, and very kindly endeavoured to dissipate it. Her efforts were not fruitless. Annie after awhile was calm. She was afraid to doubt the report of her own senses; but was nearly willing to allow that the shadow might be some one other than the Virgin. Still this left an unpleasant dread on Mrs. Annie's mind, which Emma could not divest herself of entirely, and which Julia felt to some extent. A few days afterwards came St. Mark's Eve, (April 24,) and the three friends, with the recollection of this supposed vision of the Virgin fresh on their minds, were conversing on the old superstitions, which were connected with this eve, one of which was, if on St. Mark's Eve, you will watch at the church-porch from 11 o'clock at night, to one hour after midnight, and do so on the same night for three years successively, on the third year you would see the ghosts of all who are to die the following year enter into the church. If any stay in the church, they are to die during that time. If any come out, they will be sick, but recover. The other superstition was that, on St. Mark's Eve, ashes should be sifted on the hearth, and there would be imprinted upon them the foot-tracks of such persons in the family as would die in the ensuing year.* Both superstitions were predicated on the belief that "coming events cast their shadows before," and that wraiths or doubles of persons are sometimes seen not very long before their deaths. Old Lucretius would have said this belief was very reasonable; as man was like an onion, ever throwing off his coat or superficies, or outer visible embodiment. The ancient philosophers and cabalists would have said that it was not impossible; as the astral spirit, which is above the sensuous one in us, can out

* Vide "Popular Antiquities of Great Britain," by John Brand, M. A., Bohn's Edition, vol. I., pp. 192: for this and other superstitions connected with St. Mark's Day and the Eve before it,

of the atmosphere resolve a visible second self; and the vain Paracelsus, who asserted that his cap contained more knowledge than all physicians, and the hair of his head had more experience than all the universities, might have confirmed this solution of the marvels on St. Mark's Eve. Man is very like man in all ages; and the Church of Rome seemed to have sanctioned this opinion of being able to see one's second self shortly before death by the superstitions about St. Mark's Vigil. Annie very solemnly mentioned the following coincidence in her uncle's history, as if she believed it implicitly:

"Poor uncle Harry was a wilful, though I can't say, a bad man. He was ever doing what few besides would have ventured upon. More from recklessness, however, than from disbelief, he was bound to try the experiment. For three years, one after the other, he with two other persons, who, like him, were wild and frolicsome, went to St. Mary's Church on St. Mark's Eve, at the time of night mentioned. For two years they saw nothing out of the way. But on the third year—" and Mrs. Annie seemed to be afraid to go on.

"What?" asked Julia.

"He saw himself go in church and there stay, and sure enough poor uncle died soon afterwards."

"This reminds me," said Julia, "of some lines which were written by my dear father;" and, being asked if she had them with her, and replying affirmatively, she took them out of her portmanteau, and read as follows:

"On the hearth riddle well
 The ashes,
 Then take a shoe, and tell
 Whose step there on St. Mark's night
 Was left; for, if seen aright,
 You the death of friend or foe
 May read; ere there will come and go
 Another year for you to try
 The ashes.

"But strange! the fate which hurls
 Down! down!
 The blinded mortal churls;
 They work, eat, dance, and laugh at care;
 While on the sifted ashes are
 Footprints clear of those who'll go,
 Soon to the dread world below;
 There to lie beggar and king,
 Down! down!

"Why on to-morrows trust?
 Woe! woe!
 What are we here but dust?
 Who may in the ashes see
 Our day of death that's soon to be
 Like the writing on the wall,
 These footprints upon us call,
 Holy to live, lest we shall find
 Woe! woe!

"Of holy Mark the night
 Note well,
 Whose shadows pass in sight,
 And enter in the church-door;
 Some are soon to be no more;
 If out they pass, they will still
 Stay awhile by road or hill;
 Where they have been wont to rove,
 Note well.

"Though on the bridal day,
 Loudly
 Peal out the bells, and say
 His life is a festival;
 Yet good St. Mark's Eve will tell
 Whose ghost in the church does pass,
 Whether runs fast his hour-glass,
 Whose bridal the bells rang out
 Loudly.

"The babe upon the breast
 Happy
 Seems, like bird in its nest,
 And the boy so hopeful looks
 For wealth and fame beyond his books;
 But in the church their shadows hie,
 And boy and babe ere long must die;
 Few the hearts that then will be
 Happy.

"Thus do our poor shadows go
 In the church,
 And out; but as we do know
 Within its walls forever dwell
 Blessings for those who do well;
 Let us go in mind and heart,
 Act out here the Christian's part,
 Then care not how soon the blow
 Of death is to lay us low,
 If with Christ we ever dwell,
 In the church."

"These notions," said Emma, "which your father has so well expressed in poetry, I have heard called the excrescences of popery; being not parts of but additions to the true doctrines of Christ. Father calls them parasitic plants, and says they have grown around the bark of antiquity; and to get rid of them we must clean the bark, and leave it

as it stood when the old religion was in its purity. And, I remember, he compared them also to certain plants which grow only in wet and unwholesome climates; and in those shady places where the sun is shut out."

"So you think, Emma," said Julia, tartly, and not pleased at this assault upon superstitions which made certain parts of history so agreeable to her, and which gave an ample scope for her imagination to expatiate at will; "but I do not. These superstitions, as you call them, like mossy plants, are a graceful drapery to the tree of truth. Nothing so well as darkness, shade, and mystery set it off."

Emma smiled, and said, "You accept them all, eh!—You love mystery not for the truth covered under it, but for the mystery which conceals the truth, whether on St. Mark's Eve the wraiths of people soon to die are seen, or not, you do not care, if it be a fact, out of which good may come, or a lesson be learned; but as a peg to hang an argument, or a fancy tale on."

"What if I tell you I believe this story about St. Mark's Eve?" replied Julia.

"I do," said Annie, faintly.

"No, no, Annie, Julia," said Emma, quickly.

"My uncle and his friends saw these wraiths," said Annie, firmly, but sadly.

"Well," replied Emma, "why should Julia say so? As for myself I love sunlight, I love to know where I am. I want none of this mystery. When I travel I look out for a clearing, or settlement, a something to assure me that I am where there is life, and where I can see human beings like myself."

"I can't think so," said Julia, playing with the candle, and asking Annie to observe that the winding-sheet fell on her side. "Superstition is a pretty dress under which truth is veiled. Emma knows as well as I do that God throws a mystery around every thing. Now who may lift this robe of mystery, and look under it? and who especially can say which is the robe, and which the figure it hides?"

As Julia spoke, the wind through a broken glass blew up the curtain at the other end of the room. The friends involuntarily started, and Emma, availing herself of the circumstance, said:

"There is something meant in the lifting of that curtain!

Truth we never know, according to Julia. There is a mystery in the lifting of that curtain we cannot see."

"Perhaps it was a ghost!" interrupted Julia.

"Only think so, and we shall soon see it to be so," continued Emma.

"There may be," said Julia, seriously.

"Oh hush, Julia!" interrupted Mrs. Annie. "Your serious manner is enough to frighten one."

"It may be a ghost," continued Emma, smiling; "for the wind and ghosts are alike, both being things that come and we cannot say how. How is it, Julia?" looking at her friend.

"I am serious," replied Julia, returning her friend's look by one of earnestness.

"Fy, fy! Julia," continued Emma. "Why the thought that certain beings are around me, who have come up from the other world, and are watching my movements,—scowling upon me perhaps at times, who may possibly some night make themselves known to me, who hover in grave-yards, and haunt certain houses and places where dark deeds have been done, is not pleasant."

"You won't say is not true?" interrupted Julia.

"I say nothing where I know nothing," cautiously replied Emma; "but why think about what you can turn to no good end?"

"Moralize as you please," said Julia, and there seemed to be a resolution on her mind; "but I must——" and not explaining herself, she went to the other part of the room.

Emma knew not how to unriddle her words, though it occurred to her that Julia meditated something, possibly was serious, and possibly was under the influence of a freakish humour. She looked at Annie for an explanation, who, likewise struck by Julia's manner, was puzzled to comprehend it. She however attached more meaning to it than Emma, and anxiously watched to see what the denouement would be. Commanding herself as well as she could, she replied:

"I am not in Julia's secret."

Impulsive and imaginative persons always act strangely. When they are extremely so, their conduct is as inexplicable as that of the insane; and at times the quietest and most common-sense individual, one who departs least from

the normal routine of the right and sensible, has been known to act very like a comet, and worse even than a comet, to move in an orbit so eccentric that we cannot trace it by calculations. Julia, on reaching the end of the room, stopt, and whether she had formed any fixed purpose, or what it was, is not known; but she stopt. The scene out of doors, the moon just rising, appeared to have arrested her attention; and she leaned out of the window, and gazed for some minutes. A shadow passed under the trees in the garden; the substance from which it was projected she did not see. She heard a voice, and a groan. She started, but bent over to see if she could get a glimpse of the speaker. She saw no one, but just caught a sight of the shadow of something that was passing round the corner of the garden. Whether Julia meditated an adventure or not, she now had one; and excited not very pleasantly, she hurried back to her friends, and with a face and manner very significant, communicated rather what she did not, than what she did see, and what she thought than what she knew. And digressing off into, how strange it is that we are surrounded by so much that we do not understand,—that shadows pass at times whose bodies we see not,—that noises are heard where speakers and actors are not visible,—she added, that Milton must have referred to such mysterious agency, when he spoke of

"The airy tongues that syllable men's names
On shores, in desert-sands, and in wildernesses."

And the three friends, by a natural transition, were dissecting the monkish legend of St. Dunstan; *e. g.*, that which states he went to Glastonbury church, where he first chaunted an anthem, and then hung his harp upon the wall. The saint next busied himself in sketching the design of a church or ecclesiastical vestment; but, lo! his harp, though suspended to the wall, was played upon by invisible hands which kept up the anthem he had just sung:

"Now," said Julia, "though I would call this a beautiful incident in St. Dunstan's life, you would say it is a monkish fable."

"What more?" asked Emma, trying to smile.

"I am very serious," continued Julia. "There are or may be persons about us we know nothing of. I like St. Dunstan's story exceedingly. It may have been exactly so,"

and Julia, with her mind full of the wonderful, and excited too by the incident which occurred at the window, expressed her views to some extent, speaking rapidly at times, and then pausing as if to catch breath, and then talking slow and mysteriously, as if the thoughts she was uttering required or imposed this mode of speaking. While thus busied, her fingers unconsciously were turning over her portfolio, which contained sundry lots of paper, on which she had at different times written verses on whatever subjects presented themselves.

"What is this?" asked Emma, taking up some sheets that appeared to have been recently blotted by the pen. "Another ballad, perhaps?"

"No," replied Julia, blushing slightly, and restoring the paper to the portfolio, out of which it had fallen.

Emma saw enough to awaken her curiosity, and Julia yielding the paper to her, Emma read as follows:—

"In Glastonbury church, they say,
Holy Dunstan went one day,
In saintly song his voice to pour,
And touch his harp so well and true,
As he of living men best knew
Its melody and power.
His harp he hung upon the wall,
His holy vestments he took off,
Fie on wicked tongues who scoff!
That he upon his knees should fall,
And, plying fast the needle, trace
On vestment for the sacred place,
Symbols holy and colours bright,
To shadow forth, as best he might,
Mysteries above the ken
And searchings of mortal men.

"But still the vision on his mind,
Too faintly grew for him to find
His wonted skill to work aright,
And shadows dark before him passed;
St. Dunstan started, 'Is it night?
Or are my eyes now failing fast?'
He made upon his breast and brow,
Of holy cross the wondrous sign;
And strange! there's no dimness now.
While hues that in the rainbow shine,
Which arches o'er the Father's throne,
Its mingled glories on him shone,
And symbols holy, quick were traced
In colours such as have not graced
The priestly robe, but when, of old,
More dazzling than the burnished gold,
Sapphire stone, or emerald's blaze,
Aaron stood in the holiest place.

"And stranger still than all, I ween,
 The harp was swept by hands unseen,
 For an angel choir then lent
 Its music to the instrument,
 And in the anthem which was sung,
 Prolonged good Dunstan's saintly song,
 And, by the airs which upwards roll'd,
 Gave force unknown to Dunstan's soul,
 Changed into day the seeming night
 Whose shadows dimm'd his failing sight,
 Call'd by the sign which Dunstan made
 When he implored Almighty aid."

"Julia wrote this," said Annie, "after she and I had been reading an odd volume of the lives of the saints. For some days we could think of almost nothing else, and Father Canon prevailed upon her to write off her feelings and ideas about it."

The two, Annie and Julia, now bantered Emma, and insisted she could do as well, perhaps better. Emma, glad that the minds of her friends were engaged in less gloomy and unpleasant subjects, was willing to do her part towards giving a right view of Dunstan, and, being urged, set about complying. Julia smiled the meanwhile and said,

"We have Emma every day in prose, we shall see her in a new dress now. I'll undertake it becomes her."

"As much," replied Emma, looking up from the paper before her, "as a countryman would in the tawdry dress they now use for a prince in the theatre."

"We'll make all allowances," said Annie, "so dismount now from your trotting nag of common sense."

"And mount one," interrupted Julia, "that will carry you as gaily as would Mr. Montrose's Selim."

"Yes, and be thrown for my folly," said Emma, writing as she spoke.

"She has done it, and there's no mistake about it," said Julia, snatching the paper, afraid Emma would not allow them to read it. And without waiting for her friend's consent, whose silence and non-interference implied it, Julia read it. The lines ran thus :

"Like Dunstan, let it be our care
 The fitting robe always to wear :
 The robe unstained by mortal sin,
 That's bright without, and clean within,
 The robe whose symbols shadow here
 The robe we hope in heaven to wear.
 Hope in the anchor, showing clear,
 We dread no storm while Christ is near ;
 Faith in the shield that will repel
 The shafts of Satan and of hell ;

And charity, whose burning flame
 Makes all without it but a name :
 A loving trust which ne'er loves less,
 When friends are true, or foes distress ;
 That's strong in soul, inured to bear
 The cross and shame ; this robe who'll wear,
 Honour'd and welcomed e'er shall be,
 And blessed too beyond degree.

"As St. Dunstan, let us give first
 To God above our praise and trust,
 With praise seraphic ope the day,
 And then to other cares give way.
 By spending thus our all for Him,
 We make our life a daily hymn,
 A matin and a vesper song,
 That lives and lips will both prolong ;
 For a good life must ever bring
 Its testimony to our King ;
 First call on us a blessing down,
 Then raise us up to wear a crown,
 Where life and lip will ever sing
 All glory to our God and King."

The reading of these lines, and the conversation which ensued, being directed by it into a healthy channel, diffused more cheerfulness, and a sobering tone, that exalted them for a time above idle fears and childish speculations on phantoms and chimeras dire. But the servant maid coming in soon thereafter, unfolded a budget of news which they would have wished not to have heard. She said, in a broken way, that in Coode's house, which was in sight of Elfin Hall, and on Elfin Creek, during Mrs. Annie's absence from home, strange sights had been seen, and noises heard.

"Seen and heard when?" was the question.

"At night, some hours after sundown," was the answer. The servants on the Elfin Hall estate returning home at night from fishing, passed close by Coode's late mansion, and they agreed in having seen and heard a strange light and noises up stairs. The light was represented to have been at times brighter than a candle, and again a mere glimmer, which through a shutterless window they had seen on the wall. The noise, they said, was that of feet pacing up and down the floor, and once, it was thought, they heard the tones of a man's voice. And this report was narrated by the girl with all that circumstantiality and marvellousness, pausing occasionally to make an exclamation, which made it more interesting.

"Can this be so?" asked Emma, amazed. A solemn asseveration, expressed with a simplicity that showed, if deceiving others, she was herself deceived, gained their con-

fidence, but did not add to their pleasurable feeling. What could have produced the light? Whence came it? What did it bode? Was it from a poor soul condemned to move about this its former earthly sojourn? Or was it a minister and demon of wrath, a foul fiend that, in conjunction with others as foul, here had a melancholy, profitless, and tormenting sojourn? hovering as a shadow over places where it was to know no more enjoyment, itself an unsubstantial vapour, its hopes as bodiless, and its light not that of the just which shineth more and more unto the perfect day; but a lurid glimmer, prophetic of those flames in which the lost should wail in torment forever, while the smoke of the pit would forever ascend!

These, and like questions, were started, and the friends shuddered as the thoughts suggested called up images so fearful.

CHAPTER XVII.

COODE'S RUIN—FEARS OF A NIGHT ATTACK.

Superstition.

"Thou taintest all thou look'st upon!
The spirits of the air, the shuddering ghost,
The genii of the elements, the powers
That give a shape to nature's varied works,
Had place and life in the corrupt belief
Of thy blind heart."

SHELLEY.

THE place known as Coode's ruin, had been the residence of the noted John Coode, who is mentioned by Parson Gordon and Father Canon in their letters, and who, as they stated, took for years an active part in the opposition to the proprietary's government. In this house, in days gone by, Coode had both caroused with his boon companions and political partizans, and concerted with them those measures which led to "the Protestant Revolution in Maryland." The tide of popular favour at length turned. Coode fell into disgrace; deservedly, for his misconduct, say all the chroniclers of that day, and was constrained to fly to Virginia. His house was seized, and would have been sold, if Snarler, who had formerly been one of his protégés, had not bought it in for him. After a few years he returned, but his laurels, once green and flourishing, were now tarnished and dead. He was a mortified and degraded man, and so conscious of his low estate that he went out no more openly, and was seen, it was said, only by companions whose fortunes were as desperate and dark as his own. A portion of these companions, it was believed, were the buccaniers, who put in here after reaping heavy booties on the Spanish main, and, as Coode's name was in bad odour, especially with the Roman population, for his prominency in "the Protestant Revolution," it was further said of him that his house was the refuge or resort of beings that were

"Unfit for earth, undoom'd to heaven."

At length the neighbours neither saw nor heard any thing of Coode, and by some it was believed he had gone to his dread account. Still, ugly stories continued about his house. Lights at night were seen in it, and noises were heard to come from it. But for some time these lights ceased to be seen, and these noises to be heard. From the negro girl's statement, however, just given, these fearful things connected with Coode's ruin, had returned, and the report sent a thrill of anxious fear through the sensitive frame of Mrs. Annie. She and her friends made further inquiries of the girl, and they were told that, ever since Mrs. Annie's absence from home, the neighbourhood had been disturbed.

A Mrs. Doolittle, Doolittle's aunt, had been much annoyed; especially an Irish girl Katy, living with her. Katy had borne the character of a sensible housemaid. But Katy was now no more the same person. She solemnly declared that the spirit would knock at her door, then open it, and walk about and stamp in her chamber at a certain hour every night. Katy now slept, or tried to sleep, with a light always burning in her room, but even then the unearthly visitant, though less visible than before, would enter, disturb something in the room, and, after causing her much alarm, would disappear.

The next day, alarmed herself, and seeing how much Annie was alarmed, and Julia was excited, Emma, with the view of removing this unpleasant state, proposed a visit to Coode's ruin; remarking it is day, ghosts do not appear but at night, and perhaps we may trace other and less alarming causes for these lights and noises than we think. Julia caught at the suggestion at once; but Mrs. Annie protested it was madness to think of it, and a madness she could not give into. And it was only till the day had advanced past noon some time, that the friends succeeded in overcoming Annie's resolution.

It was a pleasant afternoon; the air agreeable and inviting, and every thing seemed favourable to enjoyment. On their way they saw two persons approaching, and to avoid them the ladies turned a little aside from the road to a spring.

"Sure enough here come Mr. Doolittle and that strange parson," said Mrs. Annie; "they have been to Mrs. Doolittle's, and, as I hear, they agree so exactly in their religious opinions, it must have been a pleasant visit all round."

Julia laughed, and said it reminded her of a remark she had heard, which was ascribed to Father Canon. "Mr. Allgrace must needs be a godly man; for doesn't godliness consist in never giving into the sin of laughing, or creature comforts; but in sighs and sobs, in groans and grimaces, in cross words and looks, and in rating the world for its pomps and vanities? Sure he and his conscience can't be right; for is he not doing penance all the time? If he lived the other side of sixty, he might possibly have less purgatory hereafter to suffer than the murderer of Servetus. He and the like of him have a part of their purgatory here."

"Well, Julia," said Emma, walking a little in advance of her friends, and turning round and addressing Julia, "here's a riddle for you—what ugly and venomous animal is not Mr. Allgrace like?"

"I should say he was like the toad," replied Julia, quickly, "one carries a precious jewel in its head, the other has the jewel of setting off by his ugliness of character every good man around him."

The friends now could see that the puritans were riding slowly, and heard Allgrace, solemnly, say:

"These prelatie clergy are not like Paul, all things to all men. To rags of popery and dead forms, and Amoritish trappings they cling as much as Jesuited priests. For preaching and praying the black gown so suits the minister.*

* We are told by Maimonides, that the ancient Jewish priest, whose *genealogy* was at all *suspicious*, was dressed in *black robes*, and dismissed the company of the priests; black being a mark of disgrace, while the priest, whose descent was indisputable, was clothed in white, and allowed to officiate. (See Horne on the Scriptures, 3d vol.)

For the first sixteen hundred years after Christ, no one in holy orders was robed in black; white being always a symbol of purity, and the dress of the clergy. Dr. Adam Clarke, the learned Methodist commentator, on St. Matt. xxviii. 3, remarks that the angel, who rolled back the stone from our Lord's sepulchre, being in "raiment white as snow," "was clothed in garments emblematical of the *glad tidings* which he came to announce. It would have been inconsistent with the message he brought, had the angel appeared in *black robes*, such as those preposterously wear, who call themselves his successors in the ministry of a once *suffering*, but now *risen* and highly exalted Saviour. But the world is as full of *nonsense* as of *sin*; and who can correct and bring it to *reason* and *piety*?" The puritans always objected to the surplice; first publicly at Hampton Court in the reign of James I., and next at the Savoy Conference at the Restoration; deeming it and the cross in baptism, the ring in marriage, observance of holy days, and kneeling at the Lord's Supper, as things not to be borne with. And to this day, puritans in and out of the church evince a weakness, and at times a mania, in opposition to the surplice. With them the pure white surplice, which colour God Himself enjoined, and His church has ever used and which colour angels and redeemed saints are in His word said to wear, and which Adam Clarke judged so scriptural and emblematic of the glad tidings of the Gospel, is an evil of no small magnitude.

"Ah ! it proves that our hearts are filled with a godly sorrow, and that, like the turtle dove we go mourning up and down the land ; bearing in mind, brother, ' there is no peace to the wicked,' yes, and trembling too lest some snare of the devil, or the spirit not being more powerful than the flesh, or lest some pomp and vanity, of which there are, alas ! too many in our journey through the wilderness, may lead us astray after and in ungodly pleasure taking."

On rode the worthies, denouncing popery and prelacy, and probably our fair friends, while drinking of the refreshing spring, congratulated themselves that they heard no more of the senseless and windy clatter that fanatical and kettle drum heads are apt to make, when they knock together in *tete-à-tete*. The ladies had now reached the shore of Elfin Creek ; and the view, though familiar, was seen with unabated pleasure. Wordsworth would have said of it :

"It is a beauteous evening, calm and free,
The holy time is quiet as a nun,
Breathless with adoration."

The creek lay before them as a mirror, whose clear surface no breath had tarnished. It was shaded by lofty trees, which arched over so as nearly to overlook their branches. The woods were voiceless, and the spot seemed so sweet as to be rather the picturing of poetic fable than of rugged nature ; and, if amid the deep and embowering shade, a skiff had quietly advanced, an observer would have said, Here comes the genius loci and fair spirit into whose fairy domain I have intruded.

On a slight elevation, throwing the shadow of its profile on the deep blue waters below, stood Coode's ruin. No other dwelling was in sight, and the fence and outhouses, which may have imparted an air of comparative comfort and of living to the spot, had all disappeared. Solitude, it seemed, had here erected her seat, and waved coldly and mutely over it her oblivious sceptre ; while of the old mansion, the name appeared to be Ichabod. For deserted it seemed. Its window-panes were shattered. Its outer doors were open or stood ajar, and the building itself was fast falling to decay. High and rank grass was matted over the brick pavement. Briars, bushes and weeds nearly barred up the entrance ; and a fox passed out of the back door, as Emma and her companions stood on the front threshold.

Here they paused, and simultaneously, and without concert, each one hesitated, fearful to penetrate further. "If any one or thing dwells here, which might hurt us," reflected Emma, "unless it be a beast of the forest, who has made it his lair, this person or thing is here for no good." And she thought of Coode's desperate character; a disorganizer in politics, and in religion an infidel; and this thought gave to the spot the fearful tinge of its own impress.

"Do, do! let us get away," said Mrs. Annie, feeling faint at heart. Julia said nothing; being swayed by conflicting feelings, and held equipoised by them.

"No—wait a moment," asked Emma, with assumed calmness. "You and Julia stay here;" and passing in at once, Emma hoped to acquire confidence as she proceeded. She surveyed the room to the right, and next a large closet that opened into it; and thus she saw nothing to alarm her beyond the unpleasant grating of the door upon the hinges, and the flutter of some birds of night, which she had startled from their coverts. The room to the left she could not open easily. Emma pushed against it,—harder yet—still harder—and, growing bolder, pushed with all her might. The door gave way, instead of opening, and fell partially in, and Emma fell with it into the room. As she was rising—trembling a little from the incident—she caught a glimpse of a man who was passing into a closet near the fire-place. She rose hastily, and tried to get out; but the door the mean while had either swung back by its own gravitation, or been pushed back by some one. Emma looked around the room, hoping to find another way of escape, and trembled lest the closet-door might open, and the man who entered it, might spring out upon her. But the windows were very high from the floor; too high for her to get out by them. With a feeling of desperation, she endeavoured to pull open the door, and this time she succeeded in forcing it open; and the door as before fell in. She recovered herself, however, and hastened out. She found Annie at the door, as pale as a sheet, and trembling as the aspen. "Where is Julia?" asked Emma, amazed.

Annie wrung her hands, and with difficulty said, "She has gone, and unless we fly the spot we shall be put out of the way too;" starting to run, but from fright, tottering as an infant.

"Not without Julia," said Emma; thought of self being

merged into anxiety for her friend. "Who took her away?" she continued, wonderstruck at Annie's enigmatical reply.

Annie groaned, and said something, not very intelligible, about Julia's walking to the corner of the house, there meeting a man, and with him disappearing.

Emma pressed her hand to her heart; and between fear about Julia, anxiety about Annie's situation and her own, being at the mercy of whom she could not conjecture, and perplexity as to what all this mystery could portend, she could devise and think of no solution or way of remedy. At that instant Julia, with wildness in her face, manner, and movements, ran towards them, and, without saying a word, motioned to them to hurry homeward. The three, without exchanging a word, hastened to Elfin Hall, whose threshold they reached in half an hour; and which never was as welcome to them before.

After they had entered, Julia sat down, looking pale, anxious, and troubled.

"What is the matter?" asked Emma and Annie.

"I have seen the dead!" replied Julia, shaking as she spoke, and surveying the room anxiously.

"What dead?" asked Emma, fearful that her reason might be affected.

"My father!" speaking wildly. "The same I heard from the window."

"He's alive, then," said Emma, trying to be calm, and continuing, "he spoke to you?"

"Yes," shaking as she answered. "I knew his face—his voice—and felt, I'm sure, his breath, the pressure of his hand, his kisses even. At last, as I was recovering, he passed into the house, by a door, near the chimney, and I fled; the whole seeming a dream."

"The same," said Emma, thoughtfully, and detailed her adventure. "It could not be Coode or Coode's ghost. If Mr. Delafield, it was not a ghost. If a ghost, and his, why meet his daughter in such a place? Might not Julia be mistaken? She was too positive to admit such a supposition." The friends took their tea nearly in silence; and with night came the sickly hue of unhealthy musings. As darkness throws its mantle over us, the wisest and most fearless see things through the mist of mystery; and objects loom upon the imagination gigantic and fearful.

"What time of the night," Emma inquired again, "are lights seen in Coode's ruin?"

"Some time fore dis, and den later again," answered another servant woman, who was in the room.

"Are they to be seen all night?"

"No," was the reply.

"I suppose we may see the lights from one of the garret rooms," turning to her hostess. "Let us go there."

Both Annie and Julia objected, unwilling to make any further investigations.

"Oblige me," continued Emma; "I think it may be very important," and seeing the two yet unyielding, "even to our safety to-night." The friends looked amazed and frightened at this remark, but yielded. From a garret window they had a good view of Coode's ruin.

The stars were shining brightly, and the moon, night's glorious lamp, beamed kindly down. The ruin was seen standing in quiet loneliness on the left bank of Elfin Creek. The night was as calm as had been the afternoon. While they sat gazing, and, in despite of their uneasiness, admiring the silver shining bosom of the creek, and hearing no noise but the melancholy cry of the whippoorwill; and, fearing they would see the dreaded lights shining from out one of the upper windows, Emma became more and more satisfied it was due to their safety to unravel early as possible the mystery of Coode's ruin; and she was also satisfied it either was the resort of supernatural beings, or of desperate and dangerous characters.

"Oh Emma! Look, Julia! Jesus! Mary! have mercy on us!" exclaimed Mrs. Annie. The two friends looked where Annie pointed, and saw a moving light in one of the upper rooms of Coode's ruin. Emma immediately hurried down stairs.

"Uncle Jack," addressing a faithful domestic in the kitchen, "is this light often seen?"

"Lately, every night, Missus."

"What is it? Who is moving about?" she asked.

"Ah! missus," shaking his head, "dem be somebody me and you mustn't trouble. Fore God! I only hope dey won't come here."

"I hope so, too," continued Emma; "but, old man, I fear there are people yonder who must be kept from here."

"Well, missus, what can we do? Ky! missus; humble servant want to know. Us keep dem off!" and he chuckled at her apparent simplicity. "If dey perspires to come here, can we perspire to keep dem off?" And Jack, looking proudly on his fellow servants, continued: "Who keep dem off? Gates, bars, and locks do no good. Dey come right in. Guns no shoot dem. Dogs won't bite, but run away when dey see dem."

"Well, uncle Jack, tell the overseer," who had the management of the farms, "to have all the hands in to-night."

Jack laughed at the simplicity of this order.

"All in, missus. Nigger too skeared to go out now."

"Well," continued Emma, "let them keep watch in the kitchen. Keep the dogs in the yard."

Having given these orders, Emma, aware of Mrs. Annie's want of nerve to attend to such matters, endeavoured to ascertain that the doors and windows were all secured; for the house was strongly built of logs, had massive doors, and heavy shutters, and was something between a fortress and a residence;—a kind of building then very common, and a kind which may be necessary again should the lawless violence in our cities travel out in the country.

Having made these preparations, Emma, on her return, communicated what she had done; and soon after she and her friends retired to their chambers, to sleep if they could; but trusting, we doubt not, more in an invisible but ever present Power, than in their stout castle, and faithful servants and dogs. But, in the two chambers which the ladies occupied, lights were kept burning. Emma being alone and less agitated by nervous fears, soon fell asleep, while Annie and Julia lay conjecturing, startling, and trembling at every sound.

Emma had been sleeping some hours, but her sleep was disturbed by visions as frightful as those scenes which *Salvator Rosa* loved to paint. So disturbed was her sleep that the fair dreamer appeared to have changed her character; her mind, which was usually intent on pictures of love and benevolence, now was absorbed in objects of horror. Dreams, according to Homer, come from Jove, and according to Cato they are lies. Dryden would represent them as

———"but interludes which fancy makes;
When monarch reason sleeps, this mimic wakes."

Emma dreamed that she was wandering in Coode's ruin, and as she advanced, snakes, scorpions, and vipers crossed her path, and bats and owls flew from their hiding places, and the last screeched most frightfully. She came to a closet, the same in which she saw a man secrete himself. She opened it, and saw standing against the wall a skeleton. It occurred to her that this was the body of John Coode, and, horror-appalled, she essayed to turn away, when the fleshless relic of what was once a man stepped out from the closet, and stood before her. She looked again, and the figure was clothed with flesh, dressed as and looking the pirate, armed with pistols and a dagger. He waved to her to follow him. She started to run, but found the door closed; she looked to the windows, but they were barred; she rushed up-stairs by a stair-way leading to the room just over head. On reaching the room, she found it full of pirates, and dressed with a black flag, which was painted with a death's head, a battle-axe, and an hour-glass. In the middle of the room was a table, on which was a bowl of blood, while savage men, with dark, shaggy beard, each with glass in hand full of blood, (the buccanier mode of making a fiendish contract to kill and steal in concert, and then keep dark about it,) were pledging each other, and uttering at the same time the most horrible imprecations. The affrighted maiden turned to descend as she came up; but the stair-case gave way. There was a crash, then a yell went up from the revellers above. "All hell is here," cried out a voice; and Emma, in a paroxysm of fear, sat upright in her bed. A minute or two elapsed before she could sufficiently collect herself to know where she was. She rose from her bed, and kneeling down devoutly asked the Divine protection.

As she was returning to bed, she thought she heard a noise. "Can it be possible," was her reflection, "that Julia and Annie are still awake and talking?" She opened her chamber door, and passing quickly to the opposite room, where they had retired, she gently entered. A lighted taper was on the mantel-piece, and Annie and Julia were asleep. Julia seemed to be, however, agitated by feelings which were hardly less violent than those which had woke her. The transparent complexion of Julia was as highly flushed as if she had a burning fever, while she tossed herself about in the bed as if she were racked by

pain, making all the time incoherent mutterings. Emma gazed at her thoughtfully, saying to herself, "Poor child! She is perhaps suffering what I have been just delivered from. I will wake her."

She bent over the bed, meaning to touch Julia gently, and to call her in a soothing tone. Annie, who lay close to her, at that moment sat upright, and, throwing her arms about Emma, exclaimed, "Holy Mother! pray for us!"

Emma shrunk back as if something unearthly had touched her. "Strange!" said Emma to herself; "I must believe, I fear, in spite of myself, that evil beings, or unearthly spirits, are around us." She was now alarmed by the evident sufferings of Julia; when she saw Annie's rosary, which was suspended over her head, and to which was appended, as usual, a cross. "It can't be," thought Emma, "that this dumb string of beads, though it may have been blessed by a priest's, bishop's, or even the pope's prayers, could save Annie from Julia's sufferings and mine. For she seems not to be easy."

She made a second effort to waken Julia, whose incoherent mutterings alarmed and distressed her, and was in the act of touching her, when she heard noises below; and a feeling next to suffocation came over her. For it was between midnight and morning, and, except this noise below, stillness reigned out of doors; and what most alarmed her was, that the noise did not seem to proceed from the kitchen, but the water-side; and besides, with the sound of human voices, indicating the presence of persons in the creek, she thought she could distinguish the splash of oars. "My God!" she exclaimed, greatly alarmed, "my dream and the events of to-night all bode no good. Julia! Annie!" shaking the sleepers, "wake up—up."

"Who? What are you? Hah!" exclaimed Julia.

"Your friend Emma. Oh! do be yourself—Annie! Annie!"

"Yes, yes," said Annie, "I'm ready."

The two were at length awakened, and were briefly and urgently asked by Emma to get up, and dress at once; for she feared that pirates, or some night-prowlers, were about to attack the house; that they were coming in the creek, perhaps had landed by this time, at the foot of the garden; and she wished their help in putting the house in a state of defence.

"What can we do?" asked Annie, faintly and despondingly; "Oh! pray, don't say that they come from Coode's old house?" and she fell back in the bed.

"But," continued Emma, "don't be alarmed. They are not spirits, or ghosts; something worse I fear. I heard the splash of the oar. We must go down stairs, call up the overseer, and see that your man Jack, and the others I posted in the basement, are up; and then arm them the best we can."

Hardly conscious of what she was doing, Annie mechanically followed Emma; while Julia followed, excited by the occasion, her dream, and the supposed spectre of her father. The overseer was roused, the negro men called up, and the available force of the establishment was mustered in the parlour.

"What arms have you?" asked Emma quickly.

"Two old swords," replied the overseer, "which belonged to Captain Coode;" and his aguish face and manner showed that the name of Coode could hardly be syllabled by him.

"What else?" asked Emma, impatiently.

"A gun and pistol," was his reply.

"Good," trying to look bold, "have you any powder and ball?"

"Yes," said Mrs. Annie, and she turned to a closet near by, and brought out more ammunition than they were likely to want. The gun and pistol were carefully loaded.

"Give me the pistol," said Emma. "Now there are but two doors opening into the yard. Do you think," addressing Jack, "that the doors and bars are stout enough to stand a heavy battering?"

"No fear, missus," trembling, "no fear of dem flesh and blood bokras, like Massa Prentis here, beating down dem doors, or gittin in by dem dere shutters; ah! but dese devils, dat's the thing, ky! dey come in any whar."

"I've no fears of any thing worse than flesh and blood," said Emma. "You think, Jack, there's no mistake about the shutters?"

"Good as doors, missus."

"No ladders out there to get up to them?" she asked. Jack said he believed not.

Thus assured, Emma felt a little more comfortable, thinking, if she should be besieged, that the besiegers must use uncommon force and alacrity to force their way in before

day-light. She gave her orders. Jack and a stout negro fellow were posted at the front door inside, each armed with an old sword, that had perhaps in former times been wielded by the valorous Captain John Coode against the proprietary and his government. The negroes had orders to cut down any body who should force open the door, and try to enter; promising to each of them a handsome present at Whitsuntide holy day, if they behaved bravely. The overseer, who now felt a blush of manly shame at the superior intrepidity of Emma to himself, a stout man, appeared to be anxious to make atonement. He took the gun, and said that he and the boy Tom, who had a large club, would guard the back door.

"I will stand in the passage," said Emma, holding the pistol in her right hand. "I can shoot as well as the next one;" endeavouring to seem confident, hoping to infuse confidence into her garrison. But her assertion was not an idle bravado. Her father had taught her the use of fire-arms; under the impression that, in the then unsettled state of the country, she might find this knowledge serviceable. Parson Gordon knew, too, that in order to repel the assaults of dastards, no matter with what intent they come, a gun wielded even by a woman will suffice. The negroes, though armed and assured by kind words, and Emma's calm voice, were tremulous from fear, and Emma was about to despair of so craven a force, when Annie, roused for the moment by the urgency, hastened to procure from a drawer a withered branch of palms, which she broke and distributed among them.

"Now, uncle Jack, Tom, Bill," said Mrs. Annie, "hold on to this."

"Ghosts and dem devils no hurt now, missus," said Jack, while he and the others, having great faith in charms, eagerly caught at the pieces of withered palm, put them in their bosoms, and, cheered up a good deal, said they would die for their young mistresses; and then repaired to their posts.

During much of this time, Julia and Annie sat at the lowest step of the staircase. Julia was restless, anxious to be doing, not unwilling to face danger if she could but see it, yet ignorant how to make herself serviceable, and was with difficulty prevailed on by Emma to sit quietly still. Annie was roused but once from her stupor of nervous exhaustion,

and then she distributed the blest palm. Two candles in the passage threw a strong light upon the parties. Every ear was now strained to catch the least noise. Emma's heart beat quick as she thought she heard the old mastiff growl, who slept in the porch; and she looked to see if the men were at their posts. To Emma's amazement, Julia sprang with the alertness of a fawn, and quickly unbarring the passage window, put out her hand to help some one in. "She's crazy," thought Emma; and, as this and other thoughts came in quick succession, her heart sank within her. But she had hardly made this reflection, before the light and graceful figure of Adaratha passed into the passage.

"Robber,—bad man,—so many,"—holding up her hand,—"all coming. Me leave Pleasant Lodge day break. No say word to Mr. Holt. Me come in yard, me see robbers."

All this, with far more rapidity, and far less sang-froid than usual, Adaratha communicated.

"How did Julia know it was you?" Emma quickly asked.

Adaratha smiled significantly, and replied: "Me sing like partridge at window, and July know me."

"Thank you, thank you," said Emma, having no time for further explanations; but looking alarmed, she added, "How did you get up to the window?"

"Ladder, ladder, there," said Adaratha.

"Too bad!" said Emma. "Julia, did you fasten the shutters?"

"No," was the reply; and Julia was about to repair her neglect, when the youngest of the three negroes, an active and muscular lad, gained the window; but, as he put out his head, he gave a scream, almost fell into the passage, and cowered in fear at the upper end. The negroes, Tom and Jack, were afraid to advance.

At this moment a light was seen out of doors, and voices were heard.

"This will not do," said Emma. "Will no one shut the window?" Her face blanched as she spoke, and her pupils dilated from fear, and her voice was husky. "Must I shut it myself?"—and she pressed her hands convulsively together.

The overseer was moved. He gained the window, and

saw a lantern, and a man with a hideous mask on the top of the ladder.

"Shoot !" said Emma, in a commanding voice.

The overseer seemed to be spell-bound. The negroes were paralyzed. Annie saw and heard but little. Julia started up, and wildly gazed upon the man with the mask. Emma and Adaratha alone were self-possessed.

"I am too far off to shoot," said Emma.

In a very brief time, before the overseer and negroes could rally, three men with hideous masks on, entered into the passage. Their frightful aspects, their unknown purpose, the suspicion that they were pirates, their supposed place of refuge, Coode's house, the almost certainty that they were armed, and must be more than a match for twice their number of ordinary men; (certainly superior to the little force she had around her;) and the terrible thought that death was the least evil which menaced her friends and self,—all impressed Emma so painfully, that, for a moment, she nearly fell to the floor, and gave up all as lost. This dreadful thought, however, called back, from the necessity it showed of an immediate and desperate effort, the tide of life, and the resolution, which, for once only, had forsaken her.

"We can but die," said the noble girl, "and welcome death."

So saying, she levelled her pistol at the nearest of the three intruders, and fired. At the same instant, with the agility of a cat, Adaratha sprang forward, and with a large knife wounded the next man, who fell about the same time that he fell whom Emma had shot. To what extent they were wounded was not known.

In the meanwhile, the third person, drawing a cutlass, advanced upon the overseer and negroes, who had now rallied, discovering they were fighting with flesh and blood. The overseer was in the rear, and so situated that he could use his gun only as a club. This third intruder stood over the bodies of his fallen comrades, parried the ill aimed blows of the negroes, from two of whom he drew blood, and fought so skilfully and manfully that he seemed to be nearly a match for them.

But now voices were heard out of doors.

"We shall be too late," said a voice. "Hurry on."

Emma and her friends had begun to entertain hopes.

On hearing the new comers, they felt like abandoning themselves to despair, Julia perhaps excepted. She seized the pistol in Emma's hand, which had just been reloaded, aimed at the third person mentioned, and fired. The ball glanced by his hat, and lodged in the passage wall.

Quick, however, upon the noises came the speakers,—Montrose and Shepard, the latter being in advance. Annie screamed from excess of joy; and Emma felt that never before had she found it so difficult to speak her gratitude to God.

Montrose immediately waved his hand to the overseer and negroes to retire, and, advancing to the supposed pirate, said :

"Well, captain, you have brought your valour to a fine port. Drop anchor now, and quit the sea."

Then laying his hand on the person whom Adaratha had stabbed, he continued, "Come, counsellor, have you no pleas to offer in arrest of judgment? This fellow," pushing the one whom Emma had shot "is, I fear, so far gone that Miss Euphy's smile could not bring him to life."

Shepard laughed heartily, and said :

"This is but one, only one of the ten thousand tricks of the mischievous god. He has got the counsellor here into a worse case than he ever manœuvred an opponent into in court, and besides, after all, there is no Miss Evelin to witness and reward his valour. For, ladies, you must know that, in one of my mad humours, and of which on bended knee," kneeling as he spoke, "I humbly crave forgiveness, I suggested to the amorous captain how very clever it would be to assail Mrs. Annie's fortress by night with a masque on, and having taken it and the fair one captive, it would be so like a knight errant to make his best bow, and in rhyme make to Mrs. Annie a surrender back of the fortress, only asking the privilege of being the castellan, or, as he worded it, of commanding the ship.

"But never dreamed I, and ladies, I am serious, that the captain would act on my suggestion. To night, at St. Mary's, I learned that Captain Fulford, Counsellor Brief, and William Hackett, gentleman, had supplied themselves with masks, and gone in a boat to Elfin Creek. Mr. Montrose and myself are happy to have been able to reach here just in time to save the valorous captain, if we are too late to be of service to the others. But surely, counsellor, you are

more scared than hurt?" stooping, and seeking to raise the consequential attorney.

"Only slightly wounded," replied Brief, rising with affected dignity. "A mere trick, good ladies, I assure you, and meant in all respect, but that red woman there," pointing to Adaratha, "wanted to make me briefless." He tried, but not successfully, to laugh. "Only a scratch on the arm, thanks to my address in warding off the blow."

"Thanks to your stuffed greaves," sulkily said the sailor. "Your hull was oakumed and coppered. You knew your timbers were too rotten to turn a ball."

"Hackett, Hackett," said Shepard, "gone to limbo, as Father Canon would say, with the like of you?"

"That Protestant woman there," replied Hackett, getting up slowly, "meant to have shot me. Indeed, I thought my left arm was broken. I was afeard to move lest I might hurt it."

"Yes," said Montrose, "you and the counsellor lay still for a minute or so as pig in pork. Discretion is the better part of valour. You have behaved bravely in so well counterfeiting death. Brave fellows, are you? Conquered by two ladies! The captain is the only man."

"Ladies are ever formidable, friend Montrose," joined in Shepard. "I always surrender at discretion. Besides, the captain here had rather 'be set quick in the earth, and bowled to death with turnips,' than have his honour come off so badly."

"Yes," muttered the sailor, looking fiercely at Shepard, and with difficulty suppressing an oath, "I'd rather been taken pirating on the high seas than to have sailed so out of my reckoning. Never mind, by the powers, I'll give you, mister, with the long beard, a broadside yet, and then I'll go and drown myself."

The ladies the meanwhile rallied. They had cause to be offended, and at another time, and under different circumstances, would have signified their displeasure in a becoming manner to Brief, Hackett, and the captain, and probably would have reserved a portion for Shepard, in just castigation for his unwarrantable prank, but gratitude and joy at their deliverance overcame every other feeling. Emma wished the supposed pirates to show themselves in their proper dress, by taking off their masks. They would then know if it was even yet safe to trust them. And Mrs.

Annie, in a way peculiar to her, asked the captain to leave it to her to punish Mr. Shepard.

"No, I beg not," said Shepard suppliantly, "I cannot show fight even when Mrs. Annie assails."

The sailor could not say nay to one of Mrs. Annie's smiles. Refreshments were brought out, the affairs of the night discussed, and, before day dawned, the parties retired to refresh themselves with a little sleep.

As she withdrew to her chamber, "How idle," thought Emma, "are nine-tenths of the fears which keep us constantly alarmed!" But, idle as are these fears generally, we will add, the events of that afternoon and night were calculated to chime in with superstitious apprehensions. Every thing had a supernatural aspect. Thus the adventure at Coode's ruin, and the lights which were seen in it at night, both of which were inexplicable by any reasoning they could command, and the disturbed dreams of Emma and her friends, though traceable doubtless to moral causes affecting the sleepers at the time, were materials from which superstition could easily build. Out of timber even more rotten it erects its haunted ruin and its ghostly chamber.

CHAPTER XVIII.

LAYING OF THE GHOST BY FATHER CANON.

"Rome devised a system so complete in all its parts, for the subjugation both of body and of mind, that, like Archimedes, she asked but one thing, and that Luther denied her; a fulcrum of ignorance on which to rest that lever by which she could have balanced the world."

LACON.

WE said that the neighbourhood had been much disturbed by the lights and noises in Coode's ruin. Father Canon had been asked, and had promised his assistance to come the next day, and lay the supposed ghost at Mrs. Doolittle's, which had quite crazed the Irish woman, Katy, who was a member of his church. And, therefore, the next morning there was a goodly gathering for the time and place.

Besides our acquaintances at Elfin Hall, there were Colonel Smithson, Mr. Craft the collector, the Rev. Mr. Allgrace, and his shadow, Mr. Doolittle; these two last worthies, with the view of finding statutory grounds for the criminal process against the Roman priests at St. Inigoes', having joined in the company.

The Roman Catholics who were there, affected to believe that Father Canon had the power ascribed to him, and doubtless some of them exulted that an occasion would be presented of his exercising this power in confirmation of the Catholic (Romish) faith.

Allgrace and Doolittle, who, we said, were present, asked each other, not only whereunto this thing would grow, but did the priest, in truth, possess this power. They had seen Katy but the day before at Mrs. Doolittle's, and from her appearance judged that she was no impostor, but an actual sufferer from phantoms, or something as bad, what they could not say. Both Katy and Mrs. Doolittle spoke of a night visitant to the house, though Katy's room seemed alone to have been the scene of his wanderings. Mrs. Doolittle had ugly dreams, she said, and being less learned than Dame Partlet, she had never read in Galen that they

"Are from repletion and complexion bred,
From rising fumes of indigested food,
And noxious humours that infect the blood ;"

but supposed they were owing to the same intruder who would not let Katy sleep. Katy's tale they thought most marvellous. There were three facts, however, mentioned by Katy, which puzzled them not a little. While they admitted the existence of troubled spirits, and believed as firmly in devils and diabolic agency in torturing people, besides leading them to sin, as did Baxter and the Puritans in Massachusetts, they could not understand how it could be that Katy should have heard the ghost say he was doomed to rove in a cold and dark place till his soul should find rest, nor how, when he laid his hand on Katy, the touch should have been as of ice, and they did not above all understand how it could be, as Katy said, the ghost had asked a mass to be said for his soul in order that it might have rest. This ghost, said they, was a formal prelatist, or a mass Jesuit; and going to torment he should have been in the torment of fire—and fire supposes light and heat; how then could he be cold, or in darkness? His touch surely should rather have burnt her.

Masses for the dead were, they were sure, contrivances of popery, and could do no good whatever. Why then should the ghost ask what he must know was more than useless? Here were problems that must be solved, and after vain efforts, they cut short their disquisition about matters too deep for them, by saying that one of two conclusions must be the truth. Katy was a Romanist, and what she saw she may have coloured so as to favour her church; or if, being too truthful to do that, (as earnest and simple they knew her to be,) she told what she saw and heard, then the devil must have deceived her.

Another question now disturbed the worthies. Would this troubled spirit let Katy alone at the instance of Father Canon; even should he say a mass for its soul, and then exorcise it? The mass, they understood, Father Canon had said that morning at St. Inigoes'. The exorcism was now to finish Father Canon's laying of the troubled spirit.

"The prayer of a righteous man," said Allgrace, in his usual funereal tone, as the two were riding towards Mrs. Doolittle's residence, "availeth much. But this Father Canon is a Jesuited priest, and his church is the scarlet

whore. His prayers surely can do no good." A very proper inference from the premises, with the charitable character of Father Canon supposed.

No wonder then, that, like shadow, like substance, Doolittle replied; "His prayers can't be worth much."

At length Allgrace halted his horse. A bright idea had occurred to him, and, like Archimedes, he could say, Eureka, Eureka. "Brother Doolittle," said he, "I see now how it will work. Ah! catch a Jesuit if you can. The devil, you know, always favours his own." Doolittle bowed assent. "This is the work of the devil."

"No doubt on it," responded the shadow.

"Well now," and the puritan opened his jaws as a pike, "in order to make converts to this heathenish popery, the devil will be very, very apt to help this Jesuited priest."

"Yes, I guess 'twill be even as you say," said Doolittle. "So you think, then, the devil will stop a tormenting Katy on Father Canon's prayers to him. That's a thought worthy of you, brother."

"I think so," concluded Allgrace, with a very complacent air. "The more he helps the priest, the more he ensnares the Protestants. Didn't the devil help the Egyptian magicians? And when we think of it, these popish priests have a heap to back them, when we try to undeceive the poor people."

"A conclusion," interrupted Father Canon, who, unknown to the party, had overheard their talk, "quite equal to an Egyptian miracle. You would say, I suppose, such diseases as Katy suffers from, being the work of the devil, by the devil must be cured. But I thought your Protestant Bibles said, Satan did not cast out Satan; for, if he did, his kingdom could not stand?"

Doolittle and Allgrace looked amazed, and turned round, nearly as much put out as if Satan himself had been behind them. Father Canon immediately began to cross himself, with an expression of face in which affected gravity and leerish humour were blended together.

"Stop one moment," said Father Canon, "There is one thing a Jesuit priest can't do. Would you know what it is?" Allgrace and Doolittle made no reply, but seemed anxious to move on. "You say," continued the priest, "the devil gives Jesuit priests the power to cast out devils. Now it required a Christ to cast the seven devils out of Mary Mag-

dalen, and it would need a Christ to cast out the seven devils and more that are in a puritan. Be not afraid, gentlemen, though a Jesuit priest, I have no power over you." So saying the priest rode on, and muttered to himself, "I'll wager the Talmudists were right in saying that Father Adam had a wife, before he saw Mother Eve, and of her he had many children; all of whom with their posterity were devils; and the puritans in this way only can be connected to Adam, and the rest of mankind." The priest was received by the crowd before Mrs. Doolittle's door cordially and reverentially.

As he dismounted Colonel Smithson approached the jovial ecclesiastic, and with mock gravity, but in an undertone, said, "I am happy to meet your reverence on another hunt."

"Thank you," was the reply, "but I shall have better luck than you had, colonel."

"Let your reverence beware," said the colonel, "you have a tougher stag to hunt down than the old hart: and, instead of chasing him to the water, he may drive you into this creek."

"No fear of that," laughing as he replied, "I can keep him off by holy water, and if I find him very troublesome, why I have only to give him permission," pointing to All-grace and Doolittle.

"To take possession of them," said the colonel, smiling.

"Yes, as Christ gave the devils permission to deal with the swine, who were feeding about the lake of Gennesaret," and, having so said, Father Canon entered the house.

Colonel Smithson then turned round to Mr. Craft, the collector, and asked if they were not now about to witness one of Father Canon's freaks of humour? The collector looked surprised and hurt.

"Oh don't tell me about Father Canon, Mr. Craft," smiling. "He is too great a lover of fun to let go by a chance. I dare say he will act his part as solemnly in this farce as if he were acting a tragedy."

"You forget, worthy colonel," replied the collector, flurried, and not liking the colonel's seeming impeachment of the exorcism office, "the Catholic Church accounts exorcism one of her most solemn offices."

"You misunderstand me, Mr. Collector, I mean no doubt of any office of the Catholic Church; but I know your

worthy priest; and hang me, if I know a pleasanter man, or one who can make even the solemn minister to the agreeable. But, Mr. Craft, where do you get your doctrine of exorcism? We Protestants are very, perhaps much too ignorant on such matters." And the politic colonel spoke so modestly that the cautious collector was taken off his guard; flattered doubtless by the seeming deference of one so much his superior in society. Now Mr. Craft's tone of voice was peculiar, being soft, gentle, lamb-like, and nearly feminine. Shakspeare approved such a tone in woman, but some think in a man it is evincive of a want of manliness, and say it awakens the suspicion that the individual may resemble the cat in disposition no less than in voice. We will not contend for the rule, but allow there may be exceptions. Mr. Craft hesitated a moment, and then, rather to the colonel's amusement than edification, the collector mustered up the little he had read or heard on the subject. He referred to the apocryphal book of Tobit, where Tobias, by the direction of an angel, burnt the liver of a fish, and, by the smoke thereof, drove off the devil Asmodeus.

"Who can doubt, colonel, that the smoke of incense now, and the sign of the cross, with the prayers of the priest and holy water, will have the same effect on devils and troubled spirits?" The colonel looked grave, and the collector, proud of so docile a pupil, said that he had read in Josephus, where one Eleazar, in the presence of the Emperor Vespasian, delivered many persons from evil spirits by putting to their nose a certain ring; the odour or offensiveness of which at once expelled the demon. "And I have heard that the Jews have a saying that the smell of sweet odours will drive away hurtful spirits." The colonel smiled incredulously.

"Admirable! Mr. Collector," said Shepard, who was standing by, "Eleazar was quite equal to King Eric of Sweden, who, by putting on his conjuring cap, made the spirits and even winds obey him. But I am surprised to hear that demons are so nice about sweet smells. A dirty fellow then is less like a gentleman than the prince of darkness. Perhaps that is the reason why your Saint Francis thought saintship and filth went together."

The rest of the company were talking over the marvellous story of the Irish woman Katy, and many wondered if there was any, and what connexion there could be between the troubled spirit in Katy's room, and the lights and noises in

Cooode's mansion, which was about a mile off. With the crowd there was both seriousness and solemnity. Colonel Smithson and Shepard were nearly the only persons who appeared to look on with the wish or expectation of sport. Our friend Montrose was all attention, and did not know exactly what to think, while the ladies, Emma, Annie, and Julia, who were under his charge, were variously affected.

In the meanwhile Father Canon entered the house, and saw Katy, looking the picture of despair, starting at every sound, almost glaring at the persons near her, and evidently in fear that the troubled spirit might at any moment make his appearance. She was sitting under a tree in the back yard, and acting thus strangely, when some one said to her, "Father Canon has come, and wants to speak to you." She immediately began to adjust her dress, and smooth her hair; and having thus briefly made her toilet, she drew near the priest, and knelt with her head lowly bowed, and her arms crossed on her breast.

"Pax vobis, pax vobis," said the priest.

"Blessings on your reverence, for coming to help a poor craither. And won't you dribe away the horrid baste that made me lose more days, by not sleeping, than I have slept hours. And sure your riverince will?"

"Be quiet," said Father Canon.

Katy said no more. The priest robed himself, and having made his preparations, began at the garret, where he walked around it, and sprinkled holy water on the sides of the wall. He continued so to do till he had sprinkled holy water, and said the exorcism office in all rooms, passages, and even closets of Mrs. Doolittle's house.

"I wish he would speak louder and slower," said Julia to Emma. "What does he mean," repeating a part of the exorcism-office, "'Exorcizo te immundissime spiritus.' See how furiously he crossés himself, and how fast he speaks, when he says: 'Recede et da locum spiritui sancto per hoc signum crucis?'"

"I might tell you," said Emma, in a whisper, to her, "if I knew Latin; but, as I led you and Annie into difficulty yesterday, you persuaded me into this improper, unbecoming, and I fear, sinful sight seeing to-day. To me it seems to be any thing but worship, and I wish we were away from here."

Montrose heard Julia's question, and explained the mean-

ing of the Latin phrases to her as an exorcising of the unclean spirit, and a command to him to withdraw, and give place to the Holy Spirit, in obedience to the sign of the cross, which the priest made.

"Do you think he will obey?" asked Julia, as if she did not altogether question Father Canon's power.

Montrose shrugged his shoulders, and said, "I will believe it, when I know it."

The priest now gave the crowd to understand that he had driven the troubled spirit to the cellar; and he was about to follow him there. The company moved with him in that direction; the priest, however, alone entered the cellar; while the lookers-on saw as well as they could by the door and window.

"Won't he escape?" said Doolittle, anxiously.

"Oh! no," replied Mr. Craft in an undertone. "Father Canon, you observe, has made the sign of the cross. He has made it on the threshold of the door, and on the window-sill."

Doolittle seemed to breathe more freely, and he turned to Allgrace, and the two whispered to each other their surmises.

"The Lord bless me!" exclaimed Mrs. Doolittle, as she saw an Irishman, Katy's brother, by the command of Father Canon, bring into the cellar from the kitchen a large iron pot. "Sure, and the never a bit of hot water, no, never," continued Mrs. Doolittle, "shall I be able to boil in my big pot agin. For, if I were now to use it, there's no knowing what might not happen."

The pot was placed in the middle of the cellar, and here was about to be shown, not "death in the pot," but a spirit, or the evil one in it. Mute wonderment enchained many, while a thrill of exultation blended with fear pervaded the Roman Catholic spectators, as they saw Father Canon's movements, and heard his Latin, and above all when they became aware, as he turned the big pot over, and defended any egress from it, by guarding it all round with signs of the cross, and solemn objurations, that the spirit was under it. On Katy the effect was almost marvellous. No sooner had Father Canon closed the services, and said to her, "Dominus vobiscum," and "pax vobis," than she became to all appearance a sane woman, and was in her right mind as much as ever.

"I want no more," said Allgrace to Doolittle, as the two rode slowly away. "I can fix him. If the witch of Endor deserved to die, much more does this priest of the devil."

"Oh! let him live," interrupted Shepard, joining them. "The sin of witches lay in calling devils up, but Father Canon has been so kind as to lay this devil. And, provided he could lay other devils as well," dropping his voice, "the devils of fanaticism and puritanism, I would propose that he be even salaried by the Legislature." And so saying Shepard spurred his horse to overtake the ladies of Elfin Hall, who were just ahead of him.

Now little communities, like little bodies, are most affected by slight explosions. Our readers have heard of a tempest in a teapot, and have noticed the agitation into which little folks are thrown by "trifles light as air." We have seen a worthy friend, who was rather less in size than the Canadian giant, much disturbed by the intrusions of an impudent pig into his garden. And the effect of this laying of the ghost on the good people in that section of the province was astonishing. The report which it gave rise to, travelled on the wings of the wind, and like all other reports, lost nothing in travelling. For, while a traveller rather scatters his wealth, than adds to it, as a rolling stone gathers no moss, rumours, like snowballs, grow in travelling. Thus it was said in Charles county that Father Canon took the devil by the horns, and dragged him into the cellar; but the devil, not relishing the idea of being potted, like mince-meat, or fearing, perhaps, if he should be potted, that he might be put on the fire before his time should come, politely as he dared, remonstrated; when Father Canon, concluding that it would not do to be civil to the evil one, made over him the awful sign; repeating at the time some fearful words in Latin; for it would seem that his satanic majesty, as said some of the Romanists, in this matter, (as perhaps in other respects,) showed that the puritans were his inferiors; for he understood Latin very well, and appreciated the force of Father Hunter's argument that a prayer, or abjuration, to be offered properly, must be in Latin. Hence, at the magic words the devil vanished into smoke, settling, it was believed, quietly in the pot.

How he came to take the form of smoke, said some, need excite no wonder, for smoke and fire are ever inseparable; and, as with Satan flames are always associated, so smoke

was a very proper manner for him to disappear in. He could not have disappeared otherwise, said another, who regarded the whole story as a miserable fable; for what was but smoke, or a fuss about nothing, could end only in smoke.

The story, however, did not stop here. It proceeded to say that Father Canon then turned to go away, when there was heard an explosion as loud as the discharge of a musket, and the pot was seen to sail out of the cellar with the troubled spirit seated in it, looking much amused at the amazement and consternation of the crowd. But, in passing out of the cellar, owing perhaps, it was conjectured by the newsmongers, to Mr. Allgrace being near before the door outside, the pot passed very near the head of this worthy, and slightly singed his hair. It was said further, that the spirit and pot went hissing into the creek like a hot poker; and by the last report it was stated that he was seen in his pot riding over the waves at Point Lookout, and bearing directly due east for the eastern shore. Whether, however, he took up his abode at or near Devil's Island, in Somerset County, or whether he divides his time between the country about St. Inigoes', and that about Devil's Island, the report did not say. The newsmongers probably not having agreed among themselves under which of the nine kinds of spirits, as defined by the learned Agrippa, this troubled spirit is to be classed; or whether it was an evil spirit at all, but only a poor unannealed prelatist or papist, as charitably supposed Allgrace and Doolittle, whom Father Canon having laid to rest, then allowed to escape in this way, in order to give ocular proof that he had wrought a miracle, which they could all bear witness to.

Our friends, Annie, Julia, and Emma had other and more profitable conjectures.

Emma's remark was: "This is enough for me. If this exorcism be religion, then I must say religion is a drivelling superstition. God's word says, 'Resist the devil, and he will flee from you.' 'Watch and pray that ye enter not into temptation.' But the Church of Rome says, 'Look to a priest, by prayers in Latin, and the burning and sprinkling of incense, and frequent crossings of himself, to deliver you from the evil one, or from the fearful apparitions,' which, I think, more or less, cowardice in us all makes us to see and hear rather than the true report of our senses."

Annie made no reply to this remark. Julia's mind was too busy to express itself.

Allgrace and Doolittle had already, as we mentioned, come to one conclusion on the exorcism of the disturbed spirit, and this was to use what they saw and could otherwise establish against Father Canon as matter for a prosecution in court. Having so concluded, they determined, as the disturbed spirit would not be likely to haunt the house of Mrs. Doolittle, and as that dame particularly desired the company of Allgrace and her brother that evening, hoping to find in their spiritual converse relief and comfort in her then troubled state, these worthies, after riding to St. Mary's, returned just at dark to sup at Mrs. Doolittle's. Katy waited upon them, looking quite a different person, calm, composed, and happy. Mrs. Doolittle felt that a load was lifted from her heart in the laying of the spirit, and the company before her. Allgrace and Doolittle were not a little thankful that they could now stop in such good quarters, without the fear of nocturnal intrusion, and the evening passed away, Allgrace thought, more pleasantly than any other he had spent there, since the night mentioned in our first chapter, when Parson Gordon rode by, and heard him "exercising his gifts in prayer." A long and windy prayer closed the chat for the night, and Allgrace was shown to a chamber. He was to sleep by himself, and his room was on the ground floor, and directly under Katy's. The association was not the most agreeable. But now, he said to himself, beyond the association there was no objection to sleeping in the room. He undressed after awhile, and laid down. His light was but an inch candle, and he lay endeavouring to compose himself to sleep till the candle had burnt to the socket; and then, regretting that his hostess had limited him to so scanty a light, and saying mentally, there is no need for fear, the spirit is not here now, he blew out the flickering flame. In about half an hour, Allgrace, after groaning as usual, to expel perhaps the ill humours which during the day collected in him, fell asleep, and was snoring loudly.

"Now is the time to fix the fellow," said a voice in the wall of the chamber. "He'll prosecute Father Canon, will he?" So saying the speaker came from his hiding place by a small door that opened into the room, and he was followed by another person.

"We must not make any more noise than we can help," said the same speaker, "or we'll wake Katy, and, poor creature, she has rested badly."

Their advice was rather late. Allgrace slept unsoundly, and started, hearing the noise. But it was now still. A moment after, as he was relapsing to sleep, he heard a groan at the head of his bed. Could he be dreaming? or was it real? He heard another groan. The puritan wanted to ask what was the matter? A third groan was heard, and this was followed by a cry like that of a screech owl at the foot of his bed. Allgrace partly raised himself, and just found resolution to ask who it was, and what he could do. The reply was a groan so piteous that the sympathies of Allgrace were nearly as much excited as his fears.

"What can I do?" he asked very solemnly, his voice yet tremulous the while.

"I fear," said the voice, "it may be too late," and there was a groan again.

"I adjure thee," said the puritan, trying to be calm, "by the living God tell me what thou art, and what I can do."

"You knew Elder Durand?" asked the voice, and another groan.

Now, much as Allgrace venerated the memory of this deceased puritan worthy, he had no wish to keep up an intercourse with him after he had passed from this breathing world to the mysterious one beyond, and, without pausing to ask himself might there not be deception or delusion of some kind here, he felt most uncomfortable at the thought that Elder Durand, sainted as he believed him to be, had come from the world of shades, and was now in his bed-chamber. He with difficulty asked,

"The good saint that's gone to heaven, who settled Annapolis?"

The spectre at the head of the bed groaned in reply, and the visitant at the foot made a chuckle, sharp, and unlike a human being's voice, in tone, as if the person breathed and exhaled through a comb. Allgrace's blood nearly froze with terror. A sepulchral voice then said,

"I am the soul of Elder Durand doomed to wander in this world, and I want rest, rest, rest."

Such an announcement carried terrible confusion to Allgrace's ideas. In his opinion, Elder Durand was the beau ideal of orthodoxy and goodness, and he thought it was

impossible that he could be still a disturbed spirit. There was something wrong somewhere. It could not be, and the puritan almost concluded that the voice came from a demon, and not Elder Durand's spirit in the duress of post mortem confinement. Allgrace, therefore, muttered an incoherent prayer, in which the expressions, "Get thee hence, Satan!" "lying spectre, be gone!" "Jesus, save me!" were more than once repeated. But he was not allowed to pray but a very few minutes. The very shrill and most unpleasant noise at the foot of the bed was repeated, even more shrill and unpleasant, and Allgrace convulsively sat up, shaking with terror, and almost desperate with hatred of the thing or phantom that so fearfully announced itself. What to do, was the question. To lie down, and cover himself head and ears with the coverlet, would not get rid of his annoyer. If he could muster courage to dress and leave the room, he might be delivered. But this was the rub. And he sat up in bed trembling, anxious to get out, and deep peering through the dark as if he would see what might be the company around him. But his eye brought him no report, and his ear for a moment or two conveyed to him as little. It was a still night, and cloudy and dark. All in the house seemed to be asleep. At length he heard a movement at the foot of his bed, and straining his eyes in that quarter he faintly asked, "What are you? Tell me."

"Feel me, and you'll know," replied the same shrill, piercing voice, and something not very large was moving on the bed, while the same voice continued:

"Where's the slimy snake there stay I,
Where's the toad's bed there I lie,
Where the worm creeps and eats his fill,
I wait and hope to have thee still."

A noise most unnatural followed these lines, a noise between the croaking of a frog and the hissing of a snake. The devil, or something very kin to him, must be near, and feeling that something moved on the bed near the foot, Allgrace put out his hand to push it off. He touched an object cold and rough, as we may suppose a frog feels to the touch. What Allgrace would have done, must be left to conjecture. But at this instant the door opened, and a figure walking steadily on naked feet, entered. Biped it seemed to be, but it was too dark to say whether it was man or woman. The ghost of Elder Durand, and the companion of the snake, the toad,

and worm retreated hastily by their private door, and by an outlet, left the house.

"The ghost, as I live! has come, sure enough," said one of the retreating party, chattering with fear.

"Yes," said the other, "and I wish I was ten miles from here," and with hardly less fear than Allgrace, they buried themselves in the dark woods, and by a path known to them, and only stopping now and then to catch breath, they hurried on. Allgrace heard the steps of those retreating, and the steps of the new comer entering; but was in no state of mind to think clearly about the matter. The cold object he touched in bed, the voices and all, and then the prospect of yet further annoyance—took from him all resolution. He lay back in bed coiled up as a rope, with the sheets and coverlet wrapt around him. The figure, which was Katy, somnambulating, walked about the room, and then withdrew, returned to her chamber, and lay down, totally unconscious that she had played the part of a ghost, or that Father Canon had laid the ghost which had disturbed her.

Allgrace's appearance in the morning bespoke a mind ill at ease; but, for reasons best known to himself, he made no allusion to the supposed phantoms, which had intruded into his room. He had received a mortal stab in the imputation cast on Elder Durand. It haunted him nearly as painfully as did the spectres on that night. That the soul of a puritan should not be at rest was a supposition calculated to derange his whole system of rewards and punishments. His mind was full of the subject as he rode away the next morning towards St. Mary; too full of meditation to let out his thoughts and feelings to his companion, Doolittle.

The absurd plot, that resulted so unpleasantly to Allgrace, was carried out by two persons, Darnell and Hackett, who were any thing but ghostly; the contrivance of the plot, of which they were the unthinking agents, was the work of Father Canon, or some other person, who wished to punish Allgrace for his hostility to the Roman priests.

CHAPTER XIX.

PARSON GORDON AT ST. INIGOES—HE AND FATHER HUNTER ON THE
PAPAL SUPREMACY.—FATHER CANON'S PLEASANTRY.

"Quod semper, quod ubique, quod ab omnibus."

"Mark, how each creed stands in that text reveal'd—
Romish, and Swiss, and Lutheran novelties!
As in the light of Spencer's magic shield,
Falsehood lets fall her poisoned cup and flies—
Rome's seven-headed monster sees and dies!
New forms of schism which changing times supply
Behold the unwonted light in wild surprise.
In darkness bold, bright-shining arms they spy,
And down their parents' mouth the imps of error hie."

LYRA APOSTOLICA.

THE report of the laying of the ghost at Mrs. Doolittle's by Father Canon came to Parson Gordon in St. George's, with such enlargements as the love of the marvellous, and the disposition to exaggerate, had imparted, by the time it had travelled thus far. The worthy rector had too much sense to quarrel with human nature for this infirmity; though he regretted it, as thereby the Church of Rome would have a further hold on the imbecile portion of the population.

"However, it is all right, Robin," said he to McGregor, who was with him in a boat, about to cross over to the point of land that is made by the mouth of St. Inigoes' creek. "The more Mr. Canon lays the deil, the less trouble we'll have."

"He'll hae mony deils to lay," said Robin, "if he maun lay them a.'"

"But you don't believe this story?" was the reply, struck at Robin's solemnity, and disposed to smile at his credulity. But Robin was not wiser nor more sensible than others of his day in the same class. He firmly believed in the spirits of the dead returning to earth again, and haunting the places of their former sojourn; loved to talk about the hobgoblin rings which certain fairies of the larger sort made in the fields near Loch Dochart, and spoke of a Robin Goodfellow, who was dressed in the rough highland kirtle and

plaid that was worn long before his day, that used to come to his father's cabin on the hill side, and for a breakfast of oat cakes, do any sort of work that old McGregor put him to do. These kind of deils, however, Robin pretended not very much to fear. But of deils or spirits of another sort, such as, it was said, told to Macbeth and Banquo their fortunes in the blasted heath of Fores, Robin stood in great terror. He had a perfect hydrophobia in this sense, and never ventured on water without certain objurations beforehand. And these reports about the neighbourhood of St. Inigoes, not only made him unwilling to venture in that vicinity, but especially to go there by water. Parson Gordon's business, however, was urgent, and he was not sorry either, knowing Robin's weakness here, by taking him along with him on a visit to a sick parishioner in that quarter, to do something towards inducing in Robin a healthier state of mind on this subject. But Robin's fears were all the time uppermost. He anxiously surveyed the clouds, and looked up and down the river as he got into the boat, preparing to scull the canoe across to St. Inigoes'.

"Get in man, and pull away," said the rector, "there's no danger."

Robin thought differently, and pointed significantly to the clouds, and the wonderful smoothness of the water, and a certain state of the atmosphere which generally precedes a storm.

"Well," said the rector, smiling, "these signs only show we may be caught by a gust of wind in the river, unless you are smart in pulling us over."

"Hut tut, mon," replied Robin, impatiently, "is that a'?"

"Why," smiling, "you seem to think, Robin, that St. Mary's is equal to Lapland. Witches there are said to sell winds to mariners, and by their incantations cause and quiet tempests; but, you know, we break our egg shells, and they can't cross over the ocean."

"There are deils here too," said Robin, "deils mony besides—yes," speaking with some earnestness, "there's a deil in yon cloud," pointing to the north-west, "that will sink us, if we canna win to the point afore it gets ower head."

"Pull then manfully," said the rector; "a few good strokes, and we shall be out of its power."

But Robin was half right in his fears. The cloud came on as if a Lapland witch or sorcerer were in it, and the storm soon burst upon them. It was now impossible so to lay their course as to keep it, without being turned aside by the gust. For the wind headed the boat round, do what Robin might with the rector's help, and their only safety lay in keeping the boat just before it. They lost no time in so managing her; and fortunately, just as the storm with all its fury broke upon the boat, they reached the point on which stands St. Inigoes' house. On the beach stood Father Canon, where he had been for some time anxiously watching their movements.

"An ill wind it is," said the priest, shaking the parson's hand, "that blows no body good, and I must think it is a very good wind that has blown you here."

"Thank you," was the rector's reply. "How far it may be a port of safety," smiling, "I cannot say; though of course it would be pleasant if we could both cast anchor in the same port."

"Well, well," said Father Canon, "any how, since the weather has driven you to St. Inigoes' house, it won't do to keep you out in it." And he led the way to the house. Having reached the porch, the two stood with Robin, and gazed upon the storm that swept by.

"Ah!" said the priest, looking quizzically at Parson Gordon, "the very weather, sir, for a polemic bout on Protestantism and Catholicism. The more the elements raged, the louder the polemics would wrangle. You and Father Hunter, I heard, had a friendly, good-natured, and most charming bout at Mr. Durford's, a short time ago."

Mr. Gordon assented with a smile.

"A very pleasant business, truly," continued Mr. Canon, "to give each other all the thrusts and punches you can, and all out of pure kindness and love. You help the cause of peace by making war; and are yourselves pretty examples of peace-makers! Well, well, I had rather be delivered from such loving encounters. You have the slaps of the bear without the hug."

"Yes," replied the rector, "and I fear less the bear's slaps than his hugs. Assaults I may fend off, but embraces might squeeze out of me all power of resistance."

"Good," said the priest. "You mean the Church Catholic is the *ursa minor*, the lesser bear, and this they call the

north star, and it is the one bright light in the heavens by which we steer our course;" and he chuckled as he spoke.

"You know the proverb," replied the rector, smiling, "*Quisquis amat ranam, ranam putat esse Dianam*. Your affection leads you to see but one particular star, while mine leads me to see another, before which yours pales into dimness."

"Any how come in," said his host, "and I'll promise you that you shall have no closer, nor more formidable embraces of the bear than you choose to have."

On entering the library, when he was ushered in, Parson Gordon saw a few old editions of the Schoolmen; the *Summa Theologiæ* of the angelic doctor, and a few of the smaller works of Bonaventura, the seraphic doctor, and the *Acta Sanctorum* by an unknown author. When he saw the first mentioned work, he thought of that incident in Aquinas' life, when, being admitted to a private interview with Innocent IV., a bag of money, the fruit of the sale of indulgences, was brought in. "You see, young man," said his holiness, "the age of the church is past, in which she said, 'Silver and gold have I none.'" "True, holy father," replied Aquinas, "but the age is past also, in which she could say to a paralytic, 'Rise up and walk.'"

Shortly after Father Hunter entered, and on Mr. Canon's leaving the room, Mr. Hunter, in a tone of voice and manner that seemed meant to commend his words, said:

"Happy am I, sir, that any part of St. Peter's fold, even so insignificant a part as St. Inigoes' house, is not disdained by you as a shelter in a storm; but would of course be more pleased if in this fold truly you would seek shelter from the howling blast, which is sweeping over the world."

"I hope I have already reached the true fold," replied the rector, "and this, allow me to say, is the fold of Christ, not the fold of St. Peter; any more than it is the fold of St. Paul, or of St. John."

"I can't think," said Mr. Hunter, mildly, and Parson Gordon was pleased to discover that a warm and sunny kindness could upon occasions light up his dark countenance, "you would say so if you would permit your excellent understanding to act without the trammels of a faulty education."

Parson Gordon smiled. The priest continued:

"While it is your misfortune to have drawn your first

breath in the corrupt atmosphere of a misled people; it was my lot to have been received in early infancy into the bosom of the Catholic Church." Parson Gordon's looks said better than words, this is all mere assertion. The priest observed the expression, and reddening very slightly continued:

"Men kick at the supremacy of St. Peter, and of the Holy See, because they ignorantly believe it to be the invention of, what some are pleased to call, the dark ages: and which dark ages they represent as the fruitful womb of the doctrines of the Catholic faith. But let it be understood that this supremacy comes from God"—Parson Gordon looked amazed,—“and no good man would fight against it, but welcome it as a gracious means whereby, through a visible head, God would bind us all together.” More Roman sophism, thought the rector, what now? He replied:

“I ask but this: show me that the authority of supreme bishop, or chief pastor, over all the bishops and prelates of Christendom, which the Roman see claims, is derived from the word of God; or that it is made clear by the rule of Vincentius of Lerins; ‘*Quod semper, quod ubique, quod ab omnibus creditum est,*’ and I yield the point. I ask no more, and it is a modest demand, that either the Holy Scriptures, or the concurrent teaching and testimony of the Church on to our day, shall sustain the high claims of the bishop of Rome.* I came not here for an argument, I am but a looker on in Venice, yet I will patiently hear your argument on either of these heads.”

“*Cui bono?*” muttered the priest, still the patient manner of the rector seemed to be defiant, and he said mentally, “I will see at least some more protestant finesse and make shift.” So, after remarking that, perhaps, his guest was too fatigued, and receiving the reply, that he could rest as well in conversing on this as any other topic, he said: “You will need no more than a synopsis of the grounds, on which the whole question turns,” and the priest walked up and down the room, as if, by the motion of his body, he would give more spring and movement to his mind.

He was about to grapple with a subject, which giant intellects had elaborated and built up into a most imposing spir-

* Vincentius Lerins, in his *Commonitory*, states that it was the custom of Catholics to prove the faith; first by the authority of the Divine law, and next by the traditions of the Catholic faith.

itual edifice, and which intellects as gigantic had taken to pieces and shown to be made up of unhewn and unsuitable timber, and he was about to grapple with an antagonist that Father Hunter knew from experience could not be handled easily, nor assailed with impunity. Mr. Gordon watched him narrowly, and could not but admire the haughty consciousness of power, which Mr. Hunter's step indicated, and the stealthy and adroit craftiness with which he opened his subject. His cold grey eyes twinkled, his heavy eyebrows looked portentous, and his thoughtful brow appeared to swell, as if to give room to the brain to exert itself, and Mr. Gordon knew he ventured much in calling out an antagonist who knew his weapons and his distance, and was at home in an encounter on such a field. For Roman polemics, when they take the field, do not, like many Protestants, expect faith to find the powder and ball as they may be required. And, though

———“thrice doubly
Is he arm'd, who hath his quarrel just,”

yet justice in supplying the weapon gives not the ammunition, nor does it play well the gunner's and the musketeer's part.

“You remember, sir,” began Mr. Hunter, “that our Lord admitted the apostles to the holy ministry, when He instituted the holy Eucharist on Maunday Thursday.* But it was afterwards that He commissioned them with the Apostleship. Then He said, ‘As My Father hath sent Me, even so send I you.’ And when He had said this, He breathed on them, saying, ‘Receive ye the Holy Ghost, whosoever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them, and whosoever sins ye retain, they are retained.’ Here then He gave to the Apostles equal apostolic jurisdiction. But, at our Lord's third apparition, near the sea of Tiberias, He did more. Then He did not renew the apostolic commission, (which being already granted, needed no renewal,) but He addressed Himself to St. Peter only: and, with more than His wonted solemnity of manner, importing hereby that He was then

* The second canon of the Council of Trent, Sess. xxii. pp. 113, 114, says, “Si quis dixerit, illis verbes. Hoc facite, in meam commemorationem, Christum non instituisse Apostolos sacerdotes, anathema sit.” If any one shall say that in these words, “Do this in remembrance of Me,” Christ did not ordain His apostles priests, let him be accursed.

about to bestow a power which, up to that moment, had not passed from his hands, our Lord singled out St. Peter; and, as if to prepare him for the awful commission, with which He was about to invest him, our Lord asked St. Peter, (and how natural the question,) 'Lovest thou Me more than these?' His disciples, I mean, could claim to love Him. Not as a blundering tyro would say, Lovest thou Me more than thou dost these sheep? Here our Lord said to St. Peter, I am about to honour you more than all of My Apostles, do you merit this mark of My preference by a greater affection and devotion to Me. St. Peter, so understanding Him, ardently and repeatedly replied, 'Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I love thee.' Wherefore, our Lord then and there gave him this special and extraordinary commission to feed His sheep and lambs; that is, to be His Vicar, or Vicegerent, the Shepherd to His flock, wherever and whenever it should be folded. You will not say my inference is forced," (seeing that Parson Gordon's manner implied a doubt of the conclusion he had just evolved from his premises,) "for our Lord either intended to give St. Peter this extraordinary and peculiar power, or He meant to him no power at all. He spoke as the Gospellers do, dealt in mere assertion; used a trope just to show that He could declaim. Why," and he looked at the rector as if he would read the innermost workings of his mind, "should He single St. Peter out, and say, 'Feed My sheep; feed My lambs!' Undoubtedly, as St. Euthenius says, 'to make St. Peter not only a Shepherd, but the Shepherd of Shepherds.' Besides, our Lord called St. Peter, Cephas, Petra and Petros. 'Thou art Peter,' is His remark, 'and on this rock I will build My church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.' His name signified a rock, and dare we say he was not a rock?" He folded his arms. "On him the church was to be builded, and dare we say that there is another, or are other stones, which can as well serve for the rock of the church?" He smiled scornfully. "The same critical sagacity might as properly say, that other precious stones than jasper, sapphire, emerald, and the like, would have answered to adorn the foundations of the wall of the New Jerusalem. Further our Lord gave to St. Peter the keys of the kingdom of Heaven. To do what with? Let them rust in his hands unused? To wear them about his person, and yet not open and lock the door of the church with them? To let them be taken

from him by another, or others of the apostolic college? To lay them by in the leaves of manuscript copies of the New Testament for Luther, Calvin, and Cranmer to find them, and by them open the golden doors of the church? Why, sir, keys imply government." Parson Gordon bowed. "And, if St. Peter had the keys, who, without his letting, can pass in the door? None, surely; and, as he alone has the keys to open and shut, St. Peter must open to us the doors, and he will shut against many the doors of the kingdom of Heaven. Further,"—Parson Gordon seemed anxious to take him up,—“for dwell I cannot. You have not forgotten that, at the election of Matthias, St. Peter took the lead; which, according to St. John Chrysostom, ‘proved him to be the prince of the choir.’ You know that in the list of the Apostles, St. Peter’s name comes first; and that St. Matthew expressly says, ‘Simon is the first,’ or chief. This could not have been accidental. ‘The earth hath bubbles, as the water has,’ but this mention cannot be a mere bubble on the surface of Holy Writ. No, it was designed in that Book, whose least word, even the yod in the Hebrew, and the breathings in the Greek manuscripts were inspired by the Holy Ghost; and which for thousands of years God Himself has wonderfully preserved. Again, who spoke first on the day of Pentecost? Surely, your Protestant Bibles do not conceal the fact that St. Peter was the first and chief, and almost exclusive speaker and actor! Who worked the first miracle in the church of Christ? You need not that I should tell you St. Peter. Why, sir, it was St. Peter also that first preached to the Gentiles, and to him, first of all, did God reveal His purposes to admit the Gentiles into His church. Now you Protestants profess to be good textuaries. You pull and tear asunder with unholy reverence the one and undivided word, and from a text here and there, would make out your religions. You tell us poor Catholics to go to the dry bones of antiquity; as you call the fathers, and I will now give you the voice of Catholic antiquity.”

He paused awhile, took a few strides up and down the chamber. Parson Gordon waited quite patiently. The priest resumed:

“Tertullian and St. Cyprian call St. Peter the rock. Origen says: ‘To Peter chiefly it was delivered to feed the sheep.’ Eusebius, St. Basil, and the Council of Chalcedon, speak also authoritatively and clearly on St. Peter’s chief-

taincy. Thus Eusebius calls him the 'first pontiff of the Christians, and greatest of the apostles.' St. Basil's testimony is that he was preferred before all of the disciples; and the great Council of Chalcedon entitles him 'the rock of the Catholic Church, the foundation of the right faith.' Take and digest these facts, (more might be cited, but time and memory are wanting,) and disown not him, nor his church, to whom Christ committed His power on earth."

The priest then took his seat, and Parson Gordon admired the calmness with which he delivered bold and startling declarations. The rector was not frightened by the array of authorities, knowing it was not difficult to make a good plausible argument, in support even of heresy, on the faith of a few texts of Scripture, and by extracts from a few of the fathers.*

"In order to prove St. Peter's supremacy," replied the rector, "I ask the same authority which establishes Infant Baptism, the Christian Sabbath, Episcopacy, the Holy Trinity, and indeed the articles of the Christian faith. You say our Lord said to the apostles, 'As my Father hath sent me, even so send I you;' and you admit that He breathed upon them saying, 'Receive ye the Holy Ghost.' You remember that in the appearance of our Lord after his resurrection, which is mentioned by St. Matthew, when there were present five hundred brethren at once, our Lord said to all of the apostles, 'All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. Go ye therefore.' Now the inference from these passages is inevitable, that, when our Lord addressed himself to all, without particularizing or singling

* On the strength of a passage in Revelation, (xx. 4,) I have heard it argued that our Saviour will reign personally on earth, and the reign of the saints under His government will continue a thousand years; and to support this opinion Tertullian, Justin Martyr, and particularly Ireneus, are quoted by the millenarians.

Now if one felt disposed to build on a single quotation from the fathers, an anti-temperance person might make large calculations on a remark which Papias ascribes to our Lord, and which Ireneus seems not to doubt; *i. e.* that during the millenium the vines would have each ten thousand boughs, each bough ten thousand branches, each branch ten thousand switches, each switch ten thousand clusters, each cluster ten thousand grapes, and each grape would contain twenty-five measures of wine when well pressed. A bright future would this promise to an anti-temperance advocate; and if one patristic authority, or if many such are reliable in proof of doctrine, where Scripture is silent, and where there is not the *quod semper, quod ubique, quod ab omnibus* tradition or teaching of the church, he might look on this rumour of Papias as good authority for the unlimited use of wine, and even of strong drink now,

out any, He gave to each and all of the apostles the same mission, apostleship, and authority. And what was that mission and authority? Our Lord himself answers: 'Even that which I have received of my Father;' thus investing them with the same powers which He himself had received. Could St. Peter have received any powers above these?—be clothed with more power than Christ himself had? Having transferred to them his own authority, what authority had He to bestow on St. Peter? He did not make him God; but God he must have been to have had more than all power spiritual, which the apostles had.

"But next comes the text, 'Feed my sheep, feed my lambs;' and here you say, date St. Peter's peculiar powers. How can this be? These words, neither in themselves, nor as they are interpreted by the circumstances under which they were spoken, nor by the voice of antiquity, will bear out your view: 'Be thou, Peter, the universal governor of my church.' For the words themselves, 'Feed my sheep, feed my lambs,' may be addressed to any clergyman, whether presbyter or bishop, and they neither import nor convey any special authority. But you interpret them, not only as conveying authority, but as conveying it to St. Peter exclusively, because he alone was mentioned by name. Can this be so? Take a case analogous to it. When St. Paul said to the presbyters at Ephesus, 'Feed the church of God,' no one supposes he meant to give them authority either over the whole church of God, or for all time by themselves and their successors over the church of God in Ephesus. Yet St. Paul's words to the presbyters are full as significant as the words of Christ to St. Peter. Now the language addressed to St. Peter, apart from the Roman gloss, and seen in its own light, and without the mist of specious reasoning, appears to be no more than an exhortation or admonition, and not language which implies any new functions or powers. Besides, St. Matthew states, (x. 6,) that the apostles were commissioned, when the name of apostle was first given to them, 'to go to the lost sheep of the house of Israel,' and, on Ascension day, (xxviii. 19, 20,) they were commanded to teach all nations. Now, if the commission to go to the lost sheep of the house of Israel, and to teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the adorable Trinity, and instructing them in the precepts of Christ, coupled, as it was with the promise, 'Lo! I am with you always, even to

the end of the world,' be not a commission to feed the sheep and lambs of Christ's fold, what more is necessary to make such a commission? Surely your ideas about a shepherd of Christ's flock are more modern than those which prevailed in St. Cyprian's time. He says, '*Pastores sunt omnes, sed grex uncis ostenditur, qui apostolis omnibus unanimi consensione pascatur.*' All are shepherds, but the flock is shown to be one which is fed by all of the apostles harmoniously consenting. How could St. Peter's charge be other, or different from the apostles'? They were commanded to teach all nations, and to go into all the world. His commission could not embrace a larger flock than all nations, nor a larger field than all the world. St. John Chrysostom, while he called St. Peter the prince of the choir, thought each apostle had the same authority, and he meant not what you claim by the term prince, for he called St. John 'a pillar of the churches over the world,' and he calls St. Paul 'an apostle of the world.' What becomes then of St. Peter's vicegerency? We must reject it. This vicegerency, however, is not known to the early fathers. St. Ambrose knew nothing of it, for he declares that, 'not only St. Peter, but with him all priests have received this charge of our Lord.' St. Austin knew nothing of it, and he stands first, as you know, among the Latin fathers; for he said: 'When it is said to Peter, it is said to all, Feed my sheep.'"

A derisive smile, and then a shade of displeasure, like electric coruscation out of a gathering cloud, passed over Father Hunter's face. The rector continued:

"Look next at the circumstances under which these words were used. Before the crucifixion, St. Peter had made more protestations of regard than any of the apostles. He went so far as to represent that their affection for Christ fell below his own. 'Though all should be offended because of thee, yet will I never be offended.' This boastful declaration needed to be rebuked, for St. Peter, Judas excepted, evinced least regard for our Lord, denying basely with an oath, 'I know not the man.' It was then both proper and very natural that our Lord after His resurrection should remind the apostle of his recent sad defection, and, by reminding him of it, seek to impress abidingly upon him the lesson it taught of humility, and the danger of self-confidence. Wherefore our Lord's question, 'Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me more than these?' viz., my disciples, who have just pro-

fessed the same unmeasured regard and devotion, but who denied and disowned me less than you have done? And, repeating his question twice, how impressively must have come home to the conscience-smitten apostle the charge, 'Feed my sheep, feed my lambs.' Hence St. Chrysostom understands the passage to be 'only an admonition to guard the apostle against a second lapse.' You next rely on the change of St. Peter's name from Simon to Peter, or Petros, a stone; and, also, on the expression, rock, or Petra, being said to St. Peter in acknowledgment of his noble confession. From which rock, or Peter, you infer, the church, according to our Lord, was to be built; and, lo! your ready rhetoric forthwith constructs the gorgeous fabric of the papal dynasty. And, I must say, that you here take the same, and as great a liberty, as you charge Protestants with taking with the word of God. True, that word, and every part of it, is inspired, but, St. Peter's chieftaincy is not in the word, but we have only your interpretation of that word. How idle, and dangerous, to build an important doctrine from an insulated passage! Thus, the sons of Zebedee, James and John, were called by our Lord, 'sons of thunder,' Boanerges; but must we thence infer that the thunders of apostolic power were confided only to them? And, if they only, could fulminate spiritual censures, what avails, or means, St. Peter's chieftaincy? The name Petros, a stone, which was given to St. Peter, cannot prove that he was the Petra, or Stone, on which the church was to be built, because each of the apostles, likewise, was a rock, or stone, for, in Revelation (xxi. 10, 14,) it is said, the wall of the New Jerusalem had twelve foundations, on which were written the names of the apostles, and, while you complain that Protestants might as well say that amethyst, sardonyx, beryl, emerald, topaz, and the like, did not, so properly as other stones, garnish the New Jerusalem, as say St. Peter was not the rock on which the church stands, you would make St. Peter to be neither one of those precious stones, but a brighter and more precious stone than all. St. Peter's name cannot prove him to be the rock, because St. Paul, in Ephesians (ii. 20,) says, Christ is the chief corner stone, and the apostles and prophets are foundation stones in the church of Christ. But, further, in your interpretation, you do what you charge me with doing, you kick against, not only God's word, but Catholic antiquity. For St. Chrysostom, Theodoret, Origen,

and the fathers, agree, as says St. Chrysostom, that, 'upon this rock, our Lord, not upon Peter, for He did not build His church upon the man, but upon his faith.' But, suppose we admit the viceroyalty of heaven to be in St. Peter."

"Then the whole question is settled," interrupted Mr. Hunter.

"How happens it," continued the rector, "that neither St. Peter, nor any of the apostles, knew it. For, if they had known it, they could not have asked afterwards, as they did, 'who should be greatest in the kingdom of heaven?' that is, in the church. Strange! if they knew that our Lord had made St. Peter chief, the sons of Zebedee should have contended for it. It is also strange, that St. Peter himself should not have known that he was invested with such extraordinary powers, and, knowing his powers, did not complain of the contention of the sons of Zebedee. You are certainly in advance, in the right, I will not say, of the early church. St. Basil terms St. Peter also 'one of the mountains upon which rock the Lord did promise to build His church.' And, referring to this very confession of St. Peter, St. Ambrose declares, 'Peter did act a primacy, a primacy of confession, not of honour; of faith, not of order.'* You next say, the keys of the kingdom of heaven were given to St. Peter. I admit it, but, as says Catholic antiquity, the keys were also given to the rest of the apostles. Such is the language of St. Jerome, and, you remember, that the council of Compeigné terms all bishops *clavigeri*, key-bearers, of the kingdom of heaven.† Wherefore, the keys of the kingdom did not belong to St. Peter only."

"St. Peter, then, had no prominence?" said the priest, scornfully. "Pythagoras is said to have seen and read a marvellous writing on the disk of the moon, and, it is possible, that Protestants may be as gifted in reading the Scriptures."

"A man must be more keen-sighted than Pythagoras," replied the rector, "who should read on the face of the sacred volume the viceroyalty and chieftaincy of St. Peter. I allow, that the apostle had a prominence among the apostles, but it was a personal, and not an official one; not one, I mean, transmissible to others. In this sense, he did exercise the

*"Locis non immemor sui primatum egit; primatum confessionis, non honoris, fidei non ordinis."

†"Episcopi—quos constat esse vicarios Christi, et clavigeros regni cœlorum."

keys of spiritual government on the day of Pentecost; and, by the baptism of Cornelius and his household, 'opened the door of faith to the Gentiles.' His name, I allow, also is first named, but, the fathers say it was because he was first called to the apostleship."

"Indeed!" interrupted the priest. "And how came he first to be called?"

"That would prove nothing," replied the rector, "for our Lord said, some are first called and last chosen." But, as I was about to add, you might, in proof of St. Peter's chieftaincy, have mentioned that he walked on the sea; the miraculous draught of fishes which were taken by him; our Lord's command to him to pay tribute for Himself and this apostle; our Lord's first washing St. Peter's feet, and the sick being cured by this apostle's shadow. It is true I might object that St. Peter did not walk long on the sea; but wanted faith, and was about sinking; that in the marvellous haul he himself confessed he was "a sinful man;" that his payment of tribute proves that the see of Rome, by Peter-pence, did not as did St. Peter; that his feet would not have been washed if he had been clean; and that his shadow only did what the shadows of St. Paul, St. John, and others would have done. Still, out of these brief notices, the loom of your ingenuity can probably weave that majestic robe meet to grace the shoulders of Christ's vicerent. But other brief notices would prove as much in favour of the other apostles. Thus St. John was called "the beloved disciple." He it was that leaned on the bosom of our Lord. He asked our Lord a question which St. Peter presumed not to ask. He is the author of more epistles than St. Peter; wrote a Gospel called Divine, and a noble Prophecy. He outran St. Peter, and came first to the sepulchre; and, outliving all of the apostles, seemed most fit to be the universal pastor. Hence St. Jerome remarks, "Peter was only an apostle, but John was an apostle, evangelist, and prophet."* Parson Gordon paused a second, and discovering that his words were working his adversary to an unpleasant state, and believing that his mind was not open to conviction, he was about to stop here.

"When the wolf in the fable," says Jeremy Taylor, "went to school to learn to spell, whatever letters were told

* "Petrus apostolus tantum; Joannes et apostolus et evangelista, et propheta."

him, he could never make any thing of them but Agnus," a lamb. Hence concludes the good bishop, "a man's mind must be like your proposition before it can be entertained." Mr. Hunter's mind was not like Mr. Gordon's proposition, hence he could not entertain it. But the priest asked him to proceed.

"Because St. Peter's name is first on the catalogue in St. Matthew," continued Parson Gordon, "must we infer his supremacy? Then we must infer the supremacy of others over St. Peter; because St. Paul on one occasion places his name after James, and on the second occasion places it after Paul and Apollos; and St. John in his Gospel names St. Andrew first, and St. Peter next to him. Is his forwardness at the election of Matthias to prove his supremacy? Why is it stated then in the account of this election in Acts, (i. 15, 22,) not that St. Peter either appointed or ordained Matthias, which he would have done, if he had been supreme pontiff, and vicar of Christ? No, he had no such power, and hence we read that the whole company nominated or selected Matthias, along with Justus, and that God by lot decided in favour of Matthias. If St. Peter's promineney prove his supremacy, then why, being supreme, when (Acts vi. 2) deacons were instituted, do we read that the disciples, and not St. Peter, elected; and that the apostles, not St. Peter, laid their hands upon them. Your Pope of Rome, as St. Peter's successor, claims the right to elect, and to ordain either in person, or by another. This did not St. Peter. If he had been supreme pontiff, surely St. Peter would have filled the chair, and presided over the great councils of apostles, presbyters, and brethren, which met in Jerusalem. (Acts xv.) For the Pontifex maximus, you know, was considered, '*Judex atque Arbiter rerum humanarum divinarumque*,' the Judge and Arbiter of divine and human affairs. But in this apostolic council St. James presides; and, as Hesychius pithily remarks, 'St. Peter made an oration, but St. James enacted the law.'"

"St James was bishop of Jerusalem," interrupted the priest, "and the council being holden in his diocese, he might without impropriety preside over it."

"True," resumed the rector smiling, "but St. Peter's powers of supreme pontiff would have suspended St. James' episcopal jurisdiction, so long as St. Peter was present, if St. Peter had held this office."

"St. Peter then was, and he was not, any body," interrupted the priest.

"Not supreme pontiff, or supreme apostle," said the rector, gravely. "His zeal, talents, boldness, labours, experience, age, early call, and his intimacy with our Lord, entitle him to be regarded as probably first in the light of a personal superiority; which superiority attached to him for these reasons. But he did not enjoy an official superiority among the apostles, and, of course, the official superiority, which Rome claims as St. Peter's successor, is not even *nominis umbra*. The substance had it not, the shadow cannot have it."

"Ah! indeed," drawing a long breath, and talking slowly.

"Still," resumed the rector, "the son of Jonas stands a great and noble apostle. He stands in the apostolic college, as one of them, but not the chief. The triple crown of Roman divines is the dream of ambitious ecclesiastics in times comparatively modern. And being so regarded, St. Peter stands, not as the rock exclusively, but as one of the foundation stones of the Church of the living God. For, as St. Paul informs us, 'Other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.' As I do not acknowledge St. Peter to be the head of the church, even less the Bishop of Rome who claims to represent St. Peter; excuse me for saying, I cannot follow this shadowy thing, papal supremacy; though it does affect to have on a kingly crown; persuaded it would lead me, as I fear it is leading others, a more perilous journey than that which St. Peter took over the sea; without the hope that He alone, who can walk on the sea, will catch us, as we cry, 'Save Lord or I perish.' I fear if I should wait for St. Peter's shadow to pass by, I should miss going to Him, to whom St. Peter says, we should go, for, 'Thou hast the words of eternal life.'"

Father Hunter seemed now to lose all patience, and, instead of replying to Parson Gordon, by attempting to refute his positions, or to make his own ground more tenable by additional authority, he turned upon him, and in a voice of more than wonted harshness, said:

"So you make nothing of the centre of unity! To you it is nothing that St. Peter and his successors, the Bishops of Rome, who are the centre of unity, the visible head

which holds the church together, are scorned. You would maintain that the church is one without any head; that Christians are united together, yet each conventicle being independent. I know not, sir, which most to wonder at, the cool impudence which could make such an assertion, or the blindness which, in spite of your undoubted ability and learning, could make you rush upon such a precipice of nonsense."

Parson Gordon smiled, and after a while said, "Will you tell me what constitutes the unity you speak of? And, before you give me your definition, beware that you do not cramp the principle of Christian unity as much as the Stagyryte did the drama; who said its action should not exceed one day."

Father Hunter appeared to pay no attention to this remark, and seemed undecided whether he would or would not answer the question, or gratify his interrogator; having nearly concluded that further argument was mere waste of breath and labour. Parson Gordon's smile, however, roused the old Adam in him, and he determined to make a brief reply to show, if no more, that he did not mean to retreat.

"Your reverence asked," he said in a tone of well counterfeited respect, "what I meant by unity, and have condescended to instruct me what, according to Aristotle, was the unity of the drama. I am happy always to sit at the feet of a magister magistrorum, a teacher even to we poor priests, who claim to be able to teach others. Lawyer Brief, if here, if asked what was meant by unity, would say,—'if I leased a piece of ground on a certain rent, and afterwards bought the fee simple, that I would then have the unity of possession; having now both the possession and title to the property in fee; the lease being merged into the purchase.' And I might reply, that, as St. Peter never leased any part of his patrimony to you Protestants; much more, never sold any part of it to you, that you have no unity of possession; having neither the possession, nor the fee. Are you answered, sir?"

"If you have no better to give, I am," replied Parson Gordon, firmly.

"I will condescend to give you no other answer," the priest felt tempted to say, but, checking himself, he said, "St. Cyprian said, 'He has not God for his Father who has not the Church for his Mother;'" and he intimates, that,

whoever is separated from the Church is joined to an adulteress."

"All of which I admit," said Parson Gordon; "but must say it has no bearing on the question before us. As far as I can understand the theologians of your school, they teach, that a visible head is so necessary to unity, that without it no body of believers can be in communion with that Catholic Church, and that this head is the Bishop of Rome. Do I understand you to maintain this opinion?"

Father Hunter met the fixed gaze of Parson Gordon with an eye as fixed, and an expression of resolution, that said, better than words, he was not afraid to stand to the teaching of his church.

"I understand you, then," continued Parson Gordon, "to assent?"

The priest very gravely bowed his head, and, seeming intent on some other subject, he passed his hand over the books on one of the shelves in the library, and his lips rather mechanically, than in obedience to a mental impulse, repeated the names of the volumes.

"Now, I contend," continued Parson Gordon, "that, a visible head is not necessary to unity; because, even admitting the Bishop of Rome to be the visible head of the church, (which I do not,) this unity may consist without him."

"What?" interrupted the priest, "a visible head, being admitted, the body can have life without the head. Your schismatical bodies must be greatly obliged to you for thus mercilessly beheading them; representing that they are headless bodies, mere trunks, bodies whom justice has by decapitation deprived of the power of further injury. Ah! this is a great conclusion to our argument!" and he smiled in scorn.

"Your tropes must pass for what they are worth," replied Parson Gordon, "they touch not the question. Now I maintain that there may be a perfect union, and that this unity may consist, and yet, the bodies which make up the whole, need not agree all together. If the Church of England unites with the Church of Rome in believing the one faith, one ministry, and the sacraments, which she does, she need not agree with her in recognizing the pope of Rome as the centre of unity, to be an equal branch of the Catholic Church."

"Indeed!" interrupted the priest, "let me help you to an illustration. Here's the union lately effected between England and Scotland, by which the parliament of Scotland is annihilated, the crown betrayed, and that nation's independence sacrificed to English gold. You call this, I suppose, a perfect, but not an entire union. Why, sir, the Duke of Hamilton, your own distinguished countryman, asked indignantly for the descendants of those who fought under Bruce, and for the Douglasses and Campbells, and for the peers and barons, once the bulwark of the nation, to resist a union so hateful and enslaving."

"I believe with you," said the rector, speaking with some emotion; "the union will be ruinous to my dear country. I would have shed tears with the audience, who wept at the speech of Lord Belhaven, deprecating its malign influence. You dislike it, I doubt not, because it will strengthen the Protestant cause in England, and may go to defeat the hopes of Rome through the Chevalier George at St. Germain's. Still I accept the illustration. For here is a union perfect in the civil connexion it effects between England and Scotland, making them now one people, and one government, under one and the same Parliament and Sovereign. And, though I regret that Scotland is the loser by the connexion, and that her peers have no seat in the English Parliament, an injustice forced upon us by a nation more powerful than ourselves,—still this civil union, which binds together England and Scotland, is not the less a union, because England and Scotland have each their ancient laws, courts of justice, and religion, established, as they are united, under one sovereign and legislature. Again, matrimony produces what is known in God's word and in the law of man, as a perfect union; and yet it is not a complete union. While the Scriptures say, 'They two shall be one flesh,' and while Lord Coke declares, 'a man and his wife are in law both one person,' still the union between them is not an entire, out and out, complete union; for man and wife will be held at God's bar, each answerable for the deeds done in the body; and in human tribunals, the husband cannot control his wife's property as he can his own. Again, the persons of the adorable trinity are joined together in unity,—and this unity is perfect;—but still it is not complete; for we are, not only told not to divide the substance which makes up the Trinity, but also not to confound the persons. Now, as

the kingdoms of England and Scotland can be perfectly united, and yet the two kingdoms still may differ in many points, as man and wife can be joined together in holy matrimony, and yet they are in some respects two distinct persons; and as the Father, Son and Holy Ghost make but one God, though they are still three persons, each having distinct functions, so Churches of Christ may be joined together in the one Apostolic faith, which was handed down to the saints, and in the one apostolic ministry; and at the same time they may disagree as to whether the bishop of Rome does constitute, or is the visible head of the Church. For their unity depends on the one faith, and apostolic orders, and sacraments, and not on union to any visible head; and their agreement, in recognizing such visible head, even were this proper, (which it is not), being necessary to make their unity out and out a thorough unity; and not necessary to render it a perfect unity."

"I am much edified," said the priest; "will your reverence proceed?"

Parson Gordon swallowed down his rising indignation, and continued,—

"A visible head could not be necessary, because Liberius, bishop of Rome, adopted the Arian heresy, and you will not contend that the other Churches of Christendom should have been heretics also;—but heretics they must have been, if they had acknowledged his visible headship; since this acknowledgment would have bound them to receive implicitly his opinions as their head and infallible master. No, sir; the Catholic Church has ever thought that we must be united to Christ, our invisible, but ever present head; and that each bishop, no less than the bishop of Rome, was the guardian of the whole Church; the error of one not necessarily affecting the others."

"Every person, then, may think as he pleases," said the priest, scornfully. "A very wise conclusion, I will not say, but, for heretics and schismatics, a very comfortable one."

"I say this," proceeded Parson Gordon, "that, to be united to the church Catholic, it is not necessary to recognize the supremacy of the bishop of Rome, because a large branch of the church allows this supremacy, since this is not one of the fundamentals of the faith. It has no place either in the apostolic creed, or in the Nicene or Constantinopolitan

creeds. It is a mere doctrine, that may, or may not, be received."

"Ah!" interrupted the priest, "we must not agree, then, in doctrine, to keep up this unity. I shall have learned much before our conversation is over."

"I hope so," replied Parson Gordon, firmly, nothing daunted by the sneer. "Thus, in the early age of the church, Papias, Justin, Tertullian, Lactantius, and others, held the doctrine of the millenium, while Origen, St. Clement, St. Jerome, and St. Augustine, rejected it, and, for this difference, neither were supposed to have departed from the unity of the church. Nay, more, the Dominicans, and Franciscans, among you Romanists, differed about the miraculous conception of the blessed Virgin, and yet their variance put neither out of the pale of Catholic unity. The Gallican church contends that infallibility resides in a general council, while the ultramontane churches maintain it is vested in the pope, and, yet, you believe both are in union with the church."

"But," said the priest, "these persons were all members, confessedly, of one brotherhood, whereas, this feature of unity does not belong to the schismatic church of England."

"How happened it, then," replied Parson Gordon, "that Victor, bishop of Rome, and the Asiatic bishops, his contemporaries, differing about the time of observing Easter, did not commune together? and yet you Romanists allow that Victor, and the Asiatic bishops, notwithstanding, had not, on either side, left, or violated, the unity of the church. A most beautiful thing, is this centre of unity! this primordium unitatis, when there can be, as there was formerly, two popes at one time, and, at another time, three popes! and neither of whom, nor their adherents, communed together. However, Rome maintains that the centre of unity existed, notwithstanding; existed when Christendom was yet undecided in which of the three popes to place it; existed when the popes, and anti-popes, and their opposing adherents, had no intercourse together. Great benefit, indeed, must result from the centre of unity, from a visible head in a pope, when, in the eleventh century, there were three popes, and it was impossible to ascertain where was the centre of unity. And one of your own writers, Spondanus, says, 'there was in the church a most foul and pernicious heresy.'" The priest scowled at this bold exposure, but the rector, resolved on carrying the war into Carthage, proceeded to show the stu-

pidity of this figment of centre of unity. He reminded him that the true pope could not be known, when, at one time, there was a Pope Alexander at Pisa, a Pope Gregory at Arimenum, and a Pope Benedict at Panischela. Now, if the centre of unity was necessary, then, there being no such centre, Christ could have had no people, there was no Catholic church, and, what was more against the Romanists, their pretended succession from St. Peter was either gone, or not readily, even by them, discoverable. And he made this centre of unity yet more absurd, by stating that, according to Baronius, a Roman author also, in the 10th century, the popes of Rome were abandoned to the tyranny of lewd women, who, at will, removed bishops, and even made their paramours popes, and, there is no proof that the clergy elected them, or, after their appointment, concurred in it. He asked, therefore, "Could a pope, so made, be the head of the body of Christ?" and the rector, pressing his advantage, further proved that Rome could not be the centre of unity, whose bishop, as head, it was necessary to obey, and whose teaching, as infallible, it was necessary to recognise, when not only was it hard to find who was pope of Rome, and not only was a pope made, in a way a Christian bishop cannot be made, but Rome's teaching was any thing but infallible, since, at one period, she admitted infants to the eucharist, and now she denies them; at one time, she held the Millenarian doctrine, and now she condemns that doctrine as false and heretical.

There was a short pause, and Parson Gordon, anxious to close the conversation, and leave no room for a rejoinder, quoted the 42d verse of the 2d chapter of Acts: "And they continued steadfastly in the Apostles' doctrines and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers." "Now," continued the rector, (and he sought to catch the roving eye of the priest, and hold him attentive, though he feared, as the Duke of Marlborough said of King James II., his heart was as cold as the marble,) "the fellowship of the Apostles is that which we need to keep us in the unity of the faith, and not the fellowship of St. Peter. He was but one of eleven Apostles, and they had but one fellowship. And so long as I am in the Apostles' doctrine and fellowship, (which I am by maintaining the one faith which was delivered to the saints, and by continuing in a communion of Apostolic ministry and sacraments,) it matters not that I deny the

visible headship of the self-constituted bishop of Rome. Nay it is my duty to fall back on this apostolic fellowship, and denounce, as the teaching of Satan, that pretension, which would make me abandon the apostolic fellowship and faith, by seeking a connexion with a communion, which makes a creature like ourselves, instead of Christ, the head of the church; a communion, which requires that we should be united to an Italian prelate and in subjection to him; whereas, we should be joined to Christ, our invisible Head, who is the fulness of Him who filleth all in all."*

A rap was now heard at the door, and a servant entered, and said that some one wished to speak to Father Hunter.

The priest retired, and while Parson Gordon was reflecting on the discussion just given, Father Canon entered with one of his usual smiles.

"I thought the argument between Father Hunter and yourself had continued quite long enough. We Catholics, you must know, are testy folks. Our charity is large and warm enough to embrace and feel for every one; but one must not presume too far on it."

"A heretic especially, as you term us," smiling as he replied. "Us, I suppose, you regard, as the Jews did the Gentiles; out of the pale of the covenant, and dogs of the concision?"

"I was about to say," resumed Father Canon, "that our charity must not encounter a sturdy heretic like yourself. Then it is apt to fret itself; but let it alone, and, like a wave untroubled, it rolls on peacefully."

"Then Mr. Hunter, being obstructed by my views, has gone off in a foam?" smiling.

"I doubt if you Protestants find your tempers any the better when a good Catholic opposes you. Father Hunter's face looked rather fierce when I saw him just now; and you I could hear walking up and down; perhaps wringing your arms, as if you were handling your claymore right manfully against the Covenanters. But come, you must feel a little worsted by the fight. Now I have great faith in old Horace. He and I would have made good friends—bating his heathenism."

* See Dr. Barrow's great work on "The Pope's Supremacy" for a thorough investigation of this subject; and the reader will find it to his advantage, if the subject is not familiar to him, to read the more condensed treatise on it, in Palmer's "Church of Christ," Part vii., pp. 451, 513, vol. II., Appleton's Edition.

"That's very likely," replied Mr. Gordon, "but how came you to think of Horace?"

"Why, I think with honest old Flaccus, it is not well 'ignem gladio scrutare;' to stir the fire with the sword. So here's some wine," putting on the table some bottles of good old wine, "to keep down your rising choler, if any; hoping it will change the feeling that was uppermost with you, of wishing to down with the Catholic Church, into a cheerful note of *Io Triumphe*."

"That is my note for the body of Christ," said the rector, "but I do say down with the errors which overlies the faith of the Catholic Church."

"Well, as you will. Better sing with Tigellius, *Io Triumphe ab ovo usque ad mala*; from the eggs to the apples, from the beginning to the end. Why, parson," and Father Canon emptied his glass, and filled Parson Gordon's and his own again, "Horace must have been a much better Catholic than many I know. He believed in a purgatory. Do you know that I have not seen any where a better description of purgatory than his?"

Mr. Gordon looked surprised, and did not know how to read Mr. Canon's remarks.

"Why," continued the priest, "old Horace warns his friend Sextus that the shortness of life forbids an indulging in a long future. For the night of death is at hand, and close upon himself, and his friends, were the shades and gloomy house of Pluto. But, worse than all, his friend Sextus would not there cast lots for the sovereignty of wine, but would suffer from the tyranny of an earthly habit. In the land of shades he would seek to quaff his wine as upon earth; while the cup and its contents, though he would often think he was lifting them to his thirsty lips, will vanish in the attempt to enjoy them.* If this be not purgatory, what is? So we'll drink to good fellowship here; when we meet Flaccus and his friend, we shall not have it in our power so to do."

"Rather, my dear sir," speaking solemnly and kindly,

* "O beate Sexti;

Vitæ summa brevis spem nos vetat in choare longam,

Jam te premet nox, fabulæque manes, —

Et domus exilis Plutonia; quo simul mearis,

Nec regna vini sortiære talis."

Horace, however, says nothing of quaffing wine in the land of the shades. Mr. Canon has rather given the Roman Catholic version of the subject, than translated the passage.

replied Parson Gordon, "let us serve God with reverence and godly fear; for, 'blessed are the dead who die in the Lord, since they rest from their labours, and their works follow them.'"

Towards the afternoon the storm ceased, the clouds broke away, and Parson Gordon and Robin resumed their route for the next point, which was at the mouth of St. Inigoes' creek. Here was a sick parishioner, to visit whom, as we mentioned, Parson Gordon was bound, when the storm drove him from his course, and obliged him to take shelter at St. Inigoes' house.

CHAPTER XX.

MR. DELAFIELD AND HIS REFLECTIONS—AN ADVENTURE.

"I am willing to die when my time shall come,
And I shall be glad to go;
For the world at best is a weary place,
And my pulse is getting low."

N. P. WILLIS.

A MAN past the middle age, whose body was a little stooped by years, or infirmity; slightly bald, with a face much care-worn, and a head sprinkled with grey hairs, called, while the events just related were going on, at the tavern of the Free Briton, and asked for Mr. Montrose.

"He left," said mine host, "two days ago for lower town, and I expect him back this evening."

"With whom did he go?" said the inquirer.

"Mr. Shepard," replied the tavern keeper.

"Worse and worse," said the stranger, and turning away from the landlord, he walked to the beach near the tavern, and then up and down in an unsteady gait.

"With more than a father's anxiety," continued he, soliloquizing, whom our readers will be pleased to recognize as the stranger who manifested in the earlier chapters of this history so strong an interest in the religious opinions and welfare of Montrose; "with more than a father's anxiety," he repeated, "I have watched over that boy. Boy did I say? man rather in size and vigour, but yet a boy, I fear, in a youth's recklessness, unfixedness. Skimming like a bird over the water, and darting first here and then there, and not any where long. A letter from his college friend Johnson, who alone is in my secret, (and a trusty careful lad is Johnson,) informed me that the blade had taken in a rash wager the name of Montrose, and sailed to this province; and that I would find him in St. Mary's. And Montrose his name is to be; as if his father had made it so dishonourable that the son was ashamed to own it," and he stopt, and seemed to choke with emotion. "Still, still," continued he,

"he is my son. Nature in me will not suffer me to disown him; though for dirty gold, and to oblige a maternal relation, who is incensed at my abandonment of my family, he is to drop my name, and his own by birth, Delafield. Well, well. This is only another drop to my cup, which I thought was running over, and would allow of no addition. I must even submit. An allwise Providence, not man, is the Governor of the universe; and this too has been added to my chastisements to humble and prove me; to purify my gold from its dross, and out of the furnace of suffering to render me meet for that crown, which is to be mine, if I "endure afflictions, suffering wrongfully. Be it so. Not my will; but the will of my righteous Father be done!" He paused, spent with walking, or the feelings which were too much for him, and sat down on the trunk of a fallen tree, whose limbs extended into the river. After awhile he proceeded:

"I could be content with his assumption of any name, even with the knowledge that he had dropt his own, because he was ashamed of his father, did I know he was likely to do honour to any. But can I feed myself with such hopes? No sooner am I apprised of his change of name, and his having sailed to St. Mary's, than here I wait for him. I find him at the Free Briton, engaged in a round of extravagance which soon swept all the means he had in hand. I push myself on him,—eke out of him adroitly his condition, and, by a delicate way, contrive to force on him a purse of sovereigns. Thus I render him my debtor, and both give myself the right to intrude, and create in his mind a sense of obligation, and a feeling of regard for me, which may prompt him to look to me for pecuniary help, should further be needed. I could put up, however, with his extravagance;"—and he added, pausing for some time,—“for this sordidness is a mean, low passion. The glittering gold came from the bowels of the earth. A man must bring himself below his fellows to get it. He must continue to dig and grovel, to live low, and keep low,—and not come up to the blessed sunlight to keep it. So I can forgive him this. Extravagance is but the froth of a generous mind. It will work off, if gambling and love of liquor do not attend it; and he, thank God! is no gambler and no drunkard. Having made myself useful to him, I follow him to the Roman chapel of St. Mary's. What could the boy want

there? Mr. Durford is his acquaintance by a letter which he brought to him, and this cautious, cunning merchant would ere now have had him in his toils by negotiating drafts at a heavy interest, if I had not thus far kept him supplied. Strange! strange!" Mr. Delafield muttered, "that this Father Hunter should be here. We met last in Dublin. Ah! he's the very man to warp the judgment of unsuspecting youth; and I trembled, when following my son, I saw in whose hands the Roman see had confided this post. Montrose, (for so perhaps I must tutor my lips to call my boy,) I feared, must have wondered at the interest I displayed lest he might take the downward path to Rome;"—speaking to himself with increased vehemence,—“downward it is when an enlightened mind stoops to the darkness of Romanism; showing an ignorance equal to the wild African who worships his idol fetisso. Ah! I think my talk to him, though on a subject to which he was not used, and which, I fear, may have fatigued him a little, did some good. He has attended chapel service, I understand, but once since. Thus have I watched the youth. It is well,—well.” He hesitated, as if overcome by a thought yet more powerful. “Ah! What father, yea more, what mother watches a child as God our heavenly Father watches over us! Who is about our bed, and about our path, and spiest out all our ways,—‘who knowest our downsitteing and our uprising, and understandest our thoughts long before.’ We met again at Poplar Hill Church,—but business pressed,—and I could only in passing call his attention to the admirable sermon of the worthy rector. Soon afterwards I am again in St. Mary’s; and it is Sunday, and he has gone to the Roman chapel. I watch his egress from that Roman den, whence, I fear, like the lion’s den in the fable, few steps are seen to come out.”

“He has made no secret,” he added after awhile, “of his plans, nor even of his hopes. He is in love with the rector’s daughter, but fears to aspire to her hand. Ah! perhaps I can help him? If so, it shall be done. And stranger yet,” continued Mr. Delafield, rising, and moving towards the tavern, “we pass out of the tavern to look out upon the night, when the noise of a scuffle is heard, and we arrive just in time to rescue that Roman priest from the hands of a fanatical parson,—an imbecile associate, and that doubly-dyed scamp, Snarler. The very fellow who

keeps back the will of his deceased relative, who, as my agent, bought a valuable body of land in this province, and not having made the purchase in my name, it would not be mine or my son's, if, in dying, he had not stated to whom the property belonged. Here is a difficulty that annoys me exceedingly, and which now makes an effort on my part necessary. What is to be done? Can any thing?"

He walked more slowly, and was so absorbed in thought that he entered the tavern, and did not observe that Montrose and Shepard were both near the door at the time. Opening his chamber door, Mr. Delafield fastened it, and threw himself down on a chair. Here he sat revolving for some time the thought which was last on his mind,—and after awhile proceeded:

"Reports reached me in St. Paul's that he and Snarler had an encounter, and that he had handled the latter rather roughly. That will must be at the bottom of it. I must lose no time."

He then rose, and busied himself looking over some papers in his trunk.

"Perhaps," he continued, "I can find the late Mr. Snarler's letter, acknowledging that he purchased as my agent, and that the property is mine. I must have brought it with me. Ah! yes, yes," he proceeded, "here it is. All is right now. This letter will do if the will should be destroyed."

He replaced the letter in its bundle, and after returning it to the trunk, took out a miniature, which he kissed fervently.

"Oh!" said he, "that those lips had life!"—and he bent over it, and seemed to weep. "My daughter," he added after awhile, "cannot look very unlike this, and she must be at her uncle's, Mr. Holt's; yet in the three visits which a father's anxiety about his son forced me to make here, I have not found the moral nerve to visit Mr. Holt. I am childish, very, very childish. My Julia's death unmanned me,—and my daughter Julia, I feared, I could not look upon without giving way to more than feminine feebleness. But I have seen her. Yea more, I must master this weakness. I must now make myself known to my son and daughter, and quit this recluse life. I will, I will;"—and he walked up and down his room, revolving this idea, till

having settled into comparative calmness, he left his room, and walked out.

Mr. Delafield had not strolled far before he saw a short distance ahead of him two persons who seemed to be engaged in an earnest conversation. In order to avoid them, and not wishing to return upon his steps, he took a bye-path a little to the right. As he was passing along, however, he heard a voice which he at once knew to be that of Montrose, and he could clearly distinguish the words "Snarler's will;" and paternal anxiety overcame his reluctance to play the eaves-dropper; and his interest in the matter, rather than any elaborate reasoning on the subject, seemed to make it both proper and his duty to hear as much more as he could.

The speakers, he discovered, were Montrose and Lawyer Brief; the latter he had seen at one of the courts in Prince George county.

"You must understand, Mr. Montrose," said the attorney, "that in the cowardly assault made on Father Hunter by Snarler, Doolittle, and that puritan parson, Snarler retook that release, by which Father Hunter hoped to hold for the Catholic Church the grave-yard in this city. Now we are very desirous to regain this release, and we know but one way to effect this object."

Montrose expressed his surprise how he could do any thing towards bringing about this result, and said,

"With Mr. Snarler I can have no connexion further than is necessary to get possession of his deceased relative's will, and what that has to do with the right of the Church of Rome to the grave yard in St. Mary's is past my comprehension;" and having so said, Montrose, who still entertained, as at first, no partiality for Brief, turned to go away.

"The very thing," said the attorney, laying his hand upon his arm in a beseeching manner. "Bear with me a moment, sir, and I will show you. Like most young gentlemen, I presume, Mr. Montrose's purse is occasionally lighter than he would like it to be."

Montrose's face flushed, and the youth felt tempted to teach Brief a lesson on minding his own business in a way he was not likely to forget.

Brief, in the blandest tone, assured him no offence was intended, and proceeded to say, that Father Hunter em-

powered him to place at his command a purse of sovereigns, with the promise of filling it twice more; provided Mr. Montrose would convey to him a third of the right of his factor, Charles Delafield, to the property claimed under the will."

"Well," said Montrose, smothering with difficulty his indignation, "what has this to do with the release?"

"All in time, respected sir," said Brief, courteously. "This one-third of Charles Delafield's right to the valuable property held by Snarler being vested in Father Hunter, he thinks he might bring Snarler to terms, and extort from him the release which he has retaken as a highway robber."

"It takes a rogue to catch a rogue," said Montrose, indignantly. "Do you suppose that, acting as Charles Delafield's agent, I could be so dishonest as to convey away any part of his right without first consulting him? especially, that I could relinquish one-third of a very valuable estate for a few sovereigns, much less in value, which you conceive I now absolutely need?" and Montrose strode indignantly away.

"A pretty vapouring youth this," said Brief, both vexed and disappointed. "His factor, Charles Delafield, is rich, no doubt, if he can get the will; but, as he said about my taking the antlers of the old hart to Miss Evelin, the little word if is an important and insurmountable obstacle at times. But he, this agent Montrose, what is he? A puffish youth who swaggers, and lives high, and has run up scores at the Free Briton. Mine host is already uneasy about his pay, and spoke to me about taking measures to get it. I'll go and urge immediate steps, and when the youngster is in the law's tender clutches, then his scruples about going beyond his powers as agent, or sacrificing his factor's right, or owning his needs, by taking a genteel bribe of two or more purses of sovereigns, will all vanish. This conscience is a very foolish thing when it fights against interest, and this pride, being above owning one's self to be in want of money, will have to come down," and Brief hurried to the tavern, while Montrose walked towards the castle, where he understood Mr. Holt was, meaning there to make a full disclosure of himself, and to ask his advice in the premises.

What had passed had not escaped Mr. Delafield. He

pursued his way also, and more than once, exclaimed, "the time has come for me to make known who I am."

"I am to turn over a new page in my history," he continued, "but alas! that page cannot present what the page I can no more turn over presented to me, when I first entered upon this then delightful, but now chequered and painful life! Mr. Montrose," he continued, falling in the same path, and coming up with him, "a word with you."

What passed between them we know not, nor is it perhaps important that we should. The sage Cid Harnet Benengeli, who so fortunately details every particular in the history of the knight of La Mancha, was more favoured with a knowledge of his hero's movements, than we profess to be in those of our's.

This we do know, however. Montrose parted from Mr. Delafield, and at the castle met Mr. Holt; and being generally intent on sports of the field,—and never missing a chance to shoot wild fowl,—he rode down to the house of a cottager or fisherman, who lived on Calvert's Bay. The bay is about ten miles below St. Mary's on the Maryland side of the Potomac, and about five or six miles above the mouth of the river. Here, in company with the youth Darnell, he spent the balance of the day, shooting ducks at the mouth of the creek, that empties into Calvert's Bay. Towards sunset Montrose saw quite a raft of what are now known as the canvass-backs, and he and Darnell rowing the boat ashore, Montrose got out, and stole along, intending to take his position behind a tuft of young cedars which were a blind; while Darnell paddled the boat out, and drove the ducks into the sand, Montrose found a clump of young cedars favourable to his purpose, and gun in hand, squatted behind them. He had hardly taken his position, however, before he felt himself held powerfully by two persons from behind, thrown down upon his face, his hands tied, blindfolded, and borne by two or more men, who spoke in low and unintelligible tones to him; put upon a horse, a man from behind holding him tightly on. The horse was vehemently urged on. He heard the hoofs of another horse as if some one was riding along, and without the power to resist, Montrose was carried for about an hour at a rapid gait, greatly to his discomfort, and vastly more even to his annoyance. He was then taken from the horse, and by two or more persons, one of whom was evidently very athletic, he was dropt as a log in a room, and the

door fastened upon him. From the first, Montrose, with all his resolution and energy, found resistance useless, and the rapidity with which this movement was executed, left but little time for reflection, and even had time been given him, the unintelligible, indistinct tones of his captors, and his being blindfolded, would have prevented his knowing why he was thus handled. But now that he was left alone, he at once bestirred himself. With a desperate effort he freed his hands from the manacles, and untied the bandage from his eyes. He looked around anxiously to know where he was, and found himself in a hut, lying on the floor; both the windows and doors of which appeared to be well secured. He next looked to see if any weapon was at hand by which he might repel attack, or act aggressively, and at need force an entrance through the door or window. Under some rubbish near him he saw a large hatchet, and was in the act of rising to secure it, when he heard voices in the adjoining room.

"This is the fellow at last," said one of the speakers, "what claims all my land here."

"You haint no doubt then," asked the other, "that he mought be the very man. Supposin you've coteht the wrong pig by the ear."

"Why haven't I heerd from England by letter, that Charles Delafield had sailed to St. Mary's. Didn't Captain Fulford sorter let on that he suspicions this Montrose mought be Charles Delafield himself?"

"All true as natur," said the questioner, "but it 'pears as how, I heerd tell that this mister, we have coteht, himself telled you he was nobody but Mr. Charles Delafield's agent?"

"That's all a big lie," said the first, impatiently, and whom we shall call, as Montrose also discovered him to be, Snarler.

"But what are you gwine to do with him," asked his questioner. "You don't mean to keep him here 'till he's starved to death?"

"No, Robinson," replied Snarler, "I ain't such a fool as all that. I know dead men tell no tales, but he'd take too long to starve to death, and he mought be missed, and some body would be poking about here, and let on what I was a driving at."

"'Twould be mighty unnatural to shoot him in cold blood

so," said Robinson. "Prehaps you calcilate to give him pisen to eat with his meat? and he mought be put out of the way, and no one be so mighty wicked arter all, as we couldn't hev made him eat, if he hadn't liked."

The talking was now too low to be heard connectedly. From it, Montrose might conjecture much, and saw his situation to be very critical.

"Jim and Bill are big enough to manage him?" he heard Robinson ask. From Snarler's reply he caught an affirmative, and then the words,

"If he makes much of a splutter, I reckon Bill needn't," here the word was too low to be heard, "but twice."

"The devil," said Montrose to himself, clasping the hatchet tightly, and wishing Snarler's head was within reach of a blow.

"This here dog in the yard would tear him should the youngster git out to-night?" asked Robinson.

Snarler laughed aloud at the idea of Montrose's escaping.

"You don't know it is a bloodhound, which I got from Havana," said Snarler, "and put here to watch my corn crib."

"How, and when, shall we fix him?" asked Robinson.

This was the very question which Montrose, himself, would have asked, and he was greatly disappointed that Snarler's reply was too low for him to hear it.

"You think he'll be easy?" asked Robinson.

"No, I aint such a gander as to believe that, if I hadn't so tied him that he's 'bliged to, but that's well thought on. Spose we go in, and see how the youngster gits on, and, if I catches him trying to 'scape, we'll put him where he won't gin us trouble, and then I can pay back the beatings he gin me."

Montrose heard this last remark, and his heart beat quicker than he had ever known it to beat before. That they were both armed, he had every reason to believe; that he would be able to cut his way through them, he thought impossible; that they meditated his death, or some terrible evil to him, he doubted not; and, should they enter and find him unbandaged, that his life might be taken by them, he thought most likely. Hence, as they came towards the door of the room where he was confined, stopping, occasionally, and talking, as they approached, he stood ready behind the door to sell his life dearly, but, though brave and hopeful, full of

life, and nerved by far more than ordinary energy, he felt an awful sense of danger. And, in that moment of intense agony, quicker than flowed the life-blood from his heart, as it coursed in the arteries of his system, came visions and thoughts of friends, and others, most dear. Death, under any circumstances, is a fearful crisis, when we have time to think as we approach it; but death to him, with life opening before him with all its vistas of happiness; death, by the hand of such mean and cowardly creatures as Snarler and Robinson; death, where no one could mark, or would be likely to know, he fell bravely; death, without honour or sympathy; to be butchered, and then hustled into a hole as a dead dog, with a little dirt thrown upon him, and no cry for vengeance to be made, nothing to be done till that great day when all secrets shall be disclosed, was an event full of terror and bitterness. It was hard to swallow down the choking feelings that came over him, and, like a man, to stand up in a negro hut, and an obscure forest, ready to fight hopelessly, with certain death before him. But Montrose was able to do this, and, as he stood with his person erect, every muscle strained, lip compressed, and face pale as death, he heard them stop, and Snarler said,

"No use, I reckon. You go and see where's Bill and Jim."

Montrose breathed freer, and, as soon as he could collect himself, began to devise means of escape. It was now getting dark, and he heard the door in the next room open, the crackling of fire in the fire-place there, some low talk between Snarler and Robinson, and an occasional ejaculation between, as he supposed, the negroes Bill and Jim, and then, for the first time, he heard the barking of a dog outside the house. "These fellows must sleep, ere long," said Montrose to himself, "and then is my chance, if ever." To attempt an escape before, might lead to the most disastrous consequences. In about two hours, but, as appeared to Montrose, in ten hours' time, all seemed to be asleep. He first tried the only window in the room, but it could not be forced, without calling up the dog, and the sleepers in the other room. He then tried the door—a desperate remedy this, he knew—but beggars must not be choosers, and he opened the door more easily than he expected. He entered the room very cautiously—a cat could hardly have crossed it more stealthily. Light enough was emitted by the fire for him to see the pos-

ture of affairs and persons in it. Snarler lay back in a chair, asleep. Robinson—whom he now saw to be a very large, double-jointed fellow, and hence no longer wondered that he was held so tightly—lay asleep, his length on the floor. The negroes were before the fire, snoring loudly, while two pistols lay on the table, near Snarler. With the utmost caution, stepping over Robinson's body, and leaning across Snarler's, to reach the table which was the other side of Snarler, Montrose succeeded in seizing the pistols. He examined them quickly, and had just satisfied himself they were loaded, primed, and well flinted, when Robinson, under the influence of a dream, rose to his feet. Montrose's first impulse was to level a pistol at him, ready to fire, if he should make any noise, and that rude figure of colossal life and Herculean vigour, in a moment more, might have been in the agonies of death.

But Robinson, more asleep than awake, looked about him a moment, appeared to see no one, and then lay down again. In an instant Montrose was at the door, which he readily opened, and sallied forth; but, as he stepped out, the bloodhound prepared to spring on him. With one blow of the hatchet, he broke the dog's jaw, and the creature could only howl; and Montrose hurried on by a path that led from the house, as he hoped, to the main-road which would conduct him to St. Mary's; but, as it turned out, to the bay-side. Here Montrose in about an hour found himself. It was clear star light, and he wandered nearly an hour on the beach, as he supposed, in a south direction; but saw no house, or sign of habitation. He then found his further progress intercepted by a creek, and he saw now that he must either retrace his steps at the risk of encountering Snarler, Robinson, and the negroes who might be in pursuit with another dog to lead them on his tracks; or strike off directly to the right in a dense forest, where there was no clearing, path, or even clue to the point he wished to reach. He found the north star, after looking around some time, and by that might have laid his course, so as to come out not very far from St. Mary's; if he had known how far north or south he was of the ancient city, and, if knowing his bearings, he could in a dense forest have kept a due course in any point or quarter. Difficult, however, as he knew the latter undertaking to be, it seemed advisable to risk it, and as he best could, he kept such a course as in his

judgment would before morning bring him out not far from St. Mary's. During this while, however, his feelings were any thing but agreeable. He was armed, it is true, and prepared and not unwilling, should it be necessary, to stand at bay, and face out Snarler, and his associates. But he believed they must have other weapons besides the pistols he had taken. He knew, if aware of his escape, they would hunt him down as a wolf, and with all his recklessness, and even love of danger, he saw far more peril than glory in an encounter with them. Occasionally he thought he heard a dog's bark in pursuit, and this would quicken his steps. He had travelled, as he judged, ten miles, and it was between midnight and morning, and, for the first time since he had turned from the bay-side, he came to a road, that seemed to be well trodden. He was not positive that the road was familiar to him, but still it appeared to him he had seen certain trees before. He quickened his pace, though he felt much fatigued, and in a little time found himself in sight of the castle. All was quiet at the colonel's, and Montrose soon found his way to his chambers at the Free Briton's. Fatigue gave him no opportunity for much reflection, and in a few minutes he was in a sound sleep. But when he awoke in the morning his head and limbs ached, and he was too unwell to leave his room. In the course of that day he became quite sick, and, either from fatigue, exposure, or anxiety, he was brought nearer to death's door than he had been for years. During his illness his mind was occasionally delirious, and he understood afterwards that his mysterious friend, calling upon him, and finding him so low, nursed him with all the tenderness of a mother, and the affection of a parent. But this kind friend had gone to Calvert, leaving a verbal message of affectionate regard. Shepard was called from St. Mary's by the court then in session in Prince George's. Of Mr. Holt, Parson Gordon, and their families, he heard nothing. The effect of this extreme illness was to sadden deeply his mind, and thoughts of eternity, and a sense of the importance of religion, which he had heretofore shuffled off, as only fit for the aged or moribundis, he dwelt much upon.

"I may not hope," said Montrose to himself, "to be a good or even pious man at once; but I trust to begin or take the steps necessary to make me one." And, though the youth, in the dreariness of his sick chamber, could not, and did not shake off the heydayness so natural to him, and,

though the sun which came into his windows, with the cheerful aspect out of doors, which it revealed of the world and the scenes about him, made him almost impatient to get out and enjoy them. Sickness worked on him a sobering effect. It led heedless rambling impulse to think. It opened to him a new leaf in his life, and a voice said to him, write on that leaf hereafter holiness to the Lord. What nothing else in this world can effect, as says St. Chrysostom, "a little sickness will correct and amend:" or as St. Paul teacheth, "a light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory.'

CHAPTER XXI.

"For herein fortune shows herself more kind
Than is her custom; it is still her use,
To let the wretched man outlive his wealth,
To view with hollow eye, and wrinkled brow
An age of poverty."

MERCHANT OF VENICE.

MONTROSE had entirely recovered. He had heard very recently from England, from his friend Johnson; who was anxious, if he could so arrange his affairs, to come over in the course of the next month, and be married to Julia.

Montrose could not divine what was the precise object of Snarler in the violence which he and Robinson had used upon him. He did not know exactly what course to pursue with regard to Snarler. That he might attempt a repetition of the violence, he thought not improbable; and, if he was to be assailed as he had been, weapons would not protect him. "I cannot put up with this," said Montrose, "but what can I do, is the question? I can whip Snarler till he'll rue the day he laid hands upon me; but *cui bono*? I can't prove the assault, and I should lose in the estimation of some more than the satisfaction is worth; and I am not certain that he may not try the trick again. And yet I feel disposed now to carry the war into the enemy's country. If I could get that will, and have it recorded, I would better revenge myself than by cuffing him."

He called upon Mr. Holt, who was now alone at Pleasant Lodge. This worthy gentleman received him so graciously, and his manner was so bland, so kind, so courteous, and, as Montrose thought so unlike, if not superior to that of any other person, that he could not help saying to himself he is the best man in the world, and I want to call him uncle. He mentioned the assault of Snarler, and asked Mr. Holt's advice about it and the will.

"I'll do what is proper about the violence used on your person, Mr. Montrose," said Mr. Holt, "leave that to me for the present; but as to the will, I'll call, and let you know next Wednesday."

The day designated, Mr. Holt called, and after a long conversation took his leave.

A few hours after Mr. Holt's departure, Shepard, having returned from Prince George's, he and Montrose were riding on the road between St. Mary's town and the head of the river, and the following remarks passed between them.

"You wish to make old Snarler," said Shepard, "disgorge a certain will that you are anxious to have recorded. Perhaps, friend Montrose, a spice of revenge may season the very prudent considerations which urge you to this step?"

"No, none, I assure you," said Montrose, "the law or some other power," kindling as he spoke, "may bring that on him as an after-clap. No, Shepard, Mr. Holt advises me to make a second effort to get the will, and has just informed me that Snarler, how he knew I cannot tell, will be on this road this afternoon, and has in his portmanteau the will, which Mr. Holt says is tied up in a bundle of papers by a red string."

"All right enough, Sir Knight," replied Shepard, "but how are you to get old Snarler to disgorge. He has refused your request, backed by a bribe of one hundred pounds. Do you mean to increase the offer? Or, do you mean to do the thing more genteely still, as some fellows did with Father Hunter lately, and as Snarler and Robinson did with you, or, Don Quixote-like, in the way of true knight-errantry, play the part, I mean, of a knight of the highway; bawl out lustily, the will, sir, or your life, and you will show your cleverness, at the same time, by clapping a pistol to Snarler's breast; while I, Shepard, the squire, am to stand by, and see that your knighthood wants nothing?"

Montrose laughed, and said, "Not exactly. I mean to have this will. Coaxing, I fear, will not get it."

"Not so fast," said his friend, "grease the old fellow's hand well with gold, and the will will slip out of it into your possession. Always put off to the last the fortiter in re; at least till the suaviter in modo has totally failed. A mean man, like Snarler, is only approachable on the side of self-interest. This is his blind side, and, like the one-eyed stag, who always fed with her blind eye to the ocean, not apprehending danger from that quarter, and from that quarter was approached and shot, so may Snarler. But be sure that your priming is gold dust, your powder that chemical preparation which shoots, but makes no noise, your wadding

bank notes, well rammed in; and don't forget to put in a silver bullet. And then, if your game should prove invincible, why then bring him to terms as you can."

"You are right, and I wish now only to make such a demonstration as will, without violence, accomplish my object."

Shepard smiled, persuaded that Montrose meant to do more than he said.

"Excellent," he continued, "and a very formidable ally, you will have in your squire;" stroking down his long beard, and surveying his person complacently.

"I want your presence also, should the will come into my possession, to bear witness to the fairness of the transaction."

"Bravo," said Shepard, "you mean to have the will, whether Snarler surrenders it with a curse or a smile; and yet you mean to use no violence. You wish me to testify that you did only what our laws empower, meaning by this that I am not to see or know aught to your discredit. If you choke the will out of him, I am to say that his grimaces were pleasant smiles. And should a censorious court and jury reject your squire's testimony, because the knight and squire are one person, like man and wife, and, therefore, my testimony being before the court, this honourable body is to believe that you are a disciple of Friar Bacon, and can take a thing out of a portmanteau without touching it."

Montrose again said, he meant to use no violence, and hoped Shepard would interfere if he should.

"Very good," replied his friend, "you will hold his hand, while I open his portmanteau. But what is to be my guerdon? For I wish to sell my co-operation at a good price, I never having been employed before in the very genteel business of highway robbery. Let this guerdon then be something above the common order, as Mrs. Annie?"

"Agreed," replied Montrose, extending his hand, "Mrs. Annie shall be yours."

"If you can give her to me; but, to give her to me, she must first be yours; unless, as you mean to take the will from Snarler without touching it, you can pass Mrs. Annie over to my tender and reverential care, without first having the guardianship of her yourself. For here, instead of saying, *ex nihilo nihil fit*, we say *ex nihilo multum fit*."

"Make yourself easy," laughing, "Miss Gordon will accomplish this business for me."

"Really, sir knight, your squire has a worse chance, to derce, than did Sancho of being made governor by the knight of the rueful countenance."

"Sancho was governor after all," said Montrose, "and you may be as happy in your kingdom of Elfin Hall, as Governor Sancho was in his island of Barataria."

"But Miss Emma is first to be caught, and then Mrs. Annie. I fear, sir knight, the first bird may fly as much too high for you as Mrs. Annie does for me."

"That's true," said Montrose falling into a serious vein, and lowering his voice. "Joking apart, that girl, I know, flies too high for me. I never felt worthy to company along with her. I am grovelling here on base earth, while she is soaring in the pure empyrean. I admire her at an awful distance, and when allowed to approach her, feel that I am in the presence of a divinity, whom it is my pleasure and duty to pay all obeisance to; but my lips have not dared to breathe to her a lover's devotion."

"Yon falcon, then, perching too high to condescend to seat herself on your finger, my bird is to be uncaught; and you and I, like two silly urchins who stand open-mouthed gazing on two noble eagles that are soaring aloft, may stand at a respectful distance, admire, adore, but never win our ladies fair."

"That may be," said Montrose, "but—"

"Ah! here's your game," interrupted Shepard, laying his hand on his shoulder, and pointing to a figure just ahead. "A truce to moralizing now. Nab him, and we may nab the birds of better plumage afterwards. But take care," trying to restrain Montrose, whose face turned red and pale on seeing Snarler, "he don't soil your fingers. Buzzards won't bear handling."

"Halt there!" called out Montrose in a commanding tone, spurring his horse, and dashing furiously ahead.

The person addressed, Snarler, stopt a moment, undecided what to do. The first thought with him was that one of his debtors, who had suffered from his pressure, was about to make him a second payment, and in coin too that would tell on Snarler's back, and not in his pocket. The captious man drew out a clumsy pistol, and trembling held it in front of him. The sight of the pistol made Montrose forget his pacific resolution, and determined him to violence, and, before Snarler, whose sight was indifferent, could shoot or recog-

nize him, he collared him, and said: "A word with you. Give me the will of the late Mr. Snarler. Mr. Shepard will see it recorded."

A wasp, who is assailed from an unexpected quarter, could not have been more waspish. Hating Montrose, for more reasons than one, Snarler struck furiously at him with the whip he held in his left hand. The blow missed Montrose, but struck his horse, and made him rear up. Snarler, boiling with anger, fired his pistol almost in the face of Montrose. Shepard could see what passed, but was too far off to interfere. The pistol, however, was fired by a man who was more wrathful than brave; and it only the more maddened Montrose; who might have handled Snarler very severely, if Snarler's horse had not at that moment plunged, and thrown his rider to the ground. On his fall, the horse dashed down a small hill, and in descending it, fell. The valise or portmanteau rolled off, burst open, and emptied its contents on the road.

"An admirable mishap!" said Shepard, espying the envelope with the red string. "What is picked up in the road is not stolen. What is taken before the owner's eyes is done openly. When a man restores to the public what belongs of right to the public, he is a public benefactor. Ergo, sir knight," Montrose came up then, "pick up this will, pass it into my possession, to have it registered, and Mr. Snarler can testify that you have done a praiseworthy deed; nay more, carried out, by giving publicity to his last will and testament, the last wishes of a dying man." And, whispering to Montrose, "I hold you to your promise that Mrs. Annie will stoop from her lofty eyrie, and sit upon the bough with me."

Snarler by this time had risen, caught his horse, and was in the act of mounting. Observing that Shepard had not returned the will to the portmanteau he talked of prosecuting them as robbers.

"Prosecuting?" said Montrose. "There is a settlement yet to be made for your dastardly attempt on my life at Calvert's Bay." Snarler turned very pale; not suspecting before, that Montrose knew who did it.

"Oh! don't prosecute," said Shepard. "It would be a dreadful thing to be tried for highway robbery." And then changing his ironical tone, "You shoot badly. From the limping of your horse. I should judge that you had shot

him instead of Mr. Montrose. Well, never too late to learn. Let your next lesson be, that a highway robber and your horse are not the same person."

Snarler made a kind of half effort to resieze his will. Shepard held him off with one hand, and then lifting him up, put him on his horse, and said :

"Come, friend Good Nature, ride, and clear yourself. Thank your stars you met on the road side two good Samaritans. Come, I say, ride, in a moment, or I'll tie you to your beast with your head to his tail, and then, like Mrs. Gincum Crancum, in a state suited to your merits, you will ride through the city of St. Mary's."

Snarler saw that he was in the hands of one who was able to do what he said, and who was believed to be not at all scrupulous about doing, when he had determined what it were well to do. He rode off sullenly, grunted a curse at Montrose, not knowing what to say to Shepard. The friends turned their horses' heads to St. Mary's, meaning to have the will registered without delay. They had not rode far before they met the jolly priest of St. Inigoes', and Shepard accosting him heartily, said :

"So, father, while we played the part of good Samaritans, you, priest-like, passed by on the other side. But, pray, when you meet the wounded traveller, infuse into him more of the balm of human feeling."

They then mentioned the incident, and Father Canon enjoyed the adventure.

"A very Sir Andrew Ague Cheek, gentlemen, and as old Will says, 'if he were opened, and you could find so much blood as would clog the foot of a flea, I'll eat the rest of the anatomy.'"

"A pleasant man, father," said Shepard, "and we have made him yet more agreeable. I fear you would find him quite a different spirit from the one you laid."

"No doubt," said the priest. "Snarler is a lean-visaged, and burnt-up liver son of Calvin."

"The other," interrupted Shepard, "which you laid, is a fat and jolly son of holy church."

"Come," said the priest, "any message for Elfin Hall?"

"Yes," replied Shepard, "my friend and myself are dying to pay our respects to her, and I invoke her image more devoutly than she does the virgin's."

"Well," said the priest, laughing, "leave your matters

to my management, and I will use my pastoral authority to bring Mrs. Annie to terms."

"Do so, good father," said Shepard, with mock gravity, "and I will spend half my income in masses and charities."

"That means," joined in Montrose, "that, having spent his substance on his beard and his wines, he will give you half of an income, which, like a particular estate at law, is in nubibus."

"All the better for being in the clouds," said Father Canon. "I'll see that friend Shepard, from his cloudy estate, rains down upon me a shower of gold, and all in advance too."

"Seeing as how," said Shepard, laughing, "said cloudy estate is as well situated, defined, and bounded as is, father, your favourite and much talked of country Limbo, for unbaptized children and the Old Testament folks. A country, you know, which once upon a time his Satanic majesty visited, and found it large and broad, where go those, who dying, put on the weeds of Dominic or Francis; by so doing, hoping to escape the old fellow's clutches. But," continued Shepard, looking quizzically at Father Canon, "as one Milton reports of Limbo that it is the paradise of fools, and borders close on to that hot country, where will go the devil you potted at Mrs. Doolittle's. My estate, though a cloudy one, is too high for fools to soar to, and too cool for the smoky gentlemen you exorcise to dwell in."

"Be it so, be it so," said Father Canon, impatiently. "I'll have the shower of gold, then, if your estate is so well situated and bounded; but, remember, friend Shepard, I give no long credits. The poor folks in Limbo have a long time to wait before receiving their pay. I must have mine in hand, even if it is to come from the clouds, before I place Mrs. Annie's hand in your's. For you blades are not to be trusted. I know them well. They cut every one."

"And most, perhaps," replied Shepard, "the fingers of those who try to hold them."

The parties now separated, and we will follow Father Canon, who rode on slowly, and in about two hours' time rode past Mrs. Doolittle's house, where the ghost was laid. Here he stopt and asked for the Irish woman, and was told she had gone to Coode's ruin.

"He can't be here long," said Father Canon, muttering

to himself as he pursued his way. "And if no better than he were shriven and absolved, St. Peter's keys would rust for want of using."

He came now in front of the ruin we have mentioned. The moon was not up, the night was nearly calm,—a slight breeze from the Potomac whispered among the trees, and all else appeared to be wrapt in stillness about the ruin; darkness now adding its power to the scene. The priest dismounted, and, having fastened his horse to a tree, was approaching the front door, muttering, "He can't be here long. Well for him if he were even in Limbo;" when something seemed to be drawing near,—and his first thought was of Katy, which a second glance made him abandon. So unusual was the sight, that, familiar as Roman priests are by some supposed to be, with thoughts of the supernatural, and potent as Father Canon professed to be in laying the disturbed spirits of the nether world, this one, if a spirit, came in so questionable a shape that he wanted Hamlet's courage to speak to it; but devoutly, as usual in difficulty, began to cross himself. He looked again, and with more fear than he would have allowed was possible; when he saw a figure tall and graceful, with something thrown over the head, standing before him. The face was nearly hid, and the darkness besides, he was able to see but two large and piercing eyes, that even in the dark shone upon him. The little he saw of the complexion showed a dark or swarthy hue—and the singular silence of the figure disposed the priest to believe that now, if never before, he stood in the presence of the dead. Crossing himself anew with much agitation, he repeated quickly, more than once, "*Audi et time Satana, recede, recede;*" waving his hand hurriedly, and slowly retreating the while. The figure, however, continued to advance, and Father Canon, having to do with an antagonist, more or less than flesh and blood, as regularly retreated. His bulky and heavy person, however, did not move easily, and fear rendered his breathing hurried and painful. The figure rather gained upon him, and the father wished he was mounted on his good horse, whose legs, better than his own, could bear him hence. As it was, he still repeated, but faintly, "*Audi et time Satana, recede, recede;*" that is, hear and tremble Satan, retire, retire. But the figure minded not his exorcism. Prospero, it seemed, had broken his wand. And, if this mystery had continued

much longer, the priest would have trusted to his legs, though they might have refused to second his wish. But the figure now halted, and, in a manner at once graceful and imposing, waved him to follow. Father Canon could not divine who, or what was the figure, and of course could not conjecture the nature of the office which was required of him. He had been taught, however, to school his feelings, and, recovering his self-possession, and moving mechanically, when an official or professional act was to be done, from the force of habit he obeyed. He had not gone many yards before three females came in sight, and he was amazed to recognize Mrs. Annie, Emma, and Julia, and in Adaratha, the figure which had alarmed him.

The ladies briefly told him that, during the morning, they were sailing down the creek, and, on passing Coode's ruin, at which they gazed some time, they saw a white object wave from one of the upper windows. It soon fell to the water-side; and, supposing it was a signal, they directed the oarsmen to pull ashore. As in the broad day-light they thought they might safely venture in and about the house, Julia and Annie, by this time, being nearly free from the fears they had had about the place, and Emma, unable as she was to account for the lights and noises which the credulous negroes represented as most marvellous, was not unwilling once more to explore the strange mansion. They picked up on landing a white handkerchief, the object seen to fall, and saw on it, chiefly to Annie's surprise, her mother's maiden name, Jane Yeo, in her mother's well-known hand. How came her mother's handkerchief there? Untying a knot in the handkerchief, they saw a piece of paper enclosed with the name of John Coode written on it; and Mrs. Annie then remembered that she had heard that the once distinguished John Coode, in his palmiest days, a short time before her mother's marriage to Mr. Darnell, had evinced a decided admiration of her. By some means he obtained this handkerchief, and may have prized it as a golden link connecting him to a golden past,—a fragrant memento of days that were more odorous than a bed of violets.

"Coode is then alive," said Mrs. Annie, "was our conclusion,—perhaps sick and suffering in this rickety house. We parlied a minute or so; the negroes tried to coax us out of it, but our minds were made up."

"You saw the dreaded John Coode?" asked the priest.
"He is not a raw head and bloody bones as you thought?"

"Poor man!" said Emma, "he is at death's door. He tried very hard to say something to us, but we could make out nothing."

"What brings you here now?" asked the priest.

"It wouldn't do to let him die without trying to help him all we could," replied Emma, "and, night as it was, and ugly as is the house and the reports about it, it seemed uglier to leave him here to die with no one by him. As our boat reached here, we heard your horses' hoofs, and Adaratha went off to reconnoitre."

The party then entered,—all was still, and it had become very dark. The priest whispered his fears that the last agony was over. They ascended the stair-case, and went in the room to the left. Emma's fearful dream flashed upon her. The darkness and silence, and the thought that the terrible John Coode lay a corpse in the room, made her shudder as she looked around to see and hear what might be moving.

"He is dead," whispered the priest, slowly advancing. "I'll strike a light;" and taking a tinder-box out of his pocket, he soon lit a candle which he produced from one of his capacious pockets.

But Coode they found alive, though almost gone. The eyes of the dying man passed slowly from one to the other of the party, and a faint expression of recognition, they thought they saw, as he looked at Father Canon; but faint it was, as in that fast failing edifice of mortality there was but the dimmest spark of light out of its windows.

"'Tis as I feared," muttered Father Canon. "Katy has been here, but has gone, and, in her simple but mistaken kindness, has shaken faster than need be the poor wretch's hour-glass. He was on a bed, hard enough I thought, but she has stretched, or, may be, dragged him on the floor to hasten his dying; and, poor creature," he continued, looking at the sick man, "she has done her best for him. The relics and ashes are laid on him. She thinks now the iron hold he had on life will be snapt asunder."

Turning now to Emma and company, who understood but imperfectly Father Canon's soliloquy, the priest, in a low and hurried, and at times interrupted tone, said:

"He was poor, wicked, and old. His passions were

enough to have burnt up the liver of half a dozen common men. He was poor as Lazarus, but proud as Lucifer; and, but for the doles of charity I contrived to bring him, he might have died of very leanness, before old age and a demon-like disposition could have ended him. But, to pay him in part for his persecution of the Catholics, he was allowed to live, and made to die, as he is, by inches,—by piece-meal. See," pointing to the dying man, "he lies nearly as he has lain for weeks. His hearing is nearly gone, his sight dim, his feet unable to drag him along, his voice only occasionally able to speak out,—which he did, you say, unintelligibly and with great labour; and thus, like that creeper in the window, he holds on still, though life is nearly gone. Ah! if I had an elixir to make him well, he'd buy it on any terms. Yes, yes," surveying Coode as he spoke, "he'd promise and swear to lift no more that skinny hand against holy church. But no elixir can save him now."

And Father Canon, having hastily robed himself, hurried to prepare for death a dying man, whose every faculty was so nearly dead as to be almost useless. He sprinkled him with holy water, signed him with the cross, put the images of the Saviour and virgin to his lips, and said most rapidly a Latin prayer, asking the saints to obtain for Coode a remission of part of the heavy purgatorial punishment he was soon to feel. He then put in his cold hand a blest candle, to make a profession of his faith.

John Coode lay now a sad relic. His head, features, and frame were large, while his pale face, hollow eyes, white hairs, general decrepitude and feebleness seemed not to belong to that unquiet and ruling spirit which led the opposition in the Assembly, and whose voice was a trumpet in the Protestant Revolution. And as he lay there breathing painfully, and, as if by a spasmodic effort, throwing his head first to one, and then to the other side, groaning, no hope beyond the grave appeared to light up his glazing eye, no cheering call from that dread world seemed to fall soothingly on his dull ears,—nothing cast athwart his dark countenance one ray of peace.*

* McSherry, without any authority that I can trace, states that John Coode had orders in the English Church. In the history of the province, and owing perhaps to his military efforts in "the Protestant Revolution," he is called *Captain* Coode, and afterwards he filled some important civil posts. During all which time we read not that he was a Reverend. To have had orders in the English Church, he must have

The ladies turned away, in order not to witness the last conflict in which the iron frame of the giant yields as certainly before the grim monster's grip as the tiny and helpless babe.

"We'll go; 'tis over."

"What! Leave him all alone here?" asked Julia, shuddering, and hardly conscious of the force of her question.

The priest bowed assent.

"Alone!" thought Emma. "No! his spirit soon, perhaps already, stands with a countless host;" and she trembled as she added mentally, "Oh! I trust not where the rich man lifted up his eyes being in torment."

Father Canon gave his horse to one of Mrs. Annie's servants to ride over to Elfin Hall, while he accompanied the ladies in the boat.

Annie and Emma sat at one end, and Julia and Father Canon at the other end of the boat; and Emma, in a low tone, expressed to Annie her amazement that, instead of dying, as did the saints of old, raising their eyes to heaven, and saying, "Lord Jesus! receive my spirit," Romanists kiss the images of Christ and the Virgin Mary,—hold on to a blest candle with the trembling grasp of a dying person, and say, 'Jesus, Mary, have mercy on me!' 'With the heart man believeth unto righteousness, and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.'"

"Oh, don't talk to me of this now! The scene harrows my mind!" said Annie.

"Romanism is all wrong, Annie,"—still speaking low. "Sweet as may sound to some the hymn 'Ora pro nobis,' the cry, 'Jesus, thou Son of David, have mercy on me,' will sooner call sweet mercy down. I tell you, Annie, when the soul is trembling on the brink of eternity,

made a trip to England. But while Captain Coode, and not Reverend, he fell into disgrace, and fled from the province. How unlikely that at such time he should have sought, much more been honoured, with holy orders! Coode was permitted to return to the province, and proceedings were stayed against him on the ground of his years and infirmity; and no allusion is made to the sacred profession, as a reason for extending favours to him. Thus history tells us he was a political leader in the lower house of Assembly, the master-spirit in the Protestant Revolution, captain-general of the militia of St. Mary's County, and collector of the port of St. Mary's, and that he was noted for his infidelity and blasphemy. Could the charity which hopeth all things have added, and he was in orders in the Church of England?

'tis madness to ask the prayers of a creature like ourselves."

While this conversation was going on between Annie and Emma, Julia, from a variety of motives which she herself probably neither investigated nor cared much to know, asked Father Canon to tell her why he worshipped the Virgin.

The priest, nothing surprised, knowing her impulsiveness and ingenuousness, went to work in his peculiar way to answer her. He quoted the Douay version, where it reads, "She," *i. e.* the Virgin, "shall bruise the serpent's head;" told her that in the 44th Psalm she is called, "Queen of heaven;" that in the Gospel she is said to be "full of grace," and that it is added, "all generations shall call her blessed."

At this point of his remarks, Emma and Annie gave attention to him.

Father Canon then, with the easy confidence with which he would have delivered the clearest truths, and we say not, they did not appear to him as such, represented that St. Ignatius had said, "No sinner can be saved but by recourse to the blessed Virgin;" that St. Chrysostom had declared that "Mary had been chosen from all eternity to save by her mercy those whom her Son, in justice, cannot pardon:" that St. Augustine called her, "our only advocate in heaven;" and the priest hastily referred to Ephrem Cyrus, John Damascenus, St. Ildephonsus, especially to the Collyridian heresy, in further proof.

"Now," continued he, "you Protestants care as little about fathers in the church, as we do about Luther and Calvin, its apostate sons. St. Ignatius, you say, was but an old man, and his testimony is no better than the gabble of a garrulous old witness in court. St. Austin, you say, was bishop of a mean city, and only ranked high because he lived among the Africans, a savage people. St. Chrysostom, you say, may have been golden mouthed, but Plato was more—bees sipped honey from his lips. The saints' homilies, you tell us, are rhetorical and eloquent, but not sound in doctrine. For, it seems, you Protestants think eloquence and learning never were, or can be married together. A gossip will, for wind, and fury, and bombast, and persiflage, out-Demosthenes the Athenian, and out-Tully Cicero; but to learning he makes no pretension. Learning, you say, was born and died with Calvin, who, like Minerva, was the

embodiment of the wisdom of Jupiter. And, as to Ephrem, the Syrian, Damascenus, and St. Ildephonsus, they, according to your teachers, were lazy monks, who, in the cloister's solitude, wanting other employment, concocted this worship of the Mother of God—a pretty fancy, they allow, for young imaginations to kindle around. There is a good deal of poetry in our thoughts of Eve, moving in holy simplicity, and unconscious beauty, about the garden of Eden, and these clever monks have given the fellow to this picture of Eve, as lovely a picture of the Madonna. For, radiant with loveliness, and fragrant with holiness, she is the sweetest bud that ever grew on the stock of mortality."

"Have you any other reasons?" asked Julia.

Father Canon had a particular regard for the ladies, and his eyes beamed kindlier than usual, as he replied, to this question,

"You know, that on Assumption Day, the blessed Virgin ascended to heaven. Now, Enoch was taken up into heaven, Elijah went up in a chariot of fire, our Lord ascended there, and why not His mother?"

"The Bible don't say so," said Julia.

"If it did, your translation wouldn't have it," he replied. "Your witch-ridden king could believe in witches riding in the air on a broomstick, but the Mother of God, he thought, was more tied down to this world than an old hag of a woman." And Father Canon spoke of apostles being present at the Virgin's death-bed, and of St. Mary being carried to heaven amid a vision of angels, and the melody of angel harpers, while angels and apostles, all the while singing a divine psalmody, laid her body in a coffin in a garden of Gethsemane.

"You believe, then, in the propriety of asking the prayers of departed saints?" asked Emma, expressing some surprise in her manner, and anxious to elicit such an answer as would reveal truly, without disguise, the opinion of Father Canon.

"I believe in the propriety of asking the prayers of departed saints?" replied he, "why not? We pray for each other, and believe our prayers are more than breath thrown away, or sound made, or syllables uttered by the organs of speech. They reach the mercy-seat, and are potent to evoke to the help of our friends, some good angels, who otherwise might have allowed them to go on in their evil ways worse and worse. And we believe that our prayers unquestionably

avail, if coming from pure lips, and a holy heart, for, says St. James, 'the continual prayer of a just man availeth much,' and yet we, the best of us, are what?" he spoke with an abruptness and stare, facing Emma, that made her start, "but bits of clay dressed up in silk and woollen, our nether parts resting on leather, and our upper stories roofed by fur, or straw. We are only moving pieces of corruption that are fit to grace the worm's banquet chamber, and from whose inner, no less than our outer man, steam up foul vapours continually; yet we claim that our prayers go up as sweet incense! How much more likely that the prayers of a departed saint should avail, who is free from earth's sin and stain, who has passed into that holy place where they see face to face, who, free from sin themselves, and glorified, can boldly approach the mercy-seat, and ask favours there? But time presses. Here we are at Elfin Hall. More at another time. So good night. Dominus vobiscum." And Father Canon rode on.

"This is too bad," said Emma, mentally, after they had entered the house. "Annie is nearly free from the meshes of that Father Hunter and his church, but this worship of the saints and the virgin has a wonderful hold upon her. And what has passed to-day, has only, I fear, added to her delusion. Poor Annie! between her doubts, hopes, and fears about Mr. Shepard, and her unfixed state, I fear she is too much excited for her good." Annie looked serious and thoughtful, Julia said nothing, and Emma retired to her room with feelings of a mixed and disagreeable character, trusting that He, who could bring light out of darkness, would enlighten the way before her friend, directing her in all her doings with His most gracious favour, and furthering her with His continual help.

CHAPTER XXII.

JULIA FINDS HER FATHER—THE INVOCATION OF SAINTS.

“They are at rest;
We may not stir the heaven of their repose
By rude invoking voice, or prayer addrest
In waywardness to those,
Who in the mountain grots of Eden lie,
And hear the fourfold river as it murmurs by.”
LYRA APOSTOLICA.

EMMA had not been long in her chamber before she heard a loud knocking at the front door, and from the movement below stairs, inferred that Annie and Julia were still up. She next heard the door open, and then a scream which she knew to be Julia's; and began hastily to dress herself, fearing something had happened, when a servant girl entered and said with a negro's perversion of a simple story, that Mr. Delafield, Miss July's father, who had been dead these great many years, had come to life again. Emma knew not how to interpret the wondrous tale, and had reached the door, in the act of going down, when she could just distinguish Julia's voice; saying, “My father, my own father,” and heard a manly voice, though apparently broken by excess of emotion, say, “My daughter, my dear Julia!”

“’Tis even so,” said Emma, standing in the door, irresolute what to do. “Can it be possible?” And she looked around, and tried to collect herself, and see if it were not a dream. “No, sober reality,” she continued. The voices were still heard, but lower, and then a man's voice talking rapidly, as if narrating something. “I will not intrude,” said Emma, returning, and seating herself in a chair.

In about half an hour Mrs. Annie came up to Emma's room, and, repeating what the servant should have said, added that Julia had not only found her father, but her brother Charles, “and who,” said Annie, looking inquiringly into Emma's face, as if she would drag out its secret, and read there what the owner might not wish to have known, “who do you think is Julia's brother Charles?”

"Can he be Mr. Montrose?" replied Emma, with assumed calmness.

"Who else," said Annie; with evident pleasure, "could Mr. Montrose be? I suspected it. And besides Mr. Holt is here. Mr. Delafield made himself known to him, and they came down here together; and at another time I'll tell you what he has just been saying. But come, they are expecting you." And she hurried Emma down stairs.

Emma was struck with the intellectual, but care-worn appearance of Mr. Delafield, and saw a likeness to Montrose. But no exclamation that was made that interesting night, on an occasion which Emma, with her warm filial affections, keenly felt, and nothing that then happened in the happy group, which she saw, as she came into the drawing room, struck her more forcibly and touchingly than a few remarks which fell from Adaratha, and her characteristic attitude and manner, as she made them.

"Me happy," said the poor Indian girl. "Julia find old and young eagle come back again. Eagle fly way over the big water; but he no leave his Julia for good. He old now, and want he young brave to stand round him, and his young flower to bloom by his side. But Croshaw and Adaratha no tired; they gone! gone!" and she pointed to the west. "They no cross the big water there, no, no," shaking her head, "too deep, too big;" she paused, and then proceeded; for the company entered too deeply into her feelings to interrupt her. "Julia's home happy now. Birds sing there; heap flower bloom, and young vine stay close to oak tree, and no fear storm harm it. Me glad for Julia. But me heard whip-poor-will cry to-night, and me cry too. Adaratha see no Croshaw, no Adaratha come back there; Adaratha home no home now. The owl set on old tree, and scream. Heap weed; no flower; no home." And with an expression of forced resignation, Adaratha seated herself on a chair, looking the picture of loneliness.

The next morning the company at Elfin Hall were out by the creek-side, near by which some negroes were hauling the seine for herrings. Adaratha, who was among them, seemed to have recovered from her melancholy on the previous night, and, being more intent on gathering flowers than in noticing the fish, as they were thrown ashore by the seine, turned a little aside to the right in the woods; and was soon busied gathering the blossoms of the wild honey-suckle.

All at once, Mrs. Annie, whose fears were apt to be on the *qui vive*, and who was as disposed to challenge coming events and persons, and ask to what they tended, and whether they came as the herald of good or bad news, as sentinel at his post to challenge and demand the countersign—Mrs. Annie, we say, discovered that the Indian girl was engaged in a personal encounter with some person or thing, which or what she knew not. Annie gave the alarm. Mr. Delafield hastened to Adaratha's assistance, and found she had killed a large black viper.

"Good, good," said Mr. Delafield, "*Ipsa conteret caput trium*. She shall bruise thy head. My Indian girl, you have doubly fulfilled the prophecy. As the seed of the woman you have bruised the serpent's head, and being yourself a woman and a maiden, you have bruised it also, though Roman doctors make the *ipsa*, she, to mean the virgin only."

"Ah! this is the *coluber cacodemon*," said Mr. Holt, coming up, "which Adaratha has killed. Its hiss she ought to have heard, and she was rash in troubling it, for its fangs are very large, and its slaver is said to be nearly as poisonous as is that of the rattlesnake. Strange antipathy have most of Adam's offspring to serpents of all kinds, as if in revenge for his tempting our first mother, and, I must say, I share it with them, for I killed, one morning this spring, five *mocassins*, and which I kill generally with more satisfaction than I do even the rattlesnake, for the latter act on the *noli me tangere* principle, but the first are not only venomous, but will strike at your shadow. You said just now," continued Mr. Holt, addressing himself to Mr. Delafield, "that Roman doctors applied the words, as rendered in our version, '*It shall bruise thy head*,' to the virgin, by whose power Satan, according to them, is to be crushed. You read theology in early life, I believe, and know how to meet the Roman doctors here?"

"My friend, I hope, is in no danger of Roman entanglements?" looking with a little concern on Mr. Holt. The latter smiled, and said,

"No; but in a conversation that passed lately between Mr. Hunter, the Roman priest who has charge here, I was struck with his ingenious subtlety in getting rid of the charge of idolatry from the worship his church renders to the virgin and the saints. Thus, their worship of angels he calls *dulia*, from the Greek *douleia*, service; that of the virgin *hyper-*

dulia, or a service above; and, the worship of God latria, which means service likewise. Whether latria is more, or even as much as dulia and hyperdulia, and whether God is more or less adored than saints and the virgin, the words themselves do not determine."

"No," interrupted Mr. Delafield, "nor does Scripture either. For in the Greek, or Septuagint version of the Old Testament, and in the original Greek of the New, latria and douleia have one and the same meaning. Thus, in 1 Thessalonians, (i. 9,) and in Hebrews, (ix. 14,) douleia and latria are both applied to the worship of God. Consequently, the worship of God is douleia no less than it is latria, and hence, if the saints be worshipped with douleia, they are worshipped as God; and, if the virgin be adored with hyperdouleia, she is worshipped above, or even more than God is adored."

"Yes, yes," continued Mr. Holt, smiling, "I made this objection to Father Hunter, and was told I was ignorant of the distinction of terms, and that we must not look to the Bible for scholastic refinements. Thus, said he, adoration literally means, to kiss the hand—*manum ad os admovere*. Wherefore, when we kiss the hand of her majesty, Queen Anne, we mean not to adore her, for, anciently, and even to this day in the Greek church, it was customary to do even more, *e. g.*, to kiss the foot of every bishop, and, when this was done, the language used was, *proskuno se*, I worship thee. Hence, he contended, without abating aught from, or trenching on God's honour, the embroidered cross which is on Pope Clement's right foot."

"As far as the present pope is personally concerned," interrupted Mr. Delafield, "he deserves more homage for his learning than many of his predecessors are entitled to."

"Wherefore," resumed Mr. Holt, "Father Hunter argued we may kiss the images of the virgin and the saints."

"A mere patch-work of Jesuitical refinement," said Mr. Delafield. "It was well understood, when an ancient bishop's foot was kissed, he was not worshipped as God. So, when a king's hand is kissed, we render due homage only to the highest functionary in the state, but not as God. Now, according to God's word, we may not worship any other than God Himself. Christ said to Satan, 'Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.' In Revelation, (xix. 10,) the angel would not let St. John worship him, but said, 'See thou do it not: I am thy fellow servant."

Worship God.' On another occasion, when overcome by the megaleia, wonderful things he saw, (and who would not have been?) St. John fell down to worship before the feet of the angel, the angel said, 'See thou do it not: for I am thy fellow servant. Worship God.' How clear and positive is the prohibition, then, to worship departed saints? to worship one, or what is less, than an angel? At all events, we may not worship what is not more than an angel, a departed saint, especially may we not do it, when the objections here are that we must not worship any but God (which an angel is not,) and that we must not worship a fellow servant like unto ourselves, which a departed saint is, even more than an angel."

"Do you not think," asked Mr. Holt, "that angel worship gave rise to saint worship? In Colossians (ii. 18,) St. Paul alludes to 'worshipping of angels,' which he condemns as showing 'a fleshly mind.' In Romans (i. 25,) he characterizes worshipping and serving the creature more than the Creator as changing the truth of God into a lie. But saints' worship was not condemned, simply because it did not then prevail, for St. Paul would have said of it that it also changed the truth of God into a lie."

"I think so," replied Mr. Delafield. "Yea, more, if the virgin herself could be heard, she would say to her debased and superstitious worshippers, in the words of the angel in Revelation, 'See thou do it not: I am thy fellow servant. Worship God.' Now, the mere act of kissing the images, and of bowing down before images and pictures of the virgin, the saints, and the cross, are degrees of idolatry, if not idolatry to the worst extent, and we cannot know that they do not carry the homage of the affections, even the prostration of mind and heart, besides the worship of the body, which constitute the worship of God—a very prostration, indeed, debasing the worshipper to a poor and pitiable idolator."

"Yes," said Mr. Holt, "take for example the shrines on the way-side, which we find in Roman Catholic countries, the relics of medieval superstition and ignorance. Before them the way-worn pilgrim humbly kneels, and at times with tears and a heart deeply impressed, and tone of voice eloquent of true emotion, he implores the Mother of God to pray and do for him. And here in St. Mary's, on their mantels, you find contemptible shrines, or wretched images,

which are looked to most devoutly. And if this be not worship, what is?"

"I suppose," interrupted Mr. Delafield, "Mr. Hunter met this objection as the Jesuits in China get over their worship of the idol Chacinchuan? You know they say that, while they bend the reverent knee to Chacinchuan, they address their prayers mentally to Christ. A species of logic that will do for a Jesuit, but not for an honest man. What would be thought of a witness who should testify knowingly to a falsehood, and should contend, when charged with bearing false witness, that though his lips said one thing, his heart meant another?"

"Yes," replied Mr. Holt, "he said the genuflexions prove nothing; these, with the prayers, motions of the lips, and votive offerings, the consecration of shrines to the virgin, and the bending before images, he called mere devout acts."

"I fear, my good sir, where there is any going of the heart with an outward adoration, (and if the body bends the heart is sure to supplicate,) there is worship, and of course idolatry. Thus the poor negroes, and ignorant Irishmen here, do they take care to worship God inwardly and the saints outwardly? Are they careful, in rendering the outward homage to one thing, to look beyond and see the invisible God? How unlikely! We poor creatures are naturally prone to superstition, and to believe in charms, magic, and incantation. The Israelites were prohibited from making any graven image of the Deity, lest they should in their stupid ignorance bow down to and worship it. And they were quite as capable of the mental reservation and the relative worship as we are now. A Romanist is told that an image of the Virgin in his house will save it from lightning, that he must run over his rosary, keep blest candles by him, and say, 'Hail Mary! full of grace.' Now, when the thunder cloud breaks over his house, if he be an ignorant man, he will look to the image instead of God; and, if desirous of supernatural help on this or other occasions, he will count his beads, and invoke the blessed virgin; in place of seeking the divine protection in and through the office of the one Mediator and Intercessor."

"I think I understood you to say," said Emma, at length breaking silence, "that Romanists say adoration means literally to kiss the hand, and argue, as kissing the hand is a mere salutation, therefore, they may adore and yet not

worship the virgin, and the saints, and they may kiss images without adoring them."

"I did," replied Mr. Delafield. "But this is all a quibbling about words, a dodging the question, this definition of adoration. Thus adoration is thus defined, *"Dextera manu deum, contingentes ori admovebant,* which, you must know, Miss Emma, says in English, touching the idol with the right hand, we then apply this hand to our mouth. Here this very act of kissing the hand, which they quote to show that, as kissing the hand is only a mark of respect, adoration means but this and no more, is said to be nothing less than an idolatrous worship."

"True, most true," interrupted Mr. Holt. "Pliny's words are to the same effect in his natural history. *Inter adorandum, dextram ad osculum referimus.* In the act of adoring we kiss the right hand. For it was usual, when the idol was in reach, for the worshipper to kiss it; as Cicero mentions that a statue of Hercules had been so much kissed as to have worn away much of the chin and lips: and we know when the idol was too high to be reached, then the idolator kissed his hand to it."

"No doubt of it," continued Mr. Delafield. "How can Romanists resort to so disingenuous an argument? Do they not know that, when idolatry is condemned in the Scriptures, not only is it condemned as adoration, (this word being employed,) but condemned and described as accompanied by kissing the idol or kissing the hand? Thus in 1 Kings, (xix. 18,) it is said there were 7000 persons in Israel who had not kissed, or worshipped Baal: and in Hosea, (xiii. 2) kissing the idolatrous calves of heathenism, is said to be a piece of idolatry to which no true Israelite would descend. Hence kissing of the hand, as the Romanists phrase their adoration of the virgin, by an ingenious gloss, is denounced as idolatry."

"And you may add," said Mr. Holt, "that it is no defence to say it means no more than the eastern prostrations which were made to their monarchs; for these prostrations bordered closely on adoration or worship. Hence the kings of Persia, who affected divine honours, required it of all who approached them."

"Very true," said Mr. Delafield, "and hence kissing the hand, as it is literally, or as it is literally done, or adoring the virgin, as is commonly phrased, or any prostrations to

any but God, when, by such act, a fraction of regard or reverence is implied which trenches upon the lowest grade of worship, all is inhibited in His word. Thus Job (xxx. 26, 27) says it would have been idolatry in him, if, while beholding the sun as he shone, or the moon walking in brightness, his heart had been secretly enticed, or to use his words, 'My mouth had kissed my hand,—this also were an iniquity, for I should have denied the God that is above.' Here iniquity is made to consist in either a secret enticement of the heart after the thing looked upon, or in the act of adoration merely, which is implied in the kissing of the hand. It would require a dexterous divider of the truth now to prove how the heart may give a portion of its affections to an image, or offer to it the outward mark of adoration, and not be as guilty of denying the God above as Job would have been for doing the same.

"And besides, see Naaman's case. After he was cured of his leprosy, (2 Kings v. 18,) he trusted he should be forgiven, if, in the temple or house of Rimmon, he should bow the knee. Hence, any act of adoration, relative as it may be, which is offered to any but God, no matter what may be the mental reservation, is idolatry. Our action is at the time a part of our worship. The bending of the knee, the devout carriage of the body, and the motion of the lips, no less than the lifting up of our hearts, at the time are parts of one act; and if the virgin be thus prayed to, and especially as she is invariably, as 'Holy Mother of God,' 'The Gate of Heaven,' 'Refuge of Sinners,' 'Queen of Angels,' 'Mother of Mercy,' 'Our Life, Sweetness, and Hope,'—she is worshipped as God, and the worshipper is an idolator."

"Precisely," interrupted Mr. Holt; "and you remember that Bossuet, the late learned and eloquent bishop of Meaux, allowed that the ignorant may make the invocation of saints too like that of Jesus Christ."

"Hence," added Mr. Delafield, "the Council of Trent, afraid of splitting on this rock, had the tact to permit, but not to require the invocation of the virgin and the saints. But with the Council agree not the members of the Roman Church in their practice. Bonaventura, in his Psalter of Mary, renders the first psalm of David, 'Blessed is the man who loves thy name, Mary.' In the *Biblia Mariæ*, or *Scriptures of Mary*, St. John's Gospel (i. 3) reads, 'All

things were made by her.' Romanists (for all use the rosary) pray to the virgin ten times for every prayer they address to God. They have seven canonical hours, and five annual festivals in her honour, and term every Saturday in the year the virgin's Sabbath. By Albertus Magnus, the master of Thomas Aquinas, and a divine of far more learning than genius, she is called 'The almighty Queen.' Yea, more—a French ecclesiastic terms her 'Diva Virgo,' the virgin goddess."

"He is as much a heathen as Horace," interrupted Mr. Holt. "He called Venus 'Diva potens Cypri,' the powerful goddess of Cyprus;" and, laughing as he spoke, "these Romanists are nice special pleaders; they beat in quibbling the most subtle of my honourable profession. If their worship of the virgin be not idolatry, what is it? What think you, ladies?"

"I would ask," said Emma, in a serious tone, "if it is not wrong to pray to the virgin, because I do not see how she can be of any service to us?"

"True," replied Mr. Delafield, thoughtfully. "The virgin we have no reason to believe is in heaven, any more than any other departed saint; for St. Paul, in Hebrews, (xi. 1,) states that they who have died in faith have not received the promises. In the next chapter, (verse 13,) he describes the saints departed as gathered in a vast amphitheatre, alluding to the ancient stadium by way of comparison, where they look down upon us in our race for a heavenly crown, and where they stand ready, if we come out conquerors, to welcome us with a shout. St. John, in the Apocalypse (Rev. vi. 9-11) speaks of those who died martyrs for the faith of Christ; but he says not one word of seeing them in heaven. He does not state they went to glory, but obliges us to infer that this happiness is yet in abeyance; for they cry, he says, 'Lord! how long?' and they pray the Father to accomplish the number of his elect, and hasten the realization of his kingdom."

Annie started, and asked if this could be so?

Mr. Delafield assented, and remarked that the virgin, like all other departed saints, was not in heaven, and had not yet gone to glory in the full and proper sense, but was waiting, with them, the general resurrection and the life of the world to come. Hence, he said, as the saints departed do not yet reign with Christ, have not yet attained unto

glory, though they are blessed, and rest from their labours; even admitting our prayers could reach them, which seems most unlikely, there is no more fitness or advantage in praying to the virgin and the saints, than to any good person now in the land of the living. Consequently we should not pray to them at all."

"Which means," added Mr. Holt, "that the imagination of divines and enthusiasts, in relation to the intercession of the blessed virgin and the saints, has worked as extravagantly as Ovid's did in his house of sleep, or Apuleius, in his palace of Psyche."

The following day, Mr. Holt and his brother-in-law ordered their horses, and rode off to St. Mary's. Before going, however, Mr. Delafield promised to see Montrose, and, if he could, prevail on him to drop his assumed name, and see his sister as early as practicable.

Emma and Annie were thankful for the opportune conversation they had heard between Mr. Delafield and Mr. Holt, and carefully read over all the passages in the Scriptures, which they could find applicable to the subject.

While Emma and Annie were thus laudably busied, Father Hunter called. He had feared for some time lest his hold on Mrs. Annie would be lost altogether, but knew not exactly how to regain it; and, if the baffled lion bites the bars of his cage, and then disappointed lies down with an angry growl, Father Hunter felt hardly less dissatisfaction at the thought that all his efforts were about to prove fruitless in retaining Mrs. Annie captive in, as Mr. Allgrace would say, the den of the great beast. Still Mr. Hunter could not give her up without one last effort to bring her back. Hence the day after the conversation just reported, and pending the investigation just referred to, Father Hunter was seen to enter the gate leading to Elfin Hall. As he passed in, some negroes, who were at work, made him as usual profound bows, and which the priest was either too wrapt in his meditations to notice, or felt not in a mood to return.

"Massa priest look mad," said Jack, the negro we have mentioned. "He no like missus no go to chapel now," and the negroes, all having come to the same conclusion, began to speculate on what he would be likely to do. Mrs. Annie did not know of his approach, till his hand was on the knocker of the front door; being at the time engaged in an

earnest conversation with Emma on the adoration of saints; when his name was announced, she became suddenly very pale, and let the book she had in her hand fall to the floor.

"Oh! I can't see him—indeed I can't," she said in a tone and manner alike desperate.

"I would not unless I cared to," said Julia, interested in her behalf. "I'll tell him you wish to see no company to-day."

"No, no—this won't do," said Mrs. Annie, alarmed. "This will make him worse. Oh! Emma, what shall I do?"

"Go and see him," said Emma, calmly. "You have committed no crime. It is better to confront him in supporting the truth than to hold on to his skirts, and go down to perdition."

"You don't know him, Emma—no indeed," said Mrs. Annie, trembling, and endeavouring to make her toilet; persuaded that Emma's advice was good. "His eye has a look, when he is angry, that withers me," continued Mrs. Annie, looking appealingly to Emma.

Emma smiled, and said, "Well, he can only look, he can't hurt you. Go, dear Annie—hold fast your integrity, and the more the fear now, and the harder the struggle, the more credit for keeping in the pure and perfect way."

Father Hunter's heavy tones of voice were now heard at the door, asking if Mrs. Annie was at home; and at the sound of them Mrs. Annie's heart sunk within her; her face became pale, and all the resolution, which Emma's words had infused into her, past away.

"I can't go," said Mrs. Annie, in the act of returning to the room.

"I'll go with you," said Emma, speaking in a firm but soothing tone of voice; and, as she spoke, taking Annie's hand, she led her to the drawing-room. Mrs. Annie was hardly conscious of what was passing till she saw herself in the parlour, and Father Hunter stood before her.

"Be seated," said the priest, coldly, and, muttering something about having but little time to spare, and that his business was pressing, he waved his hand authoritatively to Emma to withdraw.

Emma was determined not to leave the room till she saw that her friend had rallied, in order that her reason might weigh well such suggestions as the priest should offer; and

only feared for Annie, lest in her agitation Father Hunter might commit her to a rash and dangerous promise. She, therefore, with a forced smile, as if she had not heard Father Hunter ask her to retire, asked him if he brought any news from the city.

"I profess to be the herald of better tidings than the gossip of a petty village," replied the priest, sullenly.

Emma coloured, and asked herself whether her manner was sufficiently respectful.

"If it be news to you," said the priest, "I am to buy the privilege of a private conversation with Mrs. Annie, by retailing the latest on dit of the town, then I must even accommodate you. Know then, Miss Gordon, that your acquaintance, Mr. Montrose, is charged with having assaulted Mr. Snarler on the public road, and robbed him of a valuable paper. Mark me, I did not say it was true, nor that any serious steps are likely to grow out of it," fixing his piercing eyes on Emma, and exulting, as Emma thought, in the effect he was producing. "But," continued the priest, "this is a serious business if true. There is no doubt of the assault, nor any either, that a most valuable paper belonging to Mr. Snarler was taken from him without his consent; and, as I passed by Lawyer Brief's, he informed me that, if Mr. Montrose could not give security for his appearance, he would be committed to prison. This, Miss Gordon, is the only news I have heard lately, and I have reported it to you to purchase the privilege of a brief private conversation with Mrs. Annie." Emma felt mortified and vexed.

"Please go," said Annie, in a low tone. "It will be worse for me if you stay."

Emma saw that it was now proper to withdraw—and, indignant at the cool insolence of the priest, she rose slowly; but, recovering herself as she reached the door, said, "My friend will excuse me a few minutes—I leave her, satisfied that she is as able to withstand the seductions of the adversary, as I trust ever to be able to disregard his insulting remarks."

"A female edition of John Knox," said Father Hunter, rising, and fastening the door. "The creed and the manners belong to the same school. But how is it with my old friend here," approaching Mrs. Annie. "Such exhibitions, with the plausible talk, the evangelical cant, the deification

of reason, and the contempt of authority, I fear have done no good."

"If you mean," said Mrs. Annie, faintly, "whether my friend and myself agree in our religious opinions—I—I—"

"Agree with her," interrupted the priest, "you wish to say."

"I do," said Mrs. Annie, with more firmness than she would have supposed she could have commanded.

Father Hunter, though this had been his own conclusion, and to which he had just now given expression, was not prepared to hear this from Mrs. Annie's lips. And it startled him nearly as much as if he had never thought of such a result; for it proved that she was further gone than he had feared, and that his further efforts could avail nothing towards her recovery. Father Hunter's brow contracted more than ever, and seemed to be more than usually clouded, and rising, and with a tone and manner that denoted concentrated wrath and irony, said:

"A brave business, truly! The church's authority goes for nothing, but a Scotch parson's for every thing. And why not? Is not his training of that sort which enables him to take a text, and by making many words over it, (as a fly would over meat by blowing over it,) enables him to call out a crawling brood of ideas, while inexperienced persons gather about the Scotchman, as chickens about a hen hussy, to pick up the very nice, delicate and palatable food he has provided them! And you, Mrs."—Mrs. Annie trembled. He let his voice fall—"you, who ought to be thankful for the unerring guidance of your divinely commissioned teacher, prefer the parson to the Catholic Church, and his pert daughter to your confessor."

Mrs. Annie attempted to explain: remarking, very timidly, she could not "believe the Church of Rome to be the only true fold; certainly not the safe one."

"No, no," said the priest, speaking quickly, "you are marvellously keen sighted. And pray, where is your Catholic Church? the one you are looking for, I mean? Hah," laughing scornfully. "It will be as hard to find as was St. Brandon's Island by the people of the Canaries. Yes, when the storm blows, you'll want anchorage ground, and will be swept by that blast of vengeance, which will sweep away, as autumn-leaves, heretics and schismatics."

"I hope not," replied Mrs. Annie, rather faintly. "I do

not find in the Bible that I am to pin my faith to your sleeve," and the speaker gathered courage as she proceeded. "I do not see but Parson Gordon is as much a minister of Christ as yourself; my grandfather's church is certainly quite as much a Church of Christ as yours, and I must think even more so."

"Ah!" and he looked scorn concentrated and wrath ready to explode. Mrs. Annie's head drooped, and the Roman ecclesiastic, finding that looks would not awe her into submission, in a minute or so changed his whole manner, and in a tone, which was meant to be very winning, he gently reproached her for her late estrangement from the Catholic Church, as he phrased it, said her case was not wholly hopeless, that Mary, the mother of mercy, would yet compassionate her feebleness and want of moral nerve to stand the wiles of Protestant craft, and warned her, if she valued her soul, to confess at once her backsliding; fast rigidly the next fortnight; dismiss the dangerous company at her house, and by her after life of austerity and faithful compliance to his orders as her confessor, atone for the past. Mrs. Annie trembled; a tremor passed over her whole frame; a struggle seemed to be going on within. The Jesuit observed it, and, approaching her, laid his hand on her arm, and said, "May I not welcome my daughter back to the true fold?"

Mrs. Annie started as if a serpent had touched her. That touch and voice recalled a painful past, and shuddering she replied: "No, never with you."

"Then be a heretic, and reap its perditions."

He turned haughtily away, and, waving his hand coldly, in a gait quicker than usual, Father Hunter mounted his horse, and rode off.

Annie fell back in a chair, overcome by her feelings, and retired to and kept her apartment the balance of the day.

During that afternoon, however, Parson Gordon arrived at Elfin Hall, and noticing Mrs. Annie's absence, was informed of all that had passed on the worship of the virgin, and of Father Hunter's visit; the result of which, not knowing, they could tell him no further.

"While I must condemn," said the worthy rector, "that inquisitorial spirit, which presumes to ask, How can these things be? when sublime doctrines as the Trinity, Incarnation, Presence of Christ in the Sacrament, and the like are

announced, I think that extreme is no less faulty and dangerous, which takes every thing for granted; whose faith is a blind confidence in the dictum of a ghostly guide." He seemed inclined to smile, when informed of Father Canon's argument on the worship of the virgin, and said: "Rome must think we are weak indeed if she supposes by such puerile statements to make converts." But, the next moment, thinking of the troubled state of his fair hostess, he became sad, and said to himself:

"She cannot long continue in her present position. About the time of her father's and mother's death, she fell into the meshes of Father Hunter;" and Parson Gordon thought of her previous estrangement from the Church of England, when like other Roman perverts, she was inveigled by glosing fables, arguments too specious not to catch the inconsiderate, and by a frontless impudence which would abash most people to a denial of truths clear as the sunbeam. "Poor child!" he continued, "she was unable to cope with a casuist who knew better the windings of her own heart, than she did herself, who knew how to bait his doctrines that she could not but swallow them; and when he came to a stand, knew Annie's ardent affection and entireness of devotion, and here he brought in a plausible talk about faith; and spoke of the reward to be given to those who surrender their judgments to their spiritual guides. 'Ask no more, make the Virgin your friend. Holy Mary loves with a peculiar regard all holy damsels.' But now," he added, "she is undecided. How much is the heart like the rocking stone! A child may agitate it, but a giant cannot hold it still or keep it so." A long conversation passed between Annie and Parson Gordon, and with tears she laid open to him her view and feelings, and he said much to calm, comfort, and instruct her. He took up the subject of the adoration of the virgin, and presented it so plainly that she could not doubt its idolatry. Among other things he told her that too much stress altogether was laid on the words, "Hail! thou that art highly favoured," "Behold all generations shall call me blessed," because Jael in Judges, (ix. 17,) is called blessed twice, and the benediction of the virgin attached not to her personally;—but to her on account of her Son, after the flesh, who was to redeem us from all iniquity.

"I can understand," he added, "whence arose much of

this adoration of the virgin. In the days of chivalry and romance, she was considered the embodiment of purity and loveliness. Devotion in that age seemed to light its torch at her shrine, and love and religion were blended together. She was called the patroness of females, and purity of thought, and exaltation of sentiment in reference to your sex were deemed necessary, in order that the knight errant might win the virgin's approval of his suit, and ensure success to it. Still God's word neither teaches nor authorizes any such doctrine. It gives no countenance to that sentimental religion which clothes St. Mary with benignity and mercy, and her Son with majesty and terror. But it tells us, "God is love." "The Father himself loveth you;" and St. Paul boasts that 'we are more than conquerors through' Christ 'that loved us.' Having shown the impropriety of worshipping the Virgin, he next exposed the Roman doctrine which regards her as our Mediator and Intercessor.

"The Scriptures," he said, "declare, 'If any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ, the righteous, and He is the propitiation for our sins.'" (1 St. John, ii. 1, 2.) St. Paul in Hebrews, (xii. 25,) assures us Christ is 'able to save to the uttermost, all who come unto God, by Him: seeing that He ever liveth to make intercession for them.' Wherefore Romanism in the place it assigns to the Virgin, is directly in conflict with God's word, and robs the Saviour of His mediatorial functions. It elevates the mother where no creature can be, and degrades Christ, who is God, to an inferior position."

Mrs. Annie then repeated Mr. Canon's argument on rather expecting benefits by asking a departed saint to pray for us, than by praying to God directly ourselves.

"You were told," replied the rector, that "the virgin was not yet in heaven, and though past falling, as we are likely to do who are in the flesh, yet she as well as ourselves is yet to have her 'perfect consummation and bliss both in body and soul' in the 'eternal and everlasting glory,' at the resurrection day. But it is wrong to pray to her for other reasons. The Scriptures say, 'He that spared not His own Son, but delivered Him up for us all, how shall He not with Him also freely give us all things?' God here surely means what He says. When He offers to give us freely all things must we hold back, and say, I am afraid I am not worthy? What this reluctance to pillow our heads on His promise?"

Who can enable us to sleep in safety in the darkest storm? Is it faith to distrust God's word, and turning from Him who lovingly calls us, to go to a creature even as ourselves, and ask her to intercede, and ask her to do? What faith have you in 'the Lamb of God that taketh away the sins of the world,' when your faith sees only the virgin? When to her you pray? When at her shrine your offerings are made? And when you invoke her to dispense the mercy of God? Why, Annie, your Romish version even, reads, 'Amen, amen, I say unto you,—If ye ask the Father any thing in my name, He will give it you. Ask and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full.' (St. Jno. xv. 16.) The words 'any thing,' leave nothing to be added. Now, as His name will suffice to obtain for us 'any thing' we ask of God, why ask St. Mary to ask her Son to ask God? Rather, my child, call upon God for Christ's sake. Holy lips were not expected to tremble with the name of Mary, but with that of Jesus. Christ as the friend of sinners is exhibited to us, and not Mary as 'the Mother of Mercy.' The Lord of glory, died for men, and not Mary, 'the queen of heaven.' Hence the worship of the blessed Virgin, is beyond expression an outrage on infinite goodness,—a stupid sentimentalism, the moonstruck fancy of an age when men groped in darkness. The rector then took up one of Mrs. Annie's devotional books, and pointed to one place in it where the virgin is asked to *compel God* to have mercy on sinners;—by the right of a mother to *command her Son*; and where God is called in the prayer her *husband*. 'Calm the rage of thy Heavenly Husband.' 'This,' added Parson Gordon, 'is an outrage on infinite goodness, and nothing short of blasphemy.'"

Mrs. Annie, however, feared that sufficient might not be allowed to the blessed virgin, and, with some surprise in her manner, asked if he did not lower her too much? The rector then told her that the Church of England called her St. Mary, and the blessed virgin; here following Scripture; but that this was not to adore her. And, surprised as Mrs. Annie was, she was yet more so when, in prosecuting this subject, she saw on what exceedingly slender basis, from Scripture and the fathers, stood the adoration of the virgin. For Parson Gordon took up the sacred volume, and showed to her that the blessed virgin is mentioned by three of the evangelists simply as the "Virgin Mary;" and by the fourth, St. John, as "the mother of the Lord:" while neither St.

Paul, many as are his writings, nor St. James, St. Peter, St. Jude, nor St. John, though she lived with the last, mention her at all in their epistles. The inference was clear that, if she was to be adored, and to fill the important post of our intercessor, the Scriptures of the New Testament would not have been thus silent. He next ran over the occasions on which she is mentioned or alluded to as "the Virgin Mary," and "the mother of the Lord."

"Simeon," said he, "foretold to her in the temple the destiny of the child Jesus, and her own sufferings on account of His cruel death; but did not make the remotest allusion to her exaltation as queen of heaven, which Romanists fable about her. Our Lord, a youth of twelve years, in company with his mother and Joseph, visited Jerusalem. His parents missed Him, and, on finding Him, his mother asked, 'Son, why hast Thou thus dealt with us? Behold thy father and I have sought Thee sorrowing.' His reply, 'How is it that ye sought me? Wist ye not that I must be about my Father's business?' so far from exalting her as an object to be adored, seems rather to reprove her for not knowing His divine mission. At the marriage in Cana of Galilee, 'the mother of Jesus saith unto Him, they have no wine.' He answered, 'Woman what have I to do with thee? Mine hour is not yet come.' It is not supposable that the blessed virgin could have been what Romanists represent, and that our Lord would have spoken in this manner to her. Our Saviour is told that His 'mother and brethren stand without desiring to speak with Him. And He answered and said, Who is my mother and who are my brethren? For whosoever shall do the will of my Father, which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.' Here, instead of exalting his mother above all the daughters of Eve, and teaching us that she is worthy to sit down on the right hand of her Son in heaven, 'the queen of heaven, and of the angels,' he gives her no higher rank than to whosoever shall do His Father's will; or as St Luke renders the same occurrence, (viii. 21,) him 'who shall hear the word of God and do it.'

"A certain woman, with feelings akin to those of a Roman devotee, cried out that blessed was she who had borne and nursed our Lord; and her exclamation seemed to be only the fulfilment of the prophecy, that all generations should call her blessed, and blessed we must allow, blessed she was

for being the instrument of so much good to a condemned world; still to guard against any excess of feeling or reverence towards her, and looking very much as if the idolatry of the virgin was here specially meant to be guarded against, our Lord replied: 'Yea, rather blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it.'

"We come now to the scene on the cross. And with aught but theological dogmatism, with a spirit subdued before such a scene, thankful to my God that one so unworthy as myself can say for me, as a part of His holy family, He 'was contented to be betrayed, and given up into the hands of wicked men, and to suffer death upon the cross,' I stand below that cross. The agony of death is upon Him, yet He masters the pain and the torment, and asks the beloved disciple to take charge of His mother. But He says no more, not a word of her exaltation, or as an object of worship. And the evangelist simply adds, 'From that hour that disciple took her unto his own home.' There remains but one instance to be cited. In Acts, (i. 13,) we are told that the disciples 'continued with one accord in prayer and supplication, with the women, and Mary, the mother of Jesus, and with His brethren.' By this time something should have appeared of the virgin's exaltation, in a more honourable mention; but the word of God is silent; it neither speaks out nor whispers, it neither foreshadows nor leaves us to conjecture that worship of the mother of the Lord, which has supplanted the worship of God in the minds and hearts of millions."

When Mrs. Annie retired that evening, with too much on her thoughts to find an expression in words, she sat a long time pondering this conversation. She could not exactly say that every doubt had been removed, and that the pure light of truth, in which there is no darkness at all, shone in her path. But she had gained much. She had rested till recently on dogmatic assertion, or the dictum of her spiritual confessor, perhaps on the disingenuous declarations of interested persons, perhaps the ignorant misstatement of others as much in darkness as herself. For the sure and unerring word of prophecy, God's everlasting Gospel, had not been unclasped to her, and its voice made known. On this she could plant herself. The veil had been withdrawn, and she saw, not the mother of the Lord sitting on the right hand of the Majesty on high, but she was favoured with the vision

of the martyred Stephen; she saw Jesus standing on the right hand of God, and all the angels with him. And, overcome with a sense of the goodness of God in enabling her to look into His priceless word, she wept in very thankfulness. As she knelt to say her prayers for the night, she was about to invoke, from the force of habit, the help of the virgin; but suddenly checked herself:

"I am either an idolator or true worshipper. If an idolator, praying to my idol is not the way to be rid of my idolatry. Now Catholic and Protestant both believe in Jesus Christ, and his words are, 'If ye ask the Father any thing in my name he will give it you. Ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full.'" And, so persuaded, she fervently besought God to enlighten her mind more and more, and, guiding her into all truth, to keep her in the pure and perfect way.

The next day Parson Gordon sought and availed himself of an occasion to expose the singular argument Mr. Canon attempted to make out, from the fathers, in favour of the worship of the virgin. He told her that the passages Mr. Canon quoted, he had often seen quoted before, but never could find in the writings of the fathers, and this base forgery of testimony he severely commented on, as the working of Romanism and not Christianity. He then said, that what the fathers say of the blessed virgin goes to prove that they knew nothing of worship being due to her, and he instanced briefly St. Chrysostom, St. Augustine, and Ephrem Cyrus. Thus, St. Chrysostom, among many passages, said, as remarked Parson Gordon, commenting on the words, "Who is my mother, etc.? It profited her nothing to be his mother, unless that qualification were added. There is only one nobility of birth, the doing of the will of God." St. Augustine, in his numerous and voluminous writings, speaks of the virgin as the Virgin Mary, the Holy Mary, the mother of our Lord, but never as the mother of God, and, commenting on the passage I quoted from St. Chrysostom, "And who is my mother?" etc., he answers, "the whole church is his mother, because she truly bears, by the grace of God, his members, that is, his faithful ones. So, likewise, every pious soul is his mother, doing the will of his Father." Ephrem Cyrus is so far from advocating the adoration of the virgin, that, in a passage in his writings, where he advises us in difficulty to fly unto God in our prayers, he says, "We

have the angels, archangels, powers, glorious dominions, cherubim and seraphim, God the sovereign of all. We have the prophets, apostles, holy gospels, martyrs, all the saints, confessors, holy fathers, patriarchs, shepherds, and priests," but does not say we have the virgin. The conclusion is singularly unfortunate for Mr. Canon, which we must come to from his own authorities.

"The others," said Julia, who had taken an interest in the question, "I suppose, are no more in his favour?"

Parson Gordon at first smiled, but remarked he felt sad at the same time. He smiled to think that Father Canon was as simple in quoting authorities as he seemed to think his hearers would be in receiving them.

"Thus there is no such passage as quoted in Ildephonsus and John Damascenus. The Collyridian heresy, so called from Collyridia, a little cake which this sect offered to the virgin, makes no more in favour of the worship of the virgin. For the church Catholic denounced their veneration of the virgin as heresy. And St. Epiphanius, writing on heresies, and exposing this Collyridian sect, says, 'You say nay, but the body of Mary is holy. Yes, but not a deity. Nay, you say again, the virgin is a virgin, and honoured. Yes, but not given for us to worship.' Elsewhere, this father says, our Lord called the virgin woman, in order that no one, by admiring the holy virgin in excess, might fall into this folly of heresy."

"Surely," interrupted Annie, "you believe the blessed virgin to be superior to all other women and mortals?"

"Don't understand me to deny the personal excellence of the mother of our Lord. Her devout temper, her sweet, calm, and humble spirit, I trust to be the last to deny. That noble hymn of hers in St. Luke, the Magnificat, is enough to show the exaltation of her devotional feelings. No, never may I underrate one who stood in a relation so near to the Redeemer as his mother. I cannot forget Dr. Barrow's fearful words: 'Let that mouth be cursed which will not call her blessed! Let the name of him be branded with the everlasting reproach of folly, who will not prefer her in dignity before any queen or empress.'" Parson Gordon then spoke of Father Canon's fable of the assumption of the blessed virgin, a fiction which the church of Rome commemorates every 15th of August, Assumption Day. "Mary, the virgin," say Romanists, in their books of devotion, "is

taken up into heaven, to the ethereal chamber in which the King of kings sits on his starry throne."

"The legend of St. Mary's assumption into heaven," said the rector, "is as unsupported as the stories of the Golden Legend, and about as incredible as the accounts we read of St. George and the dragon. It first occurs in the works of John Damascenus, a Jerusalem monk, who lived about the middle of the 8th century. Damascenus relates it, not as a tradition he found floating in the holy city, nor on the faith of a writing then extant which came from a reliable source, but he says a certain book, the *Enthymiac history*, written a century and a half before his day, merely alludes to such a story. But how? As a tradition then current? No. As a fact stated by a credible witness, whose statement the writer of the *Enthymiac history* had seen? No. The writer of the *Enthymiac history* says he heard that somebody (who, he does not say,) told him that somebody (also unknown,) had reported that once upon a time the bishop of Jerusalem, who lived a hundred years before the writer of the *Enthymiac history*, mentioned to the Emperor Marcian that there was an ancient tradition of a marvellous event that happened four hundred years before his day. It was a very faint tradition, or its echoes would have reached the ears of the emperor without the medium of said Jerusalem bishop. It seems to have been known to no one but this bishop, for all the writers of that, and the ages immediately ensuing, knew nothing of it. And said bishop, so reporting it, gives no better authority than an ancient tradition, and, pray, what marvels, what nonsense, what absurdity comes not down to us as well supported? And even were the chain of historical evidence regularly brought down in the writings of John Damascenus, it would prove nothing, for this legend is found in one of his homilies called, 'On the Sleep of the Virgin,' and said homily turns out to be not genuine. Somebody inserted this homily many years after the death of John Damascenus, in his writings, the homily and its wondrous legend being alike a miserable imposition.* If religion is to be a tissue of fables, where are we to stop? what are we to reject? The Jewish Rabbins, borrowing from

* See an excellent work, "What is Romanism?" published by the London Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge, 1846, in which the invocation of saints and angels, and the worship of the Blessed Virgin are shown to be unscriptural, uncatholic and idolatrous.

imagination, explain the 10th verse of the 45th Psalm, 'Kings' daughters were among thy honourable women,' that, when Messias cometh, every king of the world will send Him one of his daughters to wait upon Him. But it is not more absurd than the Roman interpretation of the closing part of the same verse. 'Upon Thy right hand did stand the queen in gold of Ophir,' to mean the virgin's exaltation to be queen of heaven and of the angels. The Rabbin's fable that, at Messiah's great feast, will be drank a cup of wine that grew in the garden of Eden, and which from Adam's time was kept in his cellar! You laugh, ladies, and well you may; but the story of the assumption, as Mr. Canon related it to you, is as ridiculous."

It was not often, certainly not usual with him, that Parson Gordon, even after the employment of the more proper weapons of argument and dissuasion, resorted to ridicule; but this was an occasion, he thought, which especially called for it.

Mrs. Annie thanked him for the trouble he had taken, and the good man trusted, as nothing is a surer antidote to the poison of fraud than its detection, "that his exposure of the disingenuousness of Romanism would, by God's blessing, free his fair friend eventually of its influence." At another time, that day, he connected his foregoing remarks with the Romish legendary lore of the saints, told her that their sainthood stood on the most flimsy ground, that it might do for children to believe that St. Margaret by the sign of the cross overcame the dragon, and the like fables, but it would not do for any who had passed nonage, to give in to such improbabilities. And, after remarking on the state of the dead who had died in the Lord, where they rest by the still waters, and with the green pastures around and about them; a place of quietude, holy calm, and foretaste of bliss to be theirs, more fully and perfectly after the resurrection-morn, he spoke of the loss the soul must sustain in seeking an impossible favour at their hands, too distant to hear them, and by not addressing itself to an ever-present God, Who is not far, says the Apostle, from every one of us, and Who, having promised to grant our least request made in Christ's name, will not fail His engagement. "Draw nigh unto Him, my child," he added feelingly, "and He will draw nigh unto you. Cast all your care upon Him, for He careth for you; and be assured, even could a departed saint know

of your asking his prayers, you need no such to usher you into the presence chamber of a prayer hearing, and prayer answering God. He is by you, within hearing, and you have but to call on Him, and He will answer; for His promise is, 'Ask and ye shall receive.' The door of mercy you need not go to the spirit world to find, by prayers to departed saints; for it is in your closet, and in the sanctuary, and He has said, 'To him that knocketh it shall be opened.'"

CHAPTER XXIV.

AN INQUIRY, A QUANDARY AND A MISTAKE.

"The heart is like the sky a part of heaven,
But changes night and day too, like the sky,
Now o'er it clouds and thunder must be driven,
And darkness and destruction as on high;
But when it hath been scorched, and pierced, and riven,
Its storms expire in water drops."

BYRON.

THE same day, in which passed what we have just related, Parson Gordon said to Emma in private :

"My daughter, there is a certain matter in which a parent must take a lively interest, and yet which he cannot allude to, without caution and great delicacy."

Emma looked much surprised, and said, "You know, dear father, I have no concealments from you." And, as she spoke, she threw her arms about her father, and looked up in his face so calmly and ingenuously, that Parson Gordon, overcome by it, hastened to say,

"Has my daughter ever allowed herself to think of Mr. Montrose otherwise than as an acquaintance?"

Emma was about to answer flatly, "No, certainly not;" when, too honest to speak less than the truth, she hesitated. She was not sensible that her affections were committed to Montrose, and she had not thought of him otherwise than as an agreeable acquaintance. But still she had found him very agreeable, and classed him higher than any youth of her acquaintance; she therefore shaped her answer accordingly. "I have not had reason to think of Mr. Montrose except as an acquaintance."

"I have no more to say, my daughter. We'll retire."

Now to retire under such circumstances, with her father's words on her mind, calling up various conjectures, was more than Emma was willing to do, without an effort, at least, to prevent it.

"Father, speak plainly. Why this question? Surely no

one has told you, nor can you have seen any thing, showing that I have other feelings for Mr. Montrose."

"No one, my child," replied her father, calmly.

"Did you suspect any thing besides?" and the question cost Emma an effort. "I should be sorry to believe so."

"I have seen no reason to suspect my daughter in aught," looking affectionately at her.

"I have given you none."

"No—but have you given no one else?"

"It would mortify me to think I had," said Emma. "Who could have brought to you an injurious report of me?"

"I have not even intimated reports of such a kind," he replied. "I should not be likely to hear them. But, in supposing that such feelings may have existed, I thought it possible my daughter might do what her mother did before her—give away her affections before either she or her father knew it."

Emma felt uncomfortable. Why she could not say precisely. There was something stirring. What was it? Her father's words had weight. The thought they suggested was new to her. "But still," she soliloquized, "admit (which is not the case,) I may have been so silly and weak, why should my father's curiosity or concern be aroused till something more definite occurs than either he, I, or any one else knows."

And Emma was anxious that her father should speak out unreservedly whatever was uppermost. Innocence fears no exposure, and never dodges investigation. She, therefore, with one of the sweetest smiles, and which the father never could withstand, said :

"Tell me, please, the meaning of all this? You are not wont to be so mysterious."

"I meant not to intrude, my dear child," speaking solemnly, and with a look that was deep and yet not prying, serious and yet not stern, "on the sacredness of feelings, which, perhaps, the owner herself had best not know, till the shrine which hides them can be unlocked with safety. And yet, thinking it possible that your affections might be committed to Mr. Montrose, I judged it might be well to know the fact before the matter had proceeded any further. Still, as this is a question which your own heart may never have asked itself, it might not be easy for you to resolve it.

And, as I know all I can or ought to know about the matter, we'll dismiss it." At the same time he imprinted a kiss on his daughter's brow, and moved towards the door.

Emma's curiosity was aroused, and she was determined not to be foiled in this way; and, above all, not to be left in a quandary. This singularity and suddenness were calculated to make her anxious to know her father's object in proposing such questions at such a time. So, throwing her arms tightly around him, she said, playfully, but firmly:

"Father, you don't escape me in this way. Why do you ask me these questions? I *must* know all;" emphasising *must*, and looking very resolute, and a little archly at her father.

"Not now, if at all," he said, gently endeavouring to disengage her arms, and kissing her again.

"No, no," replied Emma, tightening her hold upon him, "I have, by inheritance, a little of your strength, and I must, I must know."

Parson Gordon seated himself in a chair, and talking very slowly, as if measuring his words, said: "Yesterday, a gentleman of your acquaintance, Mr. Montrose, and I, had a conversation about you—and what is more, I have received a very earnest letter from his father, Mr. Delafield, on the subject."

"Mr. Montrose," said Emma, starting, and then mentioned the report which Father Hunter had brought. Mr. Gordon explained that the affair between him and Snarler was more ludicrous than serious; and then gave the statement of it which he had obtained from Mr. Montrose himself; adding, that Brief, Mr. Hunter's informant, was not kindly disposed to Montrose.

"But," said Emma, "how could my name form a part of your conversation?"

Parson Gordon smiled, and said, "You have never heard perhaps, that fathers are consulted in the marriage of their daughters? nor that it is possible that two young people can form an attachment to each other?"

Emma blushed.

"Mr. Montrose, as I must still call him," continued Parson Gordon, "avowed to me his warm regard and high esteem for you, and hoped I would not object to his attempting to win your affections and hand. I saw no reason to refuse this request," continued her father, "especially as it

was made in a manner alike courteous and considerate; and assured him I knew too little of him to say more than that I would not object to his endeavouring to win your consent, unless circumstances might hereafter call for my interference. But, my daughter, I cannot tell you with what anxiety I broached this subject. Let it excuse my indirectness and awkwardness. Your union to any one, even to one superior to Mr. Montrose, is an event I could not contemplate or think of without the liveliest anxiety. I know what a lottery is marriage. Mine was a blessed one"—he spoke with difficulty—"my cup ran over—your sainted mother would have made any one happy who was less than a demon, and I am thankful, brief as my happiness was. But not so with a very large portion of those who marry. Want of sense, affection, forbearance, sympathy, congeniality, and fitness for each other, too much on one side, and no effort on the other to make the reality not too unlike the ideal, render marriage the most solemn and uncertain act we can do. Lachesis spins out for the married pair a yarn twisted with entanglements, coloured by passion, soiled by unfaithfulness, and wet, and at times dripping with bitter tears. For what is wealth to the parties? No insurance against any of the evils to which the flesh is heir; since extravagance will waste it, and she, who glittered at her bridal in jewels, may cower in rags and want in a wretched shieling; or vice will turn wealth into means of corruption, and the rich husband will sink into the disgusting bloated sot. What avail talents? They are the guaranty of an honourable, at least not dishonoured connexion: provided, however, that integrity sits at the helm, and discretion takes command; but no amount of talents, not the wit of Bacon, nor the genius of Shakspeare, will avail by themselves. What is good family in the husband? Much, I allow, in appearance, and pleasant from the associations connected with a noble name; and good family appears to be a pledge that the blood, which up to that moment has been unstained, may, but none that it will, continue spotless. Some of the best blood of dear Scotland is stained by the degeneracy of a nobly descended offspring. Virtue is the only nobility whose escutcheon is ever bright. I want for the husband of my daughter Christian principles, a life well spoken of, those companionable qualities, (which many of the world's great men wanted, as Milton and Dryden,) that would make

him, not my daughter's superior, but her companion; such as God made Adam to Eve; her lord and the head of her household, entitled to her love, honour, and obedience, and happy to requite her services by loving, honouring, and cherishing her. For, when my child leaves her father for another, will she find a love as deep, devoted, and respectful? How may I know that Mr. Montrose, or any other person, will be all this?" And the father seemed overcome by the picture his fancy had painted. Emma, with all her apparent sang-froid calmness, the result of principle, not temperament, became fidgetty and uncomfortable. At first she smiled, then she felt rather inclined to enter a protestation that she meditated nothing of the kind, and, as her father closed, his deep sensibility touched her also, and with an effort to calm down her feelings, she remarked that her father was giving himself much unnecessary concern.

"True, my daughter, it may, and I trust will be so."

"Then," said Emma, seriously, and a little troubled at the thought, "so I must receive Mr. Montrose hereafter as an acknowledged suitor? My manner must now be unequivocally that of one who does, or who does not regard him. I must either cut him, as Miss Evelin would say, or show him that he is ever and truly welcome."

"Not necessarily, unless you dislike his attentions, now aware what they mean. And this I know your candour too well not to know you will let him see. But if you have no aversion, do not act precipitately. His communication was not intended to go beyond myself, and he can not know and need not infer that it has. It was proper in him to ask my consent, and a father's concern unsealed my lips to you. But I know it is in safe-keeping. My daughter has too much judgment to act indiscreetly. Should her intercourse extend any further, the time given you for consideration will aid you the better to ascertain your own feelings on the subject, certainly better than if suddenly under excitement, whose cause may be ephemeral and of little worth, you should be called on to decide."

In this conversation, whose length was unavoidable, parental sagacity sought to ward off from the offspring the evils attendant on a misplaced connexion, and, though few fathers might act as did the good father here, who will say he erred? that under the circumstances, the like and all proper precautions ought not to be tried? Fortunately in this case the

advice given, and precautions, which were taken, were not likely to be thrown away. For Emma regarded marriage otherwise than the heedless daughters of folly consider it, who rush into it with the eagerness they would into a dance, and think of it as little more than a frolic; or a voyage d'amour between two loving hearts in a Cleopatra's barge down the Cydnus; and her father's words were never treated by her as some children are wont to regard the counsels of parents, but she valued them as "apples of gold in pictures of silver." She knew that she could not say of him that he did,

"As some ungracious pastors do,
Show me the steep and thorny path to heaven;
Whilst, like a puff'd and reckless libertine,
Himself the primrose path of dalliance treads,
And recks not his own road."

And so appreciating her father's advice, what could have descended more prophetically, than descended the blessings of this affectionate father on his duteous daughter's head! Too often, however, love seems to be not only a blind goddess, who acts without judgment, but a wilful wight, who, with the strength of Samson, breaks as withes the bands with which we seek to fetter him; and who, like mischievous Puck, takes especial pleasure in deranging all our plans. And so it seemed. To prove which, and particularly to take up the thread of our narrative, we must go back a few days.

Our readers will remember that Shepard and Montrose came very seasonably to Elfin Hall the night when Emma and her friends feared they were assaulted either by lawless brigands, or demons of the lower regions. We could not then suspend the narrative of the matters, which we have given, to tell what passed in the *tete-à-tetes*, then had between Mrs. Annie and Shepard, and between Emma and Montrose. We hope they will accept our apology for the omission. Of this occasion, Shepard and Montrose availed themselves to have all the private conversation they could with Emma and Mrs. Annie, and when they left Elfin Hall, as they did on the day following that on which Father Canon laid the ghost, Montrose said to himself, "In quiet and unobtrusive moral loveliness, in the blending of sterling sense with the sea of feeling, which needs only to be stirred to show its depth, in manners that command and yet win, and

in grace, ease, dignity and love, Emma certainly has no equal," and so completely was he wrapt up in admiration of her charms and worth, that her presence and words haunted him as a spell. Hence his remark to Shepard, when he and his friend had the adventure on the road with Snarler. So strongly and favourably impressed was Montrose with Emma, that afterwards, meeting Parson Gordon, he communicated to him his great regard for, and wish to address his daughter. Matters were in this train, when, on account of the assault upon Snarler, and his fiscal embarrassments, he was in some trouble.

Montrose was nearly a stranger in St. Mary's, being known to but few, and to them slightly. He had squandered with youthful prodigality the funds he brought over with him, and greatly to his reluctance felt constrained to accept a loan from his strange friend, whom he did not then know to be his father. This sum he had lost in cards, and he had hardly a penny in his purse, when the proposition was made to him by Attorney Brief, in behalf of Father Hunter, to buy a part of the right of Charles Delafield to the property which Snarler held; the priest hoping thereby to force Snarler to return him the release of his right on St. Mary's grave-yard. This proposition, our readers cannot have forgotten, Montrose indignantly rejected; when Mr. Delafield accosting him endeavoured to prevail on him to accept a second loan; which Montrose, needy as he was, had the moral courage to refuse. Mr. Delafield still kept from him his true name; unable yet to command himself during the excitement which such a disclosure would lead to; preferring to let him know by letter. Hence Mr. Delafield, having determined to bring matters to a close, as we stated, made himself known to Mr. Holt, and with him called at Elfin Hall, and there revealed himself to his daughter.

Montrose, however, was about this time in a state of mind not to be envied. He was without funds, and, as he believed, nearly without friends, in the province. The time for which he was bound to secrecy by his wager with his friend at College, Johnson, had passed; but the youth's pride now revolted at announcing his name under the circumstances which then existed. He sat in his chamber pondering his affairs, and revolving over and over again what step it became him to pursue.

"I am a fool," said he pacing up and down his room, "a

fool of such a stamp, that his folly admits of no apology. Here I might have been all that I could have wished, but must, like an ass, make a wager with Johnson, who gave me credit for not being such a ninny as to keep it; and now, after a purgatory of a few months, when I am at liberty to let people know my true and proper name, I have involved myself in embarrassments that will take all the receipts of this year, in advance, from my property in England to meet. My strange friend will have to be paid. Mine honest publican has a long bill against me, the amount of which I am almost afraid to look at. My losses at cards have not all been paid; I want funds also to marry Emma, should that angel consent to have me, and I may be prosecuted for this affair of Snarler's, and shall want means to defend myself at law, in case of a suit. What is to be done?" He thought awhile, and then said, "True courage consists not in dodging, but in meeting difficulties; in looking at them, as we used to say at school, '*oculo irretorto*,' with firm and undaunted eye. First then what do I owe?" He sat down, and making a memorandum, began to cast up different sums, and having made out the amount, laid the paper on the table, and said, "Well, well, I can look at it. It is not a basilisk to strike me dead. This poor paper is very harmless. But no, no, this can't be. I don't owe this much," and he counted it over again. "I make the amount more," he continued. "Can this be? I'll count again. How is this?" he proceeded. "My head wanders. Four and six and eight and nine make twenty-eight, and yet here I have put down twenty-seven—one hundred pounds more than I thought." He looked over the list again, and the paper and figures seemed to dance before him. "Provoking, I can't count up as well as an Eton boy, who has not yet turned over a Latin accidence—I don't care what the amount is—my brain aches—I never could sum up with any satisfaction to myself, and now I can't do a simple sum of addition," and vexed, he threw the paper from him. "Away with thought!" he continued. "I want to do something. There's no virtue in remorse, none in grieving over debts incurred. I was made for action—onward is my motto, and onward it shall be;" and he paced rapidly up and down the chamber. "Horse Selim does not loiter in his course, to stop and graze upon the meadows by the way. The stag that is doomed to be shot will stop and pick here and there

I take no pleasure in luxuriating over my feelings. I want action—I must do something.” And with hat on his head, he was dashing out of his room, and as he passed into the passage, he met Shepard; who, struck by his wild air, planted himself midway the passage, and, in a tone of voice half serious, and half comic, asked,

“Running from the constable, eh? Don’t hurry so fast. If you must, I’ll arrest you and claim the reward.”

“Let me go,” said Montrose, “I mean to ride,” taking hold of Shepard’s hand.

“Not till I have delivered you into the custody of Counsellor Brief,” replied Shepard, with mock gravity, but, struck with the expression on the face of Montrose, and his air of apparent wildness, Shepard changed his tone, and said, “Come, come, go below, we’ll play at primeco. Honest Jack Falstaff,” laughing as he spoke, “you told Father Canon, said he had not prospered since he had forsworn it, and that is the reason why you look as if old Snarler, Brief, the sheriff, and a hundred bailiffs were at your heels. Bailiff, as Mr. Holt would say,” lowering his tone to an imitation of this worthy gentleman’s, “from the Latin *bajulus*, a guardian of youth, ergo, friend Montrose, a bailiff is a very proper person to have the charge of you.”

“No,” said Montrose, returning to the room, and leading Shepard after him, “I have taken my fill of cards, and, before I’d throw away money, and time, and heart thus, I’d be a sizer at college.”

“First rate,” said Shepard; “a very ingenious thought this. Othello’s vocation was gone when he had killed Desdemona, but master Montrose’s is never. He could even take up the vocation of a poor sizer boy at college—put on the black gown of coarse stuff such as wore the old sizer Tobias Nicoll at Cambridge, and, but for the want of sleeves, very like that worn by the noted saint, Mr. Allgrace, and so equipped, instead of capering

‘Nimbly in a lady’s chamber
To the lascivious pleasing of a lute,’

being ‘rudely stamped,’ and wanting ‘love’s majesty,’ why he prefers, in attire most demure, and with an untasseled black cap thrown shantily on his head, to carry up dishes from the kitchen to the fellows’ hall, and there, as humble

servitor, wait till the reverend doctors have dined. I commend your choice."

"I want money," said Montrose moodily, "and I am in no humour, Shepard, for this."

"But you were all primed to go off on a ride," said Shepard. "Now, friend, as horse Selim, with all his fleetness, cannot outride the law of England, suppose you try the old bishop of Chester's plan—find a conveyance which will take you to some world other than this."

"What!" said Montrose, "try a coward's refuge against the troubles of this world, suicide, when with due resolution and a few hearty efforts, a man, like a good swimmer, can breast the billows and reach the shore. What mean you, Shepard?"

"No harm, of course," replied Shepard, "but I simply designed to call your attention in your present emergency, and most critical posture, to the suggestions of the late bishop Wilkins of Exeter. According to him, you have but to get a conveyance that will carry you in the air as swift as an eagle. Being so provided, give yourself no concern for food, as you can feed on the music of the spheres, and, perhaps, like old Demiantus, can live for several days on the mere odour of hot bread. And be not uneasy because, on your way to the moon, there are no inns or taverns to sleep or lodge in, nor even air castles, where a genius like yours, that brooks not the harness of tightened circumstances, and crippling poverty, may strut up and down, and survey his person complacently, for what bed is softer than the air itself? Why, the down of the eider goose, which that blunderer Brief, himself a goose, spoke of, calling duck goose, is not so soft. See, here are some lines which may help you to begin the enterprise with a good resolution:

'Ah! no more to me is given
Emma's smile to cheer my heart,
But, like angel cast from heaven,
I from peace must ever part.
But when she stands at evening tide,
And gazes on the moon's pale ray,
Oh! may she think it was my pride,
To bask in the sunlight of her day!'

Ah! hem! There's rhyme for you, if not reason;—let's see, if I cannot turn off more from my poetical or rhyming machine.

'Ah! farewell! the word is spoken,
Like thunderbolt my heart it crushed,
The chords upon my lute are broken,
To music's power for aye 'tis hushed.
Farewell! oh most cruel sentence,
Must I take so long a flight,
Cannot I move her to repentance,
And save at once her faithful knight?'

No! it seems you must go, friend Montrose, in spite of bad rhyme and most prosaic poetry, the best I can do for you."

And thus Shepard continued to run on, determined by his extravagance to change the current of his friend's meditations, and perhaps too in obedience to a restless fever within which seemed to force him at times to do mentally what Montrose was anxious to do physically, mount his horse Selim, and ride off, as if the tempest of hyperbole drove him before it. Montrose listened, and appreciating the man and his motives, bore all more patiently than one of his impetuosity would have taken from almost any other; but he seemed not disposed to talk; and Shepard, changing the subject, rather more seriously, but still with a sprinkling of irony in his manner, said:

"Perhaps you are chiefly concerned about a memorable assault and battery, which you did then and there commit on the person of one Snarler against the peace and dignity of the state? Now be pleased to bear in mind that I am not knowing at all to said transaction, being as innocent of it as the lamb was of muddying the branch out of which the wolf was drinking. Said Snarler and yourself I never saw together on said road. Said portmanteau I never laid hands upon; and said will came into my possession, because I took it from you, knowing it to be stolen goods, in order to restore it to its rightful owner, to whom I have restored it, the most honourable court."

"I'll bear these particulars in mind," said Montrose. "What next?"

"This being the case," continued Shepard, "in compassion to your desperate case, I'll undertake your defence; and, as like all desperate characters, your purse is about as low as your reputation, I will take, as my fee, horse Selim. Is that our understanding?"

"Agreed," said Montrose, smiling.

"He is not mortgaged to mine host below?" asked Shepard, with well counterfeited concern.

"No," said Montrose.

"This being so," said Shepard, "I shall first contend that there was no battery in the case; unless your Selim could sustain an action against Snarler for striking him. It is, therefore, not an assault and battery. Is it an assault? Now an assault is merely an *assultus*, or *insultus*,—an insult, an attempt to hurt the person of another, or the offering of injury to the person of this other, or an unlawful setting on the person of another. But no attempt was made to hurt Snarler's person, nor any injury offered to it. The attempt was only to get hold of a will in Snarler's portmantau; and as to the offering of injury to him, you merely acted as a bailiff would, laid your hand upon him, and said, 'A word with you, sir.' And, as to the unlawful setting on, your riding fast towards him cannot be so construed, because then, when two persons are meeting on a public highway, they must bring their horses to a dead march gait, and keep it till they have passed each other. Ergo demonstrandum est. You are acquitted, sir, and horse Selim is mine."

At this moment a servant entered, bringing two letters to Montrose, one from Mr. Delafield, and the other from Julia. The first was as follows:

"My dear son,

"Know that the stranger, who has intruded himself occasionally upon you, is no other than your father." Montrose breathed hard. "Perhaps a pardonable weakness prevented his communicating this fact to you in person. Mr. Holt will see you shortly, and communicate freely with you on this subject. I have been suddenly summoned to Calvert on urgent business. We shall meet in Annapolis during the session of the Assembly close at hand. Your uncle has funds for you.

"Remember that want follows on the heels of prodigality, and vice and wretchedness bring up the rear.

"God bless you.

"Ever your affectionate father,

"DELAFIELD."

The eyes of Montrose filled with tears, and, choking with emotion, he sat down on the bed, unable to speak.

Shepard, discovering that something had happened, and,

suspecting it to be of an unpleasant character,—the death of a relative,—quietly left the room lest he might intrude on the sacredness of his friend's grief.

Montrose was not able for some time to command himself. When he did, he read the following letter from Julia :

“Dear Charlie,

“You have seen dear father. How like a resurrection from the dead! I cannot realize it. I am all impatience to see you. You are a wicked youth to play so with my feelings. How could you keep us in the dark? I have not yet finished my old argument on hunting. One point I mean to insist on, to wit, that no heart but a hunter's could have been so cruel as to trifle thus with a sister. I suspected you all the time, and would have foiled all your plan, and pulled off the Montrose-garb, and shown the soubriquet to have been too flimsy a veil to hide from a woman's penetration, if my pride had not stepped in, and said, I can hold out, Mr. Charlie, as long as you can. We are to be at the Glebe this day. Meet us there. On this condition only will I allow Emma to look at you.

“Your own sister,

“JULIA.”

“Where is Shepard?” said Montrose, rising, and for the first time sensible of his absence. He went to his friend's room, and then down stairs, and anxious to see him, and not finding him in the tavern, left a letter there for him; saying he was going to the Glebe, and hoped to meet Shepard at Parson Gordon's that afternoon. That very day then, as Julia apprised him; and not long after, Montrose, gun in hand, mounted on Selim, was riding towards the Glebe, distant about thirteen miles, and riding slowly, hoping Shepard would overtake him. Parson Gordon, with Emma, Julia, and Adaratha, left Elfin Hall for the Glebe. As they passed the north-eastern limits of the town of St. Mary's, (Montrose and themselves, alike unconscious of the neighbourhood of each other,) the Parson and Julia lingered a few minutes at the castle gate to exchange civilities with Colonel Smithson; while Emma and Adaratha rode on about half a mile in advance. As the two last drew near St. Mary's spring, which to this day is noted for the coolness of its

water, they quickened their pace, meaning there to halt, till Parson Gordon and Julia should come up. But one glance at the grove of trees which was about the spring, told Emma that two horses were tied there. She stopt her horse, asking Adaratha to do the same; not knowing how far it would be prudent in them to venture further in their ignorance as to whom the horses belonged, and of the company they might there find themselves in. But as she halted, Emma heard a noise to the right. She and Adaratha looked in that direction, and their amazement may be judged when they saw Miss Evelin leaning on the arm of Montrose, with her head reclining on his shoulder, walking slowly, and in most lover-likem anner. "A providential and timely discovery," said Emma to herself, pressing her lips indignantly, and turning the head of her horse back to St. Mary's. Adaratha, however, appeared to be even more disconcerted; for she became pale at the sight, and Emma was afraid, she sat so unsteadily, and seemed so embarrassed, that she would fall from her horse. "Strange," said Emma, mentally, "that father should have made the announcement to me last night of the very devoted regards of Mr. Montrose to my poor self, and that to-day I should see him bestowing marks of very devoted regards on Miss Evelin; who is, by-the-by, the last person I should have thought of in connection with him. But, stranger still, the scene just witnessed has caused great pain to poor Adaratha. Surely Mr. Montrose must be a very captivating man! By a declaration of his intentions to my father, my hand, I suppose he thinks, is to be had for the asking; he need do no more. He has evidently, when and how I know not, won Adaratha's heart; for this picture of himself and Jane Evelin gives her any thing but pleasure; and Jane Evelin here shows clearly how grateful his attention is to her. Here then there may have been three strings to his bow; one of them I'm resolved shall snap.' They had not rode far back towards St. Mary's, before they saw Parson Gordon and Julia riding towards them; and for whom they now stopt and waited. They said nothing of what had so startled them at the spring, but the four now pursued their way to the Glebe. The Parson and Julia did not look in the direction of the spring, while Emma, on coming near it a second time, to be certain she was not mistaken, looked, and beheld Miss Evelin sitting under an oak, and leaning on Montrose, whose right arm supported her.

Emma had too much self-respect not to endeavour to put on an air of cheerfulness, and which she tried to infuse into Adaratha. But Emma could not be indifferent to the scene at the spring.

“——to be wroth with those we love
Doth work like madness on the brain.”

And, though not loving Montrose, yet, as was natural under the circumstances, she wished to think well of him, and it was most painful to be obliged to think otherwise. Besides the favourable impression of his conversation and deportment, his being Julia's brother, and her declared suitor, gave her reason to think kindly of him, even should she feel most unwilling to contract an alliance with him. And it was painful to believe that he could be capable of the duplicity, caprice, and instability which the scene just witnessed appeared to convict him of.

“Well did I say,” she muttered, “that I had no reason to think more of him than an acquaintance. I must now look upon him as less.”

The afternoon of the same day, the three friends, with Robin McGregor and a servant to manage the boat, visited the headland where lived Croshaw and Adaratha. In days of yore, it was a sweet spot, but it was grown up in weeds and briars, and looked wild and desolate. Adaratha was painfully struck by the contrast, which its abandonment for a few months had produced; though she seems to have anticipated it in her remark wherein she, it will be remembered, congratulated Julia on finding her father and brother. And saddened, as the Indian maiden was by the event of the day, she became yet more so in viewing the loneliness of her former home. The poet of Keswick ceased to look with pleasure on the beautiful scenery of the Cumberland mountains after his friends, one by one, like leaves in wintry weather, had dropt away; and poor Adaratha now beheld not only an unpeopled home, and missed the familiar faces which rendered that home so dear, but desolation and abandonment there.

“I come get flower,” said the maiden, “and see pet deer; but flower no pretty,” and gathering some moss, “this do better, and poor pet no here.”

Emma and Julia heard this remark, and observed that she was busied in making for her head a chaplet of moss. All at once the report of a gun was heard, and a deer

bounded from the thicket, with blood trickling down his side, and threw himself at Adaratha's feet.

"Poor pet," said the Indian girl, casting her arms about the deer, and greatly concerned for his wound.

"A thousand pardons I ask," said a huntsman, at the moment presenting himself, nearly out of breath. "But I am happy at the meeting."

Adaratha, hearing the voice, raised herself from the deer, and recognizing Montrose, screamed and fell.

Emma and Julia were far enough off at the time not to know whether Adaratha fell at the report of the gun, or on the appearance of Montrose. They heard the gun's report, saw that Adaratha had fallen, and that part of her dress was bloody, and Montrose, standing by with gun in hand, they were certain, had fired the gun. McGregor was near them, and, like them, heard and saw enough to mislead him. An awful suspicion passed instantly across the minds of the two ladies, and especially McGregor's; which last knew Montrose by sight only, and disliked him on account of his aristocratic bearing. Robin, therefore, before Emma and Julia could interfere, raised a large pole, and, running towards Montrose with it, aimed a deadly blow at his head.

"What?" exclaimed the latter, not suspecting why he was thus assailed. "This to me?" and, evading Robin's blow, he knocked him down with the butt-end of his fowl ing-piece; and felt in a mood to repeat the blow, had not Emma sprang forward, and opportunely came between them.

"Begone!" said the spirited girl, provoked at his seeming atrocity in more senses than one. "To duplicity and murder add not a second manslaughter."

"Duplicity! murder!" choking as he spoke. "Where? when?"

"Begone! I say," continued Emma, her eyes flashing. "Intrude no more on my company."

"I'll obey," replied Montrose, deeply vexed and mortified,—“pleasant as it would be to linger here. But what mean you? I'm guilty neither of duplicity nor murder."

"We are at your mercy, sir. Will you let us retire?" Turning away, she made a signal to Julia to help her to place Adaratha, whom Emma still supposed mortally wounded, in the boat. But during this time Julia was the

prey of emotions which nearly deprived her of reason. She leaned against a tree, pale, spent, and apparently rather the statue of a nymph than flesh and blood. She attempted to comply with Emma's wishes, and tottered a few steps, then stopping, and gazing earnestly at Montrose, she screamed, and sobbing, "My brother!" fell into his arms—he having hurried on to meet her. A minute or two passed; and Montrose, bending over his sister, pressed her to him—like her, overpowered by intense agitation. He soon, however, mastered his feelings, or rather was able to swallow down by an effort of the will the strong desire he had to stay where he was till he knew why he was so treated and stigmatized. He supported his sister to the water-side, and helped her in the boat. Then, returning, he placed Adaratha there, who was nearly recovered from her swoon; and then waving his hand haughtily to Emma—for Montrose felt that his self-esteem had never been so wounded, and by an archer too so capable of making him feel so acutely, he turned away.

All this time, Robin could do little more than raise himself, groan from the pain he felt, and while he slowly dragged himself to the boat, mutter threats of vengeance against Montrose in broad gaelic.

But Montrose was hardly buried in the forest, before Emma saw the wounded deer come limping towards the boat, and was made sensible that the murder, at least, which Montrose had committed, consisted only in wounding a pet deer. Adaratha had entirely revived, and Emma saw that the blood on her dress came from the deer. While Robin, therefore, was muttering his menaces, and the negro man, who wisely kept still, was now sculling the boat towards the Glebe, Emma's conscience smote her severely for her hasty and harsh language and conduct, and the sight of Julia, pale, silent, and nearly unconscious, rendered her reflections yet more poignant.

At the Glebe-landing, Parson Gordon and Mr. Shepard met them. The latter inquired particularly for Montrose, and said: "He left St. Mary's with his gun, and, knowing his hunting propensities, I presumed he would hunt on the way, and reach here by night. I heard a short time ago the report of a gun in the direction of Croshaw's headland, and I judged that his game must have led him off in that quar-

ter. I therefore supposed he would fall in with you, and return with you in the boat."

Emma wished to reply, and before Shepard, particularly, appear calm. But her eyes filled with tears, and saying she could not now explain, asked her father to help her to the house.

"But what means all this?" asked her father. "At the mention of Mr. Montrose's name you shed tears. He is not here with you—you seem to know why, but can't now say. Julia is borne down by grief, Adaratha is bloody, and my man, Robin, has an ugly blow on the head; and you all look as if something most unpleasant had happened."

"I will then tell you," said Emma, trying to be calm; and, after much effort, succeeded in giving a succinct statement of the occurrence, omitting nothing material, and, with many expressions of regret, acknowledging her inconsiderateness.

"This is a day of adventures," said Shepard. He then explained that Montrose rode on towards the Glebe, passing by St. Mary's spring, that, on reaching the spring, he found a horse tied near by with a lady's saddle on him. He looked about to ascertain to whom it could belong, when he heard a scream, and then saw a lady running from a bull she supposed was pursuing her. He dismounted, hastened to her rescue, and came in time to save her from falling. The lady was Miss Evelin, who had an old servant woman living in a hut a few yards from the spring, whom she had visited, and was returning to the spring to mount her horse, when she was alarmed by the bull. Montrose had to support her out of the field, and, on reaching the grove near the spring, had to hold her for some time in his arms before she was able to ride back to the castle. Montrose heard the sound of horses' hoofs at the time he was sitting down holding Miss Evelin in his arms, but without changing his position could not, perhaps, see who the persons were. This, continued Shepard, he learned at Colonel Smithson's, where he called for a few minutes on his way to the Glebe, and having there ascertained also that Parson Gordon, daughter, Miss Julia, and Adaratha had passed by the spring shortly after Montrose arrived at it, he inferred that they might have seen his friend and Miss Evelin at the spring.

"Wait one moment, Mr. Shepard," interrupted Parson

Gordon. "This poor child Julia must be borne into the house. Excuse me, Emma," and lifting Julia in his arms he deposited her in the house. For some time the party were concerned about Julia, and her condition was visibly improving, when a servant came in hastily, and said that one of the farm hands, while working on the point to the north-west of the house, saw a gentleman, whom he took to be Mr. Montrose, attempting to row a canoe over to the Glebe from the opposite side. The wind was blowing, as it had been for the last half hour, very fresh, and the boat turned over. The negro saw no more, and his conjectures that "Massa Montrose was sartainly drowned," were unwelcome comments on unwelcome tidings.

Emma heard no more, thought no more, but fell back in a chair, where she lay in a long and painful stupor, crushed by the weight of the most distressing anxiety.

CHAPTER XXIV.

THE BOLDNESS AND ADDRESS OF MONTROSE.

"Man!
Thou pendulum betwixt a smile and tear."
BYRON.

As Montrose strode away from Emma, for the gentleman was too wrathful to walk, his agitation and excitement were almost enough to unbalance his mind. If the offender had been a masculine biped instead of a lovely woman, it might have been a great satisfaction to his wounded pride to have sent an ounce of lead into his heart; but as it was Cupid had mortally wounded him, Montrose, taking his station on that fair one's shoulders, with a bullet of a glance from her eye, and a smile from her mouth, and now that pretty mouth—on whose words he had hung, sweeter to him than the ambrosia and nectar of the gods—had stung him by a few sharp words sharply spoken, as severely as if every letter were a bird shot projected into him from a rifle. Such shots tell better than mortal ones. The latter would have laid him flat on the field, and there his troubles would have ended, but these bird shots stung and maddened him. The gentleman had been hurt in a very tender place, and, unfortunately, he could not get his satisfaction. Now, as under such circumstances, a stag thus wounded might, after running awhile, stop and apply its tongue to the suffering part, and seek to allay its irritation, Montrose, with like wisdom, after having mounted his horse, which he left in the woods, rode on very slowly for awhile, and, using his tongue in the best way he could, soliloquized:

"This won't do. Emma must have believed that I had greatly offended, to have spoken so sharply. She is not wont to act but on good grounds, at all events in appearance." He then remembered having shot, ignorantly, Adaratha's pet deer, and that Adaratha had swooned, and that there was blood on her dress. This affair might, seen

at first sight, lead Emma to suppose he had shot Adaratha, and the charge of murder, on that supposition, was not wholly unsupported. But the word duplicity perplexed and vexed him not a little. And this was a puzzler. Emma certainly had a double vision, for she saw what he could not in his course. As a general thing, this was not to be wondered at, for who has the gift to "see ourselves as others see us?" And then the swooning away of Adaratha. Now the Mongolian race, as Montrose knew, from the specimens he had seen in the province of the aborigines, is not remarkable for sensibility. The fashionable and delicate lady of the beau monde, or the sentimental miss, always go for scenes, and think nothing so pretty and romantic as the tragic exhibition of a swoon, or the delirious cry and laugh of the hysterics. But poor Adaratha! what could she know of the refined luxury of a syncope? She probably was in the blissful ignorance of yet having to learn that she had nerves, and a very troublesome thing called a heart. But the same Creator made out of the same materials, the red face and the pale one, and nature's voice was as powerful in the heart of one as in the other. Adaratha may have swooned, though she knew not that it was an accomplishment in the salons and boudoirs of the European. She may have fainted away as gracefully as a French lady who knew how to die according to rule. It was a riddle, however, to Montrose, and he could not resolve it.

Having meditated to no other purpose than to make confusion worse confounded, he spurred on his horse, and saw a cottage in sight. Here, if he could get a canoe, by a little rowing he might reach the Glebe in less time than he could on horseback ride round by the road. And, as over-eagerness ever leaps too far, or not far enough, he concluded to leave his horse at the hut in view, extract from Emma an explanation of her conduct, and then, running back to the hut, remount his horse, and spend the night at St. Mary's, his pride being too much touched to think of accepting the hospitality of Emma's father; though such had been his arrangement by letter with Shepard, and which, as will be remembered, had been suggested by Julia's letter.

"Can I get a canoe here?" he asked the cottager, who met him at the door.

"You may, and you mayn't," was the reply.

"Speak intelligibly. I want a canoe to cross over this creek to the Glebe. I'll bring it back to-night."

"Can't you ride there?" asked the man, "and take a night? Prehaps you're afeared of the parson! You don't want no one but the gal hersel." The cottager judged Montrose by himself. He would have approached his Blouzelinda in a sneaking way, and thought Montrose, being in love, must go with his head down, have a stolen interview with Emma, and there either snivel out his devotion, or, with something of the address of Lochinvar, bear his lady off; asking the parson no favours.

"None of your gal," speaking sternly. "Can I get a canoe?"

"Gents sich as ye," said the man, "kin talk big to a poor man; but what 'surance mought I have, I mayn't see ye agin?"

"Here's my horse in pledge. Come, move quickly. I must be off."

"Move quickly," muttered the man. "Them's the thanks what sich as we git. If them lords with goold waistcoats gin ony thing 'scept 'tis a kick, why we must be mighty 'bliged, I 'spose."

Montrose felt half inclined to suit the action to the word of the boor; but, checking himself with better judgment, he took out a piece of money, handed it to him, and asked him to lose no time as his business was urgent. The cottager's face softened, and, with a poor attempt at a bow, hastened to the creek-side; saying: "He aint arter all one of them proud gents, I 'sposed."

Montrose in the meantime dismounted, and gave his horse and gun into the man's keeping. While the cottager was bailing the water out of the boat, thick black clouds were fast gathering in the north-west, and a strong wind began to blow. As Montrose entered the boat, and was pushing it off, the cottager, observing the angry aspect of the clouds, and how the wind swept across the creek; said, "Mind, mister, pole the cunnue to the pint—whar ye see the Injun's house—keepin close in all the way—whar ye may feel bot-tom—when ye gits to the pint, go it like a streak o' lightnin for the parson's. Keep the cunnue, mind ye, right 'fore the wind, and she's stiff as a June bug, and tight as a gourd; but, by the pokies, if ye tries to cross 'fore ye gits to the

pint, I hopes to eat dirt and tatars if ye sees your gal to-night."

This was all lost on Montrose. He was soon in the middle of the creek, and bearing directly out of it. But the creek here was too shaded by lofty oaks, poplars, and chestnuts, to feel much of the wind that then blew fearfully. Soon he reached a small point, where a field of the Glebe farm projected into the creek; and here he saw the Glebe house distinctly defined on the sky beyond, with its sharp roof, and Dutch proportions. The sight of the house where Emma lived made Montrose feel that he would weather a storm in the Chesapeake in his crazy boat to get to her.

Having attained the point mentioned, he might there have landed, and walked to the house, or by keeping the Glebe shore, winding as it was, he could safely have reached the landing after vigorous pulling and poling. But

———"Crazed with care,
And crossed with hopeless love,"

reckless, and sans souci about peril, he paddled due south for Croshaw's headland; thus leaving the Glebe shore. Now to make this headland he must row with the wind and waves on his bows; and he was in that state of mind which courts danger, thinks not of difficulty, and counts every thing achievable. But here the creek considerably widened, and, a small Indian clearing being just to the northwest of him, the wind swept furiously through the opening, rolled the water in yeasty waves, and made the creek boil as if old Vulcan had brought his furnace into this quiet nook of Neptune's domains. Montrose now became aware that his canoe could not stand the trough of such a sea; still his resolution was good to push her through and on. "The opening is small," he said. "A few bold strokes, and she'll reach the calm waters this side of the headland, and then I can let her drive before the wind nearly all the way to the parson's landing."

But it is easier to say than do. His boat rocked like a cradle, and, manfully as he laboured, much strength was thrown away. His paddle only touched now and then, and more than half the time did no good. In his violent effort he broke the paddle, and, the effort being made on the left hand side of the canoe, drove it to the right; and then, the

wind and trough striking her, and having now no paddle to steady her, the boat was lifted on the wave, and being struck by a second, before righting, was turned over.

Montrose had just time to see his danger. He rose from under the boat, and, tired as he was, made directly for the shore, not very far from the head-land where he had last parted from Emma. Singular coincidence, and as unpleasant as singular! He had left there a few minutes before flaming with indignation,—he stood there now cooled down to 40° Fahrenheit. A field-hand belonging to the Glebe saw the canoe capsize, but did not see Montrose afterwards,—did not know that dame fortune had just administered to him the same remedy for wrath that our old English laws were wont to administer to scolds. The wetting, therefore, was not without service.

"I was very silly," was his first reflection on reaching shore.

Happy man! if in that washing he could have been cleansed indeed. We will hope he was. He saw it was silly to knock Robin down, when he might have parried or avoided the blow, and come to an understanding with him; silly to disdain the hospitality of the kind-hearted pastor, because the daughter had insulted him, when all would have been mended, and Emma's smile and penitential acknowledgment would have made him love her all the more perhaps, for love is blind, and goes by contraries, and from one extreme to another.

"Now," said he, "for a long ride to St. Mary's with wet clothes on."

A walk of little more than a mile brought him to the cottager's house.

"Ye must take a swim, eh! Water's cold, aint it?"—and the boor giggled. "I telled ye so; but no, we poor folks don't know nothing." Self-interest the next moment was in the ascendant. "Ye havn't left my boat to blow out of the creek? Can't be ye's sunk her? May be ye 'low me the gun?"—pointing to his splendid fowling-piece. "What's your idee, Ben?" addressing a red-haired fisherman, who sat behind the door, and who till now had not been seen by Montrose.

"My idee," said Ben. "I sartainly 'spose you mought hold on to the gun till he gits the cunnue."

Montrose had much penetration, and could distinguish

between mere talk and what covered the deeper meaning. He saw the propriety of dissembling; for, with only his short sword, which he wore, in common with the gentry of that day, he was ill able to cope with two stout and unscrupulous rustics, who evidently had designs on his gun, and might have an itching affection for his horse.

"Give me that gun," said Montrose, to the cottager, whose name was Redman. "Before I let you have her for the boat, I'll show you what she can do; and, if your red-haired friend,"—whose name was Littleworth,—“will beat me in one shot out of five, I'll let him have my horse.”

"'Greed," exclaimed Littleworth, starting up suddenly, "nare fish-hawk, nor nothing neither what go up bird-like I can't hit."

"But I mean," said Montrose, coolly, "to shoot at a mark, and strike it every time out of five shots; and I mean to shoot from my horse, running him at the same time. You are to be mounted too, and to hit the mark one time in five trials, running your horse as you shoot."

"'Deed! mistur," said Littleworth, and he took down an old gun, hurried to the stable, and soon returned with an old plough-horse.

"Do you," said Montrose to Redman, "make a white chalk mark of the size of my hat on the large gate post yonder, that leads out to the main road; and, as I shall shoot running, and my horse is skittish, and hard to stop, so open the gate, that he may not hurt himself against it, after I have fired."

Redman, the cottager and owner of the boat, did as he was asked, with both alacrity and pleasure, saying to himself at the time: "This young fellow be's a bigger goose than I'sposed. Deed! he don't know how old Poll runs steady, neither how Ben kin shoot from her back." And forgetting his boat in the prize thus offered to him, a fine gun, he continued: "Darnell and Hackett, and them thar town folks may stand back when the lawyers and folks cum to court. We boys from Poplar Hill kin shoot wi' them now in the Court House Square."

Montrose, having possessed himself of his horse and gun, with his feet well planted in the stirrups, examined his gun to see if the load had been drawn. Having ascertained that there was a load in her, and her priming was right, he threw his powder-horn and shot-bag over his shoul-

ders, and then inspected them to see how stood his ammunition.

"As I feared," he said, "these fellows have just that gauge of understanding to make them scamps. They have emptied my horn-bag, and this accounts for their readiness in giving back my property. They are both armed;" for he noticed that the cottager, Redman, had a gun, no less than Littleworth, the red-haired fisherman. "They are probably good shots, and," slapping his horse, "now, Selim, if you don't do your best, I shall stand a chance of being shot; and you may have to break up this boor's ground, instead of hunting deer."

"I'll stand nigh by the gate yonder," said Redman, who was mounted, taking his gun as he spoke, and riding forward to the gate, "it mought be you'd shoot twice, and so I've took my gun and filly, case Ben don't beat ye, to try shootin with ye mysel."

"Worse and worse," reflected Montrose, "I am in the clutches of these candidates for the rope, unless Providence and my good horse favour me. This smirk Redman means, by planting himself near the gate, to shoot me if I endeavour to run off. Well," pressing his lips together, "I'll show them that I can ride; that Selim can fly like the wind; and that at need, if they force me to it, I can send a ball equal to any sportsman."

Littleworth now stood close by Montrose, mounted and armed; while Redman on his horse and with gun in hand, stood near the gate, where the mark was made; anxiously looking on, and prepared to shoot Montrose, should he attempt to ride beyond the gate, which by his directions he had opened.

"Are you ready?" asked Montrose.

"Yes," replied Littleworth.

"We'll ride slowly the first fifty yards;" continued Montrose, "then in a gentle gallop the next twenty-five; for I suppose the gate is about a hundred yards off, and when we get to the large cedar ahead, we will run our horses: and when we come to the pine tree, which is within gun-shot of the gate, we will fire."

"All right," replied Littleworth, riding on slowly; and steadying himself, he endeavoured to act as stated; and he chuckled as he thought how blank, and much at the mercy of him and Redman would be Montrose, when he had fired

off the only load he had; though we presume neither of them contemplated with pleasure, or as a thing determined upon, the taking of his life. This is an atrocity which even the blood-dyed villain looks not upon, and comes not to, but at the goading of crime and desperate passions. Life is a holy thing, and God has so fenced it around that man leaps not the barrier to shed his brother's blood, except pressed on to it by seeming necessity, and these boors, if they thought at all, knew they would have to swing if they shot Montrose.

Having rode half the distance, they kept on together in a gentle gallop, twenty-five yards further, to the cedar mentioned.

"Now," said Montrose, "we'll run our horse, to the pine tree, and there we'll fire." And off, like racers running for the purse, they went. With his left hand on the bridle, and his right holding to his gun, Montrose urged his horse so as to run him just fast enough to keep up with Littleworth, till they came to the pine tree: which they reached at the same time: though it was evident that Selim was not going at his full speed, and could easily distance Littleworth's old mare.

"Now," said Montrose in a commanding tone. "Ready, aim, fire!" suiting the action to the word, as if he meant to shoot; which, however, was not his intention, and at the same time he buried his rowels into Selim's flanks, and shouted, "go it, go it."

Littleworth fired, and pressed on with a speed that the old mare had never perhaps exceeded, when young and fresh in breast and limb. Redman heard the report, and saw the dust flying. But, as Littleworth reached the gate, Montrose had passed through and beyond it; and was pushing for the main-road, when ahead, intercepting his progress, he saw a high barred gate. "My horse," thought he, "to clear this gate, must hold in a second, and blow."

He turned, and saw Redman on his fresh horse; counting on Montrose having fired off his load, and on his being unable to clear the bars; and, with this opinion, was riding with all speed after him. Montrose heard him call, "Stop; I'll shoot."

"Go back!" shouted Montrose in reply, "or I'll shoot you." The wind blew away his words, Redman pressed ahead, resolved to capture Montrose, and not lose such a chance of getting a good horse.

"Come back and try again," called out Redman, "ye don't fool me sich a way agin." All this time, Montrose had been approaching the gate, but still had so slackened his pace, that Redman or Littleworth, must bring him within reach of their guns, unless he at once should place himself out of their shot, and then clear the gate. Here, too, the road made an elbow to the right, which added to the distance to the bars, and Montrose saw in amazement, that by a private path which cut off half the distance, Redman might reach the gate first, and on which the latter counted. "I must shoot him then, or be shot," was the thought that quicker than he could speak it, came into his mind. And with his trigger drawn, and eye fixed steadily on Redman, so as not to miss him, Montrose rode sufficiently fast to keep ahead of Littleworth. He must now start his horse into a run, and clear the bars; but Redman by the short cut had placed himself between him and them; and was prepared to shoot him should he attempt to leap them. Montrose paused, the blood came and went, and his heart beat quick. It was only for an instant, however, and on such fleeting moments, too brief to be measured, how much depends? "My life or his," his lips faintly murmured. Redman raised his gun, and was taking his aim. Montrose fired, and waiting not to see the result, drove his spurs into his horse. The noble beast with a leap that would have done credit to the steeple chasers of England, cleared the bars completely. He then turned, and saw that Redman had fallen, and that Littleworth was riding hastily to his assistance. He was now in the main-road, soon passed by Poplar Hill Church, and, as fast he could prudently ride his horse, he pushed on to St. Mary's. In the excitement Montrose was unconscious of his wet clothes. On arriving at the Free Briton he changed his wet garments, directed the servant to rub his horse down, carefully, and went to bed. "Call me up at light to-morrow," was his charge to the servant, "and feed and groom Selim ready for a journey."

"Ky, young massa," muttered the negro, "treat him horse hard. Here jam by the midnight, and him jest got to bed; and fore massa kin turn ober, here kum day; and up he gits, and went agin. If boksa have nigger sense, it wouldn't be work, work. Him wake like crowing fowl all time of de night, and like owl, him bawl in de night for sarvant, 'stead of him setting on roost, and sleep dere.'

The negro's reflections were not heard by Montrose. And Cuffy, having given utterance to them, was too much of a philosopher to be even for a moment disturbed; true philosophy consisting, as goes the world, rather in wise saws and solemn sentences, than in giving one's self trouble about the past or future. He gathered his person up into a ball before a blazing fire in the bar-room, with his heels, than whitleather more tough, in the ashes, and his head closely covered by a blanket; and Cuffy very soon was in the land where all things are forgotten.

In the meanwhile, Parson Gordon and family, including Shepard, were much concerned about Montrose. Shepard, at the risk of his life, took a canoe, and hunted about the creek till night's shadows wrapt every thing in comparative darkness; the wind by this time having somewhat lulled. Shepard then mounted his horse, saying he would ride round to Croshaw's cabin, and if he heard or saw any thing of his missing friend, he would return to the Glebe, and report it. After a ride of two miles, he came to the bars over which Montrose had leaped his horse. He here dismounted, and commenced taking down the bars. The moon had just risen, and chancing to look up, as he was leading his horse in, he started on seeing a man, bleeding, lying on the ground, and another man standing by.

"Let them thar bars be," said Littleworth. "I spose you're kin to that mister what shot cousin Redman."

"Mister fiery-head," replied Shepard, "Have you seen a gentleman who was mounted on a dark bay, with a gun, having long hair, and fair complexion?"

"Havn't I? I reckon as how I'd give my old mare to see him agin. For ain't he murthered cousin, here? And didn't he jump his crittur o'er them thar bars, as if they warn't nothing? And this didn't he do arter losin cousin's cunnue?"

"This is the man who can tell me what I wish to know," speaking to himself. "Montrose shot this boor on the ground, no doubt, because he and this woodpecker friend threatened violence." Approaching Redman, who groaned as if every throb of pain would be his last, Shepard, by the bright moonlight, examined his wounds as well as he could; both Redman and Littleworth eying him suspiciously; and from the examination he inferred that Redman was dangerously, perhaps fatally wounded. He next by questions, but which Ben took his own time to answer, (for Shepard had

served his apprenticeship at the bar, and few knew better how to make a witness tell the whole truth,) pumped out of Ben all that passed, the accident in the boat, the wager, the address with which Montrose saved his life, horse and fowling piece, and the desperate measure he was driven to of shooting Redman, and then of leaping his horse over an eight-barred gate. Shepard then hastily rode back to the glebe, and telling Robin, whom he saw at the gate, to say to Parson Gordon he had news for him, but had not time to dismount. On Mr. Gordon's coming out, he communicated to him the result of his investigation.

"This is better than I had expected," said Parson Gordon, "though it is bad."

"Bad?—Bad? I should say that Mr. Montrose," replied Shepard, "was a benefactor to the province, if Redman dies, in ridding it of such a nuisance, on the same principle that our Assembly allows a certain sum to every one who should kill a wolf."

"Not so, Mr. Shepard," said Parson Gordon, gravely, "you suffer your prejudices to run to extremes which your sober judgment will not allow you to persist in."

"Why," interrupted Shepard, with some surprise in his tone and manner, "no blame attaches to Mr. Montrose. Self-defence is the first law of nature, and no state of society can deprive us of it. By this law we may repel force by force, whenever either ourselves or families are attacked in person or property. Our English laws say violence under such provocation is not a breach of the peace. Matters would come to a fine pass if passive submission were the law. Why the weak would be at the mercy of the strong and violent. I have no faith in that morality which would tie my hands, and compel me unresistingly to say to my assailant, 'Lay on McDuff;' and," softening his tone, he added, "neither do I think your reverence has."

"It does not," said Parson Gordon slightly smiling. "I admit fully the right of self-defence, but consider the taking away life an extreme remedy—a fearful resort; one that under no circumstances we can recel without deep sorrow, that we should have been forced to take that life we cannot give, sending into the other world a soul laden with sin."

"If smitten on one cheek, then, we are not to turn the other?" asked Shepard, half serious and half sportively.

"Our Saviour says we should, and I must say so too," replied the parson.

"Practically?" asked Shepard, as if he doubted.

"Certainly. I must practise what I believe," replied the parson, "though I fear much I should not; and, while I defer to the righteousness of self-defence, when life is assailed, and would not have blamed Lucretia, if she had stabbed Tarquin to the heart for attempting her virtue; yet in other cases, not of protection, the smiting back again seems to be condemned."

"War, then," said Shepard, "you would defend?"

"Undoubtedly," replied the rector, erecting his person, and assuming a martial look and manner, as if the trump of battle was sounding in his ears. "Why, sir, on this ground Tully defended Milo. The centurion was a Roman military officer, and our Lord, in place of condemning his calling, commended his faith as the greatest He had found in all Israel. Still, Mr. Shepard,"—Parson Gordon paused, and looking towards the creek on which the moonlight fell, softening and kindling it,—“as Christian men our weapons should be spiritual, not carnal. We fight most surely when our hands are lifted in prayer, rather than employed aiming deadly blows, and when we confront our enemies with a soft answer that turneth away wrath, rather than one of bold defiance or scorn.”

"I am keeping your reverence in the night air," interrupted Shepard; and, as he rode off, he muttered, "Well, it may be so, but the gift to see it to be so has not been imparted to me."

"It is providential for Mr. Montrose," soliloquized Parson Gordon, "that his friend can prove so much in extenuation of his offence."

McGregor, however, neither so reasoned, nor thought. Of Shepard's statement he only heard that Montrose had shot Redman, and that the latter was likely to die of it. He waited to hear no more, but posted to the kitchen, not sorry, we fear, to have bad news to report of Montrose. The negroes heard him with all wonderment, and many ejaculations accordingly, and in the midst of his tale, Adaratha came in, and heard him repeat it more than once with paraphrases that both lengthened and aggravated it.

In the meanwhile, what had been the feelings of the females in the household? Recovered from her stupor,

Emma, without knowing why, sought relief in thinking of Montrose; and pity, which is akin to love, with the circumstance mentioned concurring, tended, perhaps, to fix the image of Montrose on her heart; for the heart, while at times unimpressible as adamant, at others is as yielding as wax. And it is probable that Montrose gained more by these undesigned, and, as they then appeared to be, lamentable circumstances, than he might have done by the most studied efforts to win his way.

On her recovery, Julia was informed of the entire innocence of her brother in the unpleasant affair at Croshaw's cabin. But, poor girl! before her mind could enjoy the calm which this report duly produced, she heard the servant's statement that her brother was drowned; and then her heart's strings appeared almost to crack, and she abandoned herself to immoderate grief.

Adaratha, however, though at first betraying much sensibility, had fallen back on an Indian's seeming stoicism, and she evinced an Indian's calmness under suffering. We said she heard Robin's statement, which he had gathered from Mr. Shepard, and this greatly relieved her; and she hastened to impart to her friends the glad tidings that cheered her. For, reasoning as an Indian, killing seemed to her to be only an every day occurrence, and to which no blame attached, if done in the way of battle or private contest.

"I don't, and won't believe a word of what Robin says," said Julia, indignantly. "If brother Charles did shoot him, he was forced to it; and, though I am a woman, yet all things are not to be borne."

Thus spoke out human nature, thus vindicated a woman's love, and thus resented a sister's affection.

"Don't talk so, dear Julia," said Emma, with forced calmness. And, turning to Adaratha, she asked: "Did you not hear Robin say this?"

Adaratha wondered why Emma and Julia were concerned that Redman was shot. Now that Montrose was not drowned, as they had feared, there was ground for rejoicing.

"Ah!" continued Emma. "I know Robin's Scotch prejudices. I'll see father;" and she hurried below stairs, and Julia and Adaratha quietly followed her.

She easily found Parson Gordon. He was at the time walking up and down the parlour, ruminating on the che-

quered incidents of human life, and upon the sad termination of the brightest prospects, from the hot haste of youth and the untamed fierceness of an unsanctified nature. "This youth, Montrose," he said mentally, "may have the root in him; but I wish to see the fruits also. I fear he is too, too impulsive. He has good intentions and correct views; and, if not interfered with or opposed, will be useful and much respected. But morality and superior intelligence should be seen elsewhere as well as in the parlour and social circle. They should shine, not merely in stereotyped opinions, and well finished sentences, but in the life and conduct. We should prove our superior intelligence and morality to others, by better discerning the good, and more promptly rejecting the evil. Alas! the blood of youth, which the Spirit of holiness has not cooled down to moderation and judgment, and taught to throb in obedience to high and sacred impulses, is a fiery stream, burning as the lava, and like a mountain torrent overleaps barriers, and bears down opposition, while mere morality erects no better breakwater than a bank of sand."

"Father, do come here," exclaimed Emma, and meeting her, he asked her wishes. Emma mentioned Robin's report. Her father could but smile. He said: "Ah! I fear Robin is not only a true Scotchman, but a full blooded McGregor. 'I forgive,' is a hard word for him to say." He then gave her Shepard's statement, and satisfied her that Montrose had been unfortunately forced to shoot Redman; but there was no heinousness in his act.

"Didn't I say so," burst out Julia, "and she gave way to an hysterical laugh, that seemed for awhile fearful. She rallied, however, and, instead of the foam and surging of a breaking heart, she became calm comparatively, and the oil of gladness was seen to be "glittering on the water of an ebbing grief."

Emma, overcome, laid her head on her father's shoulder, and, in despite of her wonted self-command, shed tears, which appeared to speak an interest in Montrose beyond that of an ordinary acquaintance. Her father alone observed it, and said to himself: "Whether she loves him or not I do not object to this expression of feeling. If I must choose between the two, I had rather that my daughter should be even like Niobe all tears, than that she should be petrified into a stone-like apathy, and a statuesque coldness."

CHAPTER XXV.

PARSON GORDON AND FATHER CANON—MRS. ANNIE—A PURITAN
COURTSHIP—A SCENE AT POPLAR SPRING.

"The young must hope—it is the dower of God,
To smooth life's flinty way.

* * * * *

The young must hope—and beautiful to see
Their blind reliance, seraph Hope, in thee!
What if it be the vainest phantasy!
Forbear to undeceive; Oh let them still
Dream sweetly on; too soon the hours fulfil
Life's dark irrevocable destiny!"

ECLECTIC MAGAZINE.

EARLY next morning Parson Gordon was about sending to inquire into the state of Redman's health, when he received a note from Mr. Holt, requesting him to ride to Pleasant Lodge that morning, as he heard he had a call in that neighbourhood. The writer was very desirous to have some conversation with him, about the obnoxious proposition of an ecclesiastical court, to be called by the approaching legislature.

On his way to Pleasant Lodge, Parson Gordon passed by the barred gate, over which Montrose had made his horse leap, and thought he would ride to Redman's house, and set his mind at ease about the affair of yesterday.

But, as he was entering in the gate, he saw coming towards him Father Canon, trudging at his usual pace, as if he never was in a hurry, and was determined to take the world fair and easy, let it wag or fuss as it might. "I will halt here," was his reflection. "Mr. Canon has probably been to administer to Redman the last office of the Roman Church. He must be therefore very low. And yet little hope, I should think, he could give to such a man. By giving him the last unction, he must believe that he is not exactly a meet subject for the punishment of the lost. He is to go then to purgatory. And great comfort is there in such a thought. He is to be tormented by material fire, and the torture of devils, and may undergo such purgation, long

even as they would represent the persons dying in Noah's time suffered in prison till Christ's descent into hell."

Mr. Canon now came up, and stated that he had been sent for in the night; the messenger leaving Redman's a little after dark, and reaching St. Inigoes' by midnight.

"A barbarous custom this," continued the Roman ecclesiastic. "Not often may we clerics lie down in confidence that we shall not be called up before morning. True, Beaumont and Fletcher say,

'Sleep is care charming, an easer of all woes;'

but seldom are our woes so eased, and our cares so uninterruptedly charmed. No, sir, chilly as was the night, and much as I felt the fast the day before, I had to ride my beast over twenty miles; and all to see a man who is as likely to die in a year, as that old pine tree yonder, which has stood many a blast; or as you and I, who may yet look forward to feel half a score of winters howling through our boughs."

"Then he is not seriously wounded? Thankful am I to hear it."

"Seriously wounded! oh very seriously; for the boor is scared out of all reason; and his face looks serious now, if never before. But really I asked no question about the way he was wounded; though a dull clod-pated lump of mire, whose hair seems to have been dyed in red ochre, tried to tell me in his gibberish jargon. The rub with him is the fear of old Nick, and I must come this long ride to prepare him; as if such a fellow could be so greased with the holy unction as to slip into purgatory out of the old boy's clutches."

"A most sorry specimen of humanity, I fear."

"Many, many such. Many who only want certain appendages in the rear to make them proper quadrupeds, as much as those cows in the field yonder."

"Too true, I fear," said the rector, "but such a man is hardly more fitting to receive a holy rite than a beast or stone."

"But you know, Holy Church says, God's image was only dimmed, not lost, by the fall, and that the power to think and do good works, though feeble from Adam's sin, remains still. This fellow, then, degraded as he is, is human after all; his soul may be benefitted by the sacraments of the

church. For, as you know, they infuse grace into him, unconscious agent that he is."

"Object you mean, since he is to do nothing," interrupted Parson Gordon, gravely, and shaking his head.

"Well, object let it be," continued the priest. "We won't quarrel about words, when you and I can interpret them as we please. As I was saying, it little matters that he is at the time unconscious as a stone or a dumb beast; seeing that the sacraments infuse into him the righteousness of Christ. And St. James commanded that holy oil be used for the moribundis." He now halted his horse, and proffering his hand, continued, "We now take different roads—we part in peace, however.

"Certainly," replied Parson Gordon, shaking his extended hand, "and right pleasant would it be if we were journeying together on a more important road—on the road to the city, which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God."

And Mr. Gordon kept on towards Pleasant Lodge, and was discussing to himself the great difference between the Catholic view of the sacraments, and the Roman view of the opus operatum, when he heard Mr. Holt's voice.

"You are in a brown study, reverend sir;" and, looking up, saw Mr. Holt standing near him. This worthy gentleman had just received a letter from Johnson, the college chum of Montrose, who made very particular inquiries about him.

Parson Gordon then said that Mr. Montrose had had an adventure that might have been very serious.

Mr. Holt looked concerned, and Parson Gordon mentioned his affair with Redman and Littleworth.

"This will not do," said Mr. Holt. "He had best return with his friend Johnson. Vices, like weeds, grow rank in new settlements."

Parson Gordon thought to himself, Mr. Holt's nephew has plans in contemplation which his uncle does not dream of.

Mr. Holt then spoke of the project which the enemies of the church in the province made no secret of, the creating an ecclesiastical court by the Legislature for the trial of the clergy of the established church.

"Desperate diseases," said Mr. Holt, "I allow, require desperate remedies. But I doubt whether any such extremity now exists. Every man of doubtful principles, or lax

morals, is interested in lowering the clergy, in order to remove a body of men whose very existence is a condemnation to himself; and hence such men affect a holy horror at the ungodliness of the clergy; and artfully avail themselves of this counterfeited regard for their purity to make men think the clergy are no better than themselves. I doubt also whether the ecclesiastical court is a specific for the immorality complained of; though really I am not aware that such a gangrene affects the clerical body in the province. The ecclesiastical court is an engine of tyranny; a nostrum not to cure, but kill, the clerical body. I, for one, wish to have no such power to prescribe for a class of men whom Christ Himself empowered to prescribe for us. But I fear, I fear much, that, with Papists and Quakers to help, the enemies of true religion will pass the bill."

"I will endeavour to be in Annapolis," said Parson Gordon, "and trust this bill may be killed in transitu."

"There is one man whose assistance we shall find a host, if we can secure him," said Mr. Holt; "but I fear he is too intent on pleasure to care about such things; and yet he is the very man to manage those law-makers. His knowledge of men, tact and address, I have heard much commended."

"Mr. Shepard, you mean?" asked Parson Gordon. "I should judge as much. But he is a man of the world, and will give his influence where his interest lies; or he will not mix himself in the question; like Gallio, not caring for any of those things. But here comes Mrs. Annie. We'll talk this matter over again." As he spoke Mrs. Annie, in Colonel Smithson's carriage, rode to the front door.

"Your reverence must allow me this pleasure," said Mr. Holt, anticipating Parson Gordon's movements. "Mrs. Annie and I are special friends," and, looking significantly at Parson Gordon, he said in an undertone, "She can do more with him, you know, than any one else," alluding to her influence over Shepard.

Having greeted Mrs. Annie, and taken her arm in his, this most estimable specimen of a gentleman of the old school, (who exemplify continually Lord Chatham's definition of true politeness, "benevolence in trifles,") with the activity of youth, and a face radiant with benevolence, passed into the house with his fair visiter.

"Where is Julia?" inquired Mrs. Annie.

"Now this is too bad, is it not?" said Mr. Holt, address-

ing Parson Gordon. "It is saying she did not come to see an old gentleman like myself. We old folks, your reverence, I fear have lost all our powers of pleasing with Mrs. Annie. I flattered myself that, though I was a few years older than the sparks that now fly about young ladies, I could still play the agreeable, and that my friend Mrs. Annie would be the very last to turn from me."

"So she will be," said Mrs. Annie, smiling; and giving her hand to Mr. Holt, she shook his playfully, and said, "You know, when I next sell my liberty, I promised to let you have the end of the chain."

"Yes, yes," said Mr. Holt, bowing and smiling. "The chain I am to fasten on my neck, and then pass it back to you; thanks, Mrs. Annie."

A few minutes afterwards Mr. Holt was called out by a message. Parson Gordon and Mrs. Annie had a conversation touching the subject they had talked about last at Elfin Hall, and the parson was pleased to find that she was very slightly tinged with the taint of Romanism; but this, like some taints which no chemical washes can wholly remove, comes off slowly and gradually. "The lamp of God," he said to her, "is before you; let it be 'a lamp unto your feet, and a light unto your paths.' Study the Scriptures with the assistance of your Prayer Book, and pray God to open your eyes to see the wondrous things of His law."

Mrs. Annie manifested by her manner that her heart was deeply interested in the subject of the truth or falsehood of the distinctive peculiarities of Romanism. It was evident that she was not acting a part, nor trying to get up an interest in her behalf, and a stir, and thus make a pompous parade of those feelings which are ever to be suspected when they proclaim themselves publicly. With the multitude at Pentecost she had asked to be told what to do, from a sense of ignorance, and an earnest, deep desire to be taught, and, like king David, she might almost say, sleep came not to her eyelids till she had found a place for the temple of the Lord, and became satisfied that God was seated in his holiness and power in the hallowed shrines of the apostolic Church of England, while she feared he was not to be found amidst those altars which were defiled by the bones of a departed or supposititious saint, and where the virgin is more adored than is God. "I wish I had known before," said Mrs. Annie, "that, in rendering to any creature, even the blessed virgin,

praise and adoration, I was committing the awful sin of idolatry," and she trembled lest a jealous God might not forgive her ascribing to another his awful and incommunicable attributes, nor the rendering to another the honour, homage, or worship which are due to him only. She then observed to Parson Gordon, being much moved as she spoke, how vastly more comfortable it was to believe that the ear of God was ever open to hear the contrite sinner's voice, without any human mediator, (the sinner looking to the merits and mediation of Christ only,) than to believe you must address yourself to the virgin, or saints, and ask them to pray for you. It was this dogma of the Roman church which, as we stated, had gained most upon her sensibilities, and, this dogma losing its hold, she was able to see clearly the points of disagreement between the Catholic church as represented by one of its branches, the Church of England, and the Roman branch of it. And the face of Jesus reconciled, the hope that looked to him, and him only, as mighty and willing to save, the sweet comfort that, as dew from the mercy-seat, shed upon her heart its gracious, soothing, and sustaining power, were results that never could have been accomplished by the sensuous religion of Rome.

"Oh!" said Mrs. Annie, her eyes filling with tears at the time, "too, too thankful I cannot be that God, through your means, my dear sir, has brought me to this state of salvation, and saved me from a confessor who wished me to hate my good mother."

Julia now entered, and had just heard that Redman was not mortally wounded, and her spirits, as usual, especially after the pressure to which they had been subjected, were about to explode in frolicsome freaks. And, after playfully remarking to her uncle that she had heard him say the old astrologers said certain constellations presided over certain days, she asked what constellation was in the ascendant.

"Why, child?" replied her uncle, "I think the constellation Aries, or the Ram, is in the ascendant now."

"So I should think," continued Julia, "for see how we have been butted about. The butting powers must have been in the ascendant, surely."

We said that Shepard left the Glebe for St. Mary's. At the head of the river, finding a light burning at Doolittle's house, which was near the Indian cabins there, he determined to call and make certain statements to Doolittle, who, he

knew, would duly report the same to Snarler, as would oblige the latter to keep quiet about the assault which Montrose made upon him. Having satisfied Doolittle that Snarler could accomplish nothing by a prosecution, Shepard could not refrain, as he was leaving the house, from saying,

"Say to Mr. Snarler I congratulate him on having no bones broken," and then, looking serious, he said, to Doolittle, "if his temper were as inoffensive as his position, he might be as undisturbed as the humble bee, who buries her honey under ground. Unfortunately, however, he is snappish at times, being afraid that the world will forget the little creature who is delving and fussing in his obscure hole."

Shepard then rode off, and was revolving the events of the foregoing day, when he espied a figure ahead, walking under the trees in the moonlight, with another figure in woman's apparel. The first figure Shepard knew to be Allgrace, for his form and step were unmistakeable, and the other figure he discovered to be Miss Doolittle, to whom, it was said, Allgrace was making his bow matrimonial. Shepard dismounted quietly, and, fastening his horse to a tree, approached near enough to the parties to overhear them, keeping himself in the shade of the forest.

"As I live," said he mentally, "here are Allgrace and spinster Doolittle, walking as innocently together, and yet as lover-like, as Adam and Eve in Paradise. Here is not only a courtship, *al fresco*, but sub *Jove frigido*. I have longed, wished," advancing cautiously as he soliloquized, "to know how 'the saints' make love. Surely Mr. Allgrace's pure mind never went beyond the purest Platonism. He, good man, sees in the sainted Dorothy, one of those angelic creatures whom a brother saint cannot too soon appropriate. For, though not a flesh and blood angel herself, she owns many bright gold angels. And, with such angelic charms, they can take sweet counsel together, while she, Dorothy, never suffers her vestal lips to breathe, nor her pure bosom to feel any erratic desires." He now stepped behind a tree, while a few paces off were Allgrace and Dorothy, each holding to the hand of the other. Allgrace was speaking:

"Sister Dorothy, I have made this matter the subject of prayer. Ah! I know the sin of being unequally yoked together. Promise me then, soon as your brother and I

shall free this vineyard of the Lord of its present prelatie pastor, and I shall be called of the Lord to go in and out among you, saying none other things than what the Spirit puts into my heart to say, that you will suffer me—" Here the speaker spoke so low that Shepard could not hear him. The question must have been very pointed and very lovingly put, for Dorothy was much flurried, the agitation, doubtless, which the gentle breath of love had produced on the surface of a heart that rippled easier to its influence than water is stirred by a passing zephyr. In a tone of voice, soft as the cooing dove's, and with all the coyness, looking pale and crimson by turns, of a girl of sixteen, this maiden on the dark side of forty was just able to give her lover a dying look, and as

"Love is a figure
Trenched in ice, which with an hour's heat
Dissolves,"

she fainted in his arms. "An armful of happiness," muttered Shepard, and, mounting his horse, he rode to St. Mary's. Montrose was asleep, and Shepard did not like to disturb him. On entering his room Shepard found a letter, as he supposed, for himself, and did not see his mistake till he had read this first sentence:

"Dear Delafield, or Montrose, as I suppose I must call you, till the time fixed by your wager shall have past." He dropt the letter, started up from his chair, and said,

"Do I dream? What, Montrose Charles Delafield? He my brother! Heavens! I'll go and wake him, and take now that position in the world which my name would command for me, which my father's fortune, being mine, would make comfortable, and which my acknowledged talents enable me to maintain." But here he was checked by the reflection that Montrose might doubt his statement, and impugn his motives. He was known as Augustus Shepard, being so named in his maternal uncle Shepard's will. "This is strange!" pursued he; "in a mad frolic I left college, took shipping, and was wrecked on the coast of Spain, found there a ship bound to Hispaniola, reached that island, working my way as a common sailor, (being too proud and anxious for adventures, to own my name and return to England.) I found in the island a ship bound to St. Mary's, where, I remembered, uncle resided. I arrived in St. Mary's, was owned by uncle Shepard, and promised him to take his

name. Since then, years have past, alas! and now I find a brother, who, when I saw him last, was a curly headed boy. My sister I should not know. She was a bright and golden haired baby. If alive, she must be about the age of Mrs. Annie. No," checking himself, "zounds, it may be Miss Julia Holt. It is possible. I saw her for the first time at the party at Pleasant Lodge, and took a fancy to her from the ballad which I learned some time before. Strange!" and Shepard's mind seemed to wander. "Strange! It may be Julia. I might have suspected it, if I had not been under an evil star, and my passion for Mrs. Annie had not driven all reflection out of my head, that it was Julia, for who else can it be?" And, in a low tone, talking by jerks, he continued, "the impression was general that I was drowned. Perhaps better that I should have been, full five fathom deep," and he sighed heavily. "My father—he loved me though I knew it not—seemed harsh; he took on for my death, and the hand of the angel of adversity was laid on him so heavily that he left home and kindred to return no more. Perhaps, like ancient pilgrims, he has gone to the holy sepulchre, or, turning Roman devotee, has buried in a gloomy monastery his life and hopes. His body now may be worn to leanness under a hair shirt and severe fastings, and that head I loved to look upon, bald now probably as was the first of the Cæsars, is bowed in anguish to the dust. Curses light on me for my folly!" and Shepard seemed to suffer deeply. After awhile he continued, "Now, my brother, dear little Charlie, follows after a sort in my wayward steps. Lo! he doffs his name as I did—why, is a mystery, and I meet him here, and to-night, by a singular train of events, am led to find him out."

After this long soliloquy, pacing up and down his room part of the time, and then stopping occasionally all at once, as if moved by a sudden impulse or thought, Shepard took the letter for Montrose which had brought so much light to him, and taking also the candle, he proceeded as quietly as he could, to the chamber of Montrose. He opened and closed the door gently. Montrose was sleeping soundly, being doubtless overcome by the events which had past, and the excitement and physical effort he had gone through with. "If he be Charles," said Shepard, "I think I can discover some forgotten feature of my brother." And he placed the light so that it would fall full upon his face, and thus

enable him to scan the features of his supposed brother narrowly. He stood and gazed for nearly fifteen minutes, till his memory, now prepared to see what it wanted, had traced in the manly features of Montrose a development of the delicate lineaments and peculiar mould and character of his brother's face in boyhood.

"Even so," said he, deeply moved. "Then I am not alone in this wide, wide world. My heart may now expand, and take in others beside Mrs. Annie. The world's coldness made it contract, and there was but one warm place in it, and this was made by her sunny glance,—but one spot where it was disposed to swell and grow; and thanks to her for the sun that warmed it into life, and the dew-drop of comfort that gave it any vigour and size."

The trunk of Montrose was near. The key was in it. "I will open it," thought Shepard. "In it I may find further, conclusive proof of the fact I seek."

He lifted the trunk,—and, on opening it, exclaimed, so loud as to nearly awake Montrose:

"My mother's likeness! Oh what treasure! Golconda's mines would not buy it from me." And he kissed it rapturously. "I can see that sweet smile now."

He seated himself on the floor, candle in hand, and, in his joy, forgot that Montrose might wake up at any moment.

"Ah! this, this is mine. Sooner will they tear my heart out than tear it from me."

Hardly conscious of what he was doing, he jumped up, with the miniature in hand, threw the top of the trunk violently down, and the current of air made by which fortunately blew out the candle, and, like one deranged, hurried out to his room. The noise awoke Montrose, who saw nothing, as it was very dark, and, it being still a minute after, suspected nothing. Having reached his room, Shepard, such was his intensity of feeling, threw himself, without first undressing, on the bed, and before long fell asleep, lying on his face, his right hand holding with a grip, which even slumber did not relax, to his mother's miniature.

What mother is not, and if not, should not be a holy thing to her child? Hers is the first loved face that smiled upon us. Hers the first lips that soothed and sang to us. Her face, seen in the vista of the past, is the one sweet

image there. Her voice, heard in its echoes, comes with the solemnity of cathedral music, and the sweet and ravishing tenderness of angelic harmonies. If mothers come back to look upon, perhaps, an erring child, may there not be such a support between the two, that the spirit of one can communicate with the other, and an influence for good be thereby exerted?

On the Glebe farm, and about a quarter of a mile from the mansion, was a noble spring, called Poplar spring, which flowed in a stream quite large enough to have turned a common over-shot mill. Here, under the shade of a number of tulipifera-poplars, whose blossoms were then just expanding, Emma was seated. The morning was balmy. A fine breeze played through the noble old trees, which were the growth of more than a century; and the feathered songsters were making themselves merry in the branches, and filling the air around with their songs. Emma was alone, and appeared to resign herself to the soothing influences around. While thus absorbed, she heard the sound of a horse's hoofs, and, before she could rise and retreat by a private path along the creek side, Montrose was before her, and dismounting with all alacrity, in the true spirit and manner of an ancient knight, he threw himself on one knee, crossed his arms on his breast, and, in a most respectful tone, said:

"I wish not to intrude, but I may claim the right to be informed why I am charged with duplicity. Will Miss Gordon explain, and give me the chance of acquitting myself?"

"Do rise," said Emma, much agitated, "and you will greatly oblige me; and, if you can bear with me, let it suffice that I wholly recall it, and condemn myself for using it."

"With pleasure," standing up, and laying his left hand on his horse, as if about to mount; "and I make now, Miss Emma, and will make hereafter, all due acknowledgments for your kind and prompt retraction. But is your will inexorable not to say why you charged me with duplicity?" and his lip trembled a little. "Perhaps I said or did something to justify it."

Emma looked puzzled, and looked down. She hesitated, coloured, was anxious to explain, but could not without mentioning her father's conversation about him at Ellin

Hall, and her discovery of Miss Evelin and Montrose at the spring of St. Mary's, under circumstances which seemed to show that, while avowing to Parson Gordon his love to her, he was paying his court to Miss Evelin; and this explanation would have been more than maiden modesty permitted. If he had declared his regard to her, before he had to her father, then her lips would have been unsealed. Emma struggled with the trials of her position, and, after an effort, said:

"Will Mr. Montrose believe me, when I say I have done wrong, very wrong, and am heartily sorry for it? Will he be so kind also as to believe that I would explain if I could?"

"I certainly ask nothing further," he replied, "and trust at another time she will give me this explanation."

Emma felt, perhaps, even more embarrassed. She could not explain till he had addressed her, and she could not tell him she would explain when he had made this overture. She was uncomfortable, and signified by her manner that she wished to return to the house.

"Excuse me," said he, touched by her manner. "I say no more on this subject. It is not your wish that I should come no more into your presence?"

"Certainly not," was her reply.

"Then," he continued, speaking with difficulty, "that presence I will not quit now, till you have allowed me to tell you what my lips would often have breathed, and my heart has long been full of."

"Mr. Montrose," she interrupted him, "not a word more, if you please."

"I understand you," changing his tone and manner as he spoke, and looking dejected. "I shot a man who sought to rob and shoot me. Yet it seems I have done a deed so vile that the sentiments I was about to utter it does not become Miss Gordon to receive. My passion overshot my judgment. With your permission," increasing his speed to the house, "I will not longer intrude than is necessary."

"Mr. Montrose, you do me great injustice. I have heard the circumstance under which this miserable man was shot, and am satisfied that no blame attaches to you for it." This assurance relieved him, but he judged it best, knowing her character, not to press the matter. As they drew near the

house Robin passed them, and Montrose, observing the angry scowl on McGregor's face, said to Emma:

"Allow me to see if I can't make up with your body-guard. I fear he has not forgotten the blow I gave him yesterday." Emma objected quickly, "No," but, before she had finished saying it, he called to McGregor in a loud and kind tone to come to him. The highlander hesitated, and then, after a pause, with much assured dignity, walked slowly towards Montrose, who asked him to be so kind as to take his horse, and ride round, and inquire into Redman's condition. He then gave Robin a silver piece with the remark. "Forgive me, man, for the blow of yesterday. You came so savagely at me, that I knew not what you meant to do. I had to defend myself."

The Scotchman felt that the money in the palm of his hand was real silver, and his kindly feelings appeared to start from the palm, to which the money had given a pleasant glow, and next extended to his head, and showed a portion of its warmth in giving a more sunny expression to his face. His hard countenance softened, and holding tight to the money, and pressing it, to be sure there was no illusion; while a blush of shame and indignation, which was lighted by a ray of kindness, passed over his face.

"'Twas a smaw scart you gave me. An my leddy, Miss Emma were not by, an we had been alane, the southron would hae seen the bluid of the McGregor was not sae easily tamed."

"Very like," said Montrose, observing that Robin's chief injury was mortified self-esteem. The latter was not gone more than an hour, before he returned with the report that Redman was not dangerously wounded as was believed; and he complained that Littleworth claimed the horse Selim, charged Robin with having stolen him, and Robin said that he and this red-haired fellow nearly came to blows.

"The twa," he continued, "are cutlugged rogues. You did weel to shoot the cuddie."

Emma complimented Robin on standing up so stoutly for Selim, and the Scotchman, between "the leddy's" praise, and "the siller," forgot the injury he had received. So easily at times are breaches healed, and the unforgiving Adam softened and pacified.

Parson Gordon and Julia, having both gone to Pleasant Lodge, Montrose had the privilege of Emma's company to

himself. And, notwithstanding what had passed at the spring, he made the lover's staff his, and "managed it against despairing thoughts." For hope whispered its pleasing tale. Busy imagination began to build its airy and dazzling visions; in which a charming future opened before him. Fortune from her cornucopia seemed to shed upon him golden showers. He could hear fame's trumpet-blast, and could see pleasure strewing his path with roses; and in this picture Emma was both the maker and sharer of its bliss.

"Facilis descensus averni," said Montrose. "Oh, how gently sloping would be the declivity to the end of life with such an angel along to smile away its gloom!" Emma herself had to acknowledge mentally, that she had past a delightful day. When night approached, he determined to transgress again, be the forfeit what it might, trusting to extract something yet more explicit. But, after a fervent declaration, he could only extract, "Take a sister's love in return."

He mounted his fleet-footed Selim, waved his hand adieu, and was gone. Emma turned to go in, and there sat Adaratha the picture of hopelessness. What a miracle worker! and what a deranger is love! It unites together by moral affinity persons who would have moved independent units of an inharmonious mass. When this moral affinity is wanting, wretched is that household where the heads are paired but not matched. And hardly less cheerless are those who, unable to find a heart answering to theirs, feel that they are alone and uncared for in the great caravan of humanity, which is moving over life's desert to the Mecca, whither, in reality or fancy, all are bound.

A few days afterwards, some time after dark, a vessel dropt anchor with sails half furled just off Chancellor's point, and about quarter of a mile from the tavern of the Free Briton. A boat made for the shore, and landing at the wharf where Father Hunter landed as mentioned in a former chapter, four men from the boat proceeded up the ascent to the tavern. "So you think," asked one in a nasal tone, "that the fellow is got to his room by now? He's the devil for fight, and 'less we pin him down at once, and gag him to boot, he'll spill blood to-night."

"I should judge that Mr. Montrose was both in his chamber and in bed by this time. He was up last night on

a hunt, and I heard him say before sunset at the court house that he meant to retire early, and make up for lost time," was the reply of the person addressed.

"But, Mr. 'Torney," continued the first speaker, "hadn't we better be sartain? You aint got on the track of the fellow by a capy, and you mought miss him."

"All wisely pondered, friend Snarler," was the reply. "We'll examine the coasts well. It might implicate us hereafter if we asked at the bar. You had better take these sailors under your charge—and one by one, so as to avoid suspicion, enter the tavern by the back door. And do you see that window to the water side, next to the corner up stairs? That is his room. He has gone to bed, for the light is out, and I would bet any thing he is sleeping soundly. You will have to proceed softly. Wait till all three are quietly in the room, then secure him, and, hurrying out, meet me at the back door."

"Nicoll will hear us, or some of his black scamps, friend Brief," replied Snarler.

"I'll see to that," said Brief, "by going in first by the front door, and get them out of the way."

Snarler did not seem yet satisfied, and suggested a doubt whether the door of Montrose might not be locked inside.

Brief laughed at the suggestion, and replied, that there was not a lock in the tavern that would not yield to a gentle pressure.

The parties then separated, and proceeded as Brief had advised. The attorney saw that Nicoll and the servants were out of the way, and, by a signal, made Snarler and the sailors understand it to be so; and the latter, hastening noiselessly up stairs, came to the room, which they opened without difficulty. On entering, they saw that the bed was occupied by a sleeper, whom they sprang upon, and after a short scuffle, gagged and tied. They then hastened down stairs, out of doors, where Brief expected them, next to the river side, and, depositing their comparatively unresisting burden on the boat, they hastily rowed to the vessel we mentioned. It was quite dark, and, to prevent detection, no lights were on the deck. They hoisted all sails, and, a smart breeze springing up, the vessel made good progress out of St. Mary's river. They then bore for Point Lookout, evidently anxious to reach the bay. They had hardly, however, passed St. Inigoes' fort, than the

wind blew a fair storm. Snarler was at the helm—and with an occasional curse at the seamen for their apparent sluggishness, gave his orders. It was necessary to lay their course for Sandy Point, on the Virginia shore, and the vessel, labouring under a heavy sea and squalls of wind that threatened occasionally to capsize her, went on her way. The vessel was evidently not very strong, nor did she readily obey her helmsman. The night was very dark, and though a light now burnt at the binnacle, it showed them not whither they were bound, nor how far they were from Sandy Point. A fearful blast swept over them—the vessel turned, with her masts nearly touching the water, on her leeward side, every timber in her seemed to crack and open; a fearful wave dashed over them—a cry went up amidst the storm, and the ship's company gave themselves up as lost. The vessel, however, righted, and as she did so, she struck; wave after wave swept the deck, washing the crew, Snarler, and Brief overboard, and forcing the vessel more and more in shore. Morning came. The storm had abated. Brief, Snarler, and a sailor, the other probably being drowned, were busied putting the yawl boat in a condition to float, meaning to return to St. Mary's. The tide had greatly subsided, leaving the vessel well stranded on Sandy Point. The persons spoken of were on their return, making for Calvert's bay.

Snarler and Brief spoke but little; their ejaculations, however, expressed great disappointment. They had intended to have kidnapped Montrose, and, putting him on board a Spanish vessel that lay in Cornfield harbour—send him to old Spain; having, by an arrangement with the Spanish captain, guarded against his return to Maryland. Thus Snarler hoped to free himself from the claim of Montrose to the large body of land in his possession. Brief was to be paid handsomely for his counsel and assistance, and one condition of the payment was, that Snarler should, forever, relinquish to the Church of Rome, all right and title to St. Mary's grave-yard. But Snarler and the sailors had kidnapped Darnell instead of Montrose. The latter, after dark, walked over to the castle, and Darnell, having drank very freely that evening, had, with a drunkard's freedom, found his way to the first room convenient, which proved to be Montrose's, and, asking no questions, soon fell asleep. He was just sensible of the violence that was offered him.

He slept out the storm in the cabin, and awaking up, managed to unbind his hands, and reach the deck and look out, recognise Brief and Snarler in the boat as they were returning to the Maryland shore. Darnell remembered his intemperance the previous evening, and, having had some pecuniary difficulty with Brief and Snarler, concluded that they had had some agency in placing him in his singular position. How, or why, were, however, beyond his power to divine; for he knew nothing of the storm. With some difficulty, in the course of the day, Darnell reached the land safely, and by night a shelter in a fisherman's hut near Cone river. The next day he hired the fisherman to row him to St. Inigoes' Point, and he vented his indignation the while in vowing vengeance, on the first occasion, against Snarler and Brief.

CHAPTER XXVI.

ADVENTURES ON THE WAY TO ANNAPOLIS.

"Conscience! did ye ever hear airry man talk of conscience in political matters? Conscience, quotha, I hae been in parliament these three and thirty years, and never heard the term made use of before. Sir, it is an unparliamentary word, and ye wall be laughed at for it."

THE MAN OF THE WORLD.

WE must pass over a few weeks. No one but Dr. Johnson, and he only in the estimation of Boswell, was so important that every day of his life deserved to be chronicled.

Montrose and Shepard started from St. Mary's for Annapolis; the former to see and be seen, and the latter as a delegate from Prince George county. They crossed the Patuxent river at Point Patience, and, travelling on horseback, took the Bay-side road. On the first day they dined at St. Leonard's. Their road was in sight of the Chesapeake nearly all the way, and in Calvert county it was sandy, and presented an uneven country of hill and dale. Dense forests, with cabins at long intervals, showed a thinly peopled country; while the abundance of game, the heavy timber on the road, and the noble bay in sight, satisfied them that few places which they had seen were more tempting to the settler, or would better repay his industry. The first night they intended to put up at the house of one of the members from that county, who was an acquaintance of Shepard's, but as night drew on, by some oversight they turned too much to the left, and got out of the road. Shepard first discovered the mistake, and remarked to his friend that he saw no longer the two notches on each side of the road; an act of Assembly of four years before requiring them on all roads leading to a ferry, court-house or church.

"Perhaps," said Montrose, "the road leads, notwithstanding, to Annapolis."

"No, this cannot be," was Shepard's reply, "for the road to the seat of government is also marked with two notches each side, and when it leaves a fork it is distinguished from

the fork by having A. A. marked with marking irons and coloured on the face of one or more trees, where the government road leaves the fork. These notches I do not see, and the A. A. I did not look for just now at a fork we passed; you and I being too intent on the traits of personal loveliness of Mrs. Annie and Miss Emma, to look away from them right or left to see branded trees."

"What shall we do then?"

"Bivouac perhaps here in this 'boundless contiguity of shade,' and to-morrow, when it is light, bear to the right till we come in sight of the bay, and near by we shall find the road to Annapolis."

"We had best stop then where we are, for my horse mires occasionally, and it is getting dark so fast, and the road is so obscure that we may ride into a creek before we know it."

Shepard halted, persuaded that his friend was more than half right, and the two stood awhile, looking carefully around to see if they could discern a light, or hear any noise which would indicate a human habitation to be near.

Montrose first broke silence, exclaiming that he saw a light a little to the right, and about half a mile off. Could they get to it was the next question. The horse of Montrose stood, as we stated, on miry ground, and whether the ground to the right or left, or just ahead, was firm, was a doubt they could not resolve. Shepard was a little in the rear, and where he stood the ground was more firm.

"Sir Knight," said Shepard, "move on, or say so, and I'll beat a retreat."

A retreat was beaten for a few yards, and the two then made directly for the light. They had got out of even the cow-path, which they were in a few minutes before, and were now in a dark, and for aught they knew to the contrary, almost boundless forest. They were obliged to move slowly and cautiously, still they flattered themselves they were making headway towards the light. All at once Shepard found himself brought forcibly against a tree, and his horse moving quickly from under him, he fell to the ground. Montrose was a little off to the right, and had just discovered his friend's disaster, when his horse halted abruptly, and refused to advance, as Shepard's horse plunging down a hill, attempted to cross a stream at the bottom. If he could have thought a moment he would have turned back to his friend's assistance; but unconsciously using his spurs,

he forced his horse down the ravine, and Montrose could not stop him, nor collect himself till he stood at the edge of the stream, which was seemingly deep, and about twenty or more yards wide. Here he dismounted, hearing Shepard bawling lustily after him. The latter found his way to him, and was more concerned about losing his horse than of the fall. They found that at that spot they could not cross, and they walked on the stream side some yards up, where, finding it very much narrowed, and there spanned by some trees which, at this spot, had been purposely felled, they crossed over, and Montrose, having trained his horse to follow his call, got him to swim the stream. The two friends having crossed on foot, (Montrose holding on to Selim,) made for the light, and up to which they came now without further serious difficulty. They saw a hut near the mouth of Parker's creek. The proprietor, having heard the tramp of Shepard's horse coming to the house, came out and easily caught him. He was a genuine Teague, with a red face, broad and strong limbed, hair between red and sandy, very bushy, and standing out like porcupine's quills. He received them as courteously as he knew how, and, asking them in, took their horses to a shed near by.

"This bog trotter," said Shepard, "carries the Milesian in his face, and shows it in his house. Here are two holes made for windows—and disdaining glass, or shutters, the lazy loon has stuffed in the dirty fragments of his unseemly garments. Remembering that dust we are, and to dust we will return, there is enough manure on his floor to make a small crop of potatoes; and the smoke from his chimney, in place of ascending right upward by the vent or opening,—searches with its sooty intrusion every part of the room. Really Montrose, we should have had agreeable quarters at the members;—but I have scruples about loitering here; yes, though father Canon says scruples, many only make one drachm; yet I think they weigh down drachms when filth is to be swallowed with them;" and Shepard pointed also to a muck heap just at the door, "whose steam," he said, "the bog trotter wanted to come in with the morning air as a quickener to his appetite." His friend laughed, and told him he had not seen all yet:—being much amused at the annoyance which these things gave to Shepard; whose equipments were fine and costly, and in danger of being rendered unfit for service.

"You have not felt all either, Shepard, for it seems to me that fleas and vermin are making my body a bleeding carcase; while Mr. Grunter yonder," pointing to a pig that was coming from under the Irishman's bed, "bears about him whole colonies of these jumping gentry, to supply us with a further stock, if we have not enough."

"'Tis past endurance," said Shepard; and they bolted out of the house, and after sauntering about for some time, they came to a fodder stack, and thinking this the best suited for sleeping accommodations, they returned to the hut to see what chance there might be for supper. And this they were resolved to have, even should the Irishman be obliged to kill his pig to give it to them. But there was no scarcity of what was better,—fine fish, and oysters. Except then, an occasional shrug, and his highly perfumed handkerchief to his nose, Shepard contrived both to eat and enjoy his supper. After supper they declined the Irishman's loft, which he offered them, after their refusal to share his only room below stairs, with his "slip of a pig," withdrew to the fodder stack, where, free from fleas, they hoped to pass the night. They had not been there long before they heard advancing footsteps, and some voices as in conversation. A strange place and time they thought to play the eaves-dropper. The persons referred to approached till they came near enough to the fodder stack for Shepard and Montrose to see and hear them.

"That is Father Hunter," said Shepard, putting his lips close to the ear of Montrose, and that fellow, who is unperiwigged, unruffled, and wears no sword, speaks for himself."

"Yes, a quaker—a thee and thou fellow. I have heard and seen the like of him before. I heard one of them hold forth not far from Oxford. He denounced the sacraments,—oaths in court,—a regular ministry, and tithes,—and claimed that the true peace and conquest over sin could be had without them; attempting to clinch every thing by the text, 'the grace of God, which bringeth salvation, hath appeared unto *all men*.'

"He has the divine light then," said Shepard, ironically; "you and I, Montrose, learned nothing at school comparable to what this solemn simplicity catches by a sort of infusion from the clouds, whenever he rolls his eyes upward. You have heard, Montrose, that Mary Fisher and her female as-

sociate, were the first who preached Quakerism in America, and that they were examined by the Solomons of Boston to see if they were witches;" and Shepard was running on in a vein of irony, when Montrose checked him; and they heard Father Hunter tell the Quaker that they would have no peace till the crown and people were informed how unjustly they were all taxed for the benefit of the parsons. To this the Quaker assented.*

"We thank you, friend Tobias," said the Jesuit. "St. Peter was commanded to put up his sword, and Holy Church draws not the sword against her firm friends, the followers of Fox. But can we count on your friends voting for this bill against the parsons? No measure, friend, will so soon cut at the root of that unwholesome tyranny which now overshadoweth us. We must make the parsons amenable to a lay tribunal, which the assembly shall appoint. Your friends and ours will have a voice in that Assembly, and, by uniting with the Presbyterians, Nonconformists, and disaffected churchmen, a controlling voice. With a little management we can carry the measure, put our friends in the court, and thus keep the parsons so in check that their tobacco tax, their religious privileges, and their church establishment, will be a name; monstrous in tyranny and injustice in conception, but harmless and ridiculous in operation. Our management and address will take out the fang of the serpent. But then, friend Tobias, can we depend on you and yours?"

"I tell thee, friend Hunter," said Tobias very solemnly, "that, as thee for years past has found us friends to thee and thine, thee will find us so again."

Tobias knew what he said. Quaker and Romanist have generally stood shoulder to shoulder against Churchmen, Presbyterians, and Dissenters. James II., the bigoted Roman Catholic sovereign of England, little more than twenty years before the date of our narrative, found an actual luxury in witnessing the agonies of the poor Covenanters in the Scotch torture of the boots, and coolly ordered young girls in Scotland to be drowned for refusing to disown the Covenanter's faith: yet he ever welcomed the Quaker Penn at Whitehall, and allowed the Quakers to assemble for worship. He

* Dr. Hawks, p. 88 of his work before quoted, speaks of "the violent opposition," the church met with from the Romanists and Quakers, and adds that "the Roman Catholics for the most part acted through the medium of the Quakers."

attempted to crush the freedom of the Church of England, and made war upon it in every form that he thought the church was most vulnerable, and forbade the Presbyterians to meet either in conventicles, or "in a barn or outhouse" for worship; yet he was pleased that Roman priests might say mass in all places, and that Quakers might harangue wherever it was convenient. And Quakers and Romanists stood together in Maryland, and what was more, they had managed to connect with them in alliance, Presbyterians, Independents, Nonconformists, and Low Churchmen, the last being by name, as was said before, a new phase of religionists. Herod and Pilate were leagued together against Christ, and our Lord prophesied, as they did unto Him they would do unto the members of His household. The Church of England then was receiving but what had been foretold.

"What votes do you think you can control?" asked the priest; and, while the Quaker was pondering on whom he could rely, he and Father Hunter walked away.

"A queer alliance this," said Montrose. "The Quaker contends for a divine light within, and complains that the Church of England dims it, because the church seeks to kindle it afresh, and make it burn steadily and purely by the torch of ancient truth; yet the Quaker allies himself to Rome, who would extinguish both the light of revelation and of nature."

"A true bill this," replied Shepard, thoughtfully.

Our travellers resumed their journey next day, and at night came to a house on South river, where passengers crossed over. Here they found a tavern, and were accosted by a cream visaged landlord, who at first eyed them as if they were horse thieves; till, recognizing Shepard, his face softened into a smile.

"Sorry chance to-night, sir," said Boniface. "Every thing like a bed or pallet is engaged."

On hearing this Montrose proposed pushing on to Annapolis, but Shepard insisted on waiting awhile. The publican then mentioned that there were a dozen members of the assembly in the house, who had been drinking hard and betting high.

"What brings them here?" asked Montrose.

"The game which abounds in these rivers," replied Shepard; "and, getting drunk, they are game for each other over the card-tables; and, in the midst of their debauch and

profanity, concoct by spirituous steaming those legislative dishes, which the gullible public are to digest. Thus, while offending all morals, and themselves the proper subjects of the law against nuisances, they make laws to keep in order the more sober community, and even pass those which are to regulate their morals."

"What bone of a bill are they mangling?" asked Shepard of Proctor, the landlord.

"That called the trap to catch the parsons," replied Proctor.

"There'll be no end to wonders," said Montrose. "These lewd fellows profess to be shocked at the immorality of the parsons, and yet there's not one, it seems, who is not now doing more iniquity than any, which, far as I can hear, they even pretend to charge the parsons with."

"All in character," said Shepard, laughing. "You know what Butler says;

'For to prohibit and dispense,
To find out, or to make offence,
To set what characters they please,
And mulct on sin, or godliness,
Must prove a pretty thriving trade.'

You know we law-makers are some bodies in the people's opinion, when the clergy are to be taught how to walk by us: as to the law-makers themselves, why they may walk as they please. What have they to do with morality? Why, provided they can keep the clergy in a straight jacket, they themselves may break loose on the community like so many raving lunatics. The devil was not punished for eating the forbidden fruit, but, what was better, he had the punishing of Adam and Eve who did."

"I am glad to hear you discourse so clerk-like," said Montrose, smiling. "Behold! all at once, the exquisite has become a politician."

Shepard looked grave, and replied. "You observed I was exceedingly annoyed by the fleas and filth in the Irishman's hut. Well, because I was where grunTERS and fleas had no right to come, if I had disputed the sty with the pig, and his filth, and fleas had routed me, I should say it was all fair; being out of my place. What presumption is it in men to set up for legislators, who cannot distinguish between the common and statutory law! Who so ridiculous and absurd as puritans! They have a coat clerical which

somebody found in the wardrobe of Calvin; and they must needs put it on every clergyman: and, if it is too small for any, they say, the fault is not the coat's, but his whom it won't fit. Verily his fleshly-mindedness has puffed him too much for it to button around him. If, however, as there are clergymen of all capacities theological, the poor parson should be too small for Calvin's old coat, why then, forsooth, he needs puffing up. They say he is lifeless, and ask, can these dry bones live? And then they raise a hue and cry, that such a parson has the form of godliness, but not the power thereof."

"Here comes one," interrupted Montrose, "who was made for Calvin's coat," and he pointed to the Rev. Mr. Allgrace, who was advancing towards them, accompanied by Doolittle. The publican met them at the door, and the friends were amused on seeing how Proctor's whole manner changed; his face resuming its former rigidity and hardness; looking as hard as the bark on the north side of a pine tree; and from his very pious expression of countenance, one would have said, Proctor, unlike any other Boniface, had never heard an oath, nor seen a drunken riot.

"Who have you here, Brother Proctor?" asked Allgrace.

Speaking in a low tone, and with a knowing wink, Proctor replied, "Sure, and who but members of the honourable assembly, my worthy brother?"

"Ah! indeed! this is news," said Allgrace; and, after hesitating a moment, continued, "Hark ye, Brother Doolittle, here's a fine chance of pushing this moral bill. We must talk to these members, and, by the holiest considerations, urge them not to lose this blessed occasion of cleansing and purifying the sons of Levi. Are any of the godly among them?" speaking to Proctor.

"I can't say any have been regenerated," was the reply, "but talk low," pointing to Shepard and Montrose.

"Good," continued Allgrace, not understanding the hint, and feeling in the mood for sermonizing. "Now, provided, I say, Brother Proctor—ah! that's the main thing, provided, I say, there be in them this encouraging sign of a righteous disposition; and every godly man would have it—I mean the wish to pass so righteous a bill; though the outward man doth offend occasionally, which is the case, you know, I suppose it may be said of them as Paul did of

himself, 'To will is present with me, but how to perform that which is good I find not.' They have not yet found—their time by election not being come, and all they want is godly men—such men as will blow the trumpet loud and clear in the pulpits, and rebuke the iniquity which is abroad—and great! great is it, brother."

"Yes, that is all," said Shepard to Montrose; who, sitting together in the dark, were not seen by Allgrace and Doolittle. "But, how happens it, that, where two such pulpit trumpet blasters are, there iniquity most abounds? One would have supposed that the din and clatter they made, would have sent old Satan howling to hide himself among the papists in St. Mary's; or, perhaps among the prelatists in Jamestown."

"Is there any leading member among them?" continued Allgrace.

"There is one," said mine host, "of great influence, and he's resolved to lay this trap, and snare the parsons."

"I'd like much, Brother Proctor, to see this worthy member. It beseemeth that the word of exhortation, if spoken to him by me, would be a word in season."

"I fear," said Proctor, laying his hand on Allgrace, who was in the act of entering the room, "that—that—that his flesh hath the better of his spirit to-night," meaning he was drunk, "but I'll tell him you are here."

"I could laugh at what I see," said Montrose to Shepard, "if I did not see in the movement now going on an attempt to bring sorrow and poverty to the houses of the good and earnest clergy in the province. It is provoking that such beasts as these law-makers, and such foxes as Father Hunter and Friend Tobias, and such a nondescript as this whitewashed puritan, should have it in their power to get up a clamour against the best men in the province, and ruin them and their families. How unlike," continued Montrose, "that beautiful bay yonder!" pointing to the bay, on which the rising moon threw its beams, "is the heart of man! There its bosom reflects light only, but man's bosom seems disturbed, dark, and at times repulsive."

"True," replied Shepard. "Even so, friend Montrose, but, like that bay, which, under a shining surface hides the shark, and other monsters of the deep; so does man's heart, under a fair outside, and a face dressed to deceive, and under promises and speeches, (as you will find one day, what I

know,) made only for the ear; hide tempers that are more merciless than the shark; and propensities more hideous than the slimy snake and scaly monsters who crawl out from their oozy bed."

We stated that Allgrace wished to see the influential member. The innkeeper went in, and whispered to the latter, whose name was Whitter, that the pious Mr. Allgrace wished to see him.

"Allgrease," asked one of the members, hearing the name incorrectly, "what does the crop-eared fellow want?"

"Mr. Allgrace," replied mine host, raising his voice, "wishes to see Mr. Whitter." Now Whitter had lost more money than he could conveniently spare, and he was out of humour, and being, besides, under spirituous excitement, felt quarrelsome. He forgot, also, that Proctor had said it was the pious Mr. Allgrace, and his dignity, as the leader of a party in the assembly, was offended, that an obscure individual, whom he had never heard of, instead of waiting upon him, should ask him to get up, and go out to receive him.

"I move, gentlemen," said Whitter, with much assumed dignity, "that the sergeant-at-arms bring before our honourable body the puppy who has insulted one of its members, and the body itself."

"I second that motion, by the ——," said a member present, rising with difficulty, "and I, yes, sergeant-at-arms, will have him here in no time," stammering as he spoke.

There was now an uproar. All were ambitious to be sergeant-at-arms, and under the maddening influence of drink, "I'll go—I'll go,"—burst from many lips. Over went the table. Down rolled and smashed the bottles and tankard, and tumblers. Away flew the cards, and mine host, losing thought, for the moment, of his friends Allgrace and Doolittle, (after whom he would have looked if he had been half as pious as he professed to be,) was so considerate, in the meanwhile, as to pocket the gold and silver pieces, which were scattered about the floor; being the amount on the table which the gamblers had staked.

Some of the members, after staggering to the door, fell out. Others, mistaking the back door for the front one, went round the house, bawling, "Where is he?" While

about half of them, with Whitter at their head, came in a body to the front door.

"Where is the beggarly Mr. Greasy?" said Whitter, his fists clenched as he spoke. "Is it you?" looking hard and fiercely at Shepard, who stood just outside with Montrose.

"Me?" asked Shepard, in a clear, ringing tone, stepping into the light, so as to bring his person distinctly into view. "Who dares to say I am beggarly? or aught but what is honourable?" and changing his tone to one of grateful surprise, "Why, friend Whitter, this is an unexpected pleasure. And you, worthy friends, I greet you all a cordial welcome," extending his hand to each one by turns, and which was kindly and cordially received.

"We want a crop-eared Mr. Greasy," replied Whitter.

"He can't be either an acquaintance of yours, or mine," said Shepard, slightly smiling. "You and I keep better company. Perhaps you want a reverend Mr. Allgrace? He is tripping it yonder, like frightened deer before the hounds," pointing to Allgrace, who, as usual when in company with Doolittle, headed the retreat as well as the charge.

They took the alarm,—were making for the stable, and intended to get their horses, and push on to Annapolis.

Whitter and his five half drunken allies raised the hue and cry, "Catch him, catch him," and hurried in pursuit. Montrose and Shepard, laughing heartily, followed after.

"The first act of the drama," said Shepard, half seriously, "'the Bill to Trap the Parsons,' closes with the falling of 'the godly' Mr. Allgrace into the snare he had prepared for others."

Doolittle and Allgrace, nearly breathless from fear, arrived at the stable, and without examining whether they had their own horses, (for the business was too urgent to be choice,) mounted, and were riding off, just as Whitter and his confederates gained the gate of the stable-yard. The situation of the pursued was critical, but not desperate. Men of tact would have held a parley with the pursuers, and might have come off on easy terms. Brave men, finding half a dozen men at the gate cutting off their retreat, would either have leaped the fence, or forced their way through their assailants. But Doolittle was a nose of wax, and Allgrace, like a certain long-eared animal, could only make a

noise. The horse on which Doolittle was mounted, was an unmanageable beast, which one of the members had rode there, and, being frightened by the clamour, finding the gate closed, he went over it. Recovering himself, the horse ran towards the ferry; and, instead of taking the firm but circuitous road, the wilful beast pushed hard for the ferry through the woods, and next an intervening morass. And such was the furiousness with which he ran, that the arch-fiend seemed to be verily a horse saddled and bridled, and he, Doolittle, as verily mounted upon him. One plunge more, however, and the horse anchored himself, and perhaps the rider, for the night at least, in the mire. Allgrace's horse was not even inclined so to move, but began to back and kick; though the rider, in his anxiety to clear himself, seemed willing to leap the gate, or do any thing. Allgrace was scared as he had never been before; and, as they were climbing over the gate, and would soon take hold of him, his friend Doolittle not being at hand to help, ("so tried," said he, "are the saints,") Allgrace kicked the horse and struck him with the bridle, sweating profusely and trembling in his seat all the time. But the contrary animal backed and backed, where Allgrace could not tell; and then, rearing up, threw Allgrace into a horse-pond, (thinking, it seemed, he needed a cleansing). Now into this pond flowed the washings of the yard and stable.

Doolittle's leap and his Gilpin race were seen in part, and a shout was sent after him, Whitter remarking at the time, "He's on the devil-horse I hired."

But when they saw Allgrace's mishap, heard the splash into the water,—not only a shout, but a hurrah of exultation went up; and Allgrace, soaking with his unfragrant wetting, had partially risen, when three or four men laid hold upon him, and, in despite of his most moving expostulations, would have handled him unmercifully, had not Montrose and Shepard interfered. But Whitter and his confederates still insisted that Allgrace should return to the tavern, make a formal apology before their honourable body, and then submit to such punishment as they should inflict.

Trembling and cast down, Allgrace walked with head lowly stooped, between Shepard and Montrose,—his body guard,—feeling more like a culprit about to undergo a dreadful sentence, than as the pious Mr. Allgrace, who was

about to exercise his gifts, and, by a word spoken in season, as he himself was foul as muck-water, feelingly remind the law-makers how they might "purify the sons of Levi."

On the way Montrose whispered to Shepard: "They will kill this poor simpleton. We are more than a match for these drunken fellows, though six to two."

Shepard smiled incredulously. "Take care! These men have just liquor enough to be ready for a fight. If you will be Don Quixote, I, Sancho, will retreat. But wait awhile. A thorough scare will help the puritan."

At this moment a strong blaze of light burst upon them, and the tavern was seen to be on fire. Allgrace was, of course, forgotten in the confusion that ensued; and, while all hastened to the place of conflagration, Allgrace ran back to the stable, led out his own beast, and Doolittle's, which he bridled and saddled, and mounting on the first, and leading the other, pursued his way to the ferry; happy to escape the clutches of the very men whose righteous dispositions he had a few minutes before commended. He would not now have said, as he did then, that they transgressed only because how to perform that which was good was not always present with them. Their drunkenness he thought very, very pardonable if they were plotting the injury of the parsons, but it was heinous when it led them to seek his injury. Self-interest is a sad perverter of truth.

Boniface Proctor secured all he could of his property from the raging element. The members arrived in time to rescue two of their number from the flames, who were sleeping unconsciously just inside the door.

Shepard and Montrose, not caring to sleep out of doors again, rode towards the ferry over the South river. On their way they descried Doolittle so surrounded by the tide that he must spend the night there. Allgrace they passed on the causeway. He said he was much concerned for Doolittle, and that the conflagration was a signal miracle which Providence, in witness of his righteousness, wrought for his deliverance; forgetting in this remark, that Providence would have been much more apt to have interfered by softening the hearts of those wicked men, than by destroying the property of one of "the godly," as he, Allgrace, considered Proctor to be. He next signified, as the first wish now with him, to cross over with them; observing that "some-

body on the morrow will probably take care of Brother Doolittle ; surely they will."

"No," said Montrose indignantly ; "if you are so base as to attempt to cross, and leave this poor man, your friend, to his fate in the marsh, I'll make you and your horse take to the river."

"I would come by all means, Mr. Allgrace," said Shepard. "Brother Doolittle dying here in the marsh ; sister Dorothy will have a snug property, and becoming then Dorothy Allgrace, you will have such creature comforts as will enable you to practice denials, and eschew all fleshly vanities, after taking possession of the vineyard of the Lord in St. Mary's." Allgrace hung his head, guilty and vexed, and the friends observed, (for the moon shone brightly,) that this sorry specimen of a pastor of Christ's flock turned very pale. But he did not move, and as they were crossing the ferry, they saw him still sitting on his horse, and here they left him ; and may every other wolf in sheep's clothing, like Allgrace, stand on a causeway which a full tide surrounds, and a deep river in front forbids to pass ; and let such know that, surer than any flood-tide, God's wrath will overwhelm him, who, harnessed in the ministry of Christ, fears to stand his ground ; and let such further know that the Mussulman can more easily walk over the gossamer bridge, that spans the river of hell ; and Allgrace can more easily ford a deep and dangerous river, than an ambassador of Christ can pass to "the haven where he would be," either by cheapening the word of God, lowering its terms, or omitting, in deference to "the multitude who run to evil," "to declare the whole counsel of God."

Late that night our friends reached Annapolis, and a few days thereafter they talked of their plans for the future.

"Without Mrs. Annie," said Montrose, "you will soon tire of salarizing barbers to dress your beard and cue, and blackies to dust your hose and doublet. This hey-deyness of youth, that bubbles over the cup of life, is all froth ; the effervescence of animal spirit, which will leave in the bottom discontent and weariness. Without her you will soon be sick of strutting about in St. Mary's and Annapolis, with hands under your lappels."

"Death, man," said Shepard, starting up, "what mean you ? to drive me mad ? No, rather let my carcase fly on the top of the old State House, the food of buzzards, and my

anatomy swing there in the wind ; a fit symbol of the ancient city. This must not be. She must be mine No, Charles." Montrose started, and standing as he spoke, Shepard straightened his tall and athletic person ; while his voice became solemn, of a heavy base. "No. I am sick of this eternal bubbling over of mere froth. I am sick of seeming to be the mere foam that dances on the wave. I am sick of keeping barbers and valets to take care of my outer man ; when my inner man is worth but little. Talk not to me of weariness and discontent at the bottom of the cup ; if in that cup I see not the face of Annie smiling upon me ; if I gather not around me once more, a portion at least, of those who stood with me by my father's hearthstone ; then will I fill that cup, and drink it dry with a poison, whose single drop will send Augustus Shepard to the land of shades."

"At the bottom of that cup you will see more than Mrs. Annie smiling, if you'll follow the course pointed out to you by Providence," was the reply from an unknown person, and quarter, which immediately followed upon Shepard's remark. The tone of voice, though just loud enough to be heard, was remarkably distinct. Shepard trembled, and looked at Montrose for an explanation ; and the latter, no less amazed, looked round the room, as if the unknown speaker might be concealed in it.

"I'll find out the ghost," said Shepard with passion, "and make him know he's no wizard after all."

"Come, come,—this is some foolery," said Montrose, trying to detain him, "not worth the investigation."

But, without waiting to say good night, Shepard hurried out.

As he went out, Shepard proceeded hastily to the room adjoining that of Montrose, and to the right of it. The door was fastened. He knocked, no one offered to open it, and, being confident that the voice he heard came from that room, he was incensed at the attempt of the inmate to play upon his fears or credulity, and assaulting the door vehemently with a kick he forced it open. Judge his amazement on entering to find the Reverend Mr. Allgrace, not at his devotions, good reader, nor, as King David advised, exercising himself reading in the law of God at night, but sitting beside the landlady of the hotel with her hand in his ; and saying things which Shepard knew were not meant for

his ear. At any other time Shepard would have greatly relished the discovery. The person, whose voice he heard was not in this room, and, muttering a half apology for intruding on so tender a scene, Shepard retired.

"The saint and our hostess," he said to himself, "must have been deeply absorbed not to have heard me at the door, or perhaps the noises in this house deceived them as well as myself." What were their feelings, amazement and conduct on Shepard's intrusion, we are not informed.

"I am not to be thus baffled," said Shepard, and he stopt, and asked himself, where else could the voice have proceeded. He then remembered that the room of Mr. Montrose adjoined also one to the left of it, and that the partition between the two rooms was not plastered, but merely boarded; and through such a partition he knew sound would easily travel. It must be this room to the left, and thus concluding, he lost no time in pushing his inquiry. He knocked and the door opened. Shepard started back, and was both disconcerted and disappointed when Mr. Delafield presented himself. Shepard had not been let into the secret that Montrose's strange friend was his father; circumstances probably having prevented this communication from Montrose.

"Mr. Shepard," said Mr. Delafield, rising, and speaking with a little effort. Shepard bowed, and was in the act of withdrawing, saying to himself, "I must be mistaken again," but Mr. Delafield motioned to him to be seated, and shut the door. Shepard, without knowing exactly why, obeyed, and unconsciously his thoughts wandered away from the purpose which had brought him to the room; for there was a certain something in the stranger before him, his voice, his manner, his face, his features, all, that awoke feelings, which he could neither understand nor describe. Still this certain something, which was nothing else but an association with the past, that the stranger's manner, voice, and appearance called up, did not suggest to Shepard the shadow of the thought that before him stood his father. Shepard, therefore, with this strange association rivetting him to his seat, looked at the stranger, and asked himself "What can he want with me?"

"I have understood," said Mr. Delafield, "that the late Mr. Shepard of St. Mary's was your uncle. You were his nephew by your father, John Shepard, his brother, I suppose?"

"My father was not named Shepard," Shepard was about to say; but contented himself with rather asking a question than replying to that which was put to him.

"You knew my uncle, I infer, then?"

"I did," replied Mr. Delafield, "and would that I had known less of him; for, connected as we were, it was painful to vary so diametrically as we did from each other."

"Connected with my uncle!" said Shepard, looking surprised, "Pray how?" and he gazed intently on Mr. Delafield, as if, by close inspection of him, he would find out for himself.

"We were children of the same mother, but of different fathers," said Mr. Delafield, "and I presume you must have heard him speak of me. But it matters not—" and he paused awhile as if he waited for breath, or resolution to go on. "You have not been a father, Mr. Shepard, and know not a father's anxiety even to wretchedness about his children; and especially cannot know what I must have suffered when, besides losing my wife, I had to mourn over the hasty departure, never more to return to the domestic hearth, of my eldest son."

Shepard started, and he muttered to himself, "Strange his son was as wilful and as wicked as I have been. But you have not told me," added Shepard, "how you are connected with my uncle."

"True!" replied Mr. Delafield, "not exactly; for I had a uterine brother, who was connected to your uncle as I was, but he is dead," and Mr. Delafield was in the act of saying, for the thought was trembling for utterance on his lips, "and you have not told me how the late Mr. Shepard of St. Mary's was your uncle," when Shepard, catching at Mr. Delafield's last explanation, and connecting it with his former remark that he had to mourn the hasty departure of his son from home, besides the death of his wife, felt himself overcome by feelings he wished to give expression to, but which almost deprived him of speech. He was only able to ask,

"Did any domestic difficulty drive that son from home?"

"None that I know of," replied Mr. Delafield, answering with emotion, and then checking himself, he continued. "Perhaps he had; I may have been stern; I may have given him cause to complain; I may have allowed a father's fondness to sleep in my endeavour to maintain a father's authority. Still, still, I meant his good," and choking as

he spoke, "I surely meant not to have driven him from his father's fire-side," and like a child Mr. Delafield wept.

"Would you know that son again?" Shepard trembled to ask him, and this man of the world, whose nerves seemed generally to be iron, and whose resolution uniformly carried him right onward to his object, faltered; the words would not pass his lips; but he gazed intently and fixedly on Mr. Delafield for some minutes; and by this time, and not till then, did he command himself sufficiently to ask the question:

"Would I know my son again? Could a father forget his child? A nursing mother may not hers. Perhaps fathers have not the hearts of mothers. But I ought to know my boy, my son, my own absent, ill-treated, but ever-mourned and deeply and truly loved, as this poor anguish-wrung heart can love; my own Augustus," and he clasped his hands in agony.

"Then, then bless him and forgive him," said Shepard, falling at his feet. "I am, I was this Augustus."

Mr. Delafield started, breathed quick and hard, and the first idea with him was that Shepard was imposing upon him, the next thought was, this news is too good to be true, and the last was an effort to collect his thoughts, and know what he was doing, Shepard still kneeling.

"My Augustus," he continued, as if talking to himself, "ought to be tall and spare, muscular and not fleshy. His hair was dark, his eyes deep set, his lip his mother's, and his forehead hers exactly."

"Like this," said Shepard, producing his mother's miniature.

"My Julia! ah! how came this? It is—no—yes. I cannot dream. Like, very, very. It is my son, and I, I am his father," and Mr. Delafield threw his arms about him and cried like a child.

It was late in the night when Shepard returned to his room, and we must leave untold the much that passed between father and son in explanation of the past, and let our readers imagine how differently Shepard felt from what he had done hitherto. Suffice it to say, that Mr. Delafield was much worked upon by the shock which he had received, while Shepard—though much younger, being more taught to school his feelings, and being, in a measure, assisted in this endeavour by the circumstances which occurred in the interim, and which we propose to relate in the next chapter—

was able to act outwardly to Montrose and others as if nothing had happened.

Our readers hardly need to be informed that the voice which Shepard had heard did not come from Mr. Delafield ; and hence, whence came it, must still be a mystery which time may solve.

CHAPTER XXVII.

ANNAPOLIS—GOVERNOR SEYMOUR—FENDALL.

"When you get to a glorified flunkey in lace, plush, and aiguillettes, wearing a bouquet that nobody wears, a powdered head that nobody wears, a gilt cocked hat only fit for a baboon—I say the well constituted man can't help grinning at this foolish, monstrous, useless, shameful caricature of a man which Snobbishness has set up to worship it."

THACKERAY.

ON a neck of land which is formed by Acton's Creek on the south, and Covey's Creek on the north, and on the southern side of the river Severn at its mouth, where it empties into the Chesapeake Bay, lies the city of Annapolis. Here, about the year 1650 some Puritans, a part, it is believed, of Elder Durand's congregation, and the others a more recent importation from Boston, established a government very like the Judaical hierarchies of Plymouth and Saybrook. In honour of Lady Anne, Lord Arundel's daughter, who married Cecilius, Lord Baltimore, the county was called Anne Arundel, and, in compliment to Queen Anne, the town had just been named Annapolis. In 1694, the seat of government was removed from St. Mary's, and, in the year of our narrative, owing to the partiality of his excellency, Governor Seymour, it was made a city. And who could say it might not, in due time, rival the mighty cities of the world? For no wonder that Rome, in time, attained such a zenith of greatness, when, as far back as seven hundred and fifty years before Christ, Romulus laid out its foundations on the Palatine mount. Nor was it surprising that London could boast, at the time we are describing, its almost million of inhabitants, for it was a place of note in the first century after Christ, and yet eleven hundred years it was not of note enough to be mentioned in the Domesday Book, minute as this book is in describing the towns and cities of England, and the Latin diploma of any dunce of a graduate is a more imposing document than the narrow parchment charter of five lines which William the Norman gave to it. No wonder, either, that Paris became, in time,

the emporium of fashion and dictatrix of manners. In the reign of the great Julius it was a sorry village called Lutetia, covering only an island on the Seine, with Hottentotish houses, and round at top as a late kind of hats which are copied after one worn by the great humbug of the present day. And yet Paris grew so slowly that eight centuries afterwards it was pillaged as many as three times by the Normans. Now Annapolis had begun no more humbly than these great cities. Admit that its Puritan founders were an unperiwigged set of canting gospellers, with cropped hair and Geneva gowns, still, they were quite as genteel looking, certainly more "godly," than Romulus and his barbarians. They would have compared also advantageously with the heathenish and red face painted Britons, and the beaver like islanders of Lutetia. Annapolis, besides, came into being under more favourable auspices. The world was waking up. Whig and Tory politics ran high in England, and the political regeneration of the world seemed near at hand. One thing was clear; Annapolis had shot ahead faster than either of these cities in the same time. In about fifty years from its first settlement it had become the seat of government; and about sixty years from the same event it had been incorporated as a city. What might not a beginning so unprecedented promise? It was now a thriving, fussy little town, with over fifty dwellings. The church of St. Anne's, built by Thomas Fielder, architect, was a neat brick edifice in the form of a T, and the State House, also of brick, was a building in an oblong square, which a lofty cupola surmounted, and around which cupola ran balustrades that were furnished with seats, in order that the honourable the members of the Council, the lower House of Assembly, and the citizens, might, at their ease, luxuriate in the sea breeze from the bay side, and, especially, enjoy the fine water view which the harbour presents. There was also a building called the armory, wherein were deposited the offensibles of the province. Here were kennelled those dogs who generally bite when they bark. Rome was saved by geese in the capitol—Annapolis might be indebted for her safety to mouth-pieces which more than hissed. In the armory, also, was a spacious ball-room—proh pudor puritanism!—where the gentlemen and ladies danced at public balls, and from the vaulted roof of which was hung a gilt chandelier, and on the walls of which were full length portraits of Queen

Anne and Lord Baltimore. Now, as might be expected, like some individuals who, having risen suddenly from obscurity, cannot wear their honours meekly, but take great airs upon themselves, so this little city—having thus sprung up, almost magically it seemed, on the Severn river—now tossed its nose in the air, and became ashamed to own its former more humble names of Proctor's land, Severn town, or the more assuming one of Providence, which last name was given to it by Richard Bennett and his Puritan followers. And now, forsooth, it must be called Annapolis, the city of Anne. This last name argued that the little city was casting off its plebeianism, and aiming after the courtliness of better life and more refinement, which it afterwards attained, being ambitious to shine in this new world as the cynosure of wealth and fashion. By discarding the name of Providence it seemed willing to let die the memory of "the round-heads" who settled it—a commendable feeling—and by tolerating the round-heads in her community, she showed a desire to do better by them than was done by them in Jamestown. The cavaliers of Virginia drove those Puritan boors to Maryland, while the little city hoped to polish them, supposing, perhaps, that the next generation, though descended from Puritans, would have enough of the cavalier blood by inter-marriage to redeem it.

Shepard and Montrose met the next morning. The former at first looked sad, and the latter was much perplexed to know whence and how came the voice which had so startled them the night before. But Shepard's manner did not invite raillery, or inquiry; and the two were silently breakfasting, when a servant entered with a note from his excellency, the Governor, inviting Mr. Shepard to dine with him that day. Shepard returned a formal and courteously worded acceptance, and the servant, with hat off, and bowing very low, retired. He then remarked to his friend that in a few minutes the drum would beat the calling of the Assembly, and, as the two houses met at 8 in the forenoon, adjourned at noon, met again at 2 in the afternoon, and broke up for the day at 4, P. M., that he would take him with him at 5 that afternoon to call on the Governor. "Now," continued Shepard, "I've sent to Monsieur Riboteau, the tailor from Paris, for the suit I ordered some time ago. My clothes still retain, I fear, the odour of the Irishman's hut. It won't do to appear as I am before his excellency. You know the old saying, 'He that

wears silk, satin, velvet and gold lace, must needs be a gentleman.' Cæsar alone could afford to dress carelessly."

Monsieur Bonbon, the barber, then came in, and the friends submitted themselves to his manipulations. This operation over, Bonbon, a veritable knight of the strap and razor, bowing as only a Parisian barber can, with his hair tortured into the extreme of fashion and his face lit up with smiles and grimaces, said, "Ah! Messieurs, vous voilà maintenant tout à fait à la mode."

Shepard received his suit from Riboteau, and had it on; and, in answer to Montrose's question how he liked it, said, as they were going to call on the governor,

"As Bonbon would say, passablement bien. But I think the small clothes are rather loose. These tailors forget that I have not Governor Seymour's stomachic capacity to stow away a sirloin of beef, half a plum-pudding, and a bottle of Burgundy."

Montrose said, "Come now, tell me more about his excellency."

"You forget," replied his friend, "it does not need a very great man to play the part of Governor in an English colony. True, he and his officials would act the King and his lords in the reception chamber, but the acting is mere acting after all, and bad acting at that. There is no want of tinsel, glitter, bowing, scraping, and indeed of forms enough to perplex a Chinese in the upper ranks; but ah! there is wanting the dignified manner of an English nobleman. Here court etiquette is all a farce; where wiseacres wish to pass for Burleighs and Hydes."

"But the Governor is a Puritan," said Montrose, "and his cabinet is like-minded. How then?"

"He has abjured, therefore, all follies?" said Shepard. "Puritans do not love power, state, office, creature comforts, and pomps and vanities? Not at all. Oh no," laughing. "But then Seymour is not now a private individual. As his excellency he must maintain the dignity of his station. See, here is his residence. We'll walk in," opening the front gate which was some distance from the house, "and the Governor shall speak for himself. You'll see whether his pure mind ever turns from unearthly joys, or his body ever has been pampered, and all to obey a tyrannical custom."

The Governor received them with marked formality and ceremoniousness, and, talking in a loud and pompous tone,

laboured to convince Shepard how much he had at heart the purification of the church.

"It may be effected," continued his excellency, puckering his lips up, and swelling out his cheeks, "if an ecclesiastical tribunal were created with powers to summon ungodly parsons before them, and deal summarily with them on conviction."

"I should be sorry to believe such a court was necessary," interposed Montrose.

"Ah sir, no one more than I," and the Governor sighed and laid his hand on his capacious stomach, "mourns the necessity of such a court. And mine eye-lids have not been closed for many nights in weeping that on me will devolve the unpleasant duty of presiding over it."

"You think, then," continued Montrose, "that the bill before the house will certainly pass?"

The Governor started a little, and looked searchingly at Shepard as if he could best answer his friend's question. But Shepard's face was as blank as an unblotted sheet; choosing to keep his own counsel.

"I would prefer," replied his excellency, "not to be a member of the court. But public opinion, and the public good seem to designate me as the proper person. And, as a high functionary," swelling out his person, "who has no selfish views, I could not decently decline."

Shepard looked significantly at his friend, and said mentally: "I know the meaning of all this cant. He is warmly for the bill, and his fingers burn to wield the rod over the parsons."

In person his excellency was of such a form, as once seen, could not easily be forgotten. He was not above the ordinary height of men; but his body was much over the average size; swelling out like a mainsail filled with wind, and appeared to be stuffed with the good dinners which were so common during the legislative sessions. He had lost his hair, owing, it was said to former excessive indulgence in table luxuries, and a general habit of sensualism. Be this as it may, with his well rounded dumpling figure, rosy face, Eolus-like cheeks, and bald head, (the last only visible when from excitement he would take his wig off,) he was no bad representative of Friar Tuck, even the clerical tonsure being well indicated by the hairless crown when his wig was not on. He looked very unlike one who had used such

abstinence as would bring his flesh in subjugation to the spirit; though no one was canting so much and incessantly on vanities and a carnal mind. And, if in early life he may have had nothing better than "*dura messorum ilia*," he feasted better now; no pig in sunshine, or gourmand with a groaning table before him seemed a better exemplification of physical happiness than his excellency, seated at table with the luxuries of the sea and land within reach, all smoking, savoury, and just ready to be devoured. And his excellency was too much of an epicure, he ate with too keen a relish, and the delicious morsel repaid turning over and over on the tongue too well to be gulped down whale-fashion with Jonah, or Yankee style at his meals. Still he was too mindful of his official dignity to lower himself to bacchanalian intemperance, or unseemly revelry. He could do execution equal to any one with knife and fork; but still in his regular and hearty devotions to oysters, beef, and other table enjoyments, he never forgot to worship Governor Seymour. He was ever present to his own thoughts. Like Brutus and Cassius, who, "*Ubiunque ipsi essent, proetexebant esse rempublicam*," he considered himself as the state, the source of all authority, the one will that said, "Let be," and laws were enacted; the proper object of state and popular idolatry. The little brief authority in which he was dressed had completely turned his head. Opposition to his wishes was in his opinion an offence of *læsæ majestatis*; and, a very Pope temporal, he would fulminate his bulls quite as meekly as do the pretended successors of St. Peter. And as bulls, according to some, came from *bullæ*, a little bladder, his threats were bulls undeniably. For, in place of conversing or talking, he exploded. His words came out in puffs more or less violent; and it is possible that the puff of words, which came from him, relieved him occasionally of the dark humours and disturbing feelings and reflections, which swelled him out as gas does corruption.

Shepard's time was either really or seemingly taken up with the business before the legislature; but he had not yet committed himself on the bill to trap the parsons. The governor's party very much desired this ecclesiastical court bill; and hoped that this engine of tyranny would consist of the governor and three members of his council. A second party did not care much who composed the court, provided the court were created; and the third party was violently

opposed, but on principle and expediency, to the creation of any such tribunal, no matter who were its members; and this party was made up of the friends of the church in the assembly. This third party might hold the balance of power, if they could consistently unite with either one of the others, or manage to bring over to their side either one of the two first mentioned parties. But of doing one or the other of these things there seemed to be no prospect.

The clouds looked portentous for the parsons. Puritanic zeal was not likely to cool, nor its animosity to die. The worldling's indifference would not be roused into sympathy in behalf of a class of men to whom they were obliged by law to pay an annual tax, and whose very profession rebuked him for not denying ungodliness and worldly lusts. The parsons had strong friends in the assembly, but they were in the minority. Nothing was talked of but the doom of the parsons. Witlings ironically toasted them at the taverns. Couplets in bad rhyme were posted at a few of the street corners. The word parsons became the target for jeerings and flings, scoutings and mirth. The parson was caricatured figuring at a horse race with his wig off, and his gown flying in the air; or as the hero in a groggery with his coat off, playing the part of a bruiser; or, with spectacle on nose, and face most demure, (as if the preacher could not have a hearer more tired than himself of his sermon,) he was represented as doling forth to a sleeping congregation a wishy-washy homily, which he had dragged through as far as seventeenthly. And with this effervescence of the popular mind in squibs and caricatures came up a sound more doleful and fearful. A cry of taxation for a privileged class; a cry that the state was burdened for men that bore none of its burdens; a cry that these men, or a part of them, denied by their lives what they professed to preach; a cry that the liberty to worship God according to one's conscience was taken away; this cry, started by Romanist and Quaker, and swelled by Romanist and Quaker, Dissenter and Nonconformist, swept over the province, and seemed to clamour at the doors of the legislative chamber, and demand a hearing. What if it were a cry as false as thousand-tongued rumour! what if its starters and inculcators may have had blistered tongues for speaking it! what if the cheeks of some crimsoned, for their audacious libel on good men and true! This cry came on "as the sound of outbreking

waters;" and some of the clergy, not over-strong in nerve, wished to fly the province. A few only could look on, and undismayed, see in the clamour, not the awaking of an outraged people, but the awaking of that demon misrule, who, with fair words and great promises, sweeps church and state, liberty, life, and property into a terrible vortex.

The bell of St. Annie's Church seemed to toll ominously: having lost its cheerful ringing sound, it was said. The nights had been unusually bright and still, and there was a fearful quiet in the moonlight that shone on the Church, and the dead within its cemetery. The worthy rector of St. Annie's found no heart for study, and did not know how he might read the words of his flock as he moved among them. He called on Colonel Smithson.

"My good sir," said he, "you have influence in the Assembly. Make one of your best efforts. Do not let the church be thus down trodden. Make them to see the evil they are bringing upon themselves, the country, and the church." The colonel shook his head mournfully, and replied:

"I may as well preach moderation to madmen, or with a willow twig seek to stay a torrent in its course. I know the spirits in the house too well. Opposition, I fear, will now but exasperate, and increase the evil."

"You mean then to let them have their own way," asked Parson Lilliston, alarmed and amazed. "And the church is to have only such pastors as a Puritan Governor and ungodly legislature shall think proper to give them!" Colonel Smithson was roused from his wonted indifference, and replied:

"To gratify your reverence I will see to-morrow, if I can either lay this spirit of misrule, or soothe and quiet it down to more temperance."

Parson Lilliston withdrew, thankful even for this promise, and remarked to Parson Gordon, who arrived that evening from St. Mary's, that perhaps something would yet be done to prevent the passage of the bill. Parson Gordon did not seem to think so.

"No man who is half persuaded himself can persuade others. A man's whole soul must be in his subject to carry others along with him.

"I am sick," continued Parson Gordon, "of this apathy on the part of respectable lay members of the church. If they stand back, and come not to the rescue, can we wonder that the rabble rush in the breaches, and storm the citadel?"

Pursuant to his promise Colonel Smithson made an effort for the parsons. His speech evinced much tact. He presented the objections to the bill in a way so as to offend none, and yet showed that the parsons were not quite worthy of proscription and outlawry. The politic colonel admitted that there might be well-founded complaints; but did not think the remedy prescribed in the bill before the house adapted to the disease.

"But admit," argued he blandly, "that the church is brought to bed of a dangerous illness. I doubt very much whether the amputation of so necessary a limb as the ministry, will conduce to her recovery. Time, quiet, cooling draughts, and fresh air, a wholesome current of public opinion," explaining his figure, "may allay and remove this gangrene which, some think, affects the body ecclesiastic." And the colonel appealed to the justice and fairness of the members whether, even allowing one or two clergymen to be justly liable to censure, it was right to include the innocent with them.

The speech accomplished two things: it mollified for awhile some members who were eager to pass the bill instantly, and it lost the colonel nothing with the opposition, for he admitted the evil complained of, and of course allowed that a remedy should be applied as early as it might be practicable; and the opposition only differed as to the remedy proposed. "We will lift up the suppliant hands and bend the feeble knees," said Parson Gordon, coming away from the house with Parson Lilliston, "for vain is the help of man." That evening, the governor's party, waxing bolder at Colonel Smithson's concession, met at the Governor's, and heterogeneous as it seemed to be, the persons so assembled, united all, were in one voice to pass the bill to tax the parsons, and in thinking it would be well to let the governor and his council have the honour of laying the snare.

A Captain Fendall was prominent in the conversation, or consultation, between these worthies, and his prominency was allowed him in deference to his reputation for great singleness of piety; as singleness he certainly had, for he had but one idea; hereby resembling a truly great man, Chief Justice Marshall of our day, in one respect, he did but one thing at a time. The captain, it seems, once heard the remark, the Saviour often wept, but never smiled. Hence his gravity was proverbial, like Dr. Donne, in order that his

outer man might truly represent his inner. Fendall should have had his likeness taken with a winding sheet over him, and only exposing enough of the face to show his eyes closed, and thus the man would seem to see, as he did in truth, but one thing at a time; not seeing at all. In Fendall's opinion the merest trifles were things of great moment; for his mind was never telescopic, but essentially microscopic, as it always magnified; while in a voice between the squealing of a pig and the hoarseness of one with a bad cold, the captain, on the occasion mentioned, enlarged or prosed on the immorality of the parsons.

"Yes! by the powers, and thunder too," interrupted Whitter, the influential member spoken of in the last chapter, "and we mean to put a stop to it. We'll rid the province of an evil that is unbearable. The parsons,—a pretty set!—a bit of piety have they!—a cursed——," and Whitter, forgetting the presence of his excellency, and especially that he might shock beyond endurance the solemn Captain Fendall,—bolted out two or three startling oaths; to prove, perhaps, his anxiety, and at the same time his ability to improve the morals of the clergy.

"I hold in my hand, worthy friends," said his excellency, "a list of such of the parsons as it will be the unpleasant and yet imperious duty of the court to deprive of their livings. Much do I regret that the clergy are not like the apostles, holy, spotless, unimpeachable, pure-minded men. It is bad enough when officials of the state do not carry themselves above reproach; and when they do not, we feel ourselves at liberty, nay more, called on, to expose them. The safety of the state demands that we show favours to none. And we must even do the same if the clergy turn aside; or we shall let the cause of sound morals suffer. What think you, friend?"

"True as my right hand," said Whitter. "If there are any Judases, I say, have at them."

The governor looked much pleased at this assent; and, leaning over with a deferential air, he showed the list to Captain Fendall; and, speaking in an under tone, said to this worthy:

"See here. Grave, very, and weighty charges rest on these. Ah! great, great is the scandal to our holy religion,"—now raising his voice so as to be heard by all; for the governor's good sayings were not breathed in a corner,

but published on the house-tops. "I fear that those who are set on the walls of Israel to watch, have fallen asleep."

"Indeed!" said Fendall, like every other little souled biped, having no more faith in human nature than he was compelled to have; "and who makes the charges?"

"Who?" and his excellency smiled, as much as to say, this was a strange question, for every body makes them. His smile gave the council to understand the charges were endorsed by that very respectable and indubitable individual, every body in general, and that no body in particular was needed. But, blinking his eye so as to catch Fendall's attention, and at the same time sinking his voice, he said:

"I want no better witness than that very godly man, the Reverend Mr. Allgrace."

"Nor I neither," muttered Fendall, satisfied that every public whisper, and extravagant lie, and baseless and malicious invention against the clergy were fully proved; and he felt disposed to say, as did his prototypes of that Master in heaven, for whose cause the clergy were persecuted, "What need we any further witnesses? Away with him. Let him be crucified." And the spirit of the murderers at Calvary appeared to animate the little pandemonium at the governor's. They let themselves out in general and virulent abuse of the clergy of the establishment. They were horrified, so they said to each other, at the want of piety in the clergy! With charity on their lips, they distilled rancour from their tongues. They professed to be shocked at the want of holiness in the clergy, and yet they were tossing from lip to lip the holy names of God, and Christ, and the blessed Spirit, with the utmost irreverence. They were resolved to exterminate "the parsons." They, the legislators, by moral enactments, were about to "strike redemption from the steel." And would not the province be regenerated? Luther, Calvin, and Cranmer, did nothing. The Council of Trent, some think, however, worked out the reformation of the age! Heaven itself was in tumult till Satan and one-third of the heavenly host rebelled, and attempted to put the universe to rights. A piece of cheese is in a most hopeful state when, swarming with animalcular life, its population crawl away from it. The church was to be reformed,—who doubts it? the clergy taught their duty, and a purer Gospel and a purer Christianity would go forth from the spirits that very night assembled at the governor's.

As the conclave broke up, a few went off with Whitter to drink and gamble over the card table; some with Lawyer Brief, the disguised Romanist, to plot in secret so as to make sure what had been agreed upon; while the single-minded Captain Fendall, like Hervey among the tombs, walked by the grave-yard of the new brick church of St. Anne's.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

MR. DELAFIELD'S SPEECH AND ITS EFFECT.

"Arouse thee, youth! it is no human call,
God's church is leagur'd, haste to man the wall,
Haste where the red-cross banners wave on high,
Signal of honoured death or victory."

JAMES DUFF.

As the solemn Captain Fendall walked by the grave-yard of the new brick church of St. Anne's, he exclaimed, "Vanity of vanities, vanity of vanities, all is vanity, saith the preacher," and his Solomonship looked up and saw that he was near this the first brick church in Maryland. His rigid face relaxed into a contemptuous curl as he added,

"They need not have built a brick church to keep up the hoary iniquities of an establishment. A wooden house would have outlasted both the establishment and the principles of this rotten Church of England."

And so think Captain Fendalls now. A certain historian once said the Roman see would be in full vigour when, ages hence, a traveller standing near London bridge, would ask where was London? And a Roman archbishop in this country said he expected to live to see the day when, Protestantism becoming distasteful and unpopular, a Protestant would be carried about the country as a curiosity. What a pity it is that every Scotchman is not a seer! that such benevolent wishes cannot be gratified! and that the Roman intruder into the diocese of New York will not live as long as did Methusaleh!

"Captain Fendall, you are out late this evening," said a voice behind him. Fendall turned and saw Mr. Delafield, who asked if he had been to the governor's, and being answered in the affirmative, by a few questions extracted from the unsuspecting captain all he wished to know from him. Mr. Delafield then turned towards the church, as the captain walked away, and looking up to the belfry, on which the moon shone, he said feelingly,

"May you ring out many a peal, and may these brick walls hear within them for many years the voice of Christ's ambassador! But those peals sound doleful now. Clouds are gathering thick and fast around the church. I could not serve her in the ministry, I may serve her now in a way less honourable, though the world would account it more so. The enemy is at the gates. The infidel shout echoes so loud and deafening, oh! sanctuary of peace! as to almost drown the voice of praise and thanksgiving among such as keep holy day within thy courts. It must not be. He, who gave 'victory unto David,' can, and, I believe will, bless my poor efforts. It must not be, for 'one man shall chase a thousand, and the shout of a king is among them.' It must not be, for 'the race is not to the swift, nor the battle to the strong.' Yet the rabble rout musters large. I fear much they will carry this measure, and our fault is it, and for our sins it will be that the clergy are brought under the heel of Roman and infidel hate. We shall have an inquisitorial court in the province. And what then?" He paused awhile. "Why," speaking to himself, with much emotion, "Jerusalem will be made an heap of stones. Her pastors will be driven from the folds, and time-serving preachers, yea, hirelings indeed, who take their texts from the governor, and their interpretations from any but the Prayer Book and England's best divines, will have the livings of the church. It must not be," he continued, walking quick occasionally, and then halting, he said, "God may in mercy avert the evil if we do our duty."

The next day, bright Phœbus rose from behind a cloud. Heavy mists hung upon the bay of Annapolis, and a darker cloud and a heavier mist hung upon the spirits of the churchmen in the town. With heavy hearts, and faces expressive of anxiety, they broke their fast. In due time the drum-beat was heard calling the two houses to meet for business. Groups had been for some time forming at the principal tavern and the main store on the street near the State House, and children, negroes, and dogs were hurrying with the market people—this being one of the two market days—towards the State House. On rolled the crowd, "a fussy billow of life," a noisy, anxious, troubled, unsteady mass. In it, by twos, walked here and there the honourable members, some talking by jerks, others in a low and thoughtful tone. A few were heard to laugh from fulness of joy, or, as Gold-

smith might say, from "a vacant mind." As the most prominent members in support of the bill to trap the parsons came along by the tavern, they were greeted by a hurrah, and dogs, negroes, and children swelled the shout. Just in their rear walked, with step lofty, and with conscious beauty elate, some fair damsels, the daughters of Puritan parents; but with an air and dress that seemed very unpuritanical, and, as they swept on with their trains dragging behind, or lifted by a servant, out stepped some rakish youths, who, hats off, and with bow most reverent, first greeted, and then accompanied them to the State House. And whence came, and why pressed on, excited, this crowd of grey heads, sturdy manhood, roisterous youth, matron, spinster and belle, round-head and cavalier? Here was a gathering of the clans from the Pocomoke on the eastern shore, to the Elk river at the north, and from the head waters of the Potomac to its mouth, and from east, west, north, and south of the province, to do what? To pass an act of the legislature to make less than two dozen poor, half fed, and indifferently clad clergymen answerable for their misdemeanours, real or supposed, truly charged or slanderously reported, to a lay court of four or more persons, who might be Julians in creed, Jeffreys in integrity, and Neros in mercy.

The drum-beat gave quite a martial air and aspect to this gathering of the provincials, and of the honourable; and puffed with consequence, seemingly intent on great deeds, with face, manner, and step, worthy of sons of Mars, marched the members into the hall, and seated themselves. Fit was it that the drum-beat should summon them, and that the tocsin, which is sounded generally for violence and carnage, should beat its call, when they were met to make war on the ambassadors of the Gospel of peace. The martial clamour ceased—the hurrying of steps here and there—the rustling of dresses, the buzz, the loud remark—the whisper, all were hushed. The lower House was declared, by the speaker in due form, to be ready for business. The gallery and hall were mute and silent when this announcement was made.

The bill creating an ecclesiastical court being in order, a member from Worcester, strongly in the Quaker interest, moved the passage of the bill without further debate; and, no objection being made, there seemed to be a disposition to pass it at once.

Shepard was not in his place, disgusted, perhaps, at the course things had taken; or thinking it, perhaps, labour lost, to put himself in a breach where he would be pressed in an overwhelming mass; or loving his ease or reputation too much to compromise himself by a fruitless contest with a majority, which was held together by the strong ligaments of ignorance, hatred, and interest.

Colonel Smithson was there, and tried to look quiet and satisfied, bland and courteous, though he was ill pleased that his speech had rather emboldened than awed the enemy; and despairing of doing any thing more, though urged strongly by friends of the clergy who were just about him to try again, he refused positively to make another speech. The bill then must pass, and the church in the province be strangled, for the want of a man in that lower house who had nerve and mind enough to say, now, at the fitting time, fitting words in her behalf.

A bright prospect this for Romanist, Quaker, and infidel, et id omne genus, who sympathised with them in animosity to the clergy, or in a craving for their, generally, beggarly livings. And a dark prospect it was for England's Church, and for all who desired the peace of Jerusalem, and the prosperity of Zion.

A few Quakers, noticeable from their plain coats and unperiwigged heads, were seen in the gallery, evidently in high glee. A few coarse jokes, and a wicked wish that fell from one of Whitter's confederates, made some females in the gallery blush, and others tremble; while it called out a titter in that neighbourhood among the members.

In the corner of that gallery, nearly unseen, yet himself seeing every thing, and his ear losing nothing, a close observer would have detected, in a black cassock, the large person of Father Hunter. Ah! that admirable embodiment of Jesuitism thought—and chuckled as he reflected—I have not intrigued for nought. His ever roving and anxious eyes were lighted with unusual satisfaction, and his cloudy face brightened up. Gog and Magog, the trained bands of the open and secret friends of popery, the clamorous and persevering Quakers, the Dissenters and opponents of the Church of England, and every factious person, by his address, in a great measure, (Governor Seymour, for motives of his own, and not suspecting at first that he and Romanists stood shoulder to shoulder against the reformed

Church of England, helping on,) all were formed into a serried phalanx against the clergy.

"Who would have thought that so dark a day would dawn on the province in my time!" exclaimed Parson Lilliston, and starting to go out, as the speaker was about to put the question, he added, "I can do nothing. I must not see what I can't prevent." But as he moved out, he felt his coat held by some one, and he turned to free it from the obstruction.

"Wait," said Mrs. Smith, a devoted member of his flock. "Look yonder."

He did wait, and he did look. Did he dream? No, a sober reality; yea, more, a ground not to doubt again, that, when truth is about to be overborne, and righteousness trampled on, a champion will be found; who, if not able to make victory perch on their standards, can keep the enemy at bay a while. Parson Lilliston saw a tall and spare person, whose head, as Byron said of Southey's, was an epic; an impersonation of lofty and daring thoughts and deeds, whose face beamed with more than usual intelligence, though marked by care and suffering; and who in years had past that sunlit period where hope predominates. This person, as the speaker was about to put the question, asked to be heard.

"Who is he?" exclaimed many.

"Do you know?" asked one member of another.

"No," was the reply.

"Do you? You?" and the question passed on, till it came to Captain Fendall, who sat with his lower jaw dropt about an inch, and with his eyes half closed, and his hands clasped; as if this worthy were then and there busied invoking by prayer the Deity, to send a successful and speedy issue to the bill he had so much at heart. Fendall, being interrogated and roused, looked wildly about him. After awhile he saw who it was that so many were unacquainted with.

"What is he saying?" drawled out Fendall.

"Who is he?" repeated his questioner.

"Who is he? Why, he aint the man to speak in favour of the sons of Levi," replied Fendall, too anxious to know on what side the speaker on the floor could be to be aware he had not replied to the question which was put to him.

"Who is he, man?" urged his interrogator, impatiently.

"He aint no one but Mr. Delafield from Calvert. Who did you think he was?"

Fendall received no reply; his interrogator, and every one else, not excepting even Fendall, being solely intent on the words, which at first tremulously and almost indistinctly fell from Mr. Delafield. He was evidently no orator, and evidently unused and untrained to public speaking. But the sincerity which his face breathed, and his voice and manner indicated, with the respect for the company which a diffident opening implies, and by implying gains attention, made the House willing listeners.

"You are about to create an ecclesiastical court of laymen, authorizing them to hear and to try charges against the clergy of the establishment. Why? For crimes and offences against the laws of the land? No; for we have courts which take cognizance of such. For improprieties which affect them as gentlemen? No; for public opinion regulates in that matter; but for charges which impeach their piety, and affect their usefulness in their holy calling; and, did I not see it so stated in the bill before the house, and hear it loudly, and often trumpeted out of doors, I should not believe it possible that it is gravely proposed to create a court of four laymen to exercise powers over the clergy that are strictly episcopal. Verily this is a stretch of lay solicitude about the morals of the clergy, which shows, either that the laity are the only godly, or that under a pharisaic assumption of regard for the clergy, a deadly blow is aimed at them."

He rang changes on this key, waxing warm, and boldly and unsparingly exposed the malice, which covertly sought, first to degrade the office, and next to destroy the authority of the ministry in the province. He commented on the singular fact that Roman priests, and Quaker and Dissenting preachers might sin with impunity to any extent they pleased, and then enlarged on the hostile feeling in thus singling out the clergy of England's Church, and visiting upon them the wicked, hateful, and unprecedented tyranny of a lay court.

"The good Lord bless us," said Mrs. Smith, the very devout member of St. Anne's parish, who was present in the gallery, "them parson-haters are bad as the high priests who tried the Saviour. Like Herod and his soldiers, they'd whip the parsons, and then crown them with thorns."

"But who," continued Mr. Delafield, "are to try the triers? No one, it seems; though the four members of the court may have taken their degrees in every ungodly schol-

arship. If a court be created to maintain the purity of the clergy, let us also have a court to maintain the purity of the lay inquisitors."

"If they'd make Mrs. Seymour and me judges to try Governor Seymour, who wants to be chief judge in this court agen the parsons," said Mrs. Smith to a lady near, "we'd make him promise to let his wife have her natural rights, and the clergy have theirs too."

"This court is to depose unworthy clergymen, and take away their livings. Indeed!" said Mr. Delafield, with amazement depicted in his face, and expressed in his tone of voice. "What a farce! in the face of day! and calculated to awaken the derision of Christendom;" and to show that he dealt not in rhetorical flourishes, or frothy declamation, he opened the eyes of the wiseacres, by showing from the law books, that such causes, ecclesiastical and spiritual, as grow out of things done or omitted by the clergy in contravention of their vows, the cognizance whereof not belonging to the common laws, are to be determined and decided by ecclesiastical judges, according to the ecclesiastical laws of England. He quoted the great lawyer's opinion that the kingdom was always best governed, and peace and quiet preserved when the justices of the temporal courts and the ecclesiastical judges kept themselves within their proper jurisdiction.

Truth is distasteful to poor erring man, and to simpletons ever unsavoury. But Mr. Delafield, to heal, had first to probe the wound, and now that he was fairly out, he did not flinch; though Whitter and some of his coadjutors frowned, and bristled up.

"Pass this bill," said he boldly and defiantly, "and her majesty will let you know you are assuming powers that belong only to the consistory of the bishop of London. The clergy may be regarded by you as less than the laity, wherefore you would punish them for offences which laymen commit with impunity, and I doubt not but some of the reverend gentlemen, like their master before them, may meekly submit to Herod's and Pontius Pilate's jurisdiction."

He next exposed the ignorance of the advocates of the bill in proposing to deprive the clergy, of their livings and so depose or degrade them, (the two terms were correlative,) on certain charges heard, and as the projected court should determine, proven before it. "And your deposition," he added, "would do no further temporal harm generally, than

relieve some very worthy men of the necessity now laid upon them by their consciences, of preaching the Gospel for what is next to nothing, and of earning crowns of martyrdom, to the everlasting shame of the people of this province. But there are great principles here involved."

He showed then by the books before him, for he had his authorities within reach, that deprivation was not a civil but an ecclesiastical censure; and, being ecclesiastical, was an act which a legislature, being a lay body, could not do.

"The bill seeks to do even more, not only to deprive the clergy of their livings, but of their orders, by deposing or degrading them. This also is an ecclesiastical censure, and by an ecclesiastic to be administered. A legislature, and of course, any court it might create, could have no such power. I knew not that our house was composed of men, all of whom are endowed with holy functions, and empowered to take from unworthy clergymen their orders of priest and deacon. If so I am more honoured in being a member than I supposed." Here there was a laugh.

"But how would you degrade? Let us see the form." And he proceeded to show how the bishop took from the offending clergyman, one by one, the robes, books and the like appertaining to his profession, and then asked, who, in the court proposed, would play the bishop? "The presiding officer, governor perhaps." Well, now what mockery would it be in a layman to say, as is said in the deposition, as the Bible and vestments are taken from the offender, "this and this we take from thee! By the authority of God Almighty, the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost, and of us!" Mr. Delafield made this argument tell with irresistible power. There were very few of his hearers who did not feel that the movers and advocates of the bill, in their animosity to the clergy, were intruding on holy, and to their unholy persons, forbidden ground; that the bill was tyrannical in the extraordinary form it assumed; that it was illegal, being against the laws of England, which swayed in the province; and that it was unscriptural, infidel, and sacrilegious; and they agreed for the time, with Mr. Delafield, if a deposing power could in any way be created, or sanctioned by the Maryland Assembly, that it must be vested in a bishop; and then, and not before, can deposition be effected.

Thus far had the speaker been allowed to go on unchallen-

ged; and, having the floor so long, and using his time and advantage so well, it was feared by some of the members that he would quite turn the current of opinion in the house; at least that he would throw bulwarks so high that the flood of anti-clerical feeling could not flow further. He must then be interrupted, and, if necessary, stopt.

But how? was the question. There was no hour rule, as in legislative bodies now, and hence he must be allowed, so long as he confined himself to the subject in debate, to talk on, and talk out the day. They might call for the question, and by clamour drown his voice, and by the force of a majority pass a bill which they could not defend, and the objections to which they could not meet. And some of the more violent meditated this plan. But this would have been an outrage so flagrant, a discourtesy so unprovoked, against a worthy member who had not exceeded his privileges, an admission of weakness so evident, that they durst not attempt it. Stop him then they could not. But he was manifestly no public speaker. Once committed on a subject, and the ice broken, and his mind found ideas and words; but he seemed to be nervous; and an interruption, by a cross question, or plausible reply thrown in for a few minutes here and there, might embarrass and defeat him eventually. And Lawyer Brief had just the impudence to play this manœuvre. With a face bland as assurance could make it, and a bow as graceful as might be expected from a paddy who mistakes servility for civility, and with a voice in keeping, and being indescribable, must be inferred, he begged leave to say a word or two, which he doubted not his honourable friend had overlooked in the inevitable haste of an earnest argument. "When our wheels are well greased, and we are going with a furious momentum, we have not time to pick up pennies by the way, not time even to see them. I travelled after my friend less rapidly, and what he did not, perhaps could not see, I gathered." The little attorney then stated that they were doing no new thing in the province, but only what colonial legislatures have always supposed they might do; and he said, that in South Carolina, less than four years before, the assembly created a court for the adjudication of ecclesiastical cases, which consisted of twenty laymen; and Brief asked, if the Charleston Assembly could give a lay court of twenty ecclesiastical power, could not the assembly at Annapolis give a lay court of four the same power?

Brief then sat down, and Mr. Delafield, who had been standing all the time, and seemed a little put out by the interruption, might have been discomposed, if any other but Brief, or a Romaniser, had been the interrupter. But his dislike to Romanism and Jesuitism was so strong that, once roused, the old man tremulous became the old man eloquent, with nerves of iron, and voice as clear as the hunter's horn. He therefore, and much to his opponent's dismay, proceeded to prove that this lay court in South Carolina was no sooner created than both Churchmen and Dissenters complained of it. They addressed a memorial accordingly to the House of Lords, and set forth that the ecclesiastical government of that province belonged to the Bishop of London; that "the lords voted an address in which," they represent said lay court to try ecclesiastical matters to be against the charter, and the law of the realm, and the Constitution of the Church of England. Whereupon her majesty nullified the bill and the court it created.

"These Churchmen preach dangerous doctrines for our times," said Captain Fendall, musing. "They won't let people or king meddle in their matters. I've heern of all this independency before. We law-makers would come here to no purpose, if we couldn't set the parsons to right as well as other folks." And it is not a safe doctrine to preach at any time, but it is nevertheless a true one; and truth is not to be measured by expediency. If the clergy could not be set to rights by certain self-constituted regulators, these regulators would have no vocation.

Mr. Delafield heard not the captain's reflections. His head and heart soared aloft. His course was starlit, and, if the murmurs from the Roman and Dissenting side of the house reached him, they no more turned his course than the buzz of a city does that of an eagle who soars nearly cloud-high above it. He went on to show that the clergy were called of God as was Aaron, and hence answerable for ecclesiastical misdemeanours only to an ecclesiastical superior.

"Alas! my worthy friend," soliloquized Parson Lilliston, "the enemies of the church have bent their bow, and made ready their arrow, and they won't hear to having their hunt spoiled, though it should be proven to them that the clergy are not beasts of the forest, but servants of the great King."

The morning was now well past; a few minutes more, and

the house would adjourn. But he must close his argument this morning, and then in the afternoon, if he felt able, end with such appeals as would clinch his forenoon efforts. He hastened then to say, that the bill assumed in the court proposed the powers of the crown, no less than those of a bishop. "Thus, the right to minister in a particular place, and there take a living, needs induction by a bishop, which invests with the living, and nomination by the crown, who is the patron paramount, or by some patron whose right came remotely from the crown; but in this province the governor claims both the right of the crown to nominate a clergyman to a parish, and the right of a bishop to invest him with the charge of it; and now it is proposed that this lay court, playing the part of parliament, king, and bishop, shall take away livings from clergymen."

"I opine," said Lawyer Brief, with his ready craft, "as the Church of England is an establishment, and hence the creature of the state, that the legislature can take away the livings from the clergy. For, Mr. Speaker, what the state made the state can unmake."

This argument, flimsy as it was, took with shallow brains and strong prejudices. Mr. Delafield knew this fact, and instead of an elaborate argument to show that, by enjoying the protection of the legislature, the church did not become its creature,—he carried the war into Carthage against Brief.

"The Church of Rome," said he, "is the established church in Italy, France, Spain, and Portugal; but does my friend from St. Mary's allow that, not St. Peter, but Cæsar, or the civil power, has the disposal of the ecclesiastical benefices of those kingdoms? Is the Church of Rome there but the creature of those governments?"

The appeal hit hard on the attorney, and he was silent.

An adjournment was now moved, the hour having arrived, and not a little to the relief of a few did they withdraw from a place where truths most unsavoury had been dressed up and forced down their shallow gullets, to a tavern where, according to Eden Cook, gent., a cotemporary, assembled,

"Some to get drunk, and some to eat
A swinging share of country treat."

The medley of Romanists, Quakers, and the like, thus banded together against "the parsons," came out of the house feeling much less martial than they did as they entered; and it is possible that their zeal and courage needed pota-

tions deep to get up to the martial fervour. Too brief seemed to many of them the recess between the morning and afternoon meetings, only from noon to two o'clock,—too brief it certainly was to swallow down the unpleasant things they had heard in the morning, rally their spirits, rally their forces, and renew the battle.

The interim, therefore, was not unfavourable to Mr. Delafield. He retired to his chamber, and there tried to recruit his nearly spent energies for a final and decisive effort, till the drum-beat, and the slamming of doors, and pacing of feet in the passages, and loud talking made him to know that there was other and harder work before him, than "a little more sleep, a little more slumber, a little more folding of the arms to sleep."

Having shown that the bill before them was against all law and precedent, Mr. Delafield knew that he had not done all to turn the tide of unkindness which ran so strong against the clergy. It was now necessary to enlist the kind feelings of the house in their favour. He therefore spoke of the clergy as from the first the friend of the people. To the poor the gospel was preached. To relieve the wretched ever had been their pride. The manse of "the parson," from the earliest times, had been open to the stranger and the friendless, knowing full well that he must be given to hospitality. And pursuing this theme, he said :

"Whence came the parliament? The clergy were members of it under the Saxon heptarchy, and on to this day, by the bishops, who are the lords spiritual of the upper house, they have continued to give to England that legislature in which the voice of an outraged people has spoken freely, and rarely without effect. When mail-clad barons claimed that the poor man's wife, daughter, and son were his vassals, bound to submit to his lusts, to follow him to the wars, the clergy alone dared to command the brutal noble to forbear.

"The clergy could protest, yea, beard monarchy in his high places, when others were afraid even to breathe their murmurs. Their kingdom, they knew, was not of this world, and, looking to a master above to reward or punish, they acted on their Lord's precept, 'Fear not him who only can kill the body, but rather fear him who can destroy both soul and body in hell.' You think much of your Magna Charta, and justly esteem it the palladium of England's liberties;

but to whom are you indebted for it? To the bishops of that day. When King John in Westminster hall, before the nobility and bishops, swore to observe the charter, the bishops had the courage to extinguish the candles which they held in their hands, and to say in a loud tone, 'Thus let him be extinguished, and stink in hell, who violates this charter.' Brave words were these to be spoken to the face of monarchy. Brave words were these to be spoken by men whom it has become fashionable in certain circles to decry and persecute as in league with the oppressors of our race."

"I thought before now," said the solemn Captain Fendall to a member at his left elbow, "that a man must be born again to do what was right, and that where he aint regenerated he won't do it."

Very true, captain, by the grace of God only can we do, yea, think even the thing that is right. But, where we have not the ministry of reconciliation to preach the pure word of God, and by the sacraments and worship of the sanctuary to keep us in that way, and build us up in the faith, we should most certainly want the grace of regeneration, and the new birth unto righteousness, either in the church's or the worldling's sense of the term.

"I like that fellow," said Whitter, whispering to one of his coadjutors. "And hang me if this aint a dirty business we are at."

"Well! well!" said Captain Fendall, the Puritan, overhearing him, "we must not be nice when we are acting for the good of the people. The Pharisees were, friend Whitter, a very nice class. They made clean the outside of the cup and platter. We must purge our consciences, friend, from dead works, and what is this but to purify the sons of Levi?"

Thus far, Mr. Delafield's remarks had been meant for the members of the House generally, and he was satisfied that an impression had been produced favourable to the parsons. There was a nervous fidgettiness in the manners of the governor's party, and many faces were turned upwards in confidence to Mr. Delafield, which had sided with the movers of the bill. If now, the members of the Church of England could be roused to step boldly forward, and make the parsons' cause their own, Governor Seymour's party might be driven to the wall. Hence, to call out the members of the Church of England to lead the phalanx, he spoke of them as athletes of Christ, whose baptismal vow bound them to

carry themselves stoutly as much in opposition to this bill as in any other contest with sin, the world, and the devil.

"I must interrupt the gentleman," said the member from Worcester, boiling with uncontrollable rage. "My friends and self cannot allow that we are so near of kin, as he states, to sin, the world, and the devil."

"No doubt you think so," continued Mr. Delafield, "and, covering up the iniquity of your real motives by the miserable and pellucid pretext to help the cause of sound religion, you have persuaded yourself, as you would others, that you do not design the ruin of the clergy of the establishment. I know, however, you do, and cry, therefore, to the rescue. Members of the church must not allow the infidel host to defile her sanctuary, and cast her holy things unto dogs." He paused. "Why? What care we legislators for opinion, if it be not a sound, healthy, and moral public opinion? Is any one here afraid to do his duty? put his feet on this hole of the asp, and thus forbid the cockatrice to come forth? lest he may be suspected of wishing to deal out to the clergy that justice of not punishing for crimes till crimes are proved upon them, which we deal out to pirates and highwaymen? What care we? If we have done our duty we have cleared our skirts, and being harnessed for the battle, here engaged as the lawmakers of the province, let us not, like Ephraim, turn back in the day of battle. We know the bill to be wicked in every way; let us, then, vote it down. We know it to be a blunderbuss charged with all manner of hurtful missiles against the Church of England; let us, then, render it harmless. We know it to be an entering wedge to a power which is designed to split, divide, weaken, and destroy the establishment; let us not allow such an instrument of destruction to have our sanction.

"I may have spoken in vain," continued Mr. Delafield, "to some in this house, but there are others, I know, who are not indifferent to England's clergy, and England's Church; and, as if I stood on the battle field and was leading them on against a Paynim host, I would cry 'St. George to the rescue.' We can be but defeated, compatriots in arms for the holiest of causes. Most nobly falls he, who, with his eye fixed on heaven, falls for that cause which brought the Son of God down from heaven to earth. But fall we cannot. God's blessing and succour will attend, and carry on trium-

phantly those who make His cause theirs. I stand then for the church and clergy of our native land. I lift aloft its banner, and call to stand under it with me all who bear in grateful remembrance the untold blessings, which, through the ministry and the word, have preserved us as a people, and exalted us as a nation."

There was an intenseness, an earnestness, a fire in the face and eye of the speaker that electrified the house. Light shone around, and about, and from him. He stood, as stands a bright apotheosis, in a cloud of glory, and, as he finished, there was a wondrous harmony in his tones, which held the house breathless; and a whole minute and more had passed, when a murmur of applause, spontaneous and irrepressible, arose. A motion for adjournment was immediately made and carried, and then, like the pattering of heavy rain-drops, after a bright electric blaze, and sharp explosion, came the pattering of feet on the floor, and the noise of the members and lookers-on retiring from the State House.

As the members and spectators walked homeward, those who felt most said least, and some there, Parson Lilliston particularly, felt too full to find words to express himself to the members of his flock, who knowing his deep interest, and of course gratification at the noble stand just taken for the church, looked up to him with pleased faces. Some others, whose feelings were near the surface, were either loud in commending the speech, or in berating as a mean set the parson-haters. One class walked away sulkily and moodily. It was evident that the resolution adopted and acted upon with such praiseworthy singleness by Mr. Delafield, like every other which faith puts forth, trusting in a Supreme Power to bless, had attained its end in part, if not fully. Some members by it were now shaken in their determination to vote for the bill. A second class were ashamed of their past pusillanimity, not made manifest to them before, and resolved not to be so backward hereafter. A third set judged that it would be advisable to try another, but less objectionable bill; perhaps it might do. The Governor's party—had he a party now?—were alarmed and disconcerted. On Romanists and enemies of the established church they could count; could they count on each other? It was agreed by them to hold a caucus, we would say, if the word caucus was then known. But they agreed to have one more meeting, and that night, at the Governor's.

Parson Gordon and Montrose entered the State House gallery after Mr. Delafield had commenced his speech. The first heard him out in his argument with heartfelt and grateful pleasure; the latter did more; his eyes involuntarily filled with tears of joy in discovering in his father a speaker who dared to plant himself in the way of the enemies of the church, and so nobly was doing battle in her behalf; and he heard him to the close of the afternoon session with increasing satisfaction, and had but two regrets at the time; one, that he could not stand with him in so righteous a cause, and the second that his friend Shepard, being absent, had not been roused to put forth his best faculties in aid of the clergy. Parson Gordon did not attend the afternoon session, feeling satisfied that even were Mr. Delafield able to discourse as a seraph he must have help to stop effectually the ball of misrule which had been started in the House; and so persuaded, he denied himself the pleasure of the afternoon session to do his best in the interim to bring succour to his friend, Mr. Delafield, on the morrow.

CHAPTER XXIX.

SHEPARD'S ADDRESS—SPEECH, AND THE CONSEQUENCES.

"Safe from the bar, the pulpit, and the throne,
Are touched and sham'd by ridicule alone."

POPE.

WHILE the debate just mentioned was in progress. Shepard was neither an uninterested nor idle observer of events. Without being present, he knew, from the reports which came to him, all that passed, and his friends, seeing the interest he evidently felt, could not understand his unwonted silence. Shepard, however, keeping his own counsel, mixed daily out of doors with all parties, and, though not of the cabal, was as familiar as any of the governor's partisans with their proceedings.

Whitter and his "choice spirits" were won by Shepard's audacity, ready wit, and well counterfeited bluntness; and from some of them he extracted all he wished to know of the wire-pulling behind the curtain at the governor's, and regretted he could not know all that Romish craft had concocted.

"The time has now come for decisive action," said Shepard, soliloquizing, "on the part of the friends of the parsons," and he turned over repeatedly the pages of a translation of Macchiavelli's Prince, as if he would catch from this inexplicable work some insight into the means proper to be adopted in his quandary. While thus musing, and irresolute what to do, he heard a rap at his door. He opened it.

"The very man," said Shepard, greeting Parson Gordon, "that can best relieve me from my uncertainty," smiling, as he spoke, and then giving him a hearty welcome.

"Time presses," replied Parson Gordon. "You can do good service for the Church of Christ if you will act now, and for her."

"The very thing," replied Shepard, "I was pondering,

but how?" and he looked as if it was his sincere wish to act for the parsons.

"How? how?" said Parson Gordon, amazed that he should ask so simple a question, "there is but one way. Go to the house at once, and exert your every talent in averting from the clergy this Star Chamber court;" laying his hand on Shepard, and seeking to take him with him to the State House.

"Gently," said Shepard, courteously resisting Parson Gordon's efforts. "Will your reverence instruct me in this most important, and, as you say, most apparent how?"

Parson Gordon seemed indignant at this seeming trifling, and manifest reluctance. Shepard discovered it, and before he could reply, hastened to add,

"What argument, sir, can I use which these parson-haters will understand?" and bowing as he spoke, "I have no wish to sing a lullaby to a sleeping audience."

"They will have light enough into the law of the case from Mr. Delafield's speech," said Parson Gordon, musing as he spoke.

"'Twill be as idle to reason with them. Many of these law-makers care as little for reason as law."

"It would seem so," mused Parson Gordon, sadly.

"No doubt of it," evidently anxious to acquit himself of the suspicion of being unwilling to do what he might for the parsons. "Allow me to say, your reverence, that, with very few exceptions, even those sermons only are listened to in which reason nods that the audience may keep awake, and in which declamation roars to keep them entertained. And it is no less so in political or parliamentary speeches."

"Mr. Shepard," interrupted Parson Gordon, "I said time presses; the how or way to sway the house no one knows better than yourself; far as human ability can sway it. The clergy may have iron collars fastened about their necks, when you and I are discussing how we may prevent it. The power to wield efficiently your talents can come only from God. Be advised. Throw yourself in the way—lift no uncertain voice—leave untried no fair means to kill this bill before the house—act at once, and I have no fears."

"Bless me," said Shepard, amazed, "he is gone, and his words have hardly been uttered. If I must, I must," and he put on his hat, and was going out. "Zounds," he added, looking out of the window, "the house has adjourned."

What has been done? No time is to be lost. Fool!" muttered he, walking up and down his room; "how can I face that noble man? how present myself before Annie? how encounter Miss Emma, the impersonation of inflexible virtue? I have waited too long, I fear." And, after muttering self-reproaches for some time, he continued, "Well, fortune may yet favour me. And, as the how is so plain, when law and reason are not to be tried, what then? Strike about me right and left with the lash of ridicule? But," hesitating as he added, "he who lashes, should keep the refractory ones, that are to be driven to measures, in terrorem; and to do this my words ought to be caustic as frozen mercury, withering as the simoon, and chilling as the north-wester, and piercing as the invisible point of the fabulous spear. And then, then," musing as he spoke, "comfortable thought! the loon, who can't retort by an air-bullet, may by a leaden one. This is cheering. It will impose on me the necessity of finishing by a second mode of homicide him whom the first mode did not kill altogether."

He sat awhile, perplexed as to the mode of procedure to be adopted, evidently anxious to do, yet not willing to make a venture where the chances of success were doubtful. His hesitancy, however, rose not from timidity. He belonged to that genus humana who, according to Flaccus, is *audax omnia perpeti*, and once committed on a matter he would have hurried *per vetitum et nefas*. But Shepard's pride was a predominant feature in his character. His voice had swayed that lower house of assembly almost at will. Success was identified with his advocacy of a cause or measure. But past success, while it taught him to rely on his powers, made him value his reputation as the master spirit in the assembly too much to put it at hazard, either for light causes, or where it seemed to be close on to madness to make an effort.

"No," continued he, "it is better to laugh as did Horace, than bite as did Juvenal. I may win where I can't drive. Coaxing will do much, much; and then, when the legislative beast becomes stubborn, a little goading may force him on." He mused thoughtfully on the plan to be pursued, and at length, much to his relief, determined upon one, and with his accustomed alacrity and vigour, resolved to push it to the end.

"This will do," said he, seating himself, and rapidly

writing a number of notes, "Divide et impera." He called a servant, and despatched him with command to hasten back with the answers. He then sent for the landlord, and gave him some orders, and received the promise that his wishes would be promptly obeyed. This was hardly done before Montrose entered the room, spoke in raptures of Mr. Delafield's speech, and, much excited, said:

"Now's the time if you mean to do any thing."

"Festina lente—hasten on, but hasten wisely," said Shepard.

"The governor's party," continued Montrose, "meet to-night. The friends of the clergy are roused to action; much as the governor and Lawyer Brief plot together;" but, seeing the work of Macchiavel lying on the table open, he continued, "at such a time you are reading the odious book of that odious Florentine!"

"Exactly," replied Shepard.

"Well, Mr. Diplomatist," said Montrose, indignantly, "I suppose you mean to entrap the parson-haters, by waiting here in your chamber till they have caught the parsons in their toils; intending then, like the rat in the fable, to make a hole for the lion to get out. A bright invention this!"

"I mean," replied Shepard, drily, "to have Colonel Smithson, Mr. Delafield," here his voice trembled, "Colonel Elzey from Somerset, Whitter, and a few others here this evening, to give me their opinion on some as good Burgundy as that, with which their holinesses, at Avignon, solaced their Babylonish captivity."

"Inexplicable man," muttered Montrose, with difficulty repressing his rising indignation, and hastily leaving the room.

No sooner had he retired, than a servant entered, saying the room was prepared for Mr. Shepard's guests; not omitting to mention the hampers of Burgundy and champagne, which were no inconsiderable part of the entertainment. The servant also announced the arrival of Colonel Elzey of Somerset. This worthy was

"A fine old English gentleman,
All of the olden time."

He resided on the Manokin, in Somerset county, and his mansion was justly famous on the Eastern Shore for its profuse and elegant hospitality. His stalwart frame, health-

beaming face, quick and vigorous step, proved that he had snuffed in a large stock of health on the green fields of merry England.

"Most welcome, Colonel," said Shepard. "I have business for your ear only." And the two retired to a corner of the room, and, after talking in an undertone for some time, Shepard said, "You understand?"

"Certainly," replied Colonel Elzey; "and here is my hand, friend Shepard, and, if they could aid in the good cause, I would add, here's my purse and sword too. But these fellows are too well drilled to be led into the ambush. Hate and craft are hard to come round."

"Trust me for that," said Shepard. "You be mum. We'll blow no trumpets to give them notice."

Colonel Smithson then entered, and Shepard, having unfolded his views, received his promise of cooperation. At last about a dozen prominent members had been greeted by their host, Whitter entering the last, and Mr. Delafield being the only person bidden who did not make his appearance. Shepard, as much as he valued his father, was not sorry for this. His assurance might not have been proof against the presence of a father, whom he had abandoned in the wilfulness of youth.

Whitter was surprised, though not sorry to be in company so select. He preferred Shepard's invitation to one from the governor; tempted by the hope of bacchic revelry; and he felt it to be no small honour to be one of a coterie which embraced the talent and aristocracy of the assembly.

After supper cards were introduced, a few games played, and then, rich old Burgundy, fine October, four years in the bottle, and sparkling champagne, were drank. With well counterfeited simplicity, Shepard asked when they meant to dispose of the parson's trap. "I am waiting its passage very patiently."

Whitter, finding the rest silent, took it upon him to reply, that the bill would have been passed that day, but for Mr. Delafield's speech, which had thrown confusion into the house.

"You mean to pass it?" asked Shepard.

Whitter assented.

Colonel Smithson then said, he spoke for himself, but presumed that the bill, after Mr. Delafield's speech, would not become a law without a fight over it.

Shepard, with the same affected simplicity, asked, "Can we not bury the hatchet, and have Whitter and his friends, and Colonel Smithson, and Colonel Elzey and their friends, all in the same battalion?" Colonel Elzey said that his friends and himself could not vote for a bill which would make a pope of the governor of the Province, and give all power to Romanists and Quakers. If so ridiculous a court be desired, let it consist of four laymen whom the assembly shall appoint."

"So say I, and I, and I," responded every one but Whitter and Shepard.

"True," continued Shepard, ironically, "we may not have a Governor Seymour always. Now, I think, we might agree on Colonel Elzey's modification. For I'm anxious to get away from Annapolis.

"What say you, Whitter?" filling that worthy's glass, and forcing down him three or four glasses, in quick succession. "Call you not this an olive branch?" Whitter gave an equivocal assent.

"But who," continued Shepard, "are to be these four laymen? Hang me, gentlemen, if I'm not half inclined to turn out and electioneer for the place." Whitter's face reddened as if he had the same thought. Colonel Smithson observed it, and hastened to say:

"The court must be composed of men well versed in canon law. The clergy are governed by canons while we are controlled by acts of Parliament and of Assembly."

"True," said Shepard, "what know friend Whitter and I, and you also, colonel," turning to Colonel Elzey, and these gentlemen here, about the canons of grave bishops, and doctors? We understand something about the other sort of cannon, and I know enough of them to know the less occasion there is for them the better."

"Friend Whitter here, too," and Shepard smiled as he continued, "knows all about the Scripture canon. He can tell whether Job lived in the time of Methusaleh or of the Maccabees."

"Hang me," said Whitter, interrupting him, "if I know, or care the difference between the Maccabees and Beelzebub. I have often heard of the land of Nod, and that that murderer, Cain, went there, and found a wild woman, whom he took for his wife."

"I have great hopes of you, Whitter," said Colonel Smithson. "I see you read your Bible sometimes."

"Yes," said Shepard laughing, "and when he does, like Cain he gets into land of *Nod* himself; but, being a married man, I presume does not go a wife hunting. Besides," continued Shepard, "there is a kind of law called canon law, and made up of rules taken from the Bible, the decrees of church councils, bulls of the pope and the like, and they make three immense volumes. A man might carry them in his arms. I should delinea the attempt to carry them in my head. By these the clergy are to be tried."

"You must excuse me, too," said Whitter, "if the parsons can't be set right, without my turning a plagued puritan with a testament slung to my girdle, or a Jesuit priest with my head full of the pope. They may hunt and play cards as much as they please; so that they will not be poking at me their advice till it is asked, and let me curse when I want to."

"But they can be tried no other way," said Shepard gravely, seeing that his remarks were beginning to have the effect intended on Whitter. "I propose, therefore, if the parsons must be tried, that the speaker of the house, or some members of our body, or two or three of the ablest of the clergy, examine all persons who may be candidates for a seat in this court; if they approve themselves qualified, that the examiners select four persons to compose the court." Whitter hung his head for a few minutes, and then muttered, "The devil a bit of a court shall we have. I am not such an ass as to pretend to know any thing about this Jack priest and puritan parson law."

"I know as little," said Shepard, overhearing him, and hoping by chiming in with Whitter to carry him along with him. "We'll let those who do, take care of the parsons." But come, gentlemen, we will drop the subject now. Wine has failed to enlighten us into the proper course to be pursued, perhaps a song will do, colonel," addressing himself to Colonel Elzey, "fill your glass, and pass it round, and then give us something good in the song way."

"By all means," said Colonel Smithson, "I'll help my good friend from Somerset if he will give us the 'Hey for the old Cavaliers.'"

"I second that," said Whitter, "and I'll help out the chorus. "And so will I, and I," said others. Colonel Elzey

did not wait to be further persuaded, but sang as follows :

"One bumper yet gallants at parting,
One toast to the cause we love best ;
Here's health to the King and his army,
Confusion to old Noll and his nest,
The canting, covenanting Scotch,
A disloyal hypocritical sect,
Like Judas, they sold for base lucre,
The King they swore to protect,
Then hey for the old Cavaliers,
Then ho for the old Cavaliers,
Let every good knight, that loves a good cause,
Fill round to the old cavaliers."

"Ay, ay," said Whitter, repeating the last line of the song,

"Fill round to the old cavaliers,"

and he passed the bottle round, after having filled his own glass.

"But this is not all," said Colonel Smithson. "I think I have heard you sing another couplet."

Colonel Elzey continued,—

"Why could we not keep with us ever,
Those nobles in field and in hall ?
Who shouted like war-horse for battle,
When glory or peril did call.
No, ne'er let their memory perish ;
But green in our hearts may it be,
As gold that use cannot tarnish,
As the foam that whitens the sea.
Then hey for the old cavaliers,
Then ho for the old cavaliers,
Let every good knight that loves a good cause,
Fill round to the old cavaliers."

"A merry set in Mr. Shepard's room," said the landlord below. "Colonel Elzey always brings merry times with him, go where he will."

"Yes, yes," said one of the loiterers at the bar, "he's not ashamed to drink with a poor man, and though no man can boast purer blood, and he's rich, and a great feaster too, there's always a place at his table for a clever fellow if he aint got more than a shirt to his back, and his breeches on."

Other songs were sung, which, hitting hard on the intrigues of the Papists, wherein Guy Fawkes, and James II. were represented as enemies alike to the church and people of England, had the effect, together with that of "hey for the old cavaliers," of working on Whitter.

"These cavaliers were all great friends to the parsons," said Colonel Smithson. "The cause of the king, the church, and of every gentleman or freeborn Englishman in the days of our fathers was the same."

"No doubt of that," said Colonel Elzey, with an earnest manner. "My grandfather gave his plate cheerfully, even to the old Elzey christening bowl, to help the cause of the unfortunate king, Charles I. I served with the new member from Calvert, Mr. Delafield, whose speech to-day has put the good cause on its legs once more, under King William, in Ireland, against Tyrconnel, and his popish sovereign. When I see a Puritan, I see the king brought to the block, and canting troopers lording it over gentlemen. When I see a Papist I see good Archbishop Sancroft and the five bishops in the Tower, and dumb masses and mummeries taking place of the noble service of our Prayer Book. I love the cavaliers. I go for the parsons."

The colonel rose as he spoke, and took two or three strides down the room:

"I never saw a fellow yet with the cold blood of a frog who was not a whining, wheezy Puritan, and parson-hater. I cannot see a Papist, that I do not see either treachery in his eye, or a hateful and hellish purpose."

Shepard touched him,—the colonel paused a moment, and then pointing to a spider on the wall, who had caught his net full of flies, he continued:

"There is Mr. Jesuit at work. Gentlemen, shall we help him to put the clergy in his toils?"

Whitter felt this, and his eye said he agreed with the colonel.

Shepard then plied him on another side, remarking, that Puritan preachers were always on the strong side of a man's wife, and often obliged him, not only to hear a preachment of two hours, but, in his words, "so prime and load his wife that she must follow her husband up, and, beginning at chapter and verse, must ding dong it into his ears; nor is she then content, unless he, good, easy man, takes his seat Sunday morning, and sings a long psalm, and says a tediously-long prayer before breakfast; next accompanies her to the conventicle, talking and thinking all the way about the last preachment, and what a saint is the preacher!"

"Yes, by the powers, and old Noll to help him too," said

Whitter, fairly roused, "that is so. Dame Whitter worries my life out exactly so. It is all an eternal jabber about good Mr. Smoothtongue; and, hang me, if it is not to get short of such gentry as him that I want an ecclesiastical court."

"Precisely," said Shepard, "and that is what we want; we won't quarrel like Greedy and the Cook,* whether the Norfolk dumpling be in the fawn's belly or in the dish, so we have the dumpling after all. If we nab the parson, that friend Whitter and I think should be at the tail of a plough, and not holding forth from a pulpit, it matters not that the governor's capacious belly be the court, or the court consist of four laymen, to be appointed by the honourable Assembly."

They all assented, and the company, having retired, Whitter excepted, who lagged behind to take perhaps a last taste of the good liquor before him,—Shepard, after having gratified his longing, in a low tone talked to him for some time, till he had worked Whitter up to the state he wished to bring about,—ignorant and violent men being ever the tools of those who can keep their own counsel, and have ends to serve; and generally are more easily controlled by them at the very time these men of violence think they are only acting out their own wishes.

"You don't tell me," said Whitter, vehemently, "that that crop-eared son of a squeaking pig——"

"Your especial friend," interrupted Shepard, "Mr. All-grease."

"Him," continued Whitter, "who was soused in the horse-pond; that he, the scamp, is leagued with Governor Seymour in urging this bill?"

"He's the man," replied Shepard. "How would you like to have him and the like installed as rector and rectors in the different parishes?"

Whitter looked vexed and asked,

"That's the game they're driving at, eh? I've been to their meetings. But old Seymour said nothing of this."

"Not to you, of course," replied Shepard. "He keeps the secrets for Captain Fendall and the godly. He and they plan, and they and theirs reap all the benefit. You and your friends are put off on fine speeches to pay you for being

* See Ford's Play, "A New Way to pay Old Debts."

the hewers of wood and drawers of water to the godly. You and yours are not good enough to be admitted into the cabinet council of the saints."

Whitter began to vow he would break at once, and his friends also, with the governor.

"Don't be in a hurry," said Shepard, in a tone and manner which only the more irritated, "you are aware what a clever man Mr. Allgrace is. He would talk so feelingly that your wife and daughter would be crazy after him. He might even effect a complete conversion of you, Whitter."

Whitter could stand it no longer, but almost raved.

"Be cool," continued Shepard.

"I want no more," said Whitter, rising and clenching his fist. "I'll see Nichols, Randall, White, and Brown, and may I be flayed alive and then salted if I don't," and away he hastily retired.

Shepard laughed, and then walked out. He passed by the governor's house, and, from the lights there, inferred that his party were still in session.

"There is rottenness in Denmark," said Shepard. He came by St. Anne's church. "What means this, old man?" asked Shepard. "Surely no church to-night."

"Yes, massa, church," replied the sexton. "Parson Henderson, and a powerful and mighty arnest preacher he, from Prince George, he preach serment.* Parson Jones from Calvert read, and Parson Trotter from Somerset pray. But no much people here."

"Any members?" asked Shepard.

* The Rev. Jacob Henderson lived in what is now known as "the forest of Prince George county." A few years after the time referred to in the text, 1716, at the recommendation of Governor Hart and the Maryland clergy, he was appointed by the bishop of London Commissary for the Western Shore. In 1718 he was inducted by Governor Hart into the rectorship of Queen Anne parish. He continued in charge for thirty-two years, succeeding the Rev. Jonathan White, who had been inducted into it by Governor Seymour. Mr. Henderson endeavoured faithfully to discharge his duties as commissary, and succeeded in restoring discipline among the clergy. He and his lady, who was a Miss Duvall, and wealthy, gave the ground for, and caused to be erected, a chapel of ease to Queen Anne parish. This chapel is now the chapel of the Holy Trinity in the parish of the same name, Prince George county. It is believed by some, on what authority I know not, that they also gave a Glebe farm of about two hundred acres, which included the chapel and rectory, but said farm is not now in the possession of the parish. How and when the vestry parted with it, if they ever had it, remains yet to be known. The reader is referred to Huck's History as above, who pays a high and merited compliment to Mr. Henderson for his zeal, energy, singleness of devotion to the church, and uncompromising and fearless prosecution of his duties.

"Yes, massa," said the sexton, "massa Delafield from Calvert, him what make big speech for de parsons."

"What is this all for?" asked Shepard.

"Why, massa, our minister ax people last Sunday to pray hard and fast, and 'plore God to save de church, and he 'point sarvice to-night, for dem ministers 'spected."

"What did Parson Henderson preach about?"

"Ah! massa make fun of poor nigger," he said.

"By no means," continued Shepard. "What was his text?"

"Massa!" said the sexton, not sorry to be asked, "Parson Henderson say, 'Let God rise up, and his enemies clear out. Let what hate him run away.' And oh! such a sarment!" And the sexton proceeded to say how his minister wiped his eyes with his handkerchief, and how Mrs. Smith, who was one of the pillars of the congregation, said she could have sot, and listened to the dear blessed man all the whole night out. And the sexton added, "all feel mighty bad, massa; afeard de governor make massa Lilliston go away."

Shepard walked on. "The train is laid," he said, "and it is soon to be fired off."

The morrow came, and, in good time, the members were in their places. But they did not look as they had done the day before when they met for business. In place of an air of triumph on the faces of the governor's party, and the members who were in the Roman and Quaker and Dissenting interest, there was a cloud of gloom, anxiety, and perplexity. They had reckoned too confidently on success. They had expected by the force of clamour, baseless rumours, prejudiced statements, bitter denunciations, without even a plausible argument, to carry a Star Chamber bill against an unprotected, much maligned, and inoffensive body of men. The speech of a new member, setting forth the law, facts, and merits of the case, and delivered in a fitting manner, had carried dismay into the ranks of the hodge podge anti-clerical alliance. And now they had just heard that Mr. Shepard meant to give them his views. His name was a host. What if he should follow on the same side with Mr. Delafield. Demades was reputed one of the most eloquent of the Greeks, but not one sentence is extant of any of his speeches. Mr. Pitt wished above all things for a speech of Lord Bolingbroke, the most brilliant speaker in either house of Parliament. It may be well, however, for Demades and

Bolingbroke that no record has been kept of their speeches. Shepard's effort cannot be done justice to in any description. As he rose to speak,

"Who is he for?" asked a Quaker in the gallery, of a bystander. "Dost thee know, friend?"

"No," answered the person asked, "and no one else. He'll say what he thinks, and the hardest fend off."

"Yes, and that aint all," joined in a third, "and when he speaks you'd think a trumpet was sounding. But, hush!"

Shepard's person was tall, but, till the words, "Mr. Speaker," had past his lips, the members were in such confusion, sitting or standing, that he was not seen. No sooner, however, had he spoken them, than a dead silence was in the house. Every one was in his seat. All eyes were turned to him. His tones were rich, full, and round, while his person appeared graceful and commanding.

"When a traveller is bewildered in a dense forest with roads to the right and left likely to mislead, and a mist and driving storm obscures the route, he either waits for the fog to clear away, or till, by due consideration, he has decided which road it becomes him to take. I am thus bewildered, and must crave the indulgence of the house till I have cleared away a portion, at least, of the fog which invests the subject before us."

After briefly adverting to the fact that only two of the speakers—Colonel Smithson and Mr. Delafield—had argued the case, while the rest had spoken as if the question of the necessity of an ecclesiastical court were already settled, the cry being, "Down with the parsons," and each speaker being anxious to swell the cry, and ring changes upon it, Shepard presented a brief and pithy summary of Mr. Delafield's argument, and of the law and reason bearing on the case. "While the clamour, therefore," he said, "is enough to confuse, there seems to be light by which we may find the way in our bewilderment, and, as Demosthenes said, 'to censure is in the power of every man, while the true counsellor would point out what the present exigence demands,' it is proper we should ask why 'down with the parsons?' Is this the cure to our supposed evil? this the way out of our perplexity? Should we, then, 'down with the parsons?'"

He paused, as if truly anxious for an answer to his question. The members looked at each other as if each one

might read the answer in his neighbour's face; and "the parson haters" looked as if they wondered at so simple a question.

"Is it," continued Shepard, "because the parsons are more corrupt than the priests? for we hear no cries of, down with the Jesuit priests."

"He's getting on the right key," said Montrose to Parson Gordon.

"My education," proceeded Shepard, "may have been very defective; but I was taught that the see of Rome was a cave of spiritual despotism; where no light penetrates, freedom is a name, religion a drivelling superstition, where padlocks are made for the mind, and the keys of which are kept by an Italian prelate, who sits at the entrance its grim and inexorable porter." As Shepard spoke, as if by accident, he threw his glance up to the gallery; and, following it, the audience saw Father Hunter, with his cloudy brow, looking the very embodiment of the Roman prelate he referred to. The effect was magical, and Shepard, availing himself of it, turned to the advantage of the parsons this prejudice against the Roman priests.

"But perhaps," proceeded Shepard, with well counterfeited ignorance, "the parsons are supposed by some to be less enlightened than Quaker preachers, Dissenters, and Nonconformist exhorters." "I do not say that friend Quaker's broad-brim symbolizes the shadow which the prejudices of a sect make about him, shutting out from him the glorious light of learning, which beams from England's Church, and her clergy." Here Shepard's voice had that ironical inflexion which made a laugh almost inevitable.

"Friend, thee has an awkward way of praising us," muttered a Quaker in the gallery.

"Nor do I say," continued Shepard, "that the grum and soured aspect of the Puritan is not an exact reflection of the face of the Master above, which outshineth the morning star, and is radiant with love."

Fendall raised his head, and the comic expression of Shepard's face, aided by a most ludicrous tone of voice, shocked him exceedingly; while most of the audience enjoyed the scene as keenly as they would have done a well acted farce. It was manifest to the house that on the score of ignorance there was no ground to say of the clergy, "Down with the parsons," for their learning cast into the

shade the Puritan and the Quaker. And it was also manifest that, on the score of personal piety, the clergy of England's Church should not be decried, for they greatly surpassed in godliness the Jesuit priests. And, by graphic contrasts, Shepard made so apparent the superior virtue and learning of the parsons that the cause of "the parson-haters" seemed to be about to kick the beam. The advocates of the bill discovered this result, and Lawyer Brief, nervously apprehensive of it, and Captain Fendall, who felt that, to be silent longer would be unpardonable, both interrupted Shepard, and asked if they might be permitted to ask him a question. Shepard bowed assent, and Brief, as plainly as he dared, intimated that the learning of the Jesuit priests exceeded that of the clergy of the Church of England; and thinking such a statement left no answer, Brief looked proudly around the room as he seated himself. Fendall next rose, and with a tone and manner strikingly characteristic, attempted to show, that "the parsons may have more of this world's wisdom than devoted men who seek the lost sheep, without waiting for a bishop to send them; but ah! have they the pearl of great price, the pure and undefiled religion, which is vastly, vastly valuable?"

A smile passed over Shepard's face, and he looked provokingly pleased at the interruption.

"I thank the gentlemen," he continued, "for their suggestions, and rise to act upon them. Far be it from me to deny to Jesuit priests the honour of unequalled superiority in craft and intrigue; or to charge them with having made even one philosopher by their learning, or one saint by their piety, whose life was more fragrant than his bones after disinterment. Did not the Jesuits discover a morality which will bend to all circumstances? Have they not ascertained that the way of salvation is to believe every thing, and do nothing? Certainly," and he smiled very graciously on Attorney Brief, who wished most heartily he had let him alone. "Mr. Speaker, I hope to be the last man who can be so ungrateful as not to own my obligations to the Jesuits for lengthening the creed, and lopping off from the decalogue."

"The sinner," muttered Father Hunter in the gallery. "What cares he how many articles the Catholic Church has added to the faith, or that she has stricken out the second commandment, as Protestants read, against image worship?"

And the father threw hurried glances around the house to see whether these remarks were favourably received.

"Did not the Jesuits," continued Shepard, "convince the Chinese that Jesus Christ and Confucius taught the same thing, and must have been the same person? Wonderful men are they! By most ingenious arguments they prove that adultery is no sin, provided at the time we are acted upon by lust; that murder is very excusable, if tumultuous passion gives the dagger, and says, Strike; for, mark the admirable depth of these reasoners, in all these cases, we are beside ourselves, and, therefore, not free or accountable agents."

Some one now touched Brief on the shoulder, and he was seen to go out, and Father Hunter retiring from the gallery, the two were seen talking together in the outer chamber.

"The coast is not yet clear of fogs," said Montrose to Parson Gordon, "if the priest and attorney can get up a mist."

"I am very sorry," replied Parson Gordon in a low tone, "that friend Shepard does not wield rather the open club of truth, than extend a hand to shake, while he strikes with a dagger. 'Tis a pity, Mr. Montrose, that so serious a subject as the rights and characters of the clergy, by the way of handling it, should awaken bad passions."

"I have no wish, either," proceeded Shepard, looking graciously on Captain Fendall, who began to think that he had been passed over, because his remarks were unanswerable, "to deny the Puritan preachers all due praise for piety in a way not attempted even by the parsons."

"Hum!" muttered Fendall, pricking up his ears as a horse does when he hears a noise. "What is he at now?"

And, instead of caustic comparisons, which blistered where they fell, with a face radiant with glee, he gave a graphic description of a Puritan conventicle, in which he painted to the life their nasal intonations at their prayers; remarking that in this particular, perhaps, they differed from the Pharisees; for he was "not aware that the Pharisees' trumpet, like the Puritans' trumpet, gave forth a nasal sound." He hit off most humourously their affectations of simplicity. Here," said he, "is Puritanism in its best, most intelligible, most taking, and unmistakable demonstrations. He prays, and if every wild animal in Noah's ark, (the lion excepted,) had uttered its voice at once, the noise could not have been more

unmusical. Surely, Gabriel, the archangel, leans over the parapet of heaven to catch the dulcet strains of devotion, and pass them unchanged in any tone or note to the mercy seat. The prayers of Job, Daniel, Jeremiah, and the Apostles never made such a clatter, nor so threatened to take the heavens by violence. The soft low prayer of the contrite sinner, and the clear unbroken tones of the simple child never so besieged the mercy seat."

And thus good humouredly excoriating, as far as his voice and manner indicated, he more effectually put down the Puritans than any argument, however elaborate, could have done. Laughter was irresistible; and Shepard let the house give way to this feeling, and then, with deep solemnity, he asked,

"Why down with the parsons? Must we, to gratify an affected zeal for purifying the sons of Levi, create a court, which, having the governor for its head, will degrade his excellency into a broker of parish livings; which will sunder ties between pastor and people that are the growth of years, and commission contemptible spies to circulate in a parish to hunt up evidence against the parson, thereby destroying the usefulness and wearing out the patience of even the most deserving clergyman? A lion may be stung to madness and then to death by a little poisonous reptile that is concealed in his mane. And, who that knows any thing of the finesse, intrigue, address, management, and unconquerable and daily accumulative energy of the Jesuit, does not know that, let the hope be held out that, on certain information being laid before an ecclesiastical court,—the rector in any parish will be dismissed the same, and Jesuits will be found able, ready, and resolute to effect his discharge, and the ruin of the Protestant Church in that place."

And Shepard painted the wire-working, and the wicked and crafty intriguing which had been set in motion throughout the province in order to tell at that assembly. He spoke of Irish priests and Irish Papists, openly or disguised, circulating in every parish, and on some plea or other seeking to obtain the ear of every member of that house. "And shall we," he asked, "offer a premium to Jesuitism?—to that most dangerous incarnation of the evil one, which knows all disguises and can assume all shapes. To-day it may openly vaunt its Catholicism, to-morrow it will cover itself under a specious liberality. To one person it pro-

fesses to speak plainly, to another it whispers *sub rosa*. It will enter your house by the front door, or if prudent it will come in by a secret ladder.

"The bill," he added, "will give such wily foes to your national religion every means of surely ruining you."

The moral force of these and the like words gave dignity to his position, made his ridicule tell the more, and so weighed with the house, that Whitter, his friends, and others, now debated whether they should not lay the whole matter on the table, or adopt a middle course, which, while professing to deal out even-handed justice to the parsons, protected them.

Shepard sagaciously chose the latter alternative, and moved an amendment to the bill, striking out the words, "the governor and his council," and inserting "four persons who shall be appointed by this Assembly."

"A pretty amendment this," said the governor's party. "His excellency is to be thrown overboard. The court will be a cipher without him. We shall lose every thing by this motion;" and they became fearful lest the amendment would pass.

The friends of the church greeted the motion as a happy diversion to the course legislation before seemed likely to take.

"Any court will be a monstrosity," said Parson Gordon to Montrose; "but the design to lay the clergy at the feet of Governor Seymour and the Romanists will be foiled by it."

The most intense interest was manifested while the vote was taking, and, as the speaker was about to announce the result, some held their breath, lest their breathing might prevent their hearing it.

"This scene," said Colonel Smithson to Colonel Elzey, "reminds me of the debate in the House of Lords, (her Majesty being present, about three years ago,) in the perils which menaced the Church of England."

"Yes," said Colonel Elzey, "Lords Rochester and Halifax, and Bishops Compton and Burnet, and others, took part in it."

Shepard's amendment was carried. Fendall's jaw dropt on his bosom. Chagrin was visible on the faces of the Puritans,—more than chagrin on those of the Papists,—while the clapping of hands in the gallery by the ladies, and a

heartily cheering by others, bespoke the joy of those who wished well to the parsons.

Shepard next moved, that Colonel Smithson, Colonel Elzey, Mr. Delafield, and Mr. James Holt, esquire, constitute the court.

This motion was also carried, and the chagrin of the Puritans and Papists could not be repressed.

Captain Fendall rose, and let out his vexation by harping on the words "apostolic pedigree," which, he said, was all that the parsons could claim; and this claim he treated as a modern discovery.

The member from Worcester also, boiling over with vexation, attempted to draw a comparison between the worldly deportment and manners of the clergy, and the meek, saint-like, and demure carriage and bearing of the Puritan preachers.

Shepard seemed to be much amused at these explosions, and, leaning towards Colonel Elzey, whose anti-puritan feelings he knew were strong, he said,

"Give it to them, colonel, right well laid on. No man handles a weapon better."

"No, no," replied the Colonel, in an under-tone. "You are more at home in this kind of cavalry duty than myself."

The member from Worcester had just seated himself. Shepard immediately took the floor, and in his happiest manner, congratulated the house on its prompt action, and expressing his joy in knowing that so respectable a majority could unite in opinion, asked if he might be indulged a few minutes longer.

"Leave! Leave!" resounded from all parts. Shepard bowed, and a smile lighted his face at this mark of the estimation in which he was held. A proud moment was it; for both the house and the lobby, crowded with spectators, waited anxiously to hear him.

"I beg pardon," he said, "for having omitted to congratulate the house, on having in its body one, who, in vocal richness exceeds the Lake of Killarney. The lake has an echo which repeats forty times; but we have an honourable member who, once upon a time, had whispered to him the words 'Apostolic pedigree,' and which to-day he repeated so frequently that it seemed he had but to open his mouth, and apostolic pedigree would be sounded forth. He thinks

an apostolic pedigree very foolish. This is not at all surprising; and he will not take it amiss that I explain why. Now, as my friend, Colonel Elzey, can trace the pedigree of his turf nag Gaily to dam Juno, through sire Good Luck, and several sires on to old Famous, all good blood—even so, mine honest friend from Anne Arundel can trace his pedigree to Mrs. Faith and Mr. Godly Fendall, on through Elder Sobersides and Deacon Holdfast to Patience Brown, and good Master Devout Fendall; the first of the stock of which history makes mention."

This was said in a manner so comic, that the house and lobby lost its gravity, and peals of laughter, to the great mortification of Captain Fendall, drowned all further remarks for some minutes. The Puritan had listened with far more than his usual attention, and his saturnine countenance had evinced more life than any present remembered to have seen on it; but at this point he rose, and, with a prim dignity, that was meant to be peculiarly impressive, walked gravely and slowly to the door. On reaching which, he turned, and raising his right hand slowly, like the ghost of Hamlet, he pointed it to Shepard, and struggled for words to express his choler.

"No thanks for the Captain," said Shepard, determined to twist the captain's manner into an effort to thank him for the way in which he alluded to his ancestry. "I have spoken but the truth, and a pedigree so renowned should be proclaimed on the house tops."

Fendall dropt his hand and head, and mortified and vexed beyond the power to express, retired, as another peal of laughter, at his ridiculous discomfiture, shook the house and lobby. The speaker's hammer rapped many times before order was restored.

"Allow me," continued Shepard, "farther to congratulate the house on the rich gifts which seem to pertain to some among us; not of vocal harmony, and ancestral pedigree only, but also of unctuous qualities that characterize the inward man. While our parsons are said to play the Pharisee on Sunday only, we have a few in our body who play the Pharisee every day. Their Phariseism is rich and running, like the oil on Aaron's beard, even to the skirts of their clothing."

And thus excoriating for some time, and yet all in apparent good temper, Shepard forced the governor's party to hang

their heads for shame, and provoked more than one angry threat, from the parties offended, to pay him for his taunts. Unfortunately Shepard heard one of these threats, and, though he meant here to have closed, and by an ingenious and appropriate peroration, on his ability to do which well, he felt, perhaps, a like pride with Tully—he was provoked to let himself out in yet further exposure and castigation of the Puritan members.

“But can it be that Christ is betrayed when His ministers are supported? that He is betrayed when a tax is laid to make men do for Him and His what they would not do otherwise? that He is betrayed when learning, piety and devotion to His service are favoured by the State? It is a pity that these objectors have such tender consciences. It would be well if they resembled Judas in every particular. Like him they are charged with holding the bag, and loving what is put into it. Like him they are charged, from their anxiety to control church livings, with selling their Lord for the bag and its contents. Would it not be well if, Judas-like, now, when convicted of their base betrayal,” and Shepard’s voice as a trumpet in its clear and forcible clarion tones shook the house; ‘they were considerate enough to go and hang themselves.’”

The explosion of a bomb could not have created a greater sensation, and many members rose from their seats; threats of violence were more than whispered; and Shepard’s friends gathered around him to repel the attempts, if any, which might be made upon him. He, calm, collected, like a tower of strength, stood erect, and waiting for order to be resumed, surveyed the assembly, and then added:

“Talk not of the price of an establishment. Our broad acres and richest mansions, a thousand times told, could not pay the value to the State of a church, on which the throne and parliament lean for their support; while the miserably meagre tax, laid for its ministry, resembles the widow’s mite that was thrown into the treasury of the temple, only in its smallness, and not in the devotion and singleness with which it is given.”

That evening, Shepard was walking alone on a back street in Annapolis, when, on coming to the corner of a street that intersected it, he discovered three persons masqued near the corner.

"What mean these fellows?" said he, "no good," he was about to continue; "I'll keep a sharp lookout on them."

"Halt there," said one of the masques, and Shepard had just time to put himself in an attitude of defence, when he found himself assailed by the three, each one being armed with a sword.

Shepard was a good swordsman, and perfectly at home in the science of fencing. He was besides, tall, muscular and active, and his assailants found him as a lion at bay, undaunted and formidable.

"Dog," said Shepard, as the foremost person masqued assailed him, parrying his thrust, and driving his sword into adversary's body, "take this as a love token." The assailant fell, and standing over him, Shepard found himself assailed by the two others, who fought with like desperation, hardly greater than their knowledge of the sword exercise. How to protect his person from two assailants, both attacking him at one time, was no small difficulty, and Shepard saw that artifice must now accomplish what skill and force could not. For his strength he was aware was tasked so heavily in parrying the dexterous passes which were made at him, that he might be overborne by the unequal conflict. Feigning therefore to attack his adversary to the right, he, at the same moment that he appeared to direct his sword and attention that way, with a leap to the left, and a sudden striking of his sword on his adversary's blade, disarmed him, and thus had but one to contend with. The masque who was disarmed, turned to fly.

"Not so fast, my brave assassin," said a voice from behind; and Montrose, who was the speaker, closed upon him, and waving his blade menacingly, the person masqued fell on his knees and besought him to spare his life.

"No mercy to infidel dogs," cried Shepard, noticing all that passed, and pressing hard and furiously on the third person who still confronted him. The parties fought bravely. Shepard saw that he had wounded his enemy, and from his relaxed efforts was aware that his strength was nearly spent, but was vexed and indignant at his apparent contumacy. He pressed him closely, by pass upon pass,—repeated with increasing rapidity, and was in the act of driving his sword into his enemy's body, having discovered an unprotected part, when Montrose, who had extracted from the second masque a promise of submission, knocked aside Shepard's

sword; and by a blow well and smartly given to the blade of the third person masqued, he disarmed him. Shepard's face coloured with vexation for a moment, but soon commanding himself, he placed the point of his blade at his antagonist's throat, saying—

"Your name and purpose before I send you to the shades."

"Seymour," said the masque; and Shepard and Montrose, with amazement, recognized his excellency.

"Who is this man?" said Shepard with some embarrassment, pointing to the second masque.

"The member from Worcester," said the Governor, speaking with difficulty. "And the dog who lies there?" continued Shepard, getting mad.

"Captain Fendall," said the governor; as he spoke, raising his friend, who, though bleeding freely, was not mortally wounded.

"Your excellency and myself," said Shepard, holding his person very erect, "have either settled our difficulties, or but commenced them? Let me understand." The governor was silent.

"If they end here," continued Shepard, "then the public is to know nothing of this very honourable attempt of the governor of the province, aided by two fitting colleagues, to assassinate a member of the legislature for exercising a member's privilege. If not, then I shall avail myself of all means legal and otherwise, both to bring my would-be-assassins to justice, and to defend myself from their daggers; even though the hand of a colonial governor wields the poniard, and the assistants are members of the honourable assembly."

The governor, mortified and vexed, was thankful, however, to get off on these terms; and, in a hurried manner, signified that their quarrel should end here; and seemed anxious to frame something of an apology for his shameful assault on Shepard, but the latter, waving his hand adieu, turned away, taking the arm of Montrose, and, as he turned, he said,

"Your excellency has heard me. Be careful not to forget it."

Shepard and Montrose discussed, walking away, the singularity of the adventure. Shepard said his chief regret was that his blade had not done even better execution on the governor than it had on Fendall. "We will let this pass

for the present, Montrose, but old Seymour never forgives, and I must take such steps about this matter as will enable me, whenever his excellency would try the like again, to bring him to justice. For, fenced as he is now by the countenance of the powers at home, I might accomplish nothing in a legal process against him. It may not be so always."

Seymour, and the member from Worcester, raised Captain Fendall, and bore him to his lodgings, glad that night cast its mantle over their deed of shame, and trembling lest Shepard might bring to light their nefarious attempt.

The legislature did not continue long in session afterwards, and the bill, which we said was so amended as to protect the parsons, by making the court consist of persons who were friendly to them, the governor refused to approve, alleging craftily that he doubted whether the powers at home would sanction it.* The governor was obliged to close the session with the usual ball; and, in order to lull suspicion, Shepard and Montrose were invited, who conducted themselves as if nothing had happened. But his excellency's face was clouded, and his partisans moved about the ball room, or sat moodily in groups more like men at a funeral than at a festive gathering. In the old comic romance called the Hunting of the Hare, the cur dogs who were engaged, instead of catching the hare, fall upon each other, and while the hare escaped, a battle royal ensued, first between the dogs, and then between their owners who were also on the field armed with clubs and bats. A result not unlike followed upon the attempt "to trap the parsons." The clergy, like the poor

* As stated in the text, the idea of this ecclesiastical court bill came from South Carolina, and the result of this bill is truly stated by Mr. Delafield in his reply to Brief. Hildreth, in his History of the United States, vol. 2, p. 36, says, the bishop of London complained that the bill in South Carolina was a sacrilegious intrusion on his episcopal rights, and the dissenters there denounced it as an iron chamber. Dr. Hawks, speaking of the spiritual court bill in Maryland, says, "The governor refused his assent to it, *not on the ground, however, it was wrong in principle or was not called for by circumstances*, but because he had no directions from home concerning the matter." He says, further, that some clergymen of the province immediately wrote to the bishop of London, representing that this bill would be establishing Presbyterianism in the colony upon the necks of the clergy, and raise an effectual barrier to the introduction of episcopacy. The result was, the abandonment or non repetition of any further effort to pass a law so subversive of all right authority, so tyrannous and inquisitorial, and so distasteful to the church and crown. Governor Seymour died the following year. Requiescat in pace! but to his intermeddling, and, as Dr. Hawks states, "to his pompous self-importance, the church was indebted for her prostration."

hare, had little else to help them but Providence. Their enemies all joined in the hue and cry, but, like the hare, they broke through the ring which they had made. For the bill was so amended that their enemies could not agree upon it, and the clergy escaped their clutches. But not only were Governor Seymour, Captain Fendall, and the member from Worcester sufferers by the rencontre with Shepard in mortified pride and defeated malice, but personal rencontres took place between Whitter and one of the governor's party, and between others of Whitter's side and the governor's side, not with sword and pistol, but with fist and club. And this session was signalized by an exciting and tedious debate which ended in a bill that, wanting the governor's approval, did not become a law, and in many quarrels and fights between former friends and allies. The chagrin of the enemies of the clergy was great. They loved each other none the more for their failure. An alliance like that of Herod and Pontius Pilate could produce no good. Each charged the other with remissness and want of faithfulness, and, as is usual with bad men, when leagued together to work mischief and they are disappointed, they hated each other even worse than the common object of hatred. They had kindled a fire around them, and this fire now circled none but themselves, the fire of deserved reproach, and, scorpion-like, when girt by fire, they turned their fangs upon themselves. Their regret surely was not a godly sorrow, but "the sorrow of the world which worketh death." The clergy had reason to thank God and take courage. Their time in the province had been as a dark night in which there was no star shining. But the great Head of the church had fought for them, and their cause had triumphed. He had promised that no weapon which was formed against his church should prosper, and he had now made good his promise. Faith then said, the day is breaking, and soon, soon—faint not, lone watcher on a desolate post!—the Sun of righteousness will come; the Lord will come, and, driving away the hosts of darkness, will establish his kingdom gloriously and forever.

CHAPTER XXX.

CONCLUSION.

"Last scene of all
To close this strange eventful history."
AS YOU LIKE IT.

"I MUST return then to England as I came," said Montrose. "No, not as I came either," hesitating as he spoke, "for I leave her behind whose presence no property can supply, and whose companionship is more to me than every thing else."

"No!" interrupted Emma, speaking with difficulty, and much moved. "For with your talents, station, and fortune, you can do much," and she looked as if she meant all she said. "I am dependant on a widowed father, to whom I owe every thing. You, you may do and find much; and this, this," and it cost her an effort to get it out, "this little disappointment will be hereafter an incident only in your history." And, having thus far conquered her feelings, Emma availed herself of the silence of Montrose, to soften down her rejection of his suit, hoping to reconcile him to it; and was talking on kindly in a sister's tone, when each word only made Montrose more and more sensible of his loss. His distress became apparent to Emma herself. Rising and taking his hat he turned, and, taking her unresisting hand in his, his look speaking more than words; he said:

"Well! We part," and was about to add, "to meet no more;" but this was an event he would not contemplate, and with her hand still in his he stopt. After awhile recovering himself, he proceeded. "You talk to me of usefulness, wealth, station, and talents; and ask me," he hesitated a moment, "to look to these to comfort and cheer me. I did think, I did hope, I was loved in return."

Emma's whole frame seemed to be shaken. Her lip was tremulous, and it seemed she would not be able to calm down feelings that were struggling for utterance. Her eye

rested, as if accidentally, on the face of Montrose; who, by his appealing look, appeared to regard her as a deity who held his destiny in her hands, and on whose words it depended. Nature overmastered the iron purpose, which till now had sat at the helm. Emma's lips quivered, her face flushed, her eyes filled, and, "I love you," came out, and in a very low tone too, before she was aware she had said it; and so unexpectedly that Montrose could hardly realize that words, so potent for good or evil, had been spoken. The seal being broken, which concealed in the secrecy of the maiden's heart her affection for Montrose, the depth and fervour of that affection, which lay up there hidden, likewise became manifest. Woman-like, loving not by halves, having "told her love," it was not in her power to say to it, Thus far shalt thou go, and no further. Pressing the opening thus given, before the interview was over, Montrose succeeded in extracting a promise that she would unite her destiny to his; and he saw that he had achieved a great and un hoped for victory. But Emma fell upon the chair, and, burying her face in her hands, exclaimed.

"My father! my good father!" and her mind, from the ejaculations which escaped, was oppressed with the thought of leaving her father in his loneliness. Hence she added, "To leave him thus would be a poor return for his kindness and affection."

"What I should have expected, my good child," said Parson Gordon, entering the room. "Be calm;" and, turning to Montrose, he continued, "Be seated, sir. I did not mean to play the spy. I came to the door—caught some words of Mr. Montrose; and heard my daughter signify her acceptance. Now, as I have often said, though I would never advise, nor in any way further such a step, I would not oppose her happiness. Know then that her acceptance has my approval." He paused a minute or two, and then added, "And, as Isaac and Rebecca lived faithfully together, it is my fervent prayer that you may keep the vow and covenant which has now been made; and never have cause, or entertain a wish that you had not made it." As Parson Gordon proceeded, his voice faltered, and his large frame quivered from emotion. He addressed himself to Montrose. "Treat her kindly. She is the best of daughters; and, if you will love, honour, and keep her, she will make you the best of wives."

Montrose felt the force of this appeal; and his short and pithy reply, expressed in a tone of deep feeling, satisfied Parson Gordon that, far as we poor mortals can judge for the future, he had found such a husband as he could safely entrust with his daughter. Montrose then adverted to the necessity of his early return to England; and delicately expressed a hope that his nuptials would take place before his departure. This proposition met with more opposition from Emma than he had anticipated; and it required all his efforts and most earnest persuasions to overcome it.

Laying her hand then in her father's, she said, "I cannot bear the thought of leaving you. You must go with me."

"Death, my child," said Parson Gordon, solemnly, "will before long separate us all. Our paths have been one thus far in life, and we could not reasonably expect to travel always along. My duty is one thing, yours is another, and where our duties call us, there lies our happiness." But, seeing that his daughter was overcome by the sacrifice thus suddenly forced upon her, he added, "Perhaps I will follow you."

"Where? How soon?" asked Emma quickly.

"Before long, perhaps, my child," replied Mr. Gordon.

While they were making preparations for the nuptials of Montrose and Emma, we will briefly trace the course of events with Shepard and others.

Shepard never knew certainly whence came the voice which had startled him in the tavern. He learned however that a room back of the one he was in, had just been taken by the Rev. Jacob Henderson, who entertained for Shepard's talents the highest opinion, and who, he suspected, might have employed this expedient to awaken in him a proper ambition, and to stimulate him to correspondent efforts.

But while Mr. Delafield, by a reunion to his family, found in life a zest and joyousness he had not for years, Shepard also felt that a new career was opened to him by the new and interesting associations he had formed, in finding a father, brother and sister. "I can be now," said he, "what I have never ventured to hope before. A man might be brave enough to attempt to guide a boat over the rapids of Niagara river, and willing to be hurled over its chasm, provided, on the bank, as spectators, stood those whose good opinion he valued, applauding the deed. But what cared I to breast life's rapids, or that my boat did not bear her-

self always well? What cared I to risk toil, and study, and denial in a stormy voyage over life's sea; if by me and near me to approve and say, Well done, there stood not those whose approbation I valued? One thing more now is wanting. Alas! one thing thou lackest, necessary to complete the happiness of every child of Adam." That one thing here, Shepard supposed, was the possession of Mrs. Annie. With the extravagance of youth, and swayed by the tender passion, she seemed to be the ocean to the river of his thoughts and the rills of his desires. "I must on and try, and try, and try again," he soliloquized. These were his reflections the morning after his arrival at St. Mary's. He made his toilet most carefully. His horse was brought out. Darnell, who stood by, said:

"Surely, sir, you'll kick the puppy, Snarler, for his threats of getting out a writ against you."

"Hold that horse better," said Shepard to the groom, and then mounting, turned to his questioner and said, "No, I'll leave that delicate business to you. Socrates was kicked by an ass, and he had too much sense to kick the donkey back again." And off he bounded.

"He needn't go to Elfin Hall," said Darnell to some loungers at the tavern, who laughed at his discomfiture. "Annie, I know, don't care for him."

But away rode Shepard, ascending and descending the hills, as if he meant to trust his fortunes to Mrs. Annie, and not to her cousin. He turned now an angle of the road, and Elfin Hall was in sight. Gates were opened without loss of time, and his rap was next at the door. No one came. He turned and called a servant out of the kitchen.

"At home! Lor! no, massa," said a servant girl.

"Where then?" he asked.

"Deed, massa, she replied, "I no like say whar young missus is," seeming to enjoy his impatience.

"Look here, Miss Sable Saphead," said Shepard vexed, "who went out with your mistress? where? when? Come, none of your nonsense," getting mad.

"The berry man, massa," she replied, a little alarmed, "what kin fight."

"A pray, who is this Samson?"

"He no Massa Samson, but Massa Cap'en, him what overseer and fellow-sarvants say fought like alligator dat night."

"Captain Fulford?" muttered Shepard. "How long have they been gone?" and feeling, though he could not say why, rather uncomfortable.

"Since way breakfuss," was the reply.

"Where?"

"Deed, massa," said the girl, provokingly unwilling to be explicit, "Deed, massa, dey be gone to walk."

"For what? Where?" about to give her a back-hand slap to quicken her apprehension.

"De captain's vessel in creek yonder," pointing as she spoke, "and dey gone dare."

"Strange!" said Shepard, mentally, standing on the steps, and looking hard at the girl, who quailing before his eye, meekly asked:

"Massa, let me go now."

"What has she gone to the vessel for?"

"Why, massa, no know dat dey hab marry dis morning?"

Shepard felt that he should sink on the steps for the first moment; and then, raising himself, looked in the direction of the creek. The vessel had weighed anchor, and, her sails filling with wind, she was just moving out of the creek.

"No, this can't be," muttered Shepard. "The girl is a fool."

He heard a soft voice say, "Good morning, Mr. Shepard," and, turning, saw Mrs. Annie before him.

Between surprise, and other not most pleasant feelings, Shepard forgot his wonted courtesy. He rallied himself, and the old Adam got the upper hand.

"I hope Mrs. Annie has had a pleasant walk with her Neptune?"

"My walk was not agreeable," she replied, rather shortly.

"Will you walk in?" passing in the house, and Shepard followed, irresolute and uncomfortable.

"Strange," said he to himself, looking hard at her. Mrs. Annie at that moment turned, and gave him one of those glances which he never could resist. "Mrs. Annie certainly did not send her brave captain roaming over the wide sea," determined now to speak out.

"He dismissed himself," she replied, both vexed and surprised at Shepard's apparent discourtesy.

"Therefore, you are sad?"

"Yes. I parted from one I have long had a warm regard for."

"Ah!" continued Shepard, biting his lip, and meaning to be very caustic. "Allow me to sympathise with you. The sea may give back its treasure."

"Your sympathy, sir," replied Mrs. Annie, indignant at his tone and manner, "will not make up for my loss."

"No; that is quite possible. I never expect to equal Captain Fulford in those tropes and figures."

"What mean you?" interrupted Mrs. Annie. "I spoke of my simple-hearted friend, Euphy Snarler. She was married secretly, this morning, by Father Canon; and, in order to avoid the persecution of her cruel uncle, has taken with her husband, Mr. Hackett, a trip to Annapolis, hoping the storm will not reach her there. And I have known Euphy so long, and at times, intimately, that it was painful to part with her. She may not return till Snarler's death, if she does at all."

In a moment Shepard saw how affairs stood. He laid his hand upon his heart, and said, "This heart means all devotion to Mrs. Annie; so much so that the fear of losing her has more than once betrayed my lips into follies. Still," and he seemed to be very serious, "this heart points ever to its magnet, and I trust you will forgive the variations of an idle tongue."

"Be seated," said Mrs. Annie, confused.

"With pleasure," thought he, "and till doomsday, with you near me."

Resolved to push *ses affaires du cœur* without loss of time, Shepard talked much, and greatly to the point.

She heard him out, though not without endeavouring to change the subject. At length she found words to say:

"I fear, Mr. Shepard, that what comes so easily may be more words than heart. I—I—cannot—should not—do any thing now."

"To oblige you," said he, "I—I consent to any—will do any thing. But you wrong me, Mrs. Annie. If I could coin my heart into words, I'd make you the keeper of my treasure; but time would fail to count it out to you. Easy on my lips? Because I can't keep them in. They must out when truth says, declare them, and my heart burns to speak its love for you. Put me to the proof, and if I prove re-

creant, then treat me as one who is detestable and infamous." And he rose from his chair, as if unable to sit still.

"No more," said Mrs. Annie, imploringly, waving her hand to him to be seated.

"Agreed," speaking under excitement, "and I will introduce it again, whenever I am allowed to come into your presence, so long as you are Mrs. Annie Jones."

And Shepard, forgetting his promise to drop the subject for the present, recalled to Mrs. Annie his attachment before her nuptials to Jones, and his devotion ever since. He spoke of himself, (alluding to his isolation before the acquaintance with Montrose, and his discovery of his father and his father's family,) as one whose life had been early frowned upon by unkind fortune. With her he thought he could chain the winds that made him their sports; while, without her, he felt himself to be an ocean wreck drifting before a storm. And Mrs. Annie's heart being easily kindled, was carried away by a fervour that could love so deeply, and express itself so glowingly.

Shepard saw that he was talking not unsuccessfully, and, determined to gain his end, repeated: "If Mrs. Annie doubts me, put my sincerity to the test."

We said, that Shepard was not handsome, and that he could be, and was at times, repulsive. But a French proverb says, "*Avec les hommes l'amour entre par les yeux, avec les femmes par les oreilles.*" The tongue of an agreeable discourse wins more hearts than all the trappings of dress, and the art of the tailor, barber, and dancing master; and Shepard's powers of winning, resting on the permanent footing of colloquial ability, in which shone the grace of language, and the gold ore of sparkling and valuable sense, had produced on Mrs. Annie far more effect in his favour than she wished him to know, and perhaps even than she knew herself. She knew enough of his hold upon her regard to fear the result, and to struggle against an increase of it. He discovered that a struggle of some kind was going on with her, though the reason was not suspected by him, and self-esteem with him was occasionally much mortified by his apparent want of success after laying himself out to carry the citadel of her affections. She would not respond, however, affirmatively to her earnest suitor's proposition, and he, with all his energy and resolution when roused, was content to press the matter no further. It was some com-

fort to him that she had not rejected his suit, and he determined to renew it if he could, at an early day.

Mrs. Annie having left the room, Shepard endeavoured to entertain himself as best he could. He opened a book, which was lying on the table, and out of it dropt two pieces of paper, which, from mere idleness, he read, without thinking of the impropriety of the act in which he was engaged. One was a copy of a letter which Mrs. Annie had written to Father Canon, in which she announced to him her return to the bosom of the Church of England.

"Here I was baptized, here my mother received every spiritual blessing with which she was favoured,—here my grandfather laboured as an earnest and faithful ambassador of Christ,—and here, since my return, I have known more peace of mind than I ever knew before. I cannot do, then, but what I am doing. I thank you for your past kindness. Your efforts merit this. But, while grateful to you, I must go and worship where, permit me to say, where only I believe I can worship God in spirit and in truth."

"All right," said Shepard, mentally. "I am happy to know she has taken this step. I make no professions on religious matters, except that I have no very especial love for the canting gossellers. But I cannot put faith in these priests. Men conversant with, and believing in, the awful mysteries they profess, would be, I should think, earnest men, not merely devoted to the outward growth of their order, but full of the inner power, the wondrous life, and the heavenly spirit of men who stand between God and man. But these priests are full of craft, full of guile, full of the world, sensuous, wine-bibbers, and not holy livers. Their mass and other offices seem to be set forms which they mumble over as a school-boy his lesson; but their faces, their words, their conversation, their sneers, are cold, cold. I am glad Annie is free from them. Besides," he added, "I have no wish that my wife should be a Roman devotee. The priest may have her conscience so fully in his keeping that, while she exhibits but one side of her character to her husband, she may trust the other side to her confessor only."

"But what is this?" he continued, picking up a second letter. "Ah! a treasure. Old Neptune has risen from his oozy bed, and, as if Mrs. Annie were a second Amphitrite, has come here in his sea chariot, drawn by dolphins."

It is worth something to know how the sea-god makes love. Instead of cooing as the dove, or speaking in the dulcet strains of a poet-plover, he would roar as the blast; and, gathering the finny inhabitants of the deep, would invoke them to unite with him in his suit. But I must be quick. Soft, I'll read.

"Mrs. Annie,

"I've been navigating these capes too long not to cast anchor in sight of Elfin Hall; but, zounds! I can't be anchored there till its mistress says so. And the worst is I can't spin any yarn fine enough to please one so high, and who's so much above a roving tar like myself. Blast my eyes! if I've seen a ship sail better, or more gracefully. I'd follow in your wake, not only across the line, and never once lose sight of you, but even to Cape Horn. By Neptune and his whales! I could deal out poetry to you by the fathom, but it is all out of my reckoning. As the best I can do of this sort of sailing,—here it is:

Though wreck'd by winds contrary,
Though toss'd on the briny sea,
My heart will not be dreary,
In thinking, love, of thee.

"Thine eyes do light me on,
While at the helm I stand,
Thy voice to my ear doth sound
Sweeter than the cry of land;
Calling me o'er the raging sea
To moor my bark aside of thee.

"Yours in love, truer than compass to north star, and deeper than fathom-line can sound.

"JACK FULFORD."

"The very thing," said Shepard to himself; "and now I would give much to know how Mrs. Annie received this billet doux, fragrant as it is with the aroma of the sea weed. The captain should have had a sheet of the hide of the whale, and on it have written his amorous confession. In this way he would have perpetuated his inimitable sonnet."

In the mean while Lawyer Brief had not been idle in prosecuting his love affair with Miss Evelin. The haughty beauty, as we hinted in the foregoing pages, had conceived a partiality for Montrose; but entertained a repugnance to the counsellor. The scene at St. Mary's spring, which led

to the difficulty between Montrose and Emma, tended yet more to fix this partiality, and to colour it with the hue of love. But Montrose either did not suspect the impression which he had produced on the belle of St. Mary's, or did not care to avail himself of it. He made no further visits to the castle. His absence during the legislature afforded no means of making these visits afterwards, if he had been disposed; and it was reported on his return that he and Miss Gordon were to be married. How the report was started we know not, and, as news gets out in a way both curious and inexplicable, it would be idle to inquire how. This report of the nearness of the marriage of Montrose did perhaps more than any thing else to second the attorney's suit. The imperious beauty was indignant at the seeming slight thus put upon her. She held herself above, and had supposed that every one else esteemed her position and claims as higher than those of Miss Gordon."

"How is this, Jane?" said Colonel Smithson, not suspecting that Montrose had made any serious impression on her affections.

"The belle of St. Mary's and the lady of Evelinton Manor, overlooked, and the daughter of a poor parson preferred."

Miss Evelin wished to reply that all was as it should be, in order to disguise her mortification; but the tears came into her eyes; and Colonel Smithson, seeing how matters stood, in order to change the current, said:

"Well, the more fool he, Jane. Young men never know like old folks which side their bread is buttered."

"Indeed, uncle," said Jane, "you talk as if I would have had him at a word;" and curling her lip disdainfully, added, "'Tis all right, he'll have love in a cottage."

"Yes," replied the colonel, really anxious to do his best to help her look on the neglect of Montrose as no loss. "The honey suckles will bloom, and the birds will sing out the honey-moon; but then, before long, you think he'll be glad to get cheese-parings and brown bread on Sundays," and the colonel tried to force a laugh. But it was no laughing business to Miss Evelin, and after retiring to her room for the night the tide of contending feelings swept her at will. "Is it possible," she soliloquized, "that I have been overlooked for Emma Gordon?" And, as she spoke, her eyes rested on a mirror in the room, and the light of her candle fell full upon her face and person.

‘I am not ugly,’ she continued, ‘I had some charms I thought. But it is of no use,’ and she laid her head on her hands, and the big tear drop rolled down her cheeks. And what is more painful than disappointed vanity, and mortified self-esteem?

After awhile Miss Evelin mechanically made her preparations to go to bed, and having finished them, was in the act of extinguishing her light, when a withered bouquet of flowers, that had been given her by Montrose, was seen in one of her books lying on the table. With the sight came up a flood of recollections, and she stood looking upon it, lost in her musings. Like those flowers her hopes were blooming at the time, fresh and fragrant; but now, she added bitterly, they are faded and scentless. And she clutched the harmless remembrancer of a painful past, and tore it to pieces. ‘Thus let him be, and my good wishes and good opinion of him,’ she added.

Brief availed himself of the retirement of Montrose, and pressed his suit hard; and Miss Jane, reckless of what she was doing, did not turn away from him.

True, her pride recoiled at his unattractive figure; and his grey hairs did not seem to be exactly those which would look well alongside her own glossy and sunny ringlets. And it is a crusher to youthful hopes and romantic imaginings, a sad dispeller of the golden dreams, which in the sweet solitude of the heart we have nursed, to be forced to an alliance in which the heart has no share. But more crushing than all is it for an imperious beauty, who has soared on lofty wing, and esteemed no place high, honoured, or rich enough for her perch, to stoop down, and mate with one every way her inferior. The lady of Evelinton manor, revolved this painful idea over and over again. Her heart sickened at the prospect, and her temples throbbed at the mortification of an alliance with Brief. Still the attorney pressed his suit, and so great was her resentment of the supposed slight of Montrose, that she could think of no better way of revenge, than by marrying Brief; forgetting in her passion, as other ladies have forgotten before under like circumstances, that there was no necessity of her marrying at all. And on Shepard's return to St. Mary's, where he hoped to meet Montrose and their father, Mr. Delafield, it was reported that the attorney would in the course of the next week, lead the lady of Evelinton Manor to the hyme-

neal altar. As the Romans crowned their victims with flowers, and accompanied them with trumpets, and a showy procession before they slaughtered them, Colonel Smithson, it was further reported, would give such a merry-making as had not been seen in the castle, since the days of Leonard Calvert; that Miss Evelin, like a veritable victim, might perhaps be cheered on to the sacrifice, with these showy but empty expressions of joy. And here report did not exaggerate. Father Canon had the pleasure of knitting together connubially the stag and hind of St. Mary's. A gay, joyous, and as gaudy an assemblage, as had assembled for many years in the ancient city, met at the castle, and graced the wedding with their presence. Our friends Emma, Julia, and Annie, attended by Montrose, Shepard, and Mr. Holt, were there; and it was observed by all, that, while the bride looked demure and most unbride-like, and the fortunate attorney, as far as appearances went, seemed to be superlatively happy, Montrose and Julia, moved in the large company the life and soul of all. As Montrose had secured the consent of Emma, he only waited for a few days to have his wishes crowned with the possession of her as his wife; and Julia was hardly less happy.

Johnson, to whom her hand and heart were alike given, had arrived that very afternoon, and, besides, she felt herself lifted above the common atmosphere in which ordinary mortals breathe and know life, by the return of her father, and the discovery of her two brothers in Shepard and Montrose. How often is life a day of halcyon-pleasure! All is peace and calm, so peaceful that its wintry winds hushed—its ocean billows laid to rest—its clouds and thunder dispersed and gone; man, like the famous halcyon of the poets, may build his nest of home-happiness without fear of storms or disquiet. Would it not be well to make such times halcyon-days in truth! nestle to the Rock of ages, and there build our home for eternity!

The party broke up in good time, and returned to their respective homes. Miss Evelin was Mrs. Brief. A Tom Thumb page was large enough for his name. How large a page would it have required to contain the virtues of her spouse, and the brilliant prospects of such an union? Still "the night is beautiful and calm; Orion and the Pleiades glitter down quite serene." A horseman, however, was seen to be moving at a rapid gait from the castle across the

ford of St. John's creek, and passing in the gate at Snarler's, knock at the door, which was opened immediately.

"How is your master?" was the question which the visiter put to the servant woman, old Sall, who stood at the door.

"Ah! massa Brief, poor massa most gone! He mighty low. Massa Priest Canon 'pare him now." The attorney hurried up stairs; being summoned away, just as the wedding party had left the castle, and, with his head and heart full of happiness, he was called from his lovely and youthful bride, to stand by the bedside of an old and dying man, and write his last will and testament.

Snarler's race was run. The loss of the Delafield estate was said to be the cause, and, from a bitter and rancorous hater of every thing like Romanism, he committed the folly, common to such minds, of going from one extreme to the other.

He sent in haste for Father Canon to prepare him to die; and to Lawyer Brief an order that, though dying, he might control in all time that property which he loved best in life. Father Canon did for him as for Coode, and then, after much difficulty, Brief gathered enough from his occasional and almost indistinct ejaculations to write his will; in which (for only on this condition was he shriven, the priest hoped to get from her the church lot in St. Mary's,) he gave to his niece, Euphy Hackett, all his property, and on her death without issue to his next of kin in England.

These things being done, and with all due haste, Snarler fixed his fading eyes on Brief, and a light almost unearthly for a moment beamed from them as he said:

"Delafield—will—quick," trying to point.

"Where?" said Brief, looking surprised.

"Yes—gone!" said Snarler,—“forgot. Right—Father?”—trying to turn his head round to Father Canon,—“No property there—there no lands, and slaves?” And the miser groaned at the hopeless prospect before him. “Ha!” he continued. “Yes, yes, aint this gold here? See! the bag's full. All mine, too. I'll count. One—two—more. Oh God! Away!—back!—back!—take him out! He has got my gold. Ha! he weighs it; and a soul is weighed along with it,—and they kick the balance. Sister—come—say—your Bible said—didn't it?—‘How hardly shall they that have riches enter the kingdom of

God!"—hardly—hardly—riches—God! No, Mary, have mercy!"

"He is dead," said the priest, addressing Brief. "We'll ride."

Brief parted from Father Canon soon after they had mounted, and was making his way with no tardy pace through the meadow at the head of St. John's creek, where the old hart in the hunt was unharboured, and he was impatient to return to his bride; but a person sprang from a copse of wood to his right, caught the rein of his horse, and jerked the rider off. Before Brief could defend himself, his assailant beat him severely, and left him bleeding and stunned on the ground. The assailant, who was Darnell, remembered the attempt which was made by Brief and Snarler to kidnap him,—though ignorant that they had mistaken him for Montrose,—and this being the first occasion of meeting with Brief, he availed himself of it in the way mentioned, and then escaped.

Brief's horse, being frightened, ran to the castle, and his appearance, riderless, awakened the worst fears about the rider, who lay stiffened with the injuries he had received, and was not found till the next day. His wounds were not mortal; and his assailant, not being recognised, and keeping his own counsel, was not suspected.

But the attorney's bridal did not have the most auspicious commencement, and few, who knew his unscrupulousness, either regretted his disaster, or augured a favourable issue from a connexion with him. Guilt is foredoomed, and the world at times reads its destiny long before the fulfilment.

But during that eventful night, lights streamed out from the bridal chamber of the late haughty, but now self-victimized belle of St. Mary's, and they burned not less brightly in the death chamber of Snarler. The latter, according to the creed he had just adopted, was going to a sad, sad world, where a fire only second to that of the damned, and demons as many to torment as the imagination of England's great epic poet has conjured up, would burn his sins off; and by torturing penances fit him for heaven. The former had before her a shorter and less formidable purgatory in an union to one she could not love. Such is life. Seldom do we see the inner torture, and the true wretchedness in the glare and glitter of outward appearances!

The banns had been duly and formally, as to time, place, and matter, published in Poplar Hill Church by Parson Gordon; and, a few weeks after Miss Evelin's matrimonial annihilation into Mrs. Brief, Colonel Smithson's coach, with himself, lady, and Mrs. Annie, drove up to said church. Gigs followed, and riders on horseback, and beheld a small but select company, consisting, besides the rector, of Emma, Mr. Holt, Julia, Mr. Delafield, Shepard, Montrose, Johnson, Julia's betrothed, Robin, and a few of the parishioners assembled.

Parson Gordon, with surplice on, looking pale and nervous, stood "in the body of the church;" while Montrose and Emma, standing up before him, "in the sight of God, and in the face of the congregation," vowed to love each other till death should part them. Parson Gordon then, in a tremulous voice, said, "Those whom God hath joined together, let not man put asunder;" and, after he had pronounced them "man and wife together, in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost," and given them the priestly benediction, the married pair rose from their knees.

Parson Gordon waited a while, instead of proceeding with the balance of the office of matrimony, (which is omitted in the American Prayer Book,) when Shepard, with Mrs. Annie leaning on his arm, slowly advanced, Montrose and Emma at the same time stepping aside. Annie appeared to be very tremulous, while Shepard, now that he was about to attain the object of his desire, for the first time lost his self-possession. A look of surprise, notwithstanding the publishment of the banns, was exchanged by some in the congregation, as Parson Gordon repeated the opening address in the "solemnization of matrimony." Attention the most profound enchained all, till he came to the words: "I, Annie, take thee, Augustus, to my wedded husband;" and the bride's face became deadly pale, her lips lost their power of speech, and she seemed to be fainting. One of the company screamed, and a voice said, "She is dying." The service was suspended. Shepard bent in speechless agony over his bride. Mr. Delafield, like one distracted, stood near, the picture of wretchedness; while Montrose, passing Emma's arm into Julia's, hurried out of the church, and immediately returned with a gourd of water, with which Mrs. Smithson wet Annie's face. In a few minutes

the blood came again. She raised slowly her drooping head, —gazed fixedly at Parson Gordon, as if to collect her bewildered thoughts,—felt Shepard's hand pressing hers, as if thereby he might call her to life and consciousness; and, on Parson Gordon resuming the service, she repeated distinctly after him to the close of the solemn vow. Their hands were joined. As in the case of Montrose and Emma, a ring was laid upon the book, handed to the groom, and by him put on her finger. The blessing of God was asked, and the nuptial benediction followed; and then Parson Gordon closed with the concluding part of the marriage service.

Here, as writers of fiction would have it, closed the changeful fortunes of the leading characters in our story; but here in truth only opened the first page of their proper life; what that life was we are not able to say. However, all who saw Emma, as she stood there, would have said, that her moral loveliness, undimmed and untarnished by years and suffering, would shine on

“Like the long, sunny lapse of a Summer's day-light.”

As Annie stood and received the congratulations of the company, her dark eyes, long black lashes, in whose silk shadow lies deepest attraction, the heart on her lips, and which beamed in her eyes, soft and sunny; all gave the assurance that she was a proper woman, who gave her heart with her hand.

And Julia seemed not less happy than the brides; being the first to congratulate them, and though her own marriage to Johnson was near at hand, she felt that in their union her own happiness also had been promoted. Mr. Holt next found words to speak.

“Allow me, nephew Charles,” speaking to Montrose, “to hope you will prove yourself worthy of a wife whose queenly qualities would grace a diadem.” And then turning to Shepard, (who seemed to be too happy to do any thing else but hold Annie's fingers in his, which, child-like, he was playing with,) Mr. Holt continued, “Permit me, Augustus, to trust that your princess, whose nobility and charms it requires no penetration to discover, will keep you in fetters, till the adoring lover settles down into the sensible husband.”

“I thought Mrs. Annie when innupta, unwed,” he continued, archly addressing Shepard's bride, “promised me

once upon a time, that whenever she might be fettered in the hymeneal chain, I should hold the end of the chain. How's this?"

"There's no difficulty here, uncle," replied Julia, observing Mrs. Anne's confusion. "Brother Augustus is the person chained, not Annie. She is free as air. But, I doubt not Annie will be obliged to you if you will help her to hold him in fetters."

Mr. Holt smiled, and said, "With all pleasure."

"And which chain, my son," said Mr. Delafield, for the first time speaking, "will be more valuable to you than if its links were golden, and its lustre that of the diamond, should it, under God, lead you to Him. I trust that no tears of Annie may ever fall upon it!"

A few days afterwards, Parson Gordon asked:

"What is to be done with poor Adaratha?"

"She will accompany us to England," replied Emma. "Mr. Montrose has described Coverdale manor, and above all London, so glowingly that she wishes to see how the old world will compare with the wilds out here. Mr. Shepard and Annie, you know, will go along with us. Oh that you, dear father, and Mr. Holt, and Julia, with her intended, Mr. Johnson, would be of the number!"

"My post," said her father, solemnly, "is one of responsibility and trial. I may not leave it till Providence shall seem to order; and, if I had sought temporal ease or happiness, I would never have burdened myself with a parish; or, being burdened, would soon have relinquished it, convinced that no position in a worldly aspect is more cheerless or at times more illy requited."

"But, dear father," said Emma, "could you not find a cure in England, where you might win souls to Christ no less than here?"

"I might," said her father, "but God has placed me here, and here I must stay for the present."

"Oh, father!" said Emma overcome, "'tis tearing life and body asunder to leave you. On the ocean, at Coverdale, day and night, I shall see but one image, you, my dear father, abandoned by his daughter, without her to kiss and smile away his loneliness; a prey to faction, to cold and unfeeling men; overborne by cares, duties and labours. Oh, it is too much!" And she sank on her knees, and, holding fast to his hand, bathed it with her tears.

"Rise, my daughter," said Parson Gordon, solemnly, but with forced calmness; "God's will be done. I cannot say with St. Paul, 'None of these things move me.' I would to God I could! but I trust I can say, 'I do not count my life dear unto myself, so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministry that I have received from the Lord Jesus to testify the Gospel of the grace of God.' My life, I fear, my dear daughter, is too much bound in yours. Apart from my Master's solemn charge, I live but for you. To raise you as a polished corner of the temple, to see and know you to be a true and faithful child of the Most High, to watch over you, keeping you from the evil, and shielding you from harm; and to lead you on through this valley of tears to the mount of rejoicing, has ever been my wish and prayer. It calls for, then, no ordinary sacrifice to give you up now. Still follow you—I dare not. Wolves are prowling about the fold, and I must be at my post. I do not give you up either. I commit you to His keeping,"—kissing his daughter as he spoke, whose head was bowed with the emotion that overcame her,—"who can and will do for you more than any earthly father.

"But here I must stay awhile longer. I may not run away. To finish my course with joy, I must finish it well. My time is short, and the day not distant when I can do no more in this life for Christ and His people. Why should I doubt, then?

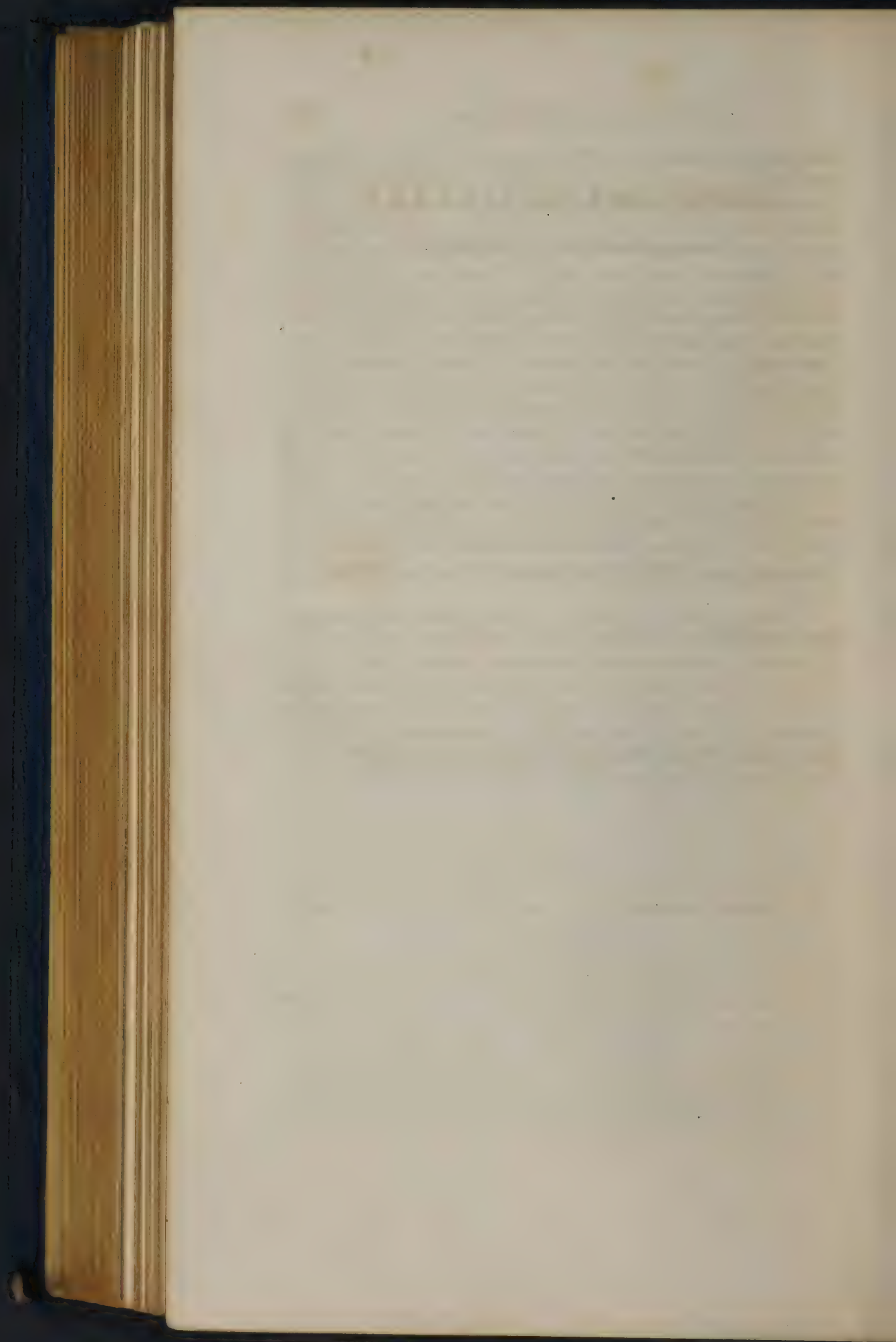
"As patriarchs and prophets lived here, having no continuing city, but sought one to come, I must live, such being the will of God, as if I had neither wife," and he stopt, and appeared to be unable to proceed, "nor child," bending over his daughter, and pressing her to him, "nor kindred. I can hear a voice from God's book, saying, 'Wherefore, seeing you are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, lay aside every weight, and run with patience the race set before you, looking unto Jesus the Author and Finisher of our faith.' And my dear good child would not have her father prove recreant, for fear of faction, toil, loneliness, meanness, and painfulness. His rod and His staff will uphold me, and onward I must go, leaning only upon Him." There was a long pause. Father and daughter seemed to be both overcome.

At length, Parson Gordon, changing his tone of deep solemnity to one of fatherly affectionateness, said: "Whether

I follow you then or not, or whether the Church of Christ here is to be torn by faction, I seek not to know. These present troubles, which, by the way, are only hushed for awhile, may be the howling of the wind that precedes the storm, and the ark of God may be nearly submerged; still I doubt not an Ararat will be found on which she will be drifted, and the waters subsiding, the earth will send up to God once more a grateful fragrance." He paused. "It may be, (why should we not hope it?) that these noises, impeaching the clergy, are only meant to try them before rewarding them. They may be the trumpet-sound before the day-dawn of the world's awakening. Here we have wild forest, men of untamed natures, wickedness abounding, and a few feeble and scattered parishes without a bishop, and under disheartened rectors, who seem just able to pray, 'Lord, how long?' Still the day is coming, when there will be here a bishop, with a large and efficient body of clergymen; and parishes crowded with a goodly number of worshippers, will dot and adorn the surface of this province.

"Look up, then, my child. The day-dawn and day-spring from on high is not far off. You, and I, and ours, by every tie, are only of account so long as we render glory to God, serving Him faithfully in His holy Church, walking before Him with reverence and godly fear; and knowing no pleasure but in the way of His commandments. Let us, then, be faithful, and we shall not lose our reward at the recompense of the just."

THE END.



CHURCHMAN'S LIBRARY.

PUBLISHED BY H. HOOKER.

1.

THEOPHILUS AMERICANUS ; or, Instructions concerning the Church and the American Branch of it. Chiefly from the fifth edition of "Theophilus Anglicanus." By Chr. Wordsworth, D. D., Canon of Westminster. Edited by Hugh Davy Evans, LL. D. Large 12mo., 1 50

2.

ELEMENTS OF INSTRUCTION CONCERNING THE CHURCH. From the same work. Edited and enlarged by Hugh Davy Evans, LL. D. 12mo. 75

3.

LECTURES ON THE APOCALYPSE, Critical, Expository and Practical. By Chr. Wordsworth, D. D., Canon of Westminster. 1 vol., large 8vo., . . . 2 00

4.

MAURICE'S SERMONS ON THE LORD'S PRAYER. 12mo., 50

5.

THE ELEMENTS OF CHRISTIAN SCIENCE. A Treatise upon Moral Philosophy and Practice. By William Adams, D. D. 8vo., 1 50

6.

HARDWICK'S HISTORY OF THE ARTICLES OF RELIGION, in 1 vol., 8vo., 1 75

7.

WILBERFORCE ON THE INCARNATION, . 1 00

8.

WILBERFORCE ON BAPTISM, 75

CATALOGUE OF BOOKS.

9.
WILBERFORCE ON THE NEW BIRTH OF
MAN'S NATURE. 8vo., 1 25

10.
TRENCH'S HULSEAN LECTURES. I. The Fit-
ness of Holy Scripture for Unfolding the Spiritual
Life of Men. II. Christ the Desire of All Nations;
or, The Unconscious Prophecies of Heathendom—
being the Hulsean Lectures for 1845-6. 12mo., . 1 00

11.
TRENCH'S STAR OF THE WISE MEN; being
a Commentary on the Second Chapter of Matthew.
12mo., 38

12.
PRACTICAL RELIGION EXEMPLIFIED, by
Letters and Passages from the Life of the Rev. Ro-
bert Anderson. 12mo., 75

13.
SAYINGS OF THE GREAT FORTY DAYS, be-
tween the Resurrection and the Ascension. By
George Moberly, D. C. L. 12mo., 75

A Library of the above thirteen works will be furnished to the
Clergy, or to Parishes, at a discount of 20 per cent. from the regu-
lar prices.

THE WORKS OF THE REV. HENRY BLUNT, A. M.

CONSISTING OF

LIFE OF OUR SAVIOUR, 75
LIFE OF ST. PAUL AND ST. PETER, . . . 75
LIFE OF ABRAHAM, JACOB AND ELISHA, . 75
SERMONS AND DISCOURSES ON THE AR-
TICLES, 75

The above in 4 vols., uniform, 12mo., \$3 00

CATALOGUE OF BOOKS.

FAMILY COMMENTARY ON GENESIS, . . .	75
“ “ EXODUS & LEVITICUS, . . .	75
“ “ NUMBERS & DEUTERONOMY, . . .	75
“ “ Complete in 3 vols. 12mo., . . .	2 25
HISTORY OF THE SEVEN CHURCHES OF ASIA,	75
SERMONS ON THE SACRAMENT OF THE LORD'S SUPPER. 32mo.,	18
SERMONS. Selected by himself. 12mo., . . .	75
POSTHUMOUS SERMONS,	50

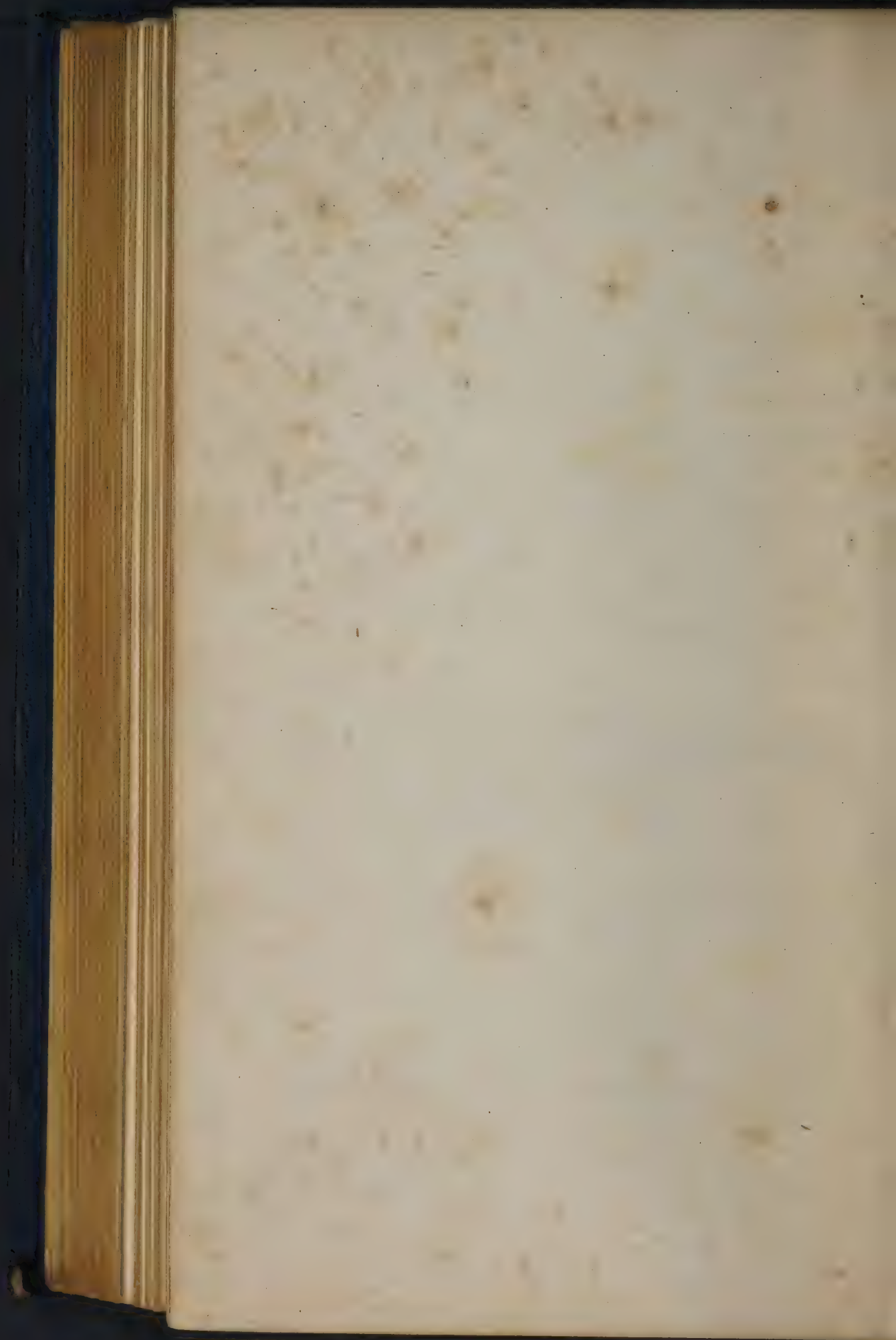


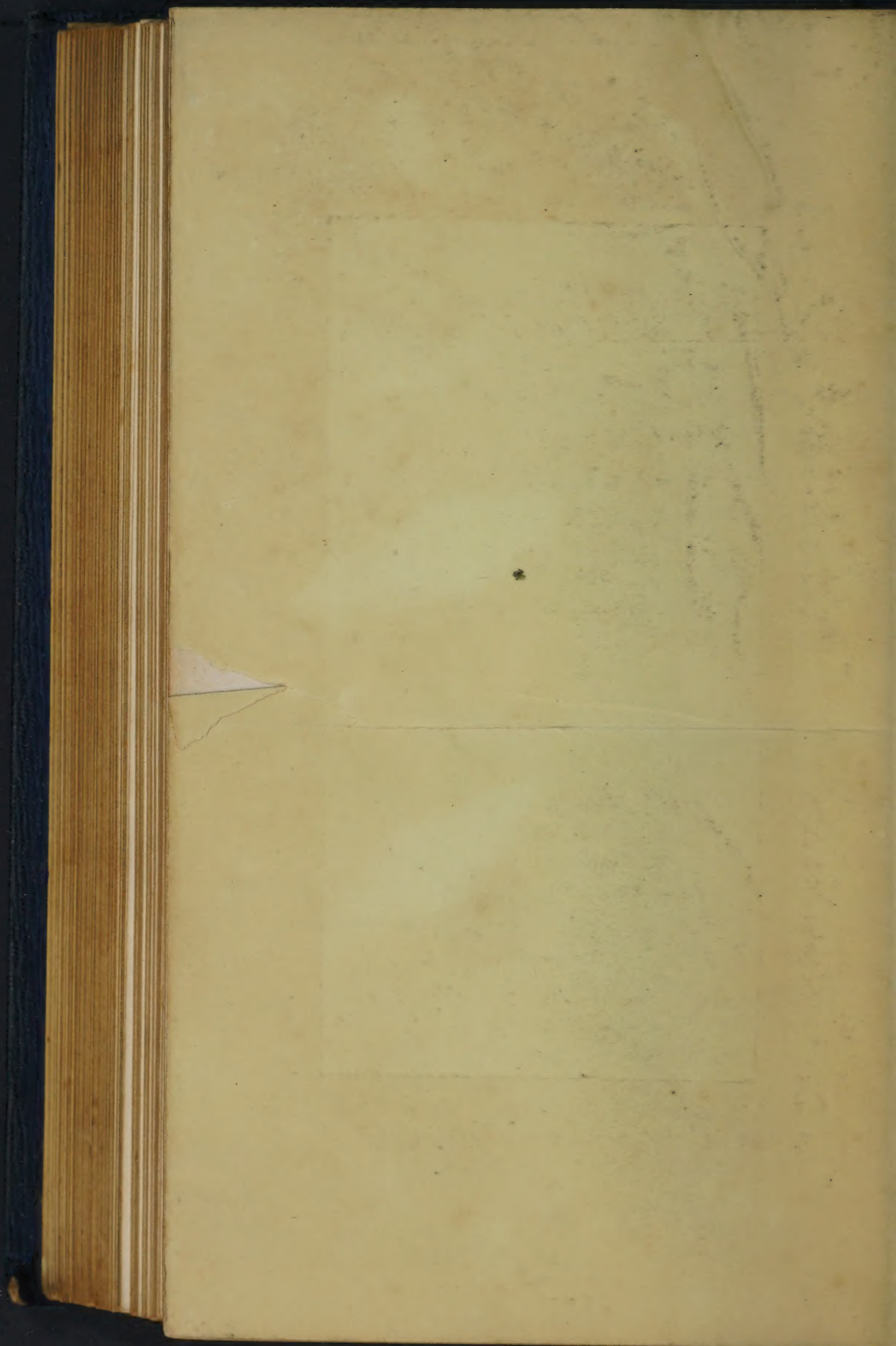
BLUNT, REV. I. J. ON THE REFORMATION IN ENGLAND. 12mo.,	75
HUGH WHITE ON TRUE HAPPINESS. 12mo. . . .	75
Do. Do. “ PROFESSION AND PRIN- CIPLE. 16mo.,	50
LIFE, and a Selection from the Letters of Rev. Henry Venn, M. A., author of the “Complete Duty of Man,”	1 00

Books of Episcopal S. S. Union, always on hand in quantities. Prayer Books—H. H. means always to have in the greatest variety.

It is his purpose to keep every kind of book wanted for Sunday schools, for students, and libraries.

N. B.—Particular attention paid to all orders from Churches and Schools at a distance.





THE "ALLEN COLLECTION"
OF BOOKS AND PAPERS.

No.

THE PROPERTY OF THE CONVENTION OF THE
PROTESTANT EPISCOPAL CHURCH IN
THE DIOCESE OF MARYLAND.

